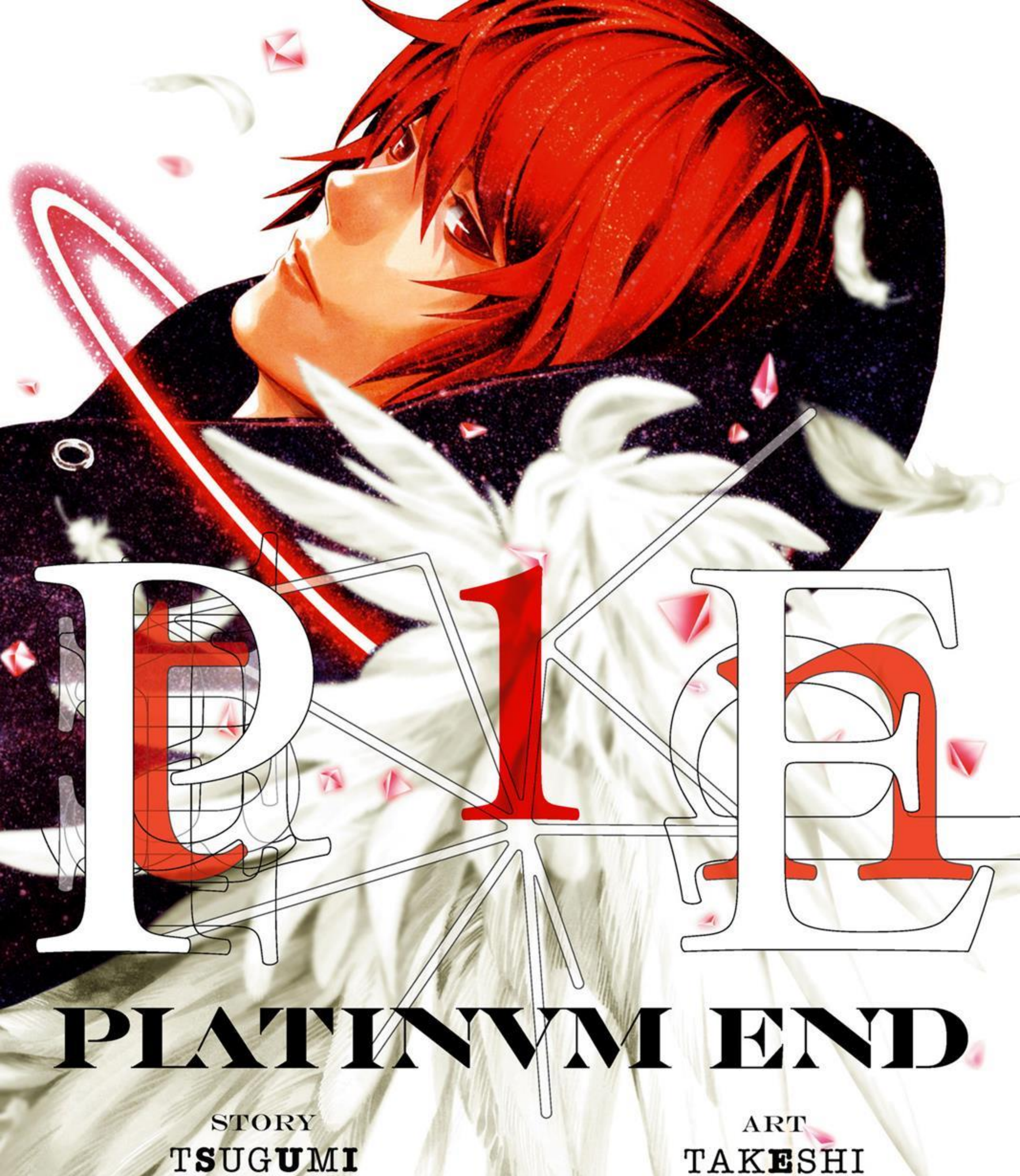


STORY
TSUGUMI OHBA

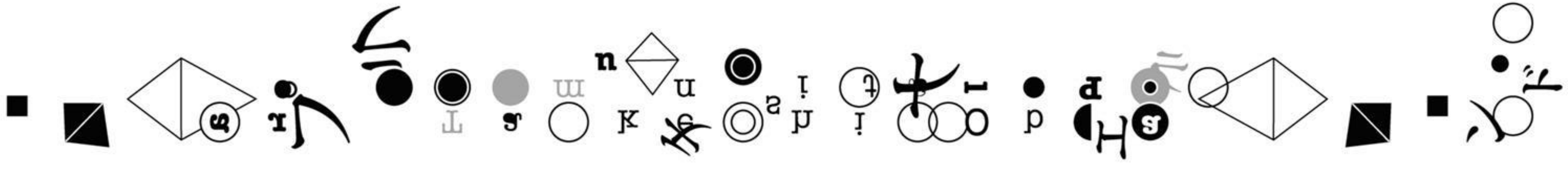
ART
TAKESHI OBATA

PLATINUM END

ART Takeshi Obata

STORY Tsugumi Ohba

Platinum End



CONTENTS

#1 Gift from an Angel
P3

#2 Man's Nature
P73

#3 Hero of Justice
P125

#1 Gift from an Angel

EVERY HUMAN BEING IS BORN FOR THE SAKE OF BEING HAPPY.

BLUE

EVERY HUMAN BEING LIVES FOR THE SAKE OF BEING HAPPIER.

1 Gift from an Angel

HOW FAST TIME FLIES... ♪

STOP IT, THAT'S CREEPY!

WE'LL STILL BE BEST FRIENDS IN HIGH SCHOOL, YASHIRO!

HA HA HA

WITH YOUR GRADES, SAYURI? FAT CHANCE.

THE UNIFORMS ARE SO CUTE. I WISH I WAS GOING TO SHUEI HIGH TOO.

MURMUR

MURMUR

CLASS 3-1

MURMUR

So long: CLASS 3-1 It was fun being classmates with ya

GRADUATION

See you again someday

get the good times!

MURMUR

YOU REALLY AREN'T GOING ON THE GRADUATION TRIP, SUZUKI?

I TOLD YOU, MY PARENTS WON'T PUT UP THE MONEY.

THREE O'CLOCK TOMORROW, GOT IT?

LET'S GO SING KARAOKE DURING SPRING BREAK.

HA HA HA!

KA THUNK...

HA HA HA ...

GRADUATION

MELON BREAD

KSHUF

?

HELLO THERE, MIRAI.

NO ROOF ENTRY

23

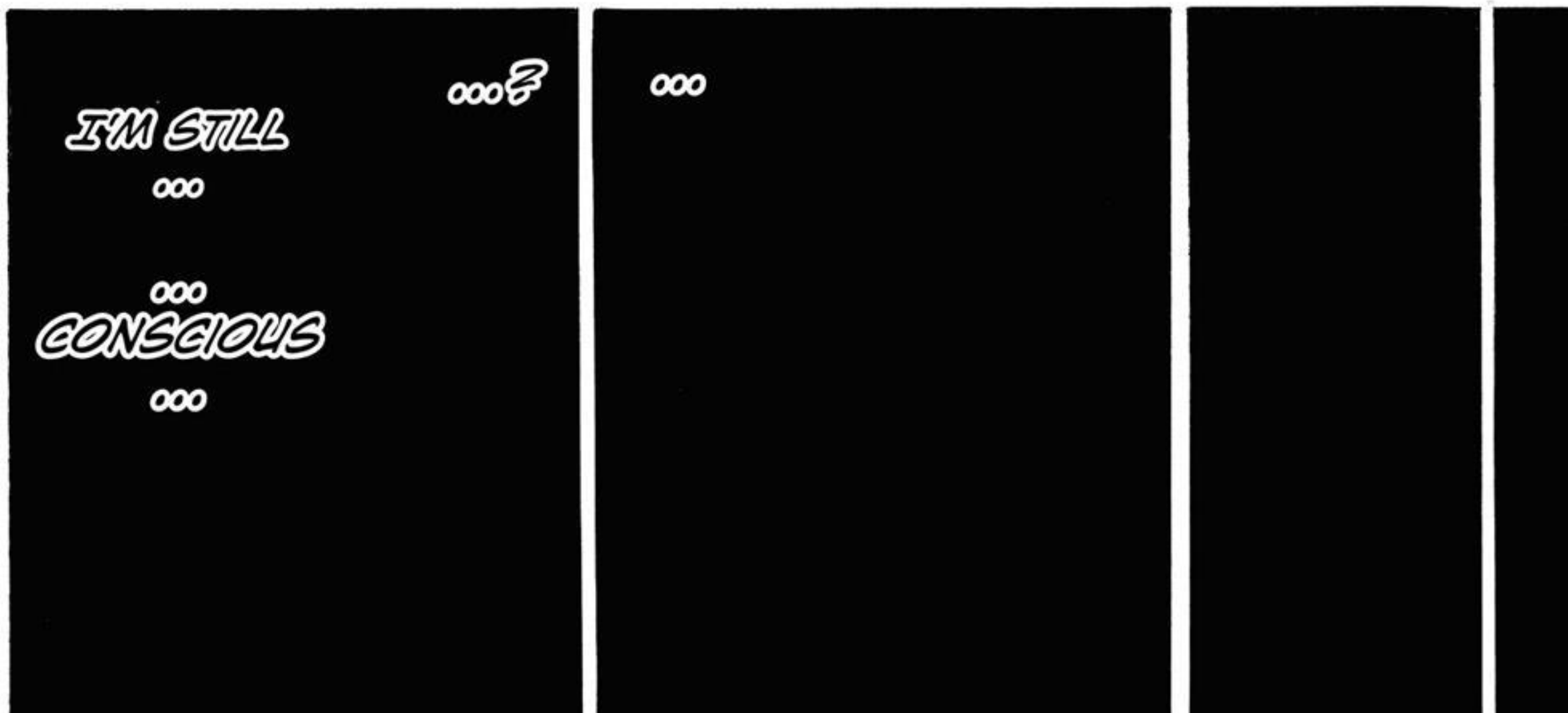
FLASH

I WISH
...

...I
COULD
HAVE
BEEN
HAPPY.

OKAY.

TIME
TO
DIE.


IM STILL
ooo
ooo
CONSCIOUS
ooo
ooo?
ooo

I REALLY HOPE NOT...

WHAT WOULD BE THE POINT OF DYING THEN...?

NOT TO MENTION...

IS THERE SERIOUSLY A HEAVEN AND HELL AFTER ALL?

OR... MAYBE A LOT OF TIME HAS PASSED?

THE AFTERLIFE ALREADY...?

THAT WAS QUICK...

WHAT'S GOING ON...?

FISHHHH

S

WHAT THE--?!

...!

SO THEY'RE REAL?

...

3-1
Mirai Kakehashi

BUT IF I'M GOING TO HEAVEN... I GUESS THAT'S ALL RIGHT...

MADE IT IN TIME...?

I'M GLAD I MADE IT IN TIME...

...MIRAI KAKEHASHI.

HUH? DOWN?

YES! I CAUGHT YOU JUST ABOVE THE GROUND, KEEPING YOU FROM DYING.

LOOK DOWN AND YOU'LL SEE.

!

...

THERE'S NO BODY, AND NOBODY'S RAISING A FUSS. SEE?

AW, MAN...

WAIT... I'M NOT DEAD?

HEH...

SEE?

I'M YOUR GUARDIAN ANGEL, MIRAI.

NO!

JUST DROP ME.

STOP PLAYING GAMES.

I DIDN'T ASK FOR THIS.

...HAPPY?

I CAME HERE TO MAKE YOU *HAPPY*!

YES, YOU DID!

...

I DIDN'T ...

...SAY THAT...

...

WHAT DID YOU SAY WHEN YOU JUMPED? "I WISH I COULD HAVE BEEN HAPPY"!

JUST DROP ME.

EVEN IF I DID...

...I'VE GIVEN UP ON THAT DREAM.

I KNOW.

...THAT DAY...

EVER SINCE ...

IT'S ALL BEEN HOPELESS ...

PLEASE... LET ME DIE!

...

EVERYONE IN YOUR FAMILY DIED WHEN YOU WERE SEVEN.

IN A CAR ACCIDENT...

YOU DIDN'T HAVE ANYWHERE ELSE TO GO, SO YOUR AUNT TOOK YOU IN. THAT'S WHEN YOUR LIFE OF PAIN BEGAN...

...

YOUR UNCLE, YOUR AUNT, EVEN YOUR TWO COUSINS ...

YOU WEREN'T ALLOWED TO FIGHT BACK.

IF THEY DIDN'T LIKE SOMETHING, THEY WOULD BEAT AND KICK YOU.

AFTER THAT, YOU WERE LOWER THAN A SLAVE.

YOU HAD TO DO ALL THE CHORES AND CLEANING...

MILK

THE ONLY FOOD YOU GOT WAS FROM THE SCHOOL CAFETERIA.

YOU HAD TO SLEEP IN THE STORAGE CLOSET.

NOW THAT YOU'RE OUT OF MIDDLE SCHOOL, THEY WANT YOU TO WORK AND GIVE THEM YOUR PAYCHECK.

RIGHT?

THERE'S NOTHING FOR ME... ANYWHERE...

I HAVE NO HOPE FOR THE FUTURE.

I HAVE NO FAMILY ...

NO FRIENDS ...

IT'S ALL POINTLESS... THE ONLY THING IN LIFE IS PAIN.

...

THAT'S WHY I, A SPECIAL-RANK ANGEL, AM HERE TO GIVE YOU THE ***HOPE TO LIVE.***

THAT'S EXACTLY IT!

HOPE...?

...OR PERHAPS *LOVE.*

IT COULD BE *FREEDOM* ...

YES.

WHAT IS SHE TALKING ABOUT? ...

LOVE! THE KIND OF LOVE WHERE EVERYONE WILL CARE FOR YOU IN PLACE OF YOUR FAMILY!

FREEDOM! THE ABILITY TO GO WHEREVER YOU PLEASE, NOT SHACKLED TO YOUR HOME LIKE A SLAVE!

FREEDOM? LOVE? YOU CAN'T SEE OR TOUCH THOSE THINGS.

THIS IS RIDICULOUS.

AND HOW DO YOU PLAN TO GIVE ME THOSE?

WELL, YOU CAN SEE ONE OF THEM ALREADY.

THESE WINGS!

THAT'S IMPOSSIBLE...

HUH?

FLYING FASTER THAN THE EYE CAN FOLLOW?

YES! THEY CAN LET YOU FLY FASTER THAN THE HUMAN EYE CAN FOLLOW.

THIS IS THE ***FREEDOM*** TO GO WHEREVER YOU WANT.

WINGS?

...

SO, WHICH WILL IT BE?

...CHOOSING BETWEEN THEM? PLUS ...

IS THIS SOME KIND OF NEW OCCULT SALES SCAM?

THESE THINGS AREN'T REAL ...

I JUST WANT TO DIE...

I DON'T WANT EITHER...

YOU CAN CHOOSE ONE OF THE TWO, AND IT WILL PROVIDE YOU WITH THE HOPE TO KEEP LIVING!

NG

THE WINGS OR THE ARROW.

SHUM

THEN THERE'S *LOVE*...

444

KWING!

THIS IS THE *ANGEL'S ARROW.*

KWI

ANYONE PIERCED BY THIS RED ARROW, MALE OR FEMALE, WILL FALL IN LOVE WITH YOU FOR 33 DAYS.

I

ISN'T THAT LOVELY?

I

THEN
...

GIVE ME BOTH... AND MAYBE I'LL THINK ABOUT IT.

FINE... I'LL GIVE YOU EVERYTHING!

I MERELY POSED THAT QUESTION BECAUSE IT'S THE CUSTOM.

...

I'LL APOLOGIZE AND HAVE HER LET ME GET BACK TO IT.

I JUST WANT TO DIE.

NO, I DON'T WANT EITHER.

UM, SO...

GRIN

...

HUH? SO SHE CAN GIVE ME MORE THAN ONE? WAS SHE JUST MAKING THAT UP? I GET THEM BOTH AFTER ALL? WHAT THE HELL...

SHLING

HUH?

THEN IT'S SETTLED!

HUH?

YOUR WINGS WILL COME OUT OF THIS ANGELIC NECKLACE...

...AND YOUR ARROWS, OUT OF THIS BRACELET.

NO WAITING. THOSE ANGELIC RINGS CAN'T BE REMOVED.

H-HEY... WAIT...

DON'T WORRY, NOBODY ELSE CAN SEE THEM.

WHAT...

WHAT IS THIS?!

THEY'RE... STUCK? N-NO WAY... A NECKLACE? IT MAKES NO SENSE...

YOU MEAN... THERE ARE OTHERS LIKE YOU...?

PEOPLE WITH THEIR OWN ANGELS?

HUH?!

THEY'RE ONLY VISIBLE TO PEOPLE WITH THEIR OWN ANGELS.

'KAY?

WE CAN TOUCH ON THAT LATER.

!

VMM

GOD?!

YEP, SURE ARE. AT LEAST, UNTIL GOD IS DETERMINED.

...

ZSH...

TMP

OKAY.

LET'S GIVE THEM A TRY.

'KAY?

JUST TAKE A LITTLE FLY AROUND!

ALL YOU HAVE TO DO IS THINK ABOUT YOUR WINGS OR ARROWS AND THEY'LL APPEAR!

I STILL DON'T...

WAIT.

...

'KAY?

OR SOME-THING.

COME ON OUT ...

ANGEL WIIINGS.

SHUT UP ALREADY.

JUST THINK ABOUT IT! GO ON!

'Kay?

SIGH...

WHEEEEEEEEE
SHOOT

WHA...

THEY'RE GOR-GEOUS!

YOU DID IT!

THEY'RE HUGE...

NO, BIG IS JUST FINE.

OTHER PEOPLE WON'T SEE THEM, AND THEY WON'T HIT ANYTHING.

NOW USE THEM TO FLY!

...

FLY...?

CAN I FLY WITH THEM?

FWIP

FMP

FMP

HUHN?

WHA...

WHOA!

HUP!

!

WHAT'S GOING ON?!

I'VE HAD DREAMS ABOUT FLYING, BUT EVEN THOSE...

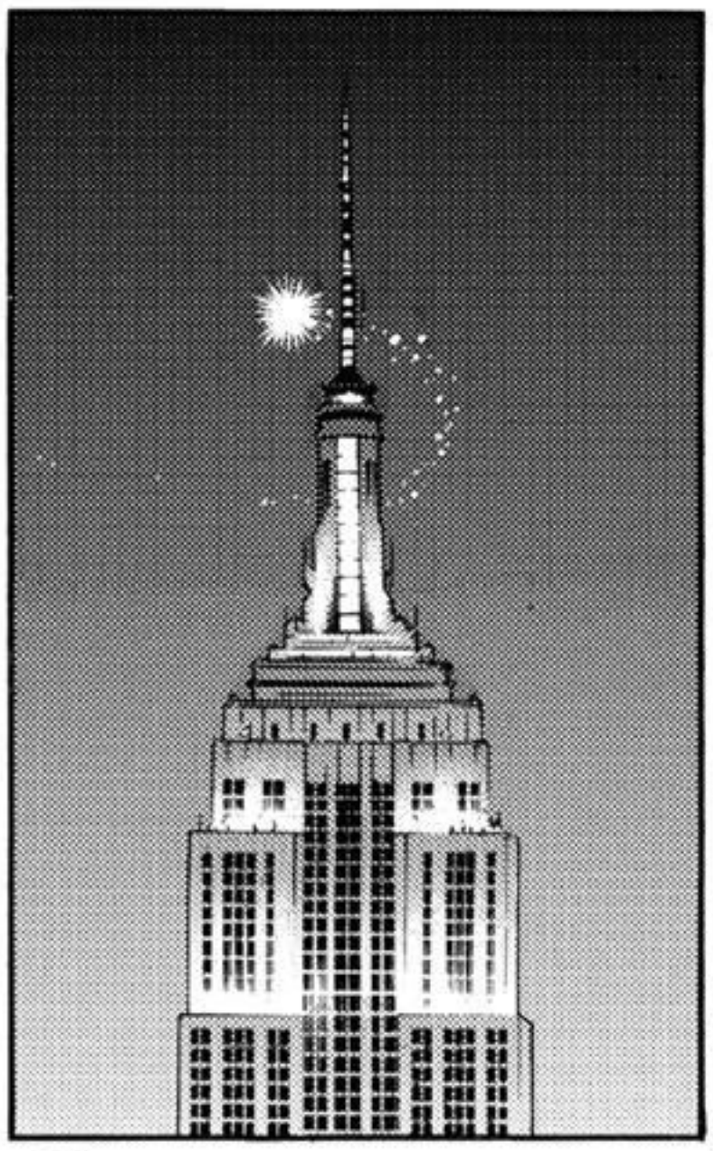
I NEVER KNEW IT FELT SO GOOD...

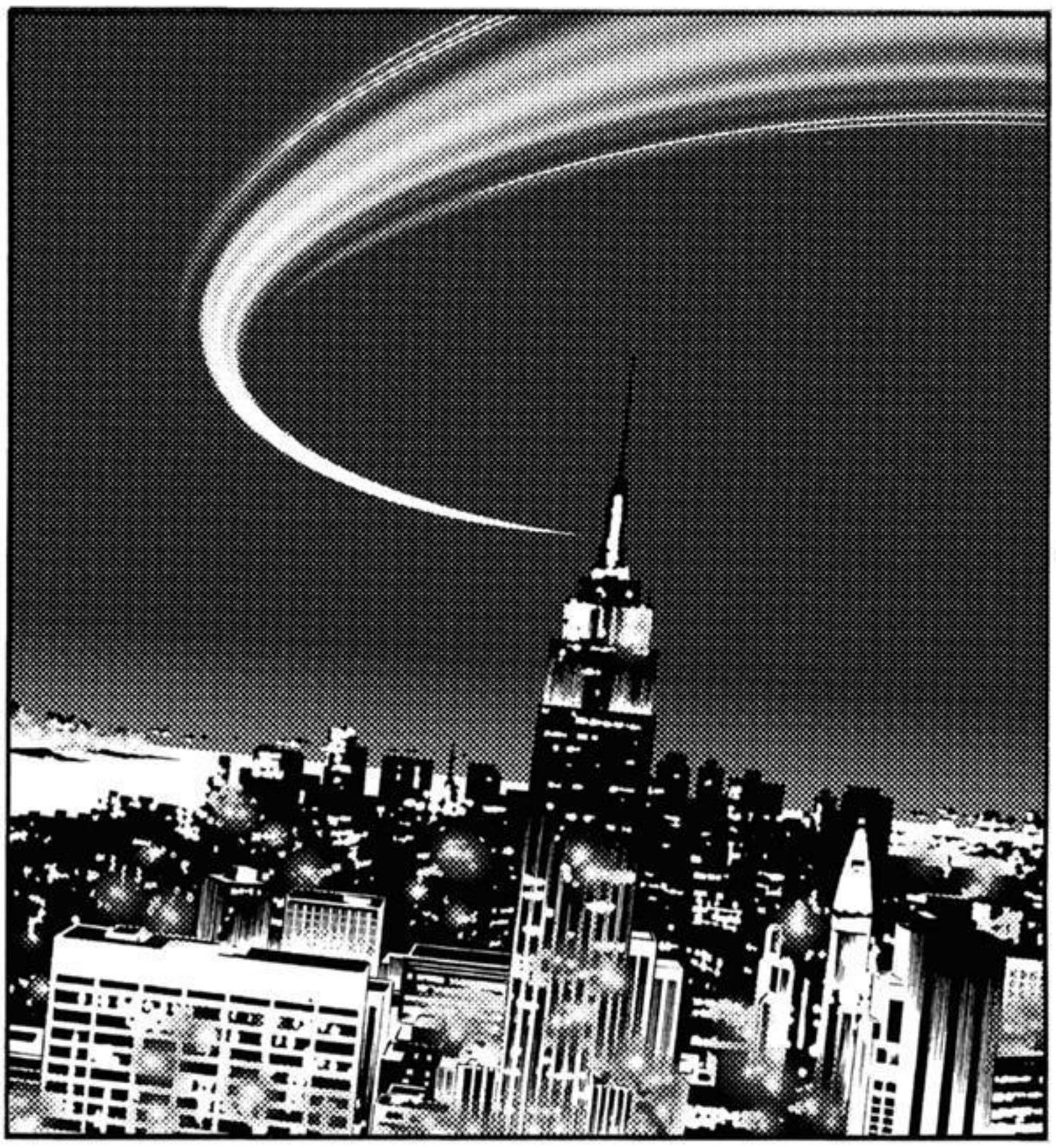
...WEREN'T ANYTHING AS GOOD AS THIS. AND THIS IS NO DREAM...

WOW... THIS IS INCREDIBLE...

...

WHY AM I CRYING?





TEK

IT'S SO BEAUTIFUL.

THE HOPE TO LIVE, HUH...

SO THIS IS FREEDOM...

WELL, I JUMPED OFF A BUILDING WITHOUT KNOWING HOW TO FLY...

WELL DONE FOR YOUR FIRST TRY! YOU WEREN'T SCARED AT ALL.

FWUF

TUP

WASN'T IT FUN TO FLY AROUND WHEREVER YOU WANTED?

MMM...

HMM?

THE ARROWS ARE GREAT TOO. YOU CAN CONTROL PEOPLE'S MINDS SO THAT THEY LOVE YOU.

WHETHER IT'S BREAD OR MONEY...

NEAT, HUH? YOU MOVE FASTER THAN THE EYE CAN SEE, SO YOU CAN STEAL ANYTHING YOU WANT.

!

BUT STEALING AND CONTROLLING PEOPLE'S MINDS ARE WHAT A DEMON WOULD SUGGEST.

YOU... ARE AN ANGEL, RIGHT...?

YES! A SPECIAL-RANK ANGEL.

...

PLUS, DEMONS DON'T EXIST. IF THEY'RE HIDING ANYWHERE, IT'S INSIDE THE HEARTS OF MAN.

HOW WOULD YOU KNOW? YOU'VE NEVER SEEN AN ANGEL OR DEMON BEFORE TODAY.

THEY COMMITTED MURDER?!

YES.

IN THAT SENSE, MAYBE THE DEMONS ACTUALLY EXIST WITHIN THE HEARTS OF YOUR UNCLE AND AUNT, WHO KILLED FOR THEIR OWN GREED.

HUH?

THEY KILLED YOUR FAMILY AND MADE IT LOOK LIKE AN ACCIDENT.

WHAT?

WHAT DID YOU SAY?

WHA...

WHAT ARE YOU TALKING ABOUT...?

HUH?

I'VE BEEN WATCHING ALL ALONG... I KNOW EVERYTHING ABOUT YOU.

WHAT? WHAT DOES THAT MEAN?

MY...

UNCLE AND AUNT...

...MY FAMILY?
THEY KILLED...

NO, IT'S TRUE. WHY DON'T YOU CHECK? USE YOUR ARROWS.

ARROWS ...

I...

HUH? IT'S ALL... ALL LIES, RIGHT?

I DON'T KNOW WHAT'S WHAT ANY-MORE ...

WHAT THE HELL... DOES THIS ALL MEAN...?

I WAS SUPPOSED... TO DIE TODAY... SO IT WOULD ALL BE OVER...

YOU'RE JOKING ...

FWIP

UGH... ALL THESE SHOWS PLAY OUT THE SAME WAY...

Z!

WUM...

WHAT?! FIRST YOU'RE LATE, THEN YOU SNEAK UP ON ME! YOU LITTLE CREEP!

W-WHAT?

SHH...

YOU FALLING IN LOVE WITH ME IS THE LAST THING I WANT, BUT HERE GOES...

SHHP

KWIIIING

KA

A

A

A

GLUH..

LOL

RUB

BUT MY HUSBAND ...

OH... OH, MIRAI, SWEETIE.

WHOA!

THUD

...

I'M SO SORRY, BABY...

THE TRUTH IS, I LOVE YOU SO MUCH!

NOW SHE'LL DO ANY-THING YOU SAY.

...

DID YOU...

SHF

WHAT?

DID ...

DID YOU AND UNCLE... KILL MY FAMILY?

I... I...

HURP

GAK!

WHUF

IT WASN'T ME! IT WASN'T MY FAULT!

I WAS AGAINST THE IDEA! YOU HAVE TO BELIEVE ME!

MY HUSBAND SAID WE SHOULD DO IT...

I WOULDN'T HAVE... I MEAN, I LOVE YOU...

HE'S THE ONE WHO PLANNED IT ALL...

W-
WHY...

WHY WOULD YOU DO THAT?

...

ARE YOU SERIOUS...?

?

WHAT'S GOING ON...?

OH, YOU'RE BACK, MIRAI.

SCRITCH SCRITCH

HUH ...?

KCHK

GOD, SHUT UP ALREADY. A GUY CAN'T SLEEP LIKE THIS!

WHAT ARE YOU TALKING ABOUT...?

WHA...

HE PUT ME UP TO IT!

...BUT THEN *HE* SAID THAT IF MY OLDER BROTHER-- YOUR FATHER-- DIED, IT WOULD ALL GO TO US...

WHAT

MY FATHER HAD A DECENT ESTATE, AND HE JUST *REFUSED* TO DIE...

NO WAY...

...BECAUSE WE KNEW THAT YOUR MOTHER DROVE YOUR FATHER AND YOUR LITTLE BROTHER, AKIRA, EVERY MORNING...

SO HE DID SOMETHING TO THE CAR...

DON'T TELL HIM!

POW

!!

THAT WAS DUMB... NOW I GOTTA HURRY!

TEK

I CAN'T BELIEVE I FORGOT MY ART HOMEWORK.

KASHANK

FOOM

WHY WAS I...?

WHY ...?

IT'S THE TRUTH!!

GRAK

WHY THE HELL WOULD YOU SAY THAT IN FRONT OF HIM?!

SO WHAT? I NEVER LOVED YOU FROM THE START...

EEEEK

ARE YOU RATTIN' ME OUT, YOU BITCH?!

...WE COULD GET THE INSURANCE PAYOUT...

HE SAID THAT IF WE TOOK YOU IN...

BUT THEIR ATTITUDE CHANGED ONCE THEY GOT THE MONEY.

THEY WERE NICE TO ME AT FIRST.

...FOR MONEY...

IT WAS ALL...

YOU'RE THE ONES WHO SHOULD HAVE DIED.

YOU'RE THE WORST...

OUCH! STOP IT!

GAK

GUK

DAMMIT ...

STUPID LITTLE...

THUNK

YOU'RE THE ONES WHO OUGHT TO DIE... NOT ME...

THAT'S RIGHT.

KBOW

SHUNK

WHAP

AAH...

ドキドキ

AAAAAHH!!

IT'S THE RED ARROWS ...

ME?

IT'S BECAUSE YOU TOLD HER SHE SHOULD DIE.

A... AUNT--

WHAT'S SHE DOING? WHY...?

THEY... THEY HAVE THAT MUCH POWER?

THUD

SHE'S DEAD.

I'M AN ANGEL, SO I SHOULD KNOW.

WHO CARES? SHE WAS PARTLY RESPON-SIBLE FOR YOUR FAMILY'S MURDER.

THAT'S HOW DEEPLY SHE FELL IN LOVE WITH YOU.

SHE DID SOMETHING SO AWFUL THAT SHE NEEDED TO DIE TO APOLOGIZE FOR IT.

IT'S TOO LATE.

AH... AH...

W-WE NEED TO CALL AN AMBU-LANCE...

...

SHE'S DEAD...

SOMEONE ...

JUST LIKE THAT...

... DIED ...

THEY ALL... DIED...

THEY DIED... DAD AND MOM AND MY LITTLE BROTHER AKIRA...

BA-BUMP

DA-BUMP

DA-BUMP

SEE, MIRAI?

SHAA

SEE? HER ANGEL HAS COME.

A

HUH?

ARE YOU THERE?

DA-BUMP

MIRAI?

DA-BUMP

SHUU

SHUU

BA-BUMP

BA-BUMP

BA-BUMP

EVERYTHING HAPPENING HERE IS COLD, HARD REALITY!

IT'S NOT A DREAM... OR AN ACT...

IT'S REAL!

SHE'S DEAD...

I'M IN THE REAL WORLD...

I'M LIVING IN REALITY.

BA-BUMP

BA-BUMP

BA-BUMP

I'M ALIVE.

I'M ALIVE!!

LOOK HOW HAPPY WE ARE.

HEE HEE! EVERYONE'S SMILING.

DID YOU DRAW THIS, MIRAI?

YEAH.

MOMMY, LOOK!

AT LEAST, THAT'S WHAT I THINK.

AND EVERY HUMAN BEING LIVES FOR THE SAKE OF BEING HAPPIER.

EVERY HUMAN BEING IS BORN FOR THE SAKE OF BEING HAPPY.

SO... I WANT YOU TO LEAD A VERY HAPPY LIFE, MIRAI.

I'M ALIVE.

HUFF!!

HUFF!!

M... MIRAI ...?

HUFF!!

I'M LIVING TO BE HAPPY ...

I CAN'T BE HAPPY IF I'M DEAD ...

YES... THAT'S RIGHT. OF COURSE ...

I'M ALIVE!

AAAA

YOU CAN BE HAPPY!

THAT'S RIGHT.

I HAVE TO BE HAPPY... FOR THE REST OF MY FAMILY...

WHAT HAVE I BEEN DOING ALL THIS TIME...?

WHA...

AH...

BECAUSE...

I GUARAN-TEE IT!

NO MATTER WHAT YOUR PAST IS!

EVERY HUMAN BEING CAN BE HAPPY!

I CAME HERE TO MAKE YOU HAPPY, MIRAI.

YES ...

I WANT... TO BE HAPPY...

I HAVE TO BE HAPPY...

YES.

I LEAVE THE SEAT OF GOD TO THE NEXT HUMAN. TO A YOUNGER, FRESHER POWER.

BUT MY TIME HAS COME.

FOR AGES, I HAVE DONE ALL THAT IS IN MY POWER TO IMPROVE THE WORLD OF MAN.

...THE NEXT GOD SHALL BE CHOSEN FROM THE 13 HUMANS CHOSEN BY YOU 13 ANGELS.

AS CUSTOM DICTATES ...

WHEN THE CHOSEN HUMAN IS MADE THE NEXT GOD, YOUR ANGELIC DUTY IS FINISHED, AND YOU MAY LIVE BESIDE THAT GOD IN PEACE.

THERE'S NO WAY I CAN SUCCEED...

HMPH. I'M JUST A SECOND-RANK ANGEL WHO CAN ONLY PROVIDE RED ARROWS.

THAT MEANS THEY CAN HAVE ALL THE PLEASURES AND HAPPINESS THEY WANT...

THE HUMAN WHO BECOMES GOD CAN HAVE ANYTHING THEY WANT.

I WANT TO MAKE MY CHOSEN HUMAN GOD SO I CAN SERVE THEM.

...OF FERRYING THE DEAD.

I'M A SPECIAL-RANK ANGEL. I'M SO WEARY...

...SO I CAN DROP OUT OF THIS GOD-CHOOSING BUSINESS ALREADY.

WHAT A DREARY PAIN. I'LL JUST CHOOSE WHATEVER HUMAN I FIND...

YES!

CLENCH

FWUP

YOU HAVE 999 DAYS REMAINING...

I'M ONE OF THE 13 TO DECIDE THE NEXT GOD... MAYBE I REALLY CAN MAKE HIM HAPPY...

NOW GO.

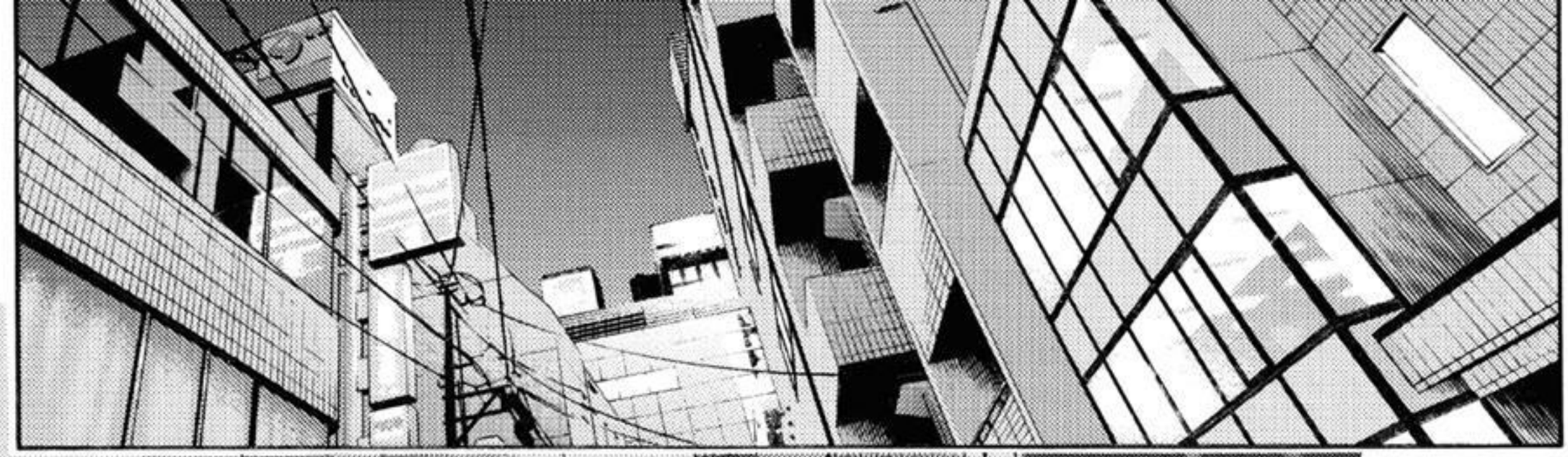
FLOO

OO SH

MY NAME IS NASSE.

AND I'M YOUR ANGEL, MIRAI.

#2 Man's Nature



HOTEL

AHA HA HA!

HOMEWORK.

OH, WHAT ARE YOU DRAWING, MIRAI?

BS

!

I'LL SHOW YOU WHEN I'M FINISHED.

OH, FINE.

WHAT IS IT? LET ME SEE.

NO, NOT YET!

MI-
RAIII
!!!

RP

HOW
DARE
YOU
KILL
ME...

Die!

RP

Y-
YOU'RE
THE
ONES...
WHO
KILLED
MY
FAMILY!

N-
NO...

AAAH!!

ZZRRRRP

HOW DARE YOU KILL ME!!

GRK

UHH...

RRIP...

RRP

AAAA

A

A!

BS

HT

YOU DIDN'T HAVE A FAMILY, SO WE TOOK YOU IN AND RAISED YOU...

AND THIS IS HOW YOU REPAY US?!

AA
AA
AA
AA
AH
!!

HUEE!!

HUEE!!

HUEE!!

HUEE!!

DID YOU HAVE A NIGHTMARE?

AWAKE ALREADY?

YOU DIDN'T EVEN SLEEP FOR AN HOUR.

I'M ALIVE...

21:25

BA-BMP

BA-BMP

I'M FINE...

NO...

...

IT'S BEEN THREE DAYS, MIRAI.

WHAT ARE YOU THINKING NOW?

...

YOU SHOT THE HOTEL PERSON WITH ONE ARROW, AND HAVEN'T USED THE ARROWS OR WINGS SINCE.

SIGH

AND IT SOUNDS LIKE YOUR UNCLE CLAIMED YOUR AUNT KILLED HERSELF. THERE'S NOTHING TO WORRY ABOUT.

JUST GO OUTSIDE AND USE THOSE TOOLS TO BE HAPPY.

RSTV...

THIS IS ALL THE MONEY I HAVE RIGHT NOW.

CLINK

PLEASE, STAY HERE AS LONG AS YOU LIKE.

I'M BASICALLY STAYING HERE THROUGH THE POWER OF THE ARROWS.

I HAVE TO THINK CAREFULLY ABOUT HOW TO USE THE WINGS AND ARROWS.

IF I DID, I'D BE EVIL.

BUT I DON'T FEEL ANY HAPPINESS FROM THINGS I'VE STOLEN OR TRICKED PEOPLE OUT OF.

AND WITH THE ARROWS, I CAN CONTROL ANYONE'S FEELINGS.

NASSE, YOU SAID THAT I CAN STEAL ANYTHING USING THE WINGS.

RIGHT.

MOM ALWAYS SAID...

EVERY HUMAN BEING IS BORN FOR THE SAKE OF BEING HAPPY, AND EVERY HUMAN BEING LIVES FOR THE SAKE OF BEING HAPPIER.

IN OTHER WORDS, UNLESS EVERYONE IS HAPPY, YOU CANNOT HONESTLY BE HAPPY YOURSELF.

DON'T YOU THINK SO?

AND UNLESS YOU'RE HAPPY, YOU CANNOT HONESTLY CELEBRATE THE HAPPINESS OF OTHERS.

THAT'S WHAT SHE'D SAY.

SHE SOUNDS LIKE A GOOD MOTHER.

UNLESS EVERYONE IS HAPPY, HUH...

I FIGURED THAT IF HUMANS COULD GET WHAT THEY WANTED WITH WINGS AND ARROWS, THEY WOULD BE DELIGHTED.

SOME PEOPLE FEEL THEIR OWN HAPPINESS IN COMPARISON TO OTHERS' MISFORTUNE...

GOD ...?!

AND I FIGURED ...

...IF YOU BECAME GOD, YOU'D BE ABLE TO DO WHATEVER YOU WANTED, AND BE EVEN HAPPIER.

OH, I DIDN'T TELL YOU?

I'M SORRY! I WAS SO DESPERATE TO STOP YOU FROM COMMITTING SUICIDE, I FORGOT TO SAY!

Oh no!

HERE'S THE DEAL...

YOU CHOOSE GOD OUT OF 13 PEOPLE?

YES. THERE ARE 13 CANDIDATES ON EARTH NOW, EACH WITH HIS OR HER OWN ANGEL.

THEY'RE GIVEN WINGS AND ARROWS AND TOLD TO USE THEM AS THEY PLEASE.

THEN THE MOST APPROPRIATE CANDIDATE IS CHOSEN.

...

SO I'M GUESSING YOU'LL LIKELY RUN INTO THE OTHER GOD CANDIDATES AT SOME POINT.

I'M NOT JOKING!

HA HA!

SHH

I CAN BARELY EVEN HANDLE MY OWN PROBLEMS. WHAT WOULD MAKE ME FEEL LIKE I CAN HANDLE BEING GOD?

TUNA

BUT IT'S JUST TOO... BIG TO PROCESS.

YEAH... I GET IT. I KNOW THERE ARE ANGELS NOW, SO THERE'S PROBABLY A GOD TOO.

KSHUF...

BUT IF SOMEONE ELSE ENDS UP BEING CHOSEN, YOU'LL LOSE YOUR WINGS AND ARROWS.

I SEE ...

RIP

WHAT, THAT'S IT?

DON'T YOU WANT TO BE HAPPY, MIRAI?

I'M FINE WITH NORMAL HAPPINESS.

HAPPY...

YEAH...

NORMAL ... HAPPI-NESS?

...

A PLACE TO SLEEP.

SCHOOL TO GO TO.

FOOD TO EAT.

A JOB AT A COMPANY.

SCHOOL APPLICATION

For new applicants

Date:

SOMEONE TO START A HAPPY FAMILY WITH...

...SOMEDAY IN THE FUTURE, SOMEONE SPECIAL...

AND THEN...

RSTL...

I WANT WHAT I HAD BEFORE I LOST MY FAMILY...

THAT'S NORMAL HAPPINESS.

AND MY WISH IS FOR YOU TO BE HAPPY, MIRAI.

ALL RIGHT, GOT IT!

SCHOOL APPLICATION

For new applicants

NORMAL HAPPINESS ...

...

I GUESS I'LL HAVE NO CHOICE BUT TO USE MY ARROWS FOR THAT.

I'D BETTER FIND MYSELF A JOB QUICK.

IN THAT CASE ... THE FIRST THING IS MONEY.

IN THAT CASE, YOU SHOULD JUST KILL YOUR UNCLE AND COUSINS!

YOU WERE THEIR ADOPTED SON, AFTER ALL.

THEN ALL OF THEIR MONEY WILL GO TO YOU, MIRAI.

WHAT?!

WHAT'S WRONG WITH YOU, NASSE?

YOU WANT ME TO *KILL* THEM?

THEY KILLED YOUR FAMILY TO GET THAT MONEY, YOU'RE JUST TAKING IT BACK.

NO, IT'S NOT THE SAME AT ALL.

BESIDES, THAT WOULD JUST BE THE SAME THING *THEY* DID!

I JUST TOLD YOU I DON'T WANT TO STEAL FROM PEOPLE!

WHY WOULD I KILL PEOPLE FOR MONEY ...?

RIGHT?

YOU'RE THE ONES WHO OUGHT TO DIE...

THE RED ARROW CAN MAKE YOUR UNCLE DIE JUST LIKE IT DID YOUR AUNT.

WELL, THE KIDS DIDN'T DO ANYTHING WORTH DYING OVER, SO I DOUBT THEY'LL COMMIT SUICIDE WITH THE RED ARROW.

B-BUT... I DIDN'T THINK SHE WAS ACTUALLY GOING TO DIE BECAUSE OF THAT...

BUT IT *IS* EASY.

STOP ACTING LIKE IT'S SO EASY TO JUST KILL PEOPLE!

C'MON, STOP IT!

WHITE ARROWS?

THERE ARE ALSO WHITE ARROWS INSIDE THE ANGELIC BRACELET I GAVE YOU.

!

STAB SOMEONE WITH A WHITE ARROW, AND THEY'LL DIE RIGHT AWAY.

IT'S INSTANTANEOUS AND 100 PERCENT GUARANTEED FATAL.

...

THESE ARE THE ARROWS OF PEACEFUL DEATH, TO HELP THOSE WHO ARE FATED TO DIE PASS WITHOUT PAIN.

ONLY SPECIAL-RANK ANGELS HAVE THEM.

KNITTING

HUH? YES IT DOES.

THERE ARE ARROWS TO KILL PEOPLE?!

IT MAKES NO SENSE!!

YOU'RE KIDDING! WHY WOULD ANGELS HAVE SOMETHING LIKE THIS?!

YOU CAN USE THESE TO GET YOUR MONEY BACK...

...AND THE PEOPLE WHO TORMENTED YOU WILL BE NO MORE.

...

RIGHT?

WILL THIS MAKE YOU HAPPY, MIRAI?

WILL YOU BE DELIGHTED?

WHAT DO YOU THINK? DOES THIS WORK BETTER?

I'M GRATEFUL TO YOU FOR SAVING ME.

YOU TAUGHT ME THAT, NASSE.

IF YOU DIE, YOU CAN'T BE HAPPY.

WELL... IF THAT'S WHAT YOU WANT...

...

I CAN USE THE RED ARROW TO MAKE MY UNCLE TURN HIMSELF IN AND PAY FOR HIS CRIMES.

BUT I DON'T NEED THIS WHITE ARROW THAT MAKES PEOPLE DIE.

H-HEY! IT'S TOO LATE FOR TODAY...

THEN LET'S GO AND MAKE HIM CONFESS!

...

...

TOMORROW'S THE DEADLINE FOR THE SECONDARY APPLICATIONS TO HIGH SCHOOL. I'LL DO IT AFTER THAT.

I THOUGHT THAT WOULD MAKE MIRAI HAPPY.

...

BEEP

HUH?

NASSE, WHAT'S THIS...?

?

TOPIC
TONM
FIVE W

プロテイン

AN ANGEL!

…

TWO DAYS AGO IT WAS REPORTED THAT HE WAS IN RELATIONSHIPS WITH ACTRESS ERIKO MINAMIKAWA, CENTERFOLD MODEL MOYU MAESHIMA, AND BEACH VOLLEYBALL PLAYER YUKI KOTANI...

COMEDIAN TONMA RODRIGUEZ IS BACK IN THE NEWS FOR HIS ROMANTIC EXPLOITS.

...AND NOW IT SEEMS WE CAN ADD SHOGI PLAYER MII YAMADA AND FASHION MODEL MOMOKO KANISAWA TO THE RANKS.

Kanisawa

Mii Yamad

TAKE A LOOK AT THE PRESS CONFERENCE.

YES.

THIS COMEDIAN'S OBVIOUSLY GOT ONE.

YEP, I'VE GOT THE SECRET TO BEING A HIT WITH THE LADIES... YOU'LL HAVE TO REFER TO ME AS A "PLAYER-COMEDIAN" FROM NOW ON.

AND YOU'RE GOING OUT WITH ALL FIVE AT ONCE?

NOT EVERYONE CAN SEE THAT GUY... RIGHT?

RIGHT. JUST LIKE THE WINGS AND ARROWS, ONLY OTHER GOD CANDIDATES CAN SEE ANGELS.

INDEED. WITH RED ARROWS, IT WOULD BE EASY TO CONTROL THOSE FIVE WOMEN.

AND THIS COMEDIAN IS ONE OF THEM...

GOD CANDIDATES ...

IT LOOKS LIKE WE HAVE AN INTERVIEW WITH MS. KANISAWA HERE.

I THOUGHT IT WAS JUST AN UNSUCCESSFUL COMEDIAN TRYING TO GAIN FAME WITH A STUPID PUBLICITY STUNT, BUT THE WOMEN HAVE ALL ADMITTED TO IT.

WHY, IT'S SIMPLY APPALLING. FIVE-TIMING, RIGHT IN PUBLIC!

Momoko Kanisawa

Miji Yamada

AND I LOVE HIM MORE THAN ANYONE TOO.

HE SAYS HE LOVES ME MOST OF ALL.

YES... WE ARE IN A RELATIONSHIP.

I GUESS I'D SAY...

IT SEEMS THAT MANY PEOPLE WANT TO USE THEM THIS WAY.

THIS IS HOW HE CHOOSES TO USE THE ARROWS...?

...

THAT'S WHERE YOU LAUGH, PEOPLE!

HA HA HA

...THAT ALL THE WOMEN IN THE WORLD BELONG TO ME.

IT'S LIKE I'M ALREADY GOD!

?

THIRTY-THREE DAYS?

IT SEEMS MR. RODRIGUEZ WILL SPEND HIS 33 DAYS BEING LOVED... THAT'S A VALID WAY OF USING HIS TOOLS.

THERE ARE NO RULES ABOUT HOW TO USE THE TOOLS...

BUT THEY WOULDN'T CHOOSE SOMEONE WHO USES THEM LIKE THIS TO BE GOD, RIGHT?

YOU CAN ONLY SHOOT SOMEONE WITH AN ARROW ONCE! OTHERWISE THE 33-DAY LIMIT MEANS NOTHING.

YEAH, SO CAN'T YOU JUST SHOOT THEM AGAIN?

I TOLD YOU THAT THE ARROWS WILL BRING YOU LOVE FOR 33 DAYS.

33 DAYS

I SEE... SO YOU CAN ONLY HAVE THEIR DEVOTION FOR 33 DAYS...

...THEN YOU NEED TO TRULY MAKE THEM LOVE YOU DURING THOSE 33 DAYS.

IF YOU WANT THAT LOVE TO LAST FOREVER...

...

OKAY, MR. SATO, WE GET IT.

HE'S CLEARLY A TERRIBLE PERSON! I'M A MUCH NICER MAN THAN--

HOW DOES A GUY LIKE THIS GET ALL THESE BABES?

IS THERE ANY WAY TO SAVE THEM?

I FEEL SORRY FOR THEM...

HUH?

THERE IS.

?

HA HA HA

I FEEL SORRY FOR THE WOMEN HE SHOOTS WITH HIS ARROWS.

AND THERE'S NO WAY TO PROTECT AGAINST THEM?

OH, SORRY!

YOU DIDN'T.

DIDN'T I TELL YOU WHEN I ASKED IF YOU WANTED WINGS OR ARROWS?

THE WINGS ARE FASTER THAN THE ARROWS!

THE ARROW WILL ALWAYS STRIKE TRUE-- OUTSIDE OF ONE EXCEPTION.

SO... IT'S NOT POSSIBLE FOR NORMAL PEOPLE TO GET AWAY.

THE ARROWS WON'T BE ABLE TO CATCH UP IF THE WINGS HELP YOU ESCAPE.

...

AH...

TV

HUFF!

HUFF!

HUFF!

HUFF!

HUFF!

SQUISH

OOOH...

AAAH!

I CAN'T GET ENOUGH OF THIS! DOIN' IT WITH THE HOTTEST CHICKS IN THE COUNTRY, DAY AND NIGHT!

AND I LOVE THIS SCHOOL UNIFORM COSPLAY! IT'S THE BEST!!

HUFF!

HUFF!

PLEASE, BABY...

TELL THEM YOU'RE WITH ME TOO!

AHN!

AAAH!

HUFF!

HUFF!

HUFF...

HUFF!

HUFF!

KWITING

I SWEAR,

THESE ANGEL ARROWS ARE THE BEST!

FORGET BEING A STUPID COMEDIAN!

ALL AT MY COM-MAND !!

WITH THESE, I CAN HAVE ANY WOMAN I WANT!

TELL THEM ABOUT ME!

ME TOOO!

ME TOO ...

HUFF!

HUFF!

COME ON, YOU KNOW IDOL SINGERS CAN'T BE IN RELATION-SHIPS! THEY'LL KICK YOU OUT!

HUFF!

HUFF!

MY ULTIMATE DREAM IS ALL 48 AT ONCE! WHY DOES THIS STUPID THING ONLY WORK ON 14 AT A TIME?

WHO SHOULD I GO AFTER NEXT? AMK? NO, SCK!

DAMN IT!

RODDY ...!

OH, ROD...

MASTER RODRIGUEZ ...

HUH?

CLICK

FLIP

ZSH

WHO THE HELL ARE YOU...?

KNI

!

NG

ANGEL ARROWS ?!

WELL, YOU GOT THE WRONG CAR.

WHAT'S WITH THE COS-TUME? YOU FILMING SOME-THING?

KWIN NG

HUH? WHITE ...?

HEY... DON'T POINT IT AT ME!

!

YOU TOO, HUH ...?

SHH

?!

HAK

...

WWW

SO HE ONLY HAD RED...

NO

KM III

OH.

HHHH

AH...

WHA...

AH!

WHAT ARE WE DOING HERE?

OH MY GOD!

AAAAAAAAH!!

PATHETIC VIRGIN AMATEUR.

BAH!

JUST BECAUSE YOU HAVE NO SUCCESS WITH THE LADIES DOESN'T MEAN YOU SHOULD IGNORE RIGHT AND WRONG.

SHI

WA

AAAH! THEY WON'T LET ME BE AN IDOL AFTER THIS...

WHY WOULD I BE WITH A CREEP LIKE HIM...?

EEEK!

NOW I JUST NEED TO STUDY UNTIL THE DAY OF THE EXAM.

I SUB-MITTED MY APPLICATION.

NEW APPLICANTS HERE

WOW, YOU REALLY *ARE* PRINCIPLED!

I WANT TO GET IN ON MY OWN MERIT.

YOU DON'T NEED TO STUDY! JUST SHOOT ONE OF THE SCHOOL'S BIG SHOTS WITH A RED ARROW.

YEP! SAKI HANAKAGO, YOUR CHILDHOOD FRIEND. ♡

NASSE, YOU KNOW ABOUT MY CRUSH?

BUT I BET YOU'D RATHER SHOOT SOMEONE ELSE AT SCHOOL WITH A RED ARROW, HUH?

!

YOU PICKED THIS SCHOOL BECAUSE *SHE'S* GOING HERE, RIGHT?

ZSHH

TON-ROD'S DEAD?!

WELL, I'M NOT GOING TO USE AN ARROW FOR THAT...

AWW, C'MON!

IT'S TRUE! HE JUST UP AND DIED!

NO WAY!

SUDDEN DEATH...

THAT'S HILARIOUS! SERVES HIM RIGHT!

WOW, KARMA!

BoltSand 4G 11:09 100%

news.noonco.●●pj

ニュース

COMEDIAN TONMA RODRIGUEZ(38) DIES IN TV STATION PARKING GARAGE

Posted 10:38, March 17, 2015

According to a press announcement from his talent agency on March 17, the comedian Tonma Rodriguez (38) died in the Sakura TV parking garage on the night of the 16th.
The cause of death is still unknown. His funeral and wake will be held privately.
Speculation is rampant about the

WAS HE... MURDERED?

THE SUDDEN DEATH OF A GOD-CANDIDATE ...

OUT OF THE RUNNING ALREADY?

JUST AFTER YOU WERE CHOSEN TO THE 13.

LUTA.

SHA

THE ONE WHO KILLED HIM, HOWEVER...

JUST AS I HOPED. I AM GLAD TO BE DONE WITH THIS QUICKLY.

THAT IS A MUCH MORE INTERESTING PERSON...

A

TING

KTING

TING

KTING

KILL 11 MORE, AND I'LL AUTOMATICALLY BE GOD...

YES. I BELIEVE THIS TO BE THE MOST DIRECT PATH TO SUCCESS.

KILLING

HA HA HA... QUITE FASCINATING, REALLY.

JUST KILL THEM WITH A WHITE ARROW.

#3 Hero of Justice

WHOOSH

WHOA, YOU SURE THIS ISN'T A SIZE TOO BIG FOR ME?

GRIK

GRIK

SURE.

DON'T TELL ANYONE YOU GAVE ME THIS SUIT.

JUST ABOUT. THERE ARE EXTRAS IN STORAGE, SO SAY THE WORD IF YOU NEED ANOTHER ONE.

ARE BLUE AND YELLOW THE SAME SIZE?

POP

ZSH

ONE MONTH FROM NOW, AT THREE IN THE MORNING, COME ALONE TO THIS ROOFTOP AGAIN.

AND NOW, I WILL WEAR THIS SUIT AND BECOME A GOD.

SHIN

AAA

POOH!

HE REALLY FLEW AWAY.

WHOA!

APRIL 6,
SHINJUKU

...

THIRTEEN
...

THIRTEEN
CANDIDATES
...

WHITE
ARROWS
...

WHITE
...

AND WHO
THE OTHER
CANDIDATES ARE
WILL DETERMINE
MIRAI'S FUTURE,
I SUPPOSE...

RODRIGUEZ WAS
KILLED WITH A
WHITE ARROW.
IT'S THE ONLY
EXPLANATION...

I-ISN'T IT GREAT THAT YOU GOT INTO THAT SCHOOL...?

YOU REALLY ACED THAT TEST. YOU'RE SO SMART, MIRAI!

NO, I'M NOT.

HEY...

UM...

IT'S SO MUCH FUN!

YAHOOOOOO!

AHA HA HA HA!

HEEHEEHEEE

YOU GOT YOUR MONEY BACK, BOUGHT AN APARTMENT...

...AND NOW YOU'RE SHOPPING FOR THE START OF YOUR NEW LIFE!

IT'S TRUE! I NEVER EVEN THOUGHT OF USING THE RED ARROWS TO MAKE YOUR UNCLE TURN HIMSELF IN.

...

LIKE YOU SAID, YOU'VE GOT A PLACE TO CALL HOME, FOOD TO EAT, AND SCHOOL TO ATTEND...

YOU'RE PUTTING EVERYTHING TOGETHER BIT BY BIT...

...GROWING CLOSER TO NORMAL HAPPINESS.

I'M SO HAPPY FOR YOU! ♡

RIGHT?

AREN'T THINGS GOING *GREAT*?

RIGHT...?

IT'S BEEN BOTHERING ME TOO...

YEAH... THAT'S THE ISSUE.

I MIGHT HAVE THOUGHT THAT WAY... IF IT WASN'T FOR TONMA RODRIGUEZ'S SUDDEN DEATH.

YEAH. RIGHT.

?

NEO HITASHI TOSHIRA SHARB SUNY

NABI

MURMUR

MURMUR

GIGA BLDG.

GIGA VISION

GIGA BLDG.

METROPOLMAN

20℃

那覇…晴れ 25℃

新宿GIGA駐車場…ただいま

MRMR

MRMR

MORE PRECISELY, A HERO BORROWING THE COSTUME OF METRO-POLIMAN.

YES, IT'S METRO-POLIMAN.

13℃ 前橋…くもりのち晴れ 13℃

THE REAL METROPOLIMAN IS STEPPING UP AND TAKING NAMES!

A COMMER-CIAL?

METROPOLIMAN? IS IT A RERUN?

"REAL"?!

YOU DIDN'T SEE THE VARIETY SHOWS THIS AFTERNOON?

?

MURMUR

EVEN THE POLICE AND GOVERNMENT HAVE CONFIRMED HIM AS A HERO.

AND IT'S TOO LATE FOR APRIL FOOL'S...

?

MURMUR

I STILL CAN'T BELIEVE IT.

I DIDN'T THINK HE WAS REAL.

I WILL CONTINUE TO FIGHT EVIL AND PROTECT THE PEACE.

CHILDREN ALL OVER JAPAN-- NO, THE WORLD!-- ARE DELIGHTED TO LEARN THAT METROPOLIMAN IS REAL.

GIGA VISION

METROPOLIMAN

NOW HE'S MAKING A LIVE APPEARANCE ON THE EVENING NEWS.

...

I'M GRATEFUL FOR THEIR ACKNOW-LEDGMENT.

...BUT THE POLICE DEPARTMENT HAS OFFICIALLY GIVEN YOU AN AWARD AND EXPRESSED INTEREST IN YOUR FUTURE ACTIONS.

IT SEEMS THAT MANY PEOPLE STILL THINK TODAY'S EVENTS ARE FICTIONAL...

NO WAY! THEY'RE NOT REAL!

A SUPERHERO IN THE HUMAN WORLD?

IS THAT... REAL?

AS WE GO, I'D LIKE TO ASK YOU SOME QUESTIONS, METROPOLIMAN.

POLIMAN

EARANCE

LET'S REPLAY THE END OF TODAY'S ATTEMPTED BANK ROBBERY SO THE PEOPLE AT HOME CAN SEE.

GIG

POP

YOU CAME OUT OF NOWHERE!

WELL, YES.

THIS IS THE FIRST SIGHTING OF METRO-POLIMAN IN OUR FOOTAGE.

OOOH!

OHHH!

!

AH...

JUST LIKE OUT OF A SUPER-HERO MOVIE!

THAT'S SO COOL!

WINGS !!

ANOTHER GOD CANDIDATE ?!

YOU SEEM TO BE SPEAKING WITH THE BLOCKADE OFFICERS...

OH... OF COURSE! YOU'RE EXPLAINING TO THEM THAT YOU'RE A REAL HERO!

が単独首位に浮上。中京クラ

YES. I AM DEEPLY REGRETFUL NOW THAT I WAITED FOR POLICE APPROVAL BEFORE LEAPING INTO ACTION.

THE ROBBERS CLAIMED THEY WOULD KILL A HOSTAGE EVERY FIVE MINUTES UNTIL THEY HAD THEIR CASH AND AN ESCAPE HELICOPTER, AND AT THIS POINT, THEY'D ALREADY KILLED TWO.

BECAUSE IT TOOK ME TEN MINUTES TO CONVINCE THEM TO TRUST ME, WE LOST ANOTHER TWO HOSTAGES DURING THAT TIME.

I AM SORRY FOR THAT.

OH.

POLICE

HE SEEMS A LITTLE SLOW, BUT AT LEAST HE'S USING HIS WINGS AND ARROWS FOR GOOD.

VISION

文部科学省が大丸中製薬に厳重注意。遺伝子組み換えウイルス

...

...

HE SHOULD HAVE JUST USED THEM RIGHT AWAY, RATHER THAN TALKING.

AND HE USED THE RED ARROWS TO TURN THEM TO HIS SIDE ANYWAY.

FROM THIS POINT FORWARD WE ALSO HAVE DRONE FOOTAGE OF THE EVENT.

AH, THIS IS WHERE IT STARTS.

MIZUHO TOKYO ORION BANK

CONVENIENCE STORE

HEY! YOU LISTENING?!

YOTSUBA TOKYO ORION BANK

ANY CLOSER, AND WE'LL SHOOT!

WHAT ARE YOU, AN IDIOT?

CLANK

I'LL BE HONEST-- THIS GAVE ME CHILLS.

DESPITE THE WARNINGS, YOU HEAD STRAIGHT TO THE DOOR.

THANK YOU.

CLANK

CLANK

AAH! HE'S GOT A GUN!

REALLY?!

HE'S SHOOTING!

EEEEK!

BANG!

YOTSUBA BANK

NO PARKING

AND YOU'RE GONE!

HOLY CRAP!!

...AND JUST BARELY DODGED IT!

NO! YOU MOVED FASTER THAN THE BULLET...

YEAH.

THIS TIME HE STUCK THE ARROW IN IMMEDIATELY.

BUT MY FAILURE WAS IN THE NEXT MOMENT ...

MRMR

YES, AS SOON AS I SAID, "YOU CANNOT MATCH ME, SURRENDER YOURSELF."

IT LOOKS LIKE HE JUST SUBMITS RIGHT AWAY.

TSUBA TO
ORION BAN

BAM

IT'S A SHOCKING SCENE.

THE RINGLEADER OPENED FIRE WITH A SHOTGUN, IGNORING HIS COMPANION...

WHOA!

OH SHIT!

THAT'S HOR-RIBLE!

...AND ALLOWING THE LIFE OF THAT ROBBER TO BE LOST JUST WHEN HE WAS READY TO TURN HIMSELF IN.

I REGRET THAT SORRY DISPLAY OF COWARDICE IN LEAPING OUT OF THE WAY...

THE RINGLEADER WENT BACK INSIDE...

IF WITHIN RANGE.

...THE ARROW CAN'T MISS, RIGHT?

AS LONG AS YOU CAN SEE THE TARGET...

YOTSUBA TOKYO ORION BANK

AND SO YOU DECIDED TO CHARGE BACK IN THROUGH THE FRONT DOOR?

...AND THAT'S WHEN MY ANGER REACHED ITS PEAK.

NO PARKING

YES!

ゴゴゴ…

PON

PON

PON

!

A WHITE ARROW !!

A VISION

KA

WOOO

THE POLICE HAD AUTHORIZED "SHOOT TO KILL" ALREADY, AND MOST IMPORTANTLY, THE HOSTAGES WERE RELEASED.

YES... I'M JUST FRUSTRATED THAT WE SUFFERED SO MANY LOSSES.

...IS THIS THE ONE WHO KILLED RODRIGUEZ...?

...BUT TO ROUND US OUT, CAN YOU JUST SAY WHERE YOU'VE COME FROM, AND WHY YOU'RE HERE?

IT'S CLEAR TO ALL THAT YOU ARE A TRUE HERO, METROPOLIMAN ...

WHERE... AND WHY?

HEH!

BUT SPECIFI-CALLY...

FOR THE SAKE OF WORLD PEACE, FOR ONE THING...

...SENT HERE TO DEFEAT 12 FOES.

I AM A MESSENGER FROM HEAVEN...

W-WHAT DOES HE THINK HE'S DOING...?

FOES?

MEANING ...

I HAVE ALREADY DEFEATED ONE, AND I SHALL NOT SKULK AND HIDE!!

HE'S "ALREADY DEFEATED ONE"... MEANING RODRIGUEZ?

OH MAN... HE'S TOTALLY INSANE!!

MRMR

GIGA VISION

MRMR

YOU REMAINING 11 MAY COME AFTER ME AT ANY TIME!!

MUR MUR

WELL, HE'S A REAL SUPERHERO, SO IT MUST BE TRUE, RIGHT?

YIKES...

WHAT DOES HE MEAN, "FOES"? ALIENS OR SOMETHING?

DON'T WORRY, HE'S SUPER TOUGH, AND HE ALREADY BEAT ONE...

MUR

NO, HE SAID "DEFEAT," NOT "KILL."

NAH, I DON'T BUY IT. THAT'S TOTALLY SOME TV STUNT.

HE WOULDN'T JUST SLAUGHTER AN UNRESISTING PERSON...

YOU AREN'T JUST TRYING TO CONVINCE YOURSELF OF THAT, ARE YOU, NASSE?

Y-YEAH, TOTALLY! THE GUY HE KILLED HERE WAS A BAD GUY! FOR SURE!

NABI

GIGA VISION

GIGA BLDG.

BACK AWAY FROM ME, NASSE!

!

...

UH, OKAY!

NOW!

SHWIP

...BASICALLY ANNOUNCES THAT I'M A CANDIDATE...

STANDING AROUND WITH AN ANGEL...

THEN AGAIN, I DON'T KNOW WHERE HIS ANGEL IS.

...I'D BE ABLE TO SEE IT...

NO... I CAN'T BE TOO CAREFUL.

MMF

OH, RIGHT, IT'S ALL LIVE. SO HE CAN'T BE WATCHING ME NOW...

METROPOLIMAN LIVE APPEARANCE

BUT IF THERE IS AN ANGEL HERE...

MAYBE I'M THINKING TOO HARD...

WAIT... THERE ARE SECURITY CAMERAS ALL OVER THE CITY...

...

I CAN'T AFFORD TO DIE!!

VISION

METROPOLIMAN LIVE APPEARANCE

LIVE

...BUT THERE'S SOMETHING ABOUT THAT GUY...

OOH, HE'S GONNA FLY!

I KNEW HE WAS REAL.

...

VISION

METROPOLIMAN LIVE APPEARANCE

POH!

THIS IS GOODBYE ON THE ROOF FROM METRO-POLIMAN.

OOOH!

HE'S REALLY FLYING!

PHEW ...

FWUF...

YOU LOOKED VERY GOOD ON TV.

SHWIIK

THINK SO?

CLANK

SHUNK

SURE IT'S NOT TOO BIG FOR ME?

IT'S ALL LOOSE.

FLAP!

SCHOOL STARTS TOMORROW...

IT'S SO COOL THAT WHEN I'M NOT A HERO, I'M JUST A NORMAL HIGH SCHOOLER.

...A MESSENGER FROM HEAVEN, SENT HERE TO DEFEAT 12 FOES.

I AM...

KAKEHASHI

22:05

METROPOLIMAN

TODAY'S BIG STATEMENT

I HAVE ALREADY DEFEATED ONE...

...AND I SHALL NOT SKULK AND HIDE!!

THIS IS ALL THE NEWS WILL TALK ABOUT.

22:06

YOU REMAINING 11 MAY COME AFTER ME AT ANY TIME!!

ROLL---

0:02
Thurs, April 7

TWELVE FOES...

...

...

IT'S PRETTY CLEAR, RIGHT? WITH THE FACT THAT HE ALREADY BEAT ONE...

!

Y... YEAH.

HE'S PLANNING ON BEING GOD...

...AND WILL KILL ANYONE WHO STANDS IN HIS WAY!

THAT'S WHAT HE'S SAYING...

WI NG

BUT I DON'T EVEN WANT TO BE GOD.

IF I SAID, "GO RIGHT AHEAD," WOULD HE SPARE MY LIFE?

...

NASSE.

!

REMOVE ME FROM MY CANDIDACY FOR GOD.

I DON'T WANT TO DIE...

YOU ALREADY SAVED MY LIFE ONCE.

HE MENTIONED 12 FOES, SO HE'S CLEARLY A CANDIDATE.

I DON'T WANT TO BE A CANDIDATE.

THAT'S NOT GOING TO MAKE ME HAPPY...

...

SORRY...

I DON'T CARE. YOU CAN HAVE THEM.

BEING REMOVED FROM CANDIDACY MEANS TURNING IN YOUR WINGS AND ARROWS...

THAT'S NOT WHAT I MEAN...

IF YOU GIVE BACK YOUR WINGS AND ARROWS, YOU'LL DIE.

HUH?

DIE...

PUT ANOTHER WAY, THE ONLY REASON YOU'RE ALIVE NOW IS BECAUSE YOU ACCEPTED THE WINGS AND ARROWS OF CANDIDACY...

GIVING THEM UP WOULD MEAN GIVING UP ON LIFE...

I GAVE YOU THOSE WINGS AND ARROWS TO BE YOUR HOPE TO LIVE.

THAT MAKES SENSE ...

YEAH, FIGURES ...

...

...

GOD SAID...

...

IN OTHER WORDS, TO BE A CANDIDATE, YOU MUST BE DISILLUSIONED, OR WANT TO CHANGE THE WORLD IN SOME WAY.

...THAT ONLY HUMAN BEINGS WHO HAD LOST THEIR HOPE TO LIVE COULD BE CHOSEN.

SORRY.

I JUST WANTED TO KNOW IF I COULD BE REMOVED FROM CANDIDACY OR NOT...

I DON'T CARE ABOUT PHILOSOPHICAL STUFF LIKE THAT.

...

YOU SAVED ME, AND I USED ARROWS TO STAY IN THE HOTEL...

...AND FORCED MY UNCLE TO TURN HIMSELF IN.

IT WOULD BE TOO CONVENIENT TO GIVE THEM UP NOW.

UMM...

...

NO, I'M SORRY.

NO.

SO A FIRST-RANK ANGEL HAS ONLY RED ARROWS ...?

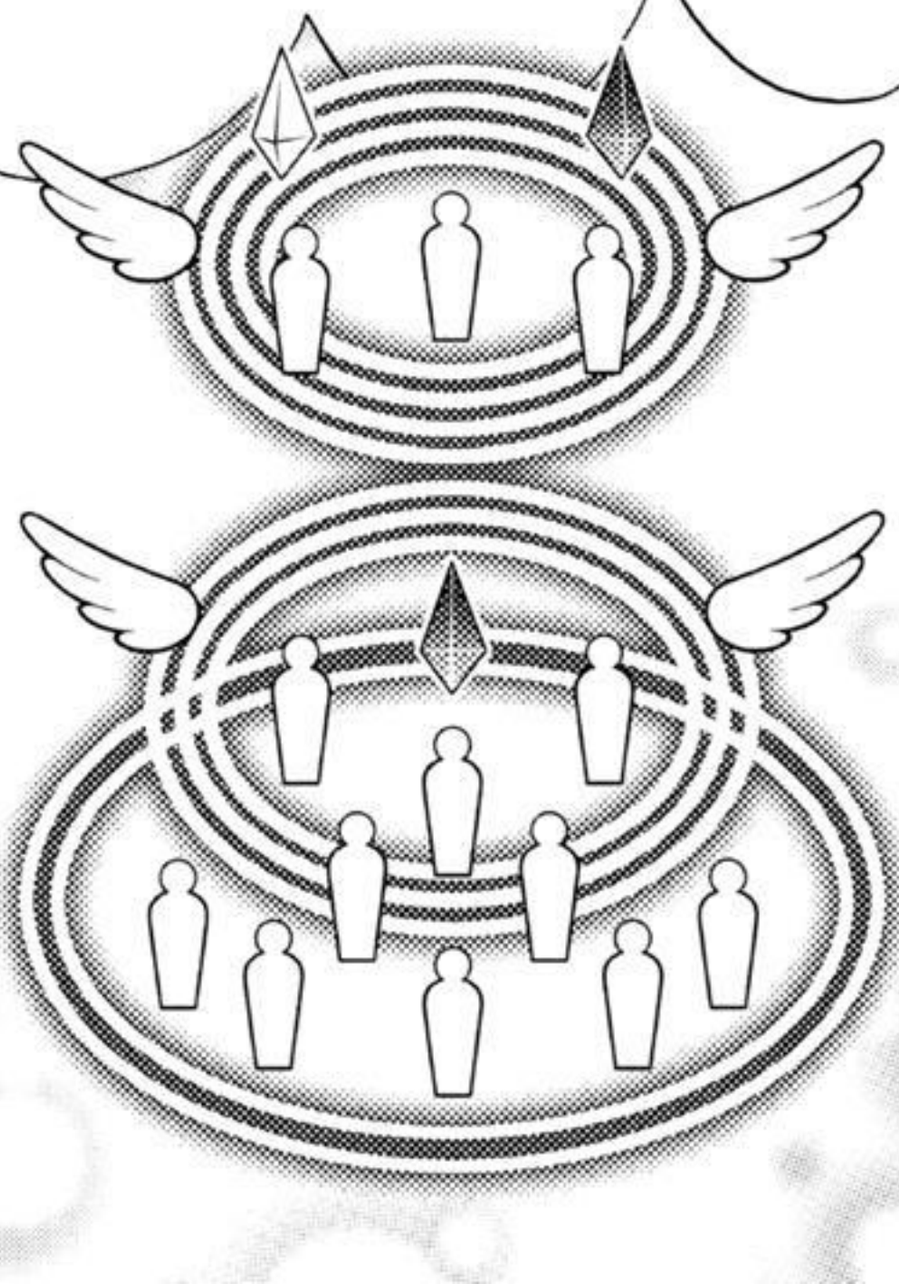
I KNOW SPECIAL-RANK ANGELS HAVE WINGS, RED ARROWS AND WHITE ARROWS, AND CAN GIVE THEM TO A CANDIDATE...

...AND A SPECIAL RANK CAN BE DEMOTED TO FIRST OR SECOND.

BUT A FIRST RANK CAN ASCEND TO A SPECIAL RANK...

THREE, I THINK...

YOU'RE RIGHT ABOUT SPECIAL RANK, BUT FIRST RANK HAVE WINGS AND RED ARROWS, WHILE SECOND RANK CAN CHOOSE EITHER OF THE TWO.



HOW MANY OF THE THIRTEEN ANGELS ARE SPECIAL RANK?

IN ANY CASE, THE BIGGEST PROBLEM FOR METROPOLIMAN WILL BE OTHER GOD CANDIDATES WITH SPECIAL-RANK ANGELS.

...

MIRAI.

MAYBE YOU SHOULDN'T GO OUT IN PUBLIC...

I WAS JUST THINKING THE SAME THING...

YEAH. "TODAY," NOW, ACTUALLY...

AND TOMORROW'S THE START OF SCHOOL...

IT'S TOO BAD, JUST WHEN YOU'D GOTTEN INTO HIGH SCHOOL...

EVERY HUMAN BEING LIVES FOR THE SAKE OF BEING HAPPIER...

HUH...

...TO SHUT MYSELF UP IN HERE OUT OF FEAR OF HIM?

IS THE BEST CHOICE ...

WHEN I DECIDED TO DIE, THAT'S BECAUSE IT WAS THE HAPPIEST CHOICE FOR ME AT THE TIME...

NO MATTER THE CIRCUMSTANCES, WE CHOOSE THE OPTION THAT MAKES US HAPPIER, AND ACT...

FREEDOM.

OR DO I LIVE WITHOUT FEAR, AND BRAVE THE OUT-DOORS?

THE ABILITY TO GO WHEREVER YOU PLEASE, NOT SHACKLED TO YOUR HOME LIKE A SLAVE!

IT'S SO BEAUTIFUL.

WHAT DID NASSE KEEP ME ALIVE TO DO...?

I'M ALIVE.

I'M ALIVE.

...TO SCHOOL...

I'LL GO...

HUH?

HUH?

UH... RIGHT...

HOW AM I GOING TO BE HAPPY STUCK IN THE SAME PLACE LIKE THIS?

...

IF YOU'RE NOT WITH ME, NO ONE WILL KNOW I'M A CANDIDATE.

IT'S FINE...

I WANT YOU TO BE HAPPY... BUT IF THERE'S ANY DANGER, YOU SHOULDN'T...

B-BUT WE SHOULD AT LEAST LAY LOW AND KEEP AN EYE OUT...

I CAN JUST BLEND INTO THE CROWD AT SCHOOL...

...AND I CAN COLLECT INTEL THAT WAY.

AS LONG AS I'M NOT SEEN USING WINGS OR ARROWS, I'LL BE FINE.

GRP

I DON'T WANT METROPOLIMAN TO STEAL MY RIGHT TO BE HAPPY.

EVEN IN THE MIDST OF THIS DANGER, I HAVE TO FIND THE ROUTE TO HAPPINESS.

WHEN YOU PUT IT THAT WAY...

MAYBE YOU'RE RIGHT.

TRY NOT TO GO OUTSIDE IF YOU CAN HELP IT, NASSE.

OKAY. AND IF I DO LEAVE, I'LL MAKE SURE THEY DON'T KNOW I LEFT FROM HERE.

AND KEEP YOUR DISTANCE FROM ME.

BUT IF YOU NEED ME, JUST CALL. I CAN BE THERE WITH EVEN THE TINIEST OF WHISPERS.

I GET IT.

OKAY.

UH... REALLY ...?

NOW THAT YOU'RE WEARING IT, I SEE THAT GOING TO SCHOOL WAS THE RIGHT CHOICE.

YOU LOOK GOOD IN THAT UNIFORM.

...

ONCE YOU GET TO SCHOOL, MAKE SURE TO JAB SAKI WITH A RED ARROW.

WHAT DO YOU MEAN, "HUH"? THAT'S WHY YOU PICKED THAT SCHOOL.

HUH?

YES, BECAUSE YOU LIKE HER.

NO... I JUST THOUGHT IT WOULD BE NICE IF WE WERE AT THE SAME SCHOOL.

W-WELL... YEAH...

SO... THAT'S WHAT THAT ARROW IS FOR! I'M SURE SHE'LL FALL IN LOVE WITH YOU FOR REAL.

I SAID IT BEFORE.

ALL ANGELS ARE TAUGHT THAT THE MOST CORRECT WAY TO USE THE RED ARROW IS TO PRICK THE PERSON YOU LOVE MOST.

THEY'RE CUPID'S ARROWS, MEANT TO ENSURE YOUR WOULD-BE LOVER FINALLY SEES YOU FOR WHO YOU ARE.

...

I WAS REALLY ON THE FENCE ABOUT GOING TO SCHOOL TO BEGIN WITH.

I DON'T KNOW...

I DON'T WANT TO USE THEM *NOW*...

YOU DON'T WANT TO USE THEM?

NO.

...BUT ULTIMATELY, RODRIGUEZ DIED.

ANGELS MIGHT PROCESS HUMAN DEATH IN DIFFERENT TERMS...

B-BECAUSE HE WAS BEING TOO GREEDY...

?

THAT'S NOT WHAT I MEAN.

...AND I WASN'T REALLY THINKING ABOUT THE ARROWS.

THAT WAS A HARD ENOUGH DECISION ON ITS OWN...

I FEEL LIKE USING AN ARROW REQUIRES A TON OF THOUGHT... AT THE VERY LEAST, I DON'T REALLY WANT TO USE THEM NOW.

A PERSON WHO USED ARROWS WAS KILLED.

AND I SAW SOMEONE KILLING OTHERS WITH ARROWS.

MY AUNT DIED AFTER I USED MY OWN ARROW ON HER...

AFTER ALL OF THAT, DID YOU THINK I'D JUST WHIP ONE OUT AND USE IT IF YOU SAID, "IT'LL MAKE A GIRL LIKE YOU FOR 33 DAYS"?

...

I SEE ...

MAYBE I'D SPEND MORE TIME CONSIDERING IT, IF IT ACTUALLY MADE HER LOVE ME FOREVER...

I GUESS IT'S NOT AS SIMPLE AS I THOUGHT...

I'M OPENING THE DOOR, SO DON'T STAND WHERE YOU CAN BE SEEN FROM OUTSIDE.

WELL, I'M OFF.

OH, RIGHT! HAVE A GOOD DAY.

OF COURSE, IF HE SHOWS UP, I'D USE A RED ARROW ON HIM WITHOUT HESITATION.

KCHIK

...I DON'T WANT METROPOLIMAN TO SEE ME USING AN ARROW.

BE-SIDES ...

MURMUR

MURMUR

HOPE I DON'T GET PICKED ON BY THE OLDER KIDS.

WELL, HERE WE GO WITH SCHOOL AGAIN...

MURMUR

MURMUR

HA HA!

MURMUR

A FRESH START... THIS IS MY NEXT THREE YEARS...

FIRST, I'LL BE A NORMAL HIGH SCHOOLER...

AN...
ANGEL!

WING

BUT WHY WOULD IT BE HERE...?

OH CRAP...

IS IT METROPOLIMAN ...?!

...

...

NO WAY TO KNOW I'M A CANDIDATE...

I'M NOT WITH NASSE.

SETTLE DOWN...

ZSH

I

I

I

ZSH

ZSH

PASS BY NORMALLY...

DON'T MAKE EYE CONTACT...

ドンッ

ドンッ

……

ドンッ

YOU SAW ME AND REACTED.

TOO LATE.

...

YOU'RE REALLY SWEATING.

SPIN

DIDN'T THINK THERE WAS ANOTHER GOD CANDIDATE SO CLOSE BY.

C...

CLOSE BY...? WHO ARE YOU WITH...?

FEELING NERVOUS?

WHAT'S THE MATTER?

ANOTHER STUDENT AT THIS SCHOOL...

...JUST LIKE YOU...

WHA--!

IT CAN'T BE YOUR FIRST TIME SEEING AN ANGEL.

RIGHT BEHIND YOU, IN FACT.

!

SAKI
...?!

HUH?
KAKE-
HASHI?

TO BE CONTINUED...

Tsugumi Ohba

Born in Tokyo, Tsugumi Ohba is the author of the hit series *Death Note* and *Bakuman。*.

Takeshi Obata

Takeshi Obata was born in 1969 in Niigata, Japan, and first achieved international recognition as the artist of the wildly popular *Shonen Jump* title *Hikaru no Go*, which won the 2003 Tezuka Osamu Cultural Prize: Shinsei "New Hope" Award and the 2000 Shogakukan Manga Award. He went on to illustrate the smash hit *Death Note* as well as the hugely successful manga *Bakuman。* and *All You Need Is Kill*.

PLATINVM END

VOLUME 1
SHONEN JUMP Manga Edition

°

STORY **T**sug**u**mi **Oh**b**a**
ART Ta**k**e s**h**i O b a **ta**

°

TRANSLATION Stephen Paul
TOUCH-UP ART & LETTERING James Gaubatz
DESIGN Shawn Carrico
EDITOR Alexis Kirsch

°

ORIGINAL COVER DESIGN Narumi Noriko

°

PLATINUM END © 2015 by Tsugumi Ohba, Takeshi Obata
All rights reserved.
First published in Japan in 2015 by SHUEISHA Inc., Tokyo.
English translation rights arranged by SHUEISHA Inc.

°

The stories, characters and incidents mentioned in this publication are entirely fictional.

°

No portion of this book may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means without written permission from the copyright holders.

°

Printed in the U.S.A.

°

Published by VIZ Media, LLC
P.O. Box 77010
San Francisco, CA 94107

°

10 9 8 7 6 5 4 3 2 1
First printing, October 2016

www.viz.com www.shonenjump.com

RATED M FOR MATURE
PARENTAL ADVISORY
PLATINUM END is rated M for Mature and is recommended for ages 18 and up. This volume contains suggestive themes.
ratings.viz.com

PLATINUM END 2

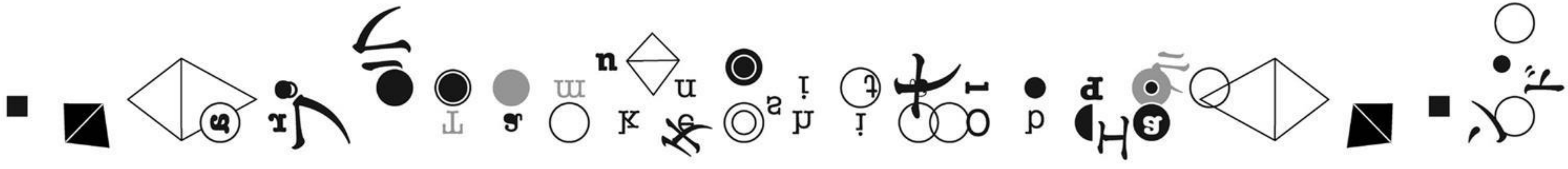
STORY
TSUGUMI OHBA

ART
TAKESHI OBATA

PLATINUM END

Takeshi Obata
ART

Tsugumi Ohba
STORY



2

CONTENTS

#4 Heart's Beloved
P3

#5 The Big Reveal
P69

#6 A Secret Chat
P139

#4 Heart's Beloved

I GOT HIT!

BUT I ALREADY LOVED SAKI TO BEGIN WITH, SO...

...

BA-BMP

GOOD. NOW HE'S CRAZY FOR SAKI.

BA-BMP

SAKI USED...

SHE'S A GOD CANDI-DATE TOO.

...A RED ARROW ON ME.

WAIT... I UNDERSTAND THAT I'VE BEEN PIERCED.

BA-BMP

SO NOTHING'S DIFF...

I LOVE HER...

I LOVE YOU.

KWIII

I'M MADLY IN LOVE...

I LIKE YOU, SAKI.

WHY ARE YOU MAKING THAT FACE?

WHY DO YOU LOOK SO GLOOMY?

WHY ...?

...

SAKI ...

I TOLD HER WHAT TO DO WHEN THIS SITUATION HAPPENED ...

SAKI, DO AS I TAUGHT YOU!

WHATEVER YOU WANT, AND I'LL DO IT!

SAY SOMETHING, ANYTHING!

KAKEHASHI, DO YOU HAVE WINGS? ...

SAKI!

YEAH, I DO.

GOOD, HE'S GOT THE WINGS.

KWIIIT

DO YOU REMEMBER WHERE I LIVE?

I LOVE YOU!

OF COURSE.

MY ROOM IS ON THE THIRD FLOOR.

YOU CAN GET IN THROUGH THE WINDOW-- JUST MAKE SURE NO ONE SEES YOU.

REALLY? I CAN GO IN?!

I'LL BE BACK AS SOON AS THE CEREMONY IS OVER.

WAIT

SAKI!

I'LL BE WAITING!

WHUP

SURE!

SAKI!

FLAP

...

WHAT IS THAT BOY'S ANGEL DOING, ANYWAY?

THEY OUGHT TO BE WATCHING OVER HIM FROM A DISTANCE.

SAKI ...

I LOVE YOU...

I LOVE YOU!!

TMP

ガシャ

BA-BUMP

BA-BUMP

BA-BUMP

OH SAKIooo

...WAITING FOR HER TO COME HOME...

I'M IN SAKI'S ROOM...

BA-BUMP

BA-BUMP

...WITH BLISS AT THE THOUGHT OF HER...

I'M JUST FILLED...

I CAN'T THINK OF ANYTHING ELSE RIGHT NOW.

!

THUMP

SAKI.

CLICK

HUH?

WE'RE IN THE SAME CLASS, KAKEHASHI.

HE'LL ANSWER JUST ABOUT ANY QUESTION YOU HAVE.

THE RED ARROW IS WORKING WELL.

REALLY?

THE SAME CLASS...

I LOVE YOU, SAKI!

YOU ASK, SAKI.

ANSWER HIM PLEASE, KAKEHASHI.

...

IS YOUR ANGEL A FIRST-RANK OR SECOND-RANK ANGEL?

SPECIAL?!

NEITHER. IT'S A SPECIAL RANK, APPARENTLY.

KWITING

YEAH...

I SAID I DIDN'T WANT THEM, THOUGH...

SAKI, ASK HIM...

...IF HE HAS WHITE ARROWS.

DO YOU HAVE WHITE ARROWS?

NO, I'M NOT!

HUH...? N-NO!

NO WAY...

ARE YOU METRO-POLIMAN?!

I WANT YOU TO BE HER SET OF WINGS.

SAKI HAS NO WINGS TO ESCAPE THE ARROWS.

...

NO, THAT WOULD HAVE BEEN TOO EASY.

ACTUALLY, MAYBE IT'S BETTER THAT HE'S NOT METROPOLI-MAN...

...

LISTEN TO ME, MIRAI KAKEHASHI.

WINGS?

...

SAKI!

SOME OF THE GOD CANDI-DATES ARE DANGEROUS. I WANT SAKI PROTECTED.

YES.

I WILL BECOME SAKI'S WINGS.

OF COURSE.

FIRST, PUT YOUR HANDS TOGETHER.

?

VERY GOOD.

THERE'S NO TELLING WHAT MIGHT HAPPEN AT ANY TIME.

WE OUGHT TO PRACTICE FLYING.

PRACTICE?

...

MAY I...

...TOUCH YOUR HAND?

BA-BMP

HER HAND ...

BA-BMP

SAKI'S FINGERS ...

WHOA!

BA-BMP

SHH...

BA-BMP

...AND WARM...

IT'S SO TINY AND SOFT...

FW E-E

E

E

E

THAT WILL BE YOUR LIFELINE.

CONNECT THE RINGS ON YOUR WRISTS.

WAIT

HUH? IT'S LIKE A DANCE.

LIKE THIS?

KSHUNK

NOW YOU WILL NOT SEPARATE UNLESS BOTH OF YOU WISH TO.

CIRCLE AROUND THE BACK AND HOLD HER.

UMM...

HMMF

OKAY, HERE WE GO.

FWUP

FWEEE

WOW...

IT'S JUST ME AND SAKI...

...ALONE IN THE VAST SKY TOGETHER...

SAKI...

YOU AREN'T SCARED?

NO.

FWOOSH

HUH?

CHEER UP, SAKI.

TELL YOU WHAT, I WANT TO SHOW YOU SOMETHING.

...

...

YEAH.

ゴゴゴ
!

REALLY, IF YOU HAVE PROBLEMS ON YOUR MIND...

...TELL ME. I WANT TO HELP.

I'LL DO ANYTHING TO MAKE YOU SMILE.

...

THANK YOU. BUT THIS IS MY OWN PROBLEM.

I'LL BE FINE...

I FEEL MUCH, MUCH BETTER.

I'M GLAD I GOT TO TALK TO YOU TODAY, THOUGH.

I'M GLAD ...

...

NOW WE CAN MAKE UP FOR SAKI'S LACK OF WINGS.

I'M GLAD.

IT SEEMS YOU FLEW QUITE WELL.

METROPOLIMAN NEWS.

VMMM

VMMM

METROPOLIMAN NEWS

Metropoliman Apprehends Knife-Wielding Man in Akihabara!

At around three o'clock this afternoon, Metropoliman appeared out of nowhere to stop Mochio Tokita (45), who was wielding a foot-long knife in Akihabara

YES... REVEL-- THAT'S MY ANGEL-- SAID I SHOULD KEEP TRACK OF HIM.

METRO-POLIMAN NEWS?

METROPOLIMAN CAUGHT A CRIMINAL THIS AFTERNOON, AND HE'LL MAKE A LIVE APPEARANCE ON SAKURA TV TONIGHT...

THIS METROPOLIMAN IS THE BIGGEST CAUSE FOR CONCERN AT THE MOMENT.

...

MY PHILOSOPHY IS...

THIS METROPOLIMAN PLAYS UP THE HERO ROLE, BUT HE CLEARLY INTENDS TO BECOME GOD BY KILLING ALL HIS OPPONENTS.

THE HUMAN WHO BECOMES GOD OUGHT TO BE DETERMINED BY DEBATE, WITH CHARACTER AND ACTIONS TAKEN INTO ACCOUNT.

...

SOMEONE ...

SOMEONE MUST CORRECT HIS WAYS.

SOON SAKI WILL BE MADE A TARGET...

HIS ANGEL IS SPECIAL RANK... HE HAS WHITE ARROWS.

NOT SAKI!

...

...AT SIX O'CLOCK!

I'LL BE AT SAKURA TV...

I CAN'T LET THAT HAPPEN!!

NO! SAKI CAN'T DIE!

SAKI!!

HUP!

IN A PINCH?

NO WORRIES. IN A PINCH...

KLAK

BUT IT WILL BE DANGEROUS ...

I'LL TAKE HIM DOWN WITH ME. ANYTHING FOR SAKI...

KWIT

NO, YOU WON'T.

ZZZSH

KAKE-HASHI ...

...

I GOT WORRIED BECAUSE YOU WERE SO LATE COMING HOME. WHAT ARE YOU DOING HERE...?

FWEE

N... NASSE?!

NASSE!

I HEARD FROM OUTSIDE THAT YOU GOT PIERCED BY A RED ARROW OF THE GIRL YOU'VE LOVED ALL ALONG. IT'S SUPPOSED TO BE THE OTHER WAY AROUND!

...

IT'S FINE. I'M HAPPY.

THE CHARACTERISTIC I FIND HARDEST TO DEAL WITH...

SPECIAL RANK IS GIVEN ONLY TO ANGELS WITH SOME QUALITY IN ABUNDANCE-- IN NASSE'S CASE, PURITY AND INNOCENCE.

OR PERHAPS... THE EASIEST TO MANIPULATE?

...

YOU MIGHT HAVE TO FIGHT TO THE DEATH.

...

DO YOU THINK METROPOLIMAN WILL AGREE TO JUST A TALK?

...

RIGHT, REVEL?

WHEN AN OWNER DIES, THEIR WINGS AND ARROWS GET TRANSFERRED.

OR,
(2) METROPOLIMAN DIES, AND HIS WINGS AND ARROWS GO TO MIRAI, WHO GIVES THEM TO SAKI ANYWAY.

WHICH MEANS THAT EITHER
(1) MIRAI DIES, AND THE WINGS AND WHITE ARROWS GO TO SAKI.

BUT...

SAKI!

MIRAI, YOU'RE JUST NOT THINKING STRAIGHT, DUE TO THE POWER OF THE RED ARROWS.

DON'T YOU DARE GO.

DON'T GO, KAKEHASHI.

OKAY.

SAKI...

SIGH...

HEH HEH!

FINE, SORRY. I APOLOGIZE.

WELL, WHAT A SHAME! I THOUGHT IT WAS A CLEVER IDEA.

...

I PREFER THE TERM "TACTICIAN."

IF YOU WERE THAT GOOD, YOU WOULDN'T BE SECOND RANK.

THAT'S WHY PEOPLE CALL YOU THE ANGEL OF TRICKERY, REVEL.

...

JUST LIKE YOU, REVEL.

WELL, NOW THAT IT'S COME TO THIS...

AT ANY RATE...

...EVERY ONE OF US IS ATTEMPTING TO MAKE OUR CHOSEN HUMAN GOD.

THERE'S NO SAYING WHAT HE MIGHT ATTEMPT.

HUH...?

AGREED.

...I BELIEVE IT'S IN OUR BEST INTERESTS TO WORK TOGETHER. WHAT DO YOU SAY?

!

I HAVE NO GUARANTEE OF WHAT YOU'LL DO TO SAKI WHEN THE ARROWS WEAR OFF, EITHER!

WE HAVE OUR OWN RISKS TO CONSIDER!

WAIT... WE'RE GOING TO TEAM UP WITH HIM?

AFTER HE JUST TRIED TO HAVE ME KILLED?

NASSE!

MIRAI WON'T DO ANYTHING TO SAKI.

I MEAN, HE'S REALLY LOVED HER ALL ALONG.

REALLY?

UH.

HE WON'T! AND EVEN IF HE DOES, HE WOULDN'T DO IT IN A WEIRD WAY! THAT'S HOW MUCH HE LOVES HER!

THAT MAKES IT EVEN MORE LIKELY HE'LL TRY SOMETHING WITH THE RED ARROWS.

TWING---

PLEASE BELIEVE THAT MUCH ABOUT HIM, AT LEAST.

!

JUST LIKE THAT, NASSE ?!

OKAY!

THEN TRUST ME AS WELL.

FINE, FINE.

UGH---

...AND SHE CAN BE HAPPY, I'LL DO ANYTHING FOR SAKI!

ALL RIGHT! AS LONG AS SHE'S SAFE...

SAKI!!

IT'S FINE.

ANGELS CAN'T INTERFERE WITH GOD CANDIDATES DIRECTLY.

AND SAKI NEEDS WINGS, DOESN'T SHE?

!

...

HE WOULD NEVER SAY THAT NORMALLY.

THOSE ARROWS ARE POWERFUL.

OF COURSE. YOU'RE GOING TO PROTECT SAKI AT EACH AND EVERY MOMENT, AREN'T YOU?

HUH?!

LIVE IN THIS ROOM?!

YES. JUST UNTIL GOD IS PICKED.

WELL, I DON'T MIND, BUT... ARE YOU SURE?

SAKI!!

YOU THERE, UP AHEAD, STOP THE CAR!

WEEOO

STOP THE CAR!

WEEOO

SHIP

ORM

MMM

DAMN IT!!

HUFF!!

HUFF!!

SURRENDER.

OKAY.

KWING

ZZS

SH

DO

SH

KWING

...ALL STOPPED WITHOUT ANY CASUALTIES!

...AND TODAY, THE DEALER WHO SOLD THAT MAN HIS DRUGS...

A SLASHER YESTERDAY ...

SO LONG.

I ONLY DID WHAT ANYONE WOULD DO.

...

WELL ...

THAT WAS METROPOLIMAN ON THE SCENE, A BIT LESS FORTHCOMING THAN USUAL.

WAIT! METRO-POLIMAN ...

POH!

MRMR

MRMR

FWUF

CON-GRATS, METRO-POLI-MAN!

ANOTHER CRIME SUCCESS-FULLY STOPPED!

KSHK

KSHK

WHAT'S WRONG?

DAMN!!

WHAM

YOU REMAINING 11 MAY COME AFTER ME AT ANY TIME!!

COME ON!

IT'S BEEN OVER A MONTH, AND NO SIGN OF ANY OF THEM!

THOSE AREN'T THE GUYS I WANT TO DEAL WITH!

HIP

Zabari File Edit View History Bookmarks Window

@3ch Board

http://metropoli$an.3ch.n£t/metro/*3

[News] Looking for Metropoliman's Identity

101 : Anonymous ID:MksL58sL
Gotta be a kid, the suit's all baggy and loose

102 : Anonymous ID:KdtUc409
But he can fly and shoot the Metropon,
so maybe he's an alien lol

103 : Anonymous ID:p9Skeco7
He changes his voice with a machine, but it sounds young
Plus he talks like an idiot

104 : Anonymous ID:IeDfg81a
He only shows up on the weekends and weekday evenings,
so he's gotta have another job!!

105 : Anonymous ID:reQa32fv
Dude's poor! what a loser lolol

106 : Anonymous ID:5a49exyZ
He doesn't get money from the cops?

ON THE CONTRARY, LOOK AT THIS!

TAPTAP

FWAP

...

ARE THE POLICE IRRITATED WITH METROPOLIMAN?

PREPARING FOR TAKEOFF AM

NOT JUST THE KIDS! HE'S POPULAR WITH TEEN GIRLS AND MOMS!!

AND EVEN THE TABLOIDS AND PAPERS...

...BUT IF THIS KEEPS UP, I WON'T JUST FIGURATIVELY BE GOING TO HELL.

I'M NOT SAYING I BELIEVE THE ARTICLES...

ARE THE OTHER 11 THAT AFRAID OF ME?

SMIRK...

AFRAID OF BEING KILLED, HUH?

IN THAT CASE...

THEY'RE AFRAID OF BEING KILLED.

...

SEE? HE HASN'T CHANGED.

THIRTY-THREE DAYS LATER

DUHH—...

I'M JUST BEING THOROUGH.

IT'S SO MEAN OF YOU TO TIE HIM UP RIGHT BEFORE THE ARROWS WEAR OFF, REVEL.

THE FLUSH ON HIS FACE HASN'T RECEDED.

HMM. SO IT SEEMS MIRAI REALLY DOES LOVE SAKI.

SORRY.

I'M ACTUALLY GLAD YOU PIERCED ME.

...JUST HOW IMPORTANT THAT IS.

I WAS ABLE TO TAKE ACTION, TO TELL YOU MY FEELINGS.

THANKS TO THAT, I WAS ABLE TO UNDERSTAND...

AND...

...

I FELT HAPPINESS BEING WITH YOU.

...

...

SH- SHUT UP...

HE CANNOT.

BUT HE DOESN'T SAY HE LOVES HER NOW.

AND THAT MEANS...

METROPOLIMAN IS NOT FIT TO BE GOD, AS HE THREATENS MY HAPPINESS.

I WON'T LET METROPOLIMAN STOP PEOPLE FROM BEING HAPPY.

HE WON'T STOP MY HAPPINESS, OR SAKI'S!

...BUT TO SERVE AS A GUIDE TO IT.

INDEED. GOD IS NOT MEANT TO THREATEN HAPPINESS...

YEAH. LET'S BOTH BE HAPPY.

KAKEHASHI.

...MY HAPPINESS WITH SAKI...

AND, IF I'M BEING HONEST ...

...I'VE COME TO REALIZE...

AS I'VE WATCHED YOU...

...THAT I OUGHT TO FIND MY OWN HAPPINESS.

HA HA HA!

IS THE ARROW STILL WORKING?

R-RIGHT... OF COURSE. AAGH!

AHHH!

UM...WELL... I DIDN'T MEAN *WITH YOU...*

Ha ha ...

OUR PHONES BOTH WENT OFF.

IS IT...?

VMMM!

PLING!

!

BoltSank 4G

82%

8:12

Monday, May 9th

You have a news update

Swipe to unlock

YEAH.

METROPOLIMAN NEWS

SURE ENOUGH.

METROPOLIMAN TO MAKE MAJOR ANNOUNCEMENT TONIGHT AT 6:05, BROADCAST LIVE ON SEVERAL NETWORKS!!

Since his sudden appearance, Metropoliman has been hailed as a hero by many, but some rumors persist that the police are unhappy with his [illegible] the hero himself has a

...

LET'S GO TO THE LIVE FEED.

MAYBE HE JUST WANTS SOMEONE TO PAY ATTENTION TO HIM?

LET'S HOPE HE DOESN'T HAVE ANY OTHER STUPID COMMENTS.

SHF

METROPOLIMAN
LIVE ANNOUNCEMENT
LIVE

OR TECHNICALLY, THE HERO THAT WEARS THE METROPOLIMAN SUIT.

GOOD EVENING. I AM METRO-POLIMAN.

...TO MY FELLOWS... MY COMRADES, AS I HAVE RECENTLY REALIZED.

TO MY 11 FOES. OR SHOULD I SAY...

...

WHAT'S WITH THE ABOUT-FACE?

HUH?

LET THE TWELVE OF US MEET AND TALK THINGS OUT!!

I SEEK A PEACEFUL RESOLUTION.

IT IS CLEARLY A TRAP.

MORE STUPID COMMENTS, LIKE I WAS AFRAID OF.

TALK THINGS OUT...?

I AWAIT YOU THERE.

I'VE RENTED THE PLACE OUT FOR SUNDAY AT THREE O'CLOCK-- TWO DAYS FROM NOW.

JINBO STADIUM.

THE LOCA-TION...

HUH?

THAT'S IT?

...IN AN ATTEMPT TO GET A CLOSER LOOK FROM WITHIN THE SAFETY OF THE CROWD.

AND HE'S HOPING THAT WE'LL DECIDE TO SLIP IN AMONG THEM...

HE'S COUNTING ON FLOCKS OF CURIOUS ONLOOKERS SHOWING UP.

METROPOLIMAN LIVE ANNOUNCEMENT

LIVE

BECAUSE IT HAS NO ROOF, I SUPPOSE.

...

WHY JINBO STADIUM?

AND TWO DAYS FROM NOW IS TOO SUDDEN FOR A GOD CANDIDATE WITHOUT WINGS...

A TRAP... YES, OF COURSE.

Whoosie!!

AH!

YOU HAVEN'T TOLD HIM, NASSE?

HUH?

THEY'RE ALL WITHIN THE COUNTRY, SO THAT SHOULD BE ENOUGH TIME.

YES, I SUPPOSE THAT WOULD BE THE SIMPLE EXPLANATION.

...

UMM ...

IT'S BECAUSE THIS COUNTRY HAS A HIGH NUMBER OF SUICIDES FOR BEING SO RELATIVELY BLESSED, RIGHT?

IF YOU GO, HE WILL KILL YOU.

IT'S PROOF THAT WE ARE ALLIES NOW.

WELL, YOU TRIED TO HAVE THEM KILL EACH OTHER AT FIRST...

AND METROPOLIMAN WILL DEFINITELY SHOW UP...

...

METROPOLIMAN LIVE ANNOUNCEMENT

LIVE

YEAH.

I DON'T THINK HE'S INTERESTED IN HAVING A DIALOGUE, EITHER.

IT MAKES NO SENSE TO HAVE A DISCUSSION AT A STADIUM.

HE'S SAYING, "ANY CANDIDATE WITH WINGS CAN ESCAPE AT ANY TIME HERE, SO COME AND SHOW UP."

METROPOLIM
SEEKS PEAC
WITH 11 FOE

BASI-CALLY ...

IF HE WANTS A DISCUSSION, A MEETING ROOM WOULD SUFFICE.

HUH?

...

YOU'RE NOT THINKING OF GOING, ARE YOU?

YEAH...

I THINK IT BEST TO SIMPLY WATCH THAT INSTEAD.

THEY'LL BE AIRING IT ON LIVE TV, I'M SURE.

METROPOLIM
SEEKS PEAC
WITH 11 FOE

天国と地獄

JINBO BASEBALL STADIU

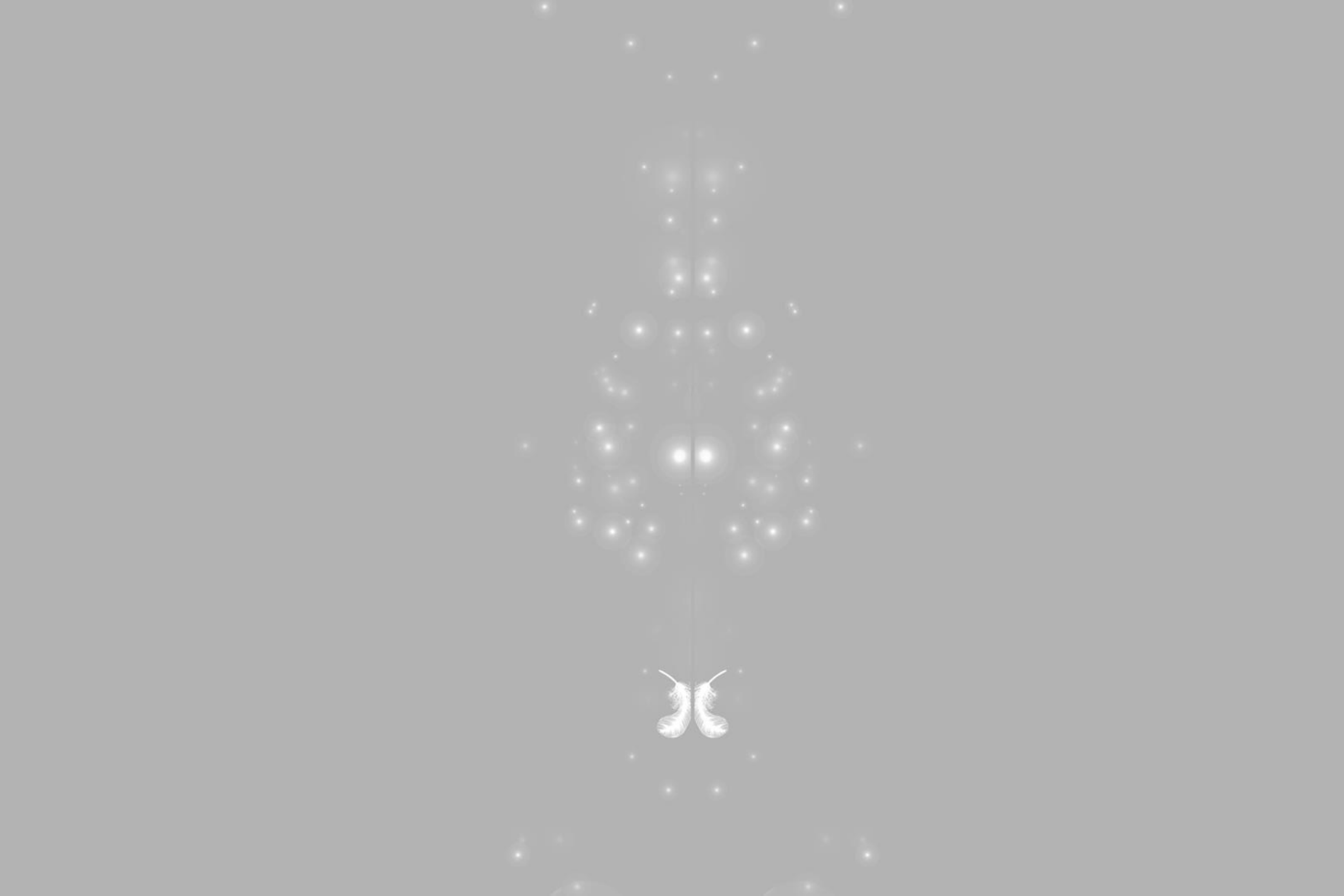
BUDDA-BUDDA

MRMR

MRMR

MRMR

PRINC



FUP PA FUP FUP PA FUP

KARIN

5 The Big Reveal

FLAP

FLAP

THAT MEANS OTHER GOD CANDIDATES ARE IN ATTENDANCE...

FLAP

FLAP

THERE ARE ANGELS HERE...

OOH, CHOP-PERS!

WELL, IT'S FREE, SO I GUESS I CAN'T COMPLAIN.

IT'S SO EXCITING! ♪

THEY AREN'T GONNA FIGHT?

SO WHAT'S THIS "DISCUSSION" THING ABOUT?

WE GET TO SEE METROPOLIMAN IN THE FLESH!

MRMR

MRMR

HOW MANY OF THE GOD CANDIDATES ARE HERE...?

I CAN'T IMAGINE HE REALLY WANTS TO TALK...

LET THE 12 OF US MEET AND TALK THINGS OUT!!

SQUEEZE

KWIII

OH, RIGHT.

I WOULDN'T LOOK UP AT THE SKY TOO MUCH, KAKEHASHI...

SHRRR

FWP
FWP

IT'S OKAY, I CAN JUST BE LOOKING AT THE HELICOPTERS AND DRONES.

AS REVEL SAID, YOU SHOULDN'T REACT TO THINGS ONLY GOD CANDIDATES CAN SEE.

IN A WORST-CASE SCENARIO, LEAVE THE SCENE FASTER THAN THE EYE CAN FOLLOW.

IF YOU INSIST ON GOING, YOU MUST NOT REACT TO ANYTHING MORE THAN AN ORDINARY PERSON WOULD.

...IF I HAVE A CHANCE TO HIT METROPOLIMAN WITH A RED ARROW...

BUT...

GRP

KWIING

YEAH.

ALSO, WE HAVE TO BE VERY CAREFUL NOT TO SPEAK ABOUT THIS STUFF TOO LOUDLY.

WE JUST HAVE TO BE TWO MORE PEOPLE IN THE CROWD.

I THINK IT'S JUST FOR THE TV BROADCAST.

SHRRR

THE DRONES ARE COMING BY TO CAPTURE EACH PERSON'S FACE...

BUT HE DID CALL THEM "ENEMIES"-- IN ANY CASE, THIS EVENT CAN'T BE MISSED!

WILL METRO-POLIMAN AND THE OTHER 11 HAVE A DIALOGUE?

THIS IS SAKURA TV WITH AN EXCLUSIVE BROADCAST FROM JINBO STADIUM!

SAKI...

...

THESE AREN'T SECURITY GUARDS-- THE POLICE ARE HANDLING EVERY-THING!

MOST STUNNING OF ALL IS THE SECURITY! IT'S LIKE LOCKDOWN IN HERE!

I WILL BE PROVIDING COMMENTARY ALONG WITH MR. MASAYOSHI, A SELF-PROFESSED EXPERT ON METROPOLIMAN.

JINBO STADIUM IS CURRENTLY AT MAXIMUM CAPACITY.

LET'S GO TO OUR REPORTER DEMAKAWA IN THE STADIUM.

IT'S NEARLY THREE O'CLOCK, THE TIME DESIGNATED BY METRO-POLIMAN.

ZWAA

AA

THERE HE IS!

AHA! HE HAS APPEARED RIGHT ON TIME!

WHOAAA ...

OHH!

AND THAT'S ...

AFTER METRO-POLIMAN CAME BLUE AND YELLOW! THREE OF THEM TOGETH-ER!!

METRO BLUE AND YELLOW !!

WHUP WHUP WHUP

AAAAAAAAHH

YEAH!

KAKE-HASHI!

IT'S THE REAL THING! AND THERE ARE THREE OF THEM!

THIS IS NOT A MOVIE OR A SUPER-HERO SHOW!

THAT'S SO COOL! THEY'RE FLYING!!

ARE YOU SERIOUS ?!

AWE-SOME!

WINGS AND RED ARROWS!

ONLY A FIRST-RANK ANGEL OR HIGHER HAS BOTH!!

SHI

BUT WHY ARE THERE THREE HEROES?

MRMR

ARE THEY HIS FOES?

MRMR

HE'S GOING TO PIERCE HIM!

ARE THEY GOING TO FIGHT?

WHIP

PROBABLY BECAUSE HE DOESN'T HAVE WINGS.

WHY DOESN'T HE JUST FLY AWAY?

?

...

DAMN!

SHS

KWIII

...

!

KIII

OH, I SEE.

HUH?

YES, AND IT WAS METROPOLIMAN WHO DID IT.

THERE'S ALREADY AN ARROW STUCK IN HIM.

IT'S A PERSON THE REAL ONE STABBED WITH RED ARROWS TO CONTROL. IT'LL BE ANOTHER 33 DAYS BEFORE THE NEXT ARROW WILL WORK ON THEM.

THAT ISN'T METROPOLIMAN IN THERE AFTER ALL!

SO WAS THE GUESS THAT "THERE ARE OTHERS OUT THERE LIKE US" WRONG?

WHEN I WENT TO GET THESE METRO SUITS, MOST OF THE SERIES' SUITS WERE GONE...

HE'S A DUMMY!

I TOLD YOU, HE MIGHT HAVE TAKEN THE SUITS TO CREATE DUMMIES.

IF THERE'S ALREADY A RED ARROW IN HIM, THEN THERE'S A 99 PERCENT CHANCE THAT HE ISN'T METROPOLIMAN...

AND WHEN HE APPEARED, HE WAS MORE *FALLING* THAN FLYING.

SO HE JUST DROPPED THIS ONE DOWN FROM ABOVE.

Real

Dummy

...

WHAT ARE YOU SAYING? I *AM* METROPOLIMAN.

YES, I KNOW.

BUT THERE'S NO GUARANTEE THAT HE ISN'T *ALSO* A CANDIDATE. BE WARY.

...

THPPA THPPA THPPA

OR A FAKE BEING FORCED TO SAY THAT BY THE REAL METROPOLIMAN!

ISN'T THAT RIGHT?!

FWOOSH

LET THE REAL ONE COME FORTH !!!!

THIS ONE IS BAIT!!

MPMP

SO THE PERSON INSIDE THE SUIT IS A FAKE?

HUH...?

MPMP

HE'S NOT THE REAL GUY?

WHAT DOES THIS MEAN?

MPMP

...

ARE YOU SURE YOU WON'T HAVE ANY REGRETS IF YOU SHOULD DIE HERE?

...!

TABUCHI.

DON'T USE MY NAME!!

...IF HE ENDS UP BEING GOD, THAT'LL MEAN WE'RE ALREADY DEAD, WON'T IT?

IN FACT ...

YEAH... I DON'T WANT TO LIVE IN A WORLD RULED OVER BY A CREEP OF A GOD LIKE HIM.

AND BESIDES, WE BOTH ALREADY TRIED TO DIE BEFORE...

TRUE...

A41053	A41081	A41132
A41054	A41083	A41133
A41055	A41084	A41137
A41057	A41086	A41138
A41059	A41087	A41140
A41060	A41089	

A41175	A41218	A41256
A41177	A41219	A41257
A41178	A41223	A41259
A41184	A41224	A41261
A41185	A41228	A41262
A41188	A41229	A41264

...THAT IF I FAILED TO GET IN I WOULD KILL MYSELF. BUT NOW...

I SWORE TO MYSELF...

I CAN'T...

...EVEN WALK...

SOB!

HE WENT TO THE SAME CRAM SCHOOL... TABUCHI, RIGHT?

OH GOD... IT'S ALL OVER.

I CAN'T JUST SWALLOW MY PRIDE AND GO TO A DIFFERENT COLLEGE.

HIC!

HIC!

HIC!

I KNOW HOW IT FEELS.

YEAH ...

DIE?

HEY, IT'S JUST A YEAR AFTER HIGH SCHOOL FOR YOU... THIS IS MY THIRD YEAR... I JUST WANT TO DIE.

IT WAS ALL OVER FOR ME THE MOMENT I DIDN'T GET IN WHILE I WAS STILL IN HIGH SCHOOL...

I HAVE A DRUG THAT'LL DO THE TRICK, NICE AND EASY.

!

FSH H H

?!

HOW CAN YOU ENJOY YOURSELF KNOWING YOU'RE GOING TO DIE SOON?

DAMN! NONE OF THIS IS ANY FUN!

BLURGH~~~

KTUNK KTUNK

CLANG CLANG

WE DECIDED TO PARTY FOR ALL WE WERE WORTH UNTIL APRIL, THEN COMMIT SUICIDE TOGETHER.

HUH? ANGELS?!

GOD?! HOPE TO LIVE?!

GET OUTTA HERE WITH THAT NON-SENSE!!

W...
WHOA!

THIS IS AWE-SOME!

WE'RE ...
... UNSTOP-PABLE NOW!

WE CAN DO THIS!

WE KNOW A MILLION TIMES MORE ABOUT LAW AND POLITICS THAN THOSE OTHER IDIOTS!

EXACTLY!

YEAH... SAME HERE IF I BECOME GOD...

IF I GET TO BE GOD, I'LL MAKE SURE YOU'RE HAPPY!

WE SWORE AN OATH THAT ONE OF US WOULD BECOME GOD...

SO NOTHING HAPPENS NOW UNLESS YOU SHOW YOUR-SELF!

WE CAME HERE AND WALKED RIGHT INTO YOUR TRAP!

COME ON OUT!!

WILL YOU FIGHT US-- OR TALK?! WHICH WILL IT BE?!

I WONDER.

COULD BLUE AND YELLOW BE AMONG THE 11 FOES?

WELL, THEY ARE JUST HERO SUITS, YOU KNOW?

THAT'S **NOT** METRO-POLIMAN DOWN THERE?

HMM, IT LOOKS LIKE...

FUP PA FUP

IF THE METROPOLIMAN DOWN THERE IS NOT THE REAL THING... THEN WHAT WILL HAPPEN?

MRMR

WHAT? WHAT'S GOING ON?

ARE THEY FRIENDS OR FOES?

MRMR

WHAT HAPPENED TO NOT RUNNING OR HIDING?!

I KNOW WHAT YOU'RE THINKING!

KW I I

TO USE YOUR ARROWS, YOU MUST EXPOSE YOURSELF.

YOU CANNOT FIRE ARROWS WHILE FLYING AT INVISIBLE SPEEDS.

SO YOU USE HIM AS BAIT, AND WHEN A GOD CANDIDATE APPEARS, YOU USE A WHITE ARROW FROM BEHIND.

DUNNO.

WHAT DOES IT MEAN?

ARROWS AND GOD... CANDI-DATES?

THAT WILL GUARANTEE ONE OF US IS ELIMINATED.

...

? ?

MURMUR...

SEEMS LIKE THAT METRO BLUE KNOWS HIS STUFF.

YOU CANNOT KILL US BOTH TOGETHER. YOU NEED TWO SECONDS BETWEEN THE FIRST AND SECOND SHOT.

BUT WHAT IF TWO OF US APPEAR AT ONCE?!

FLAP

31.6 m

THE RANGE OF THE ARROWS IS 31.6 METERS.

THAT WAS YOUR PURPOSE IN CHOOSING THIS STADIUM!

IN OTHER WORDS, TO HIT SOMEONE ON THE MOUND, YOU MUST BE ON THE FIELD.

BUT THAT **ALSO** SUITS OUR PURPOSES!!

WHOA, IS THIS A SERIOUS FIGHT?!

HOLY CRAP!

ZZSH

NO NEED TO WORRY ABOUT BEING PICKED OFF FROM THE STANDS!!!

WE CAN BE GOD !!

YEAH... WE'RE GOING TO TAKE BACK OUR LIVES!

HUFF

WE CAN DO THIS!

HUFF

WELL SAID, HATAKE!

METROPON!

YEAH, I WANNA SEE A FIGHT!

AWE-SOME!

PAH

FLK

!!

WE ONLY KNOW THE GENERAL GIST OF THINGS.

HMM, I DIDN'T KNOW ABOUT THIS 31.6 METERS THING.

...

GOOD DAY. I AM METRO-POLIMAN.

TASHIBO

BUT WHY'S HE ON THE SCREEN?

IT'S METRO-POLIMAN!

HE'S HUGE !!

M-METROPOLIMAN HAS APPEARED ON THE JUMBOTRON IN CENTER FIELD!!

I HAD SOMEONE ELSE APPEAR ON TV THE OTHER DAY, JUST IN CASE.

SO, UM...

I'M THE GUY WHO IS THE REAL-LIFE METRO-POLIMAN.

?

MRMR...

YOU'RE MOSTLY CORRECT.

YOU TWO HAD A GOOD GUESS.

!

NO ARROWS AND NO WINGS, SO DON'T WORRY ABOUT HIM. THAT'S A FREE TIP FROM ME TO YOU.

FIRST, THE PERSON ON THE MOUND IS JUST A REGULAR HUMAN I HIT WITH A RED ARROW.

TASHIBO KIBIN

IF I CAN OFFER JUST ONE CORRECTION ...

YOU ARE ALSO MOSTLY RIGHT ABOUT WHY I CHOSE A WIDE-OPEN BASEBALL FIELD.

...AND WHITE ARROWS ...

RED...

I DON'T NEED TWO SECONDS.

SORRY TO BREAK IT TO YOU.

RED AND WHITE ARE SEPARATE, SO WITH THEM BOTH NOCKED, I CAN FIRE THE SECOND ONE MERELY 0.3 SECONDS LATER.

TASHIBO KIBIN

?

WHAT? I DON'T GET IT...

RED? WHITE?

I HAVE NO INTENTION OF PARTICIPATING IN SUCH A FOOLISH AND EMBARRASSING EXERCISE.

WE'LL JUST BE DISAPPEARING AND REAPPEARING, TRYING TO GET BEHIND THE OTHER.

NOT WITH YOU BACK-TO-BACK AND ON ALERT...

BUT I SUPPOSE IT WILL BE IMPOSSIBLE TO GET BEHIND YOU.

SO LONG.

...

WHAT WAS THAT, MR. MASAYOSHI?

LET'S WATCH THIS PLAY OUT.

...

SHH

NO USE HANGING AROUND THEN.

DOESN'T SEEM LIKE HE'S GOING TO SHOW...

IT'LL TAKE 33 DAYS, BUT WE MIGHT BE ABLE TO EVENTUALLY GET VALUABLE INFORMATION FROM HIM.

WE'LL TAKE THIS ONE.

...!

WE'RE TAKING THIS GUY AND LEAVING!!

LISTEN UP, METRO-POLIMAN!

OH?

OH WELL-- I SHOULD AT LEAST KILL ONE OF THEM.

AS IF YOU NEEDED TO SAY IT.

WAIT

...

A...

...
LITTLE
KID?

WHAT?!

WHOA!

IS
THAT
FOR
REAL
?!

A...
A CHILD
...

...

A LITTLE
GIRL IS
FLOATING
IN THE
AIR!!!

WAIT

AN
ANGEL
...

TAKE ME WITH YOU.

I'M AFRAID OF METRO-POLIMAN.

PLEASE LET ME JOIN YOU.

...

I WAS GETTING PICKED ON AT SCHOOL...

...BUT I'M HAVING MORE FUN NOW THAT I HAVE THESE WINGS.

I DON'T WANT TO DIE ANYMORE ...

SHE'S BEEN BULLIED...

I GOT IGNORED A LOT AFTER MY FAMILY DIED TOO...

THE POOR THING ...

BUT SHE SHOULDN'T SHOW HERSELF LIKE THAT.

MRMR

WHAT'S GOING ON?

I DON'T SEE ANY WIRES!

IT'S GOTTA BE A MAGIC TRICK...

MRMR

SAKI

...

...

...

I ONLY HAVE WINGS, NOT ARROWS, SO I DON'T KNOW IF I CAN HELP YOU... BUT PLEASE!

W-WHAT SHOULD WE DO? SHE MIGHT BE UNDER SOMEONE'S CONTROL...

...

IF YOU'RE OKAY WITH US HITTING YOU WITH A RED ARROW, YOU CAN COME.

ALL RIGHT. DO IT...

RAISE YOUR HANDS AND COME CLOSER.

SHH...

OKAY.

...

TOO SLOW.

AAAH!

KWING

METRO-POLIMAN!

!

!

?

?

EEK!

MASTER METRO-POLIMAN

...

...

YOU NEED TO PIERCE ANY GOD CANDIDATE IMMEDIATELY.

WHAT ARE YOU TWO DOING? YOU CAN'T HESITATE!

WHUP

GAH!

DOWN

CURSES!

I TOLD YOU.

YOU'RE TOO SLOW, IDIOT!

WISH

!

MRMR

WHAT'S GOING ON HERE?

WHAT? HE SHOWS UP, HE VANISHES ...

I HAVE ABSOLUTELY NO IDEA WHAT THEY'RE DOING.

MRMR

SHK

...

AH!

HE'S UP THERE AGAIN?

TASHIBO KIBIN

THIS MAKES IT TWO-ON-TWO.

I'M ACTUALLY DISAPPOINTED WITH HOW STUPID AND SLOW YOU BOYS ARE.

I GUESS THE JOKE'S ON ME FOR GETTING MY HOPES UP.

I'M SICK OF YOU NOW. GET LOST.

OR I'LL GET RID OF YOU MYSELF.

...

MURMUR MURMUR

TWO-ON-TWO...

FFT---

LUCKILY FOR US, HER ONLY ITEM IS THE WINGS.

WHAT NOW?

...

THE GIRL WILL BE HIS SLAVE FOR 33 DAYS.

I KNOW THAT THERE ARE MORE OF YOU IN THIS STADIUM!!

IS THERE ANYONE ELSE OUT THERE WHO WILL JOIN US IN OUR CAUSE?!

MRMR...

...

ANYONE WHO WISHES TO JOIN US AT THE COST OF RED ARROW SERVITUDE, COME FORWARD!

THE MORE OF US, THE BETTER THE ADVANTAGE!

BUT ONLY IF YOU AGREE TO LET US PIERCE YOU WITH OUR RED ARROWS!

WHAT

MRMRMRMR

PLUS YOU HAVE TO TAKE ON THE RED ARROW'S EFFECTS...

YEAH... NO ONE'S GOING TO EXPOSE THEMSELVES LIKE THIS.

...

I UNDERSTAND WANTING MORE COMPANIONS, BUT...

AGAIN ...?!

MURMUR

MURMUR

MURMUR

WE WILL JOIN YOU.

METRO GREEN AND METRO PINK HAVE APPEARED IN THE OUTFIELD STANDS!!

G... GREEN AND PINK!

RAAAH

WE ONLY HAVE ARROWS, NOT WINGS. IS THAT ALL RIGHT?

I'M GOING TO PIERCE THEM NOW!

WHP

THERE ARE SPECTATORS NEARBY. BACK ME UP!

OKAY!

SHK

SO THERE REALLY WERE OTHERS LIKE US.

THESE ONES HAVE ARROWS ONLY... ARE THERE ONLY SECOND-RANK ANGEL CANDIDATES HERE?

SHK

THE WEAKER YOUR POWERS, THE MORE YOU'LL WANT COMPANIONS.

FWAP

THESE TWO AREN'T BEING CONTROLLED BY ANYONE BUT US.

ALL RIGHT, THEY'RE PIERCED.

CABIN

CAN YOU BELIEVE THIS?! METROPOLIMAN, BLUE, YELLOW, GREEN AND PINK, ALL TOGETHER!!

OOO

THAT GIVES US A NUMERICAL EDGE!

NOW WE HAVE FOUR WITH RED ARROWS!

...

WHAT ABOUT US, KAKEHASHI ...?

HALF OF THE REMAINING 12...

IF WE JOIN THEIR GROUP, THAT WILL MAKE SIX IN TOTAL...

ARROWS?

KNG

BRING OUT YOUR ARROWS, JUST IN CASE.

KNG

YOU CAN'T BOSS ME AROUND, YELLOW...

IT STARTED WITH A CALL FOR A DISCUSSION WITH 11 ENEMIES...

...AND THROUGH A STUNNING TURN OF EVENTS, WITH ALLEGIANCES UNCERTAIN ...

...THE SUPER CIVILIZATION SQUAD METRO FIVE HAS ASSEMBLED !!

AGAIN?

!

HEH... ALL IT TOOK WAS SAYING "TWO-ON-TWO"...

MASTER POLIMAN HAS A VERY IMPORTANT ANNOUNCE-MENT TO MAKE!

?!

?

?!

...THE REAL METRO-POLIMAN.

I AM NOT...

HUH?

YOU'RE SO STUPID.

!!

THE REAL ONE'S RIGHT HERE.

KIZUNA

KIBIN

KREEE

PWIK

AAAHH!!

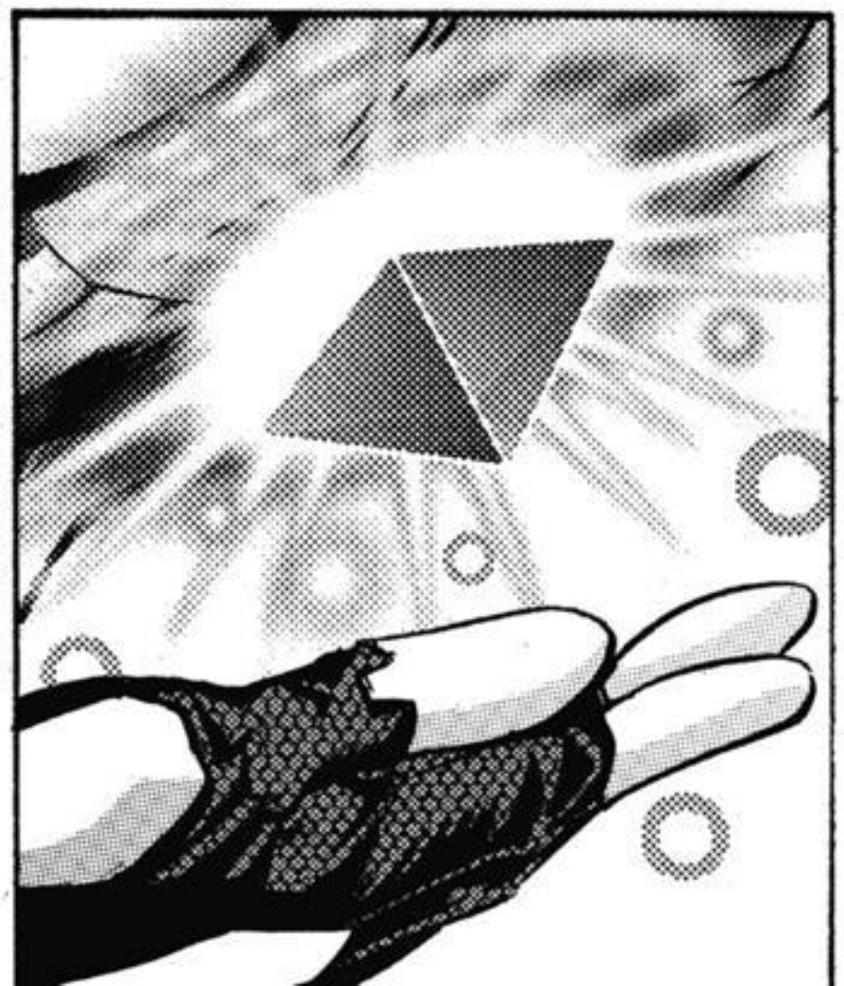
HA-
TAKE-
YAMA
...!

GURGH

AAAA

YOU'RE TOO SLOW.

NO



MRMR...

HUH? DID HE JUST KILL HIM...?

NO WAY...

WAS THAT THE METROPON?

ONE OF THEM JUST COLLAPSED.

KTHK

MRMR

UHH... I'M GETTIN' OUT OF HERE...

THIS IS BAD...

MRMR

IS IT A BATTLE AFTER ALL...?

H-HEY, DON'T PUSH!

KTHK

HE KILLED HIM!!

A WHITE ARROW...

AND A RED ARROW ON YELLOW...

I REALLY LIKED BLUE FOR A LITTLE BIT...

BUT NOW HE'S DEAD.

YEP. NOT SAD AT ALL, THOUGH.

...

KTHNK

WHAT DOES THIS MEAN...?

I THOUGHT YOU WERE THE ONE ON THE SCREEN.

HARDLY.

HUH...? WHAT DOES HE MEAN?

...

THAT'S A REGULAR HUMAN I'M CONTROLLING WITH A RED ARROW.

Entry Coca-Cola

TASHIBO

I JUST SWITCHED PLACES WITH HIM WHEN YOU WENT TOWARD THE STANDS TO USE YOUR ARROWS.

EVERYONE WAS SO FOCUSED ON THAT, THEY NEVER NOTICED.

PIECE OF CAKE!

FOR ONE THING, YOU AND BLUE WERE WAY TOO FREAKED OUT ABOUT THE RED ARROWS.

YOU FREAKED OUT ENOUGH TO MAKE THE GIRL RAISE HER HANDS...

...AND THEN GREEN AND PINK AFTER HER.

YOU KNOW THE GIRL'S A CANDIDATE BECAUSE OF HER WINGS, BUT YOU DIDN'T EVEN BOTHER TO CHECK THE OTHER TWO FOR ARROWS, RIGHT?

NICE WORK, BOSS.

IN FACT, GREEN AND PINK ARE JUST ORDINARY PEOPLE-- ANOTHER PART OF MY PLAN.

HUH?

BUT YOU DON'T NEED RED ARROWS TO CONTROL PEOPLE.

YES, I CONTROLLED THEM.

NO ORDINARY PERSON WOULD DO THIS. WERE YOU CONTROLLING THEM? BUT OUR ARROWS WORKED...

TELL ME! PLEASE!

YOU WANT TO KNOW HOW I DID IT? WANT THE DETAILS?

MONEY.

CHI-CHAN, COME DOWN TO THE FIELD.

THAT'S BETTER.

OKAY!

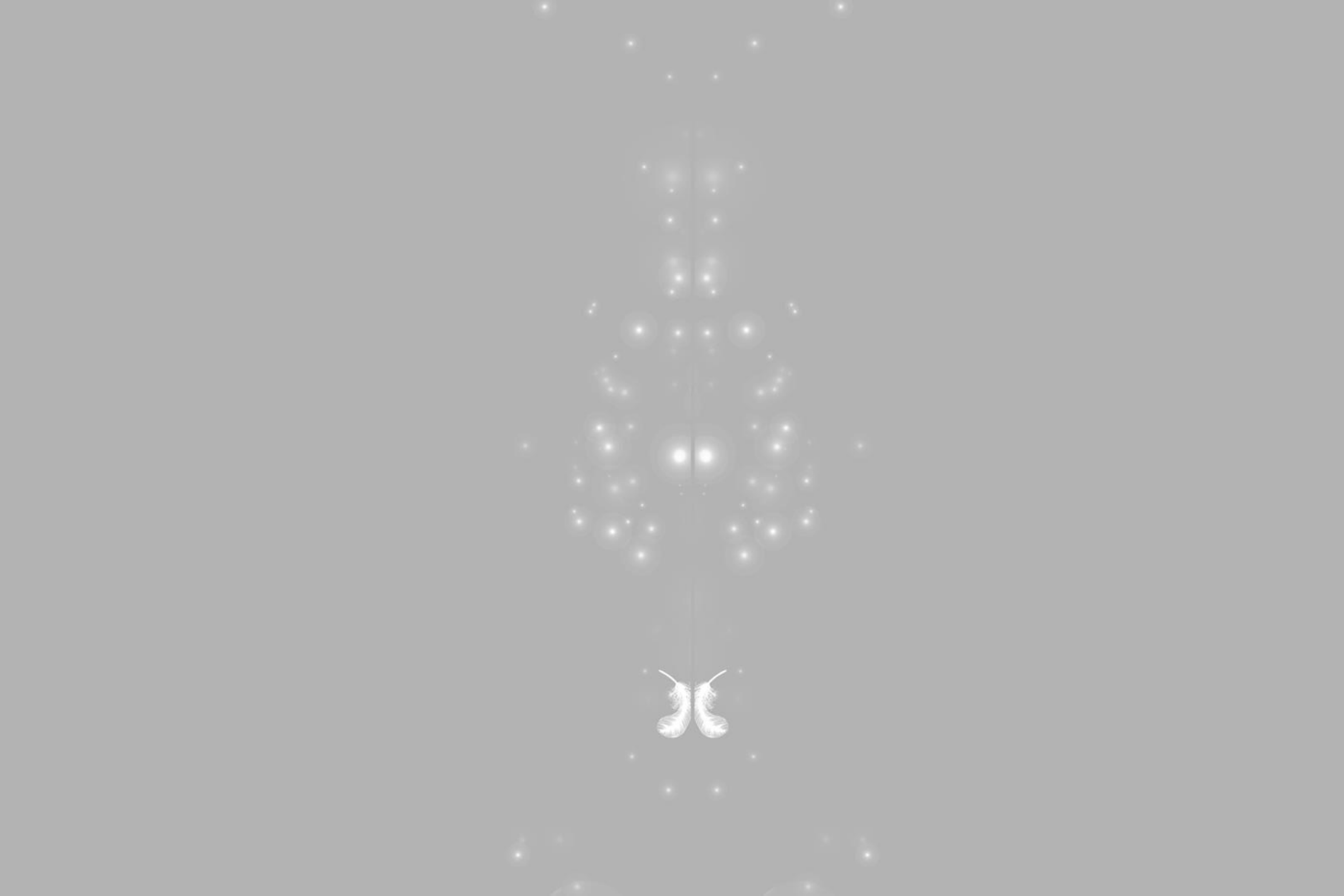
I WAS A TERRIBLE FOOL.

MASTER POLIMAN ...

ONE THAT HAPPENS TO PAY EXTREMELY WELL.

JUST A QUICK HERO STAGE-SHOW GIG.

IT'S TIME TO START STAGE TWO.



#6 A Secret Chat

IT'S TIME TO START STAGE TWO.

EVERYTHING HAS GONE JUST AS METROPOLIMAN WANTED IT TO SO FAR...

AND WE'RE STILL NOT QUITE SURE WHAT HAPPENED IN STAGE ONE...

MRMR

MRMR

WHAT IS THIS STAGE TWO? DON'T CHANGE THAT CHANNEL! YOU WON'T WANT TO MISS A THING!

HE LURED THREE CANDIDATES INTO THE OPEN...

...KILLED ONE OF THEM WITH A WHITE ARROW...

...AND HIT THE OTHER TWO WITH RED ARROWS.

IT WAS NAIVE OF ME TO THINK I COULD HIT HIM WITH A RED ARROW IF I GOT THE CHANCE.

WILL WE GET KILLED IF WE MAKE THE WRONG MOVE?

IS NOT REVEALING OURSELVES THE ONLY THING WE CAN DO...?

HE'S TOO CLEVER FOR ME TO OUTSMART...

THAT ANGEL THERE.

HANG ON.

YES, YOU. WHERE DO YOU THINK YOU'RE GOING?

HE'S VERY OBSER-VANT.

I'LL TAKE THEM NOW.

I HAVE A RIGHT TO RECEIVE THE WINGS AND RED ARROWS YOU GAVE HIM.

SHING

SHING...

THANKS.
YOU CAN GO NOW.

...

THANKS!

THAT'S ALL YOU WANT, FOR THAT MUCH MONEY?

HUH? ALREADY?

OKAY, PART-TIMERS AND BODY DOUBLE, YOU THREE CAN LEAVE NOW.

METROPON!!

SHUT UP AND GET LOST, OR I'LL KILL YOU.

SWISH

L-LET ME SPEND MORE TIME WITH YOU! I'M A HUGE FAN OF YOURS, POLIMAN!

KWIII

THERE.

SO LONG, THEN! CALL UPON ME ANYTIME!!

WHUMP

SO HE WAS A FAKE? IS THAT IT?

MRMR

WHAT COULD THIS MEAN?

MURMUR

JUST WHEN THE WHOLE TEAM GOT TOGETHER.

WELL, THAT'S BORING.

AWW, THEY'RE ALL LEAVING.

HE SAID STAGE TWO IS ABOUT TO START!

SCARY? DUDE, IT'S AWESOME!

YAMMER

HEY, IS BLUE DEAD? THAT'S PRETTY SCARY...

SO LET'S BEGIN.

KSHANK

KSHK

HANDCUFFS?

WHAM

WILL THIS BE AN ESCAPE MAGIC TRICK?

MRMR

MRMR

HANDCUFFS?!

CHNK

I WISH I WAS CHAINED TO POLIMAN INSTEAD!

HEY, THAT'S MY LINE.

USE THESE TO ATTACH YELLOW'S RIGHT HAND TO CHI-CHAN'S LEFT.

OKAY.

HUH?

TRIANGLE

?

THAT WILL DO. WE'LL START WITH YELLOW.

NO! I WILL DO ANYTHING YOU SAY-- *ANYTHING.*

YEAH.

I'VE HIT YOU TWO WITH MY RED ARROWS, BUT THERE IS A LIMIT TO YOUR OBEDIENCE.

THEN IF I TELL YOU TO DIE?

KWING

W-WELL... NO...

IF YOU'VE DONE SOMETHING TO ME WORTH DYING FOR, THAT WOULD BE ONE THING. BUT YOU HAVEN'T, HAVE YOU?

A WHITE ARROW!

AH! WATCH OUT!

KWIII

WHAT HAPPENS IF I TRY TO KILL YOU WITH A WHITE ARROW?

N...

NO!

WHUP

OW!

KCHAK

HEY!

DON'T POINT THAT AT ME!

OF COURSE I'M NOT KIDDING.

Y-YOU MUST BE KIDDING ...

SEE? YOU TRY TO FLY AWAY.

THERE'S A LIMIT TO THE RED ARROW'S POWERS.

GRRK

KCHAK

GRRK

OUCH!

OUCH!!

KCHAK

GRRK!

STOPPP!!

KCHAK

GRRK

FLUR

AAAH!!

FLING

MRMP

MRMP

M-METRO YELLOW HAS COLLAPSED...

WAS THAT... METROPON?

MRMP

WASN'T METROPOLIMAN SUPPOSED TO BE A HERO?

I'M SCARED ...

MRMP

NO, IT'S NOT...

THIS... *IS* A SHOW, RIGHT?

YEESH!

WAIT, METRO-PON?

I... I CAN'T WATCH ANYMORE!

RATTL

THEY'RE ENEMIES AFTER ALL?

RATTL

HOLY CRAP, AM I REALLY SEEING THIS?!

B-BRMP

NOOOO!

AAAAH!

HUH? WHAT DO YOU MEAN?

MIRAI WILL BE OKAY, RIGHT?

OH, GOOD POINT.

THAT LITTLE GIRL WILL BE NEXT. I HOPE HE'S NOT THINKING OF INTERVENING.

IS SHE A BAD GUY?

HE'S AIMING METROPON AT THAT LITTLE GIRL!

I CAN'T BELIEVE THIS!

NO!

HELP ME!

KW 1 1 1 1

KCHAK

ZRP

KÇHAK

ZR P

A A A AH!!

SAKI!

HE'S GOING TO KILL HER!

B- B- BMP

CRAP! WHAT DO I DO?!

I COULD READY A RED ARROW...

...AND FLY FASTER THAN HE CAN SEE...

NO, I CAN'T!

IF HE FLIES OFF BEFORE I CAN RELEASE THE ARROW, IT'LL ONLY REVEAL TO HIM THAT I'M A CANDIDATE.

IF I DON'T ACT CAREFULLY, I'LL ONLY WIND UP DEAD.

BA-BMP

BA-BMP

AND I CAN'T DIE.

I CAN'T AFFORD TO DIE!

BA-BMP

BUT IF I DON'T DO SOME-THING ...

BA-BUMP

THIS IS BAD.

BA-BUMP

THIS IS BAD.

BA-BUMP

THINK

RAAH

THINK

MOVE IT!

DON'T PUSH!

THINK

THIS IS BAD.

...

S-SAKI... IS THERE ANYTHING WE CAN DO ABOUT THIS?

I... I DON'T KNOW...

EEK!

OWW!

NO!
STOP!

ARE YOUR SECOND-RANK ANGEL BRAINS SCRAMBLED? YOU HAVE TO PROVIDE A REASON THAT'LL MAKE ME *WANT* TO STOP FOR THAT TO WORK.

HUH? WHAT DO YOU MEAN, "STOP"?

...

ACTUALLY, I LIKE THIS. YOU BEG FOR MERCY TOO.

S...

...

PLEASE...

SOME-ONE! COME AND HELP!

SAVE MEEE!!

AAAAH!

...

...

HELP! SOME-ONE HELP!

YOU CAN DO IT AFTER ALL.

OOOH, NICE.

WAAAH!

I DON'T WANT TO DIE!

SOME-ONE HELP ME!

FLAP

SOME-ONE PLEASE HELP HER!

FLAP

FLAP

KCHAK

KCHAK

PLEASE, YOU MUST HELP!

BEG FOR YOUR LIFE!!

THAT'S RIGHT. SCREAM!

WE MIGHT HAVE TO CUT AWAY...

YOU KNOW, THIS LOOKS BAD...

HELP ME ...!

...

...

COME, YOU COW-ARDLY GOD CANDI-DATES!

ARE YOU GOING TO JUST ABANDON THIS POOR GIRL TO HER FATE?!

NO !!

...

NO, NO, NO !!

WAAAAH!!

SAKI?

NO, DON'T...

AAAAAH!

WAAAAH!

DON'T LEAVE YOUR SEAT.

MAKE HIM STOP ...

FREE.

!

DON'T MOVE!

NASSE!!

I'M SORRY, KAKEHASHI...

...

IT'LL ONLY REVEAL THAT YOU'RE A CANDIDATE.

DON'T JUST TAKE ACTION WITHOUT A PLAN.

...

NASSE'S RIGHT. IF YOU TAKE ACTION NOW...

THEN AGAIN, IF HE DOESN'T LURE OUT ANY CANDIDATES, WOULD HE REALLY KILL HER RIGHT OFF THE BAT?

B-BUT THAT POOR LITTLE GIRL...

SHE'LL BE HIS ALLY FOR ANOTHER 33 DAYS, AT LEAST...

MY OWN ANGEL HAS YOU BEAT FOR SEX APPEAL THOUGH.

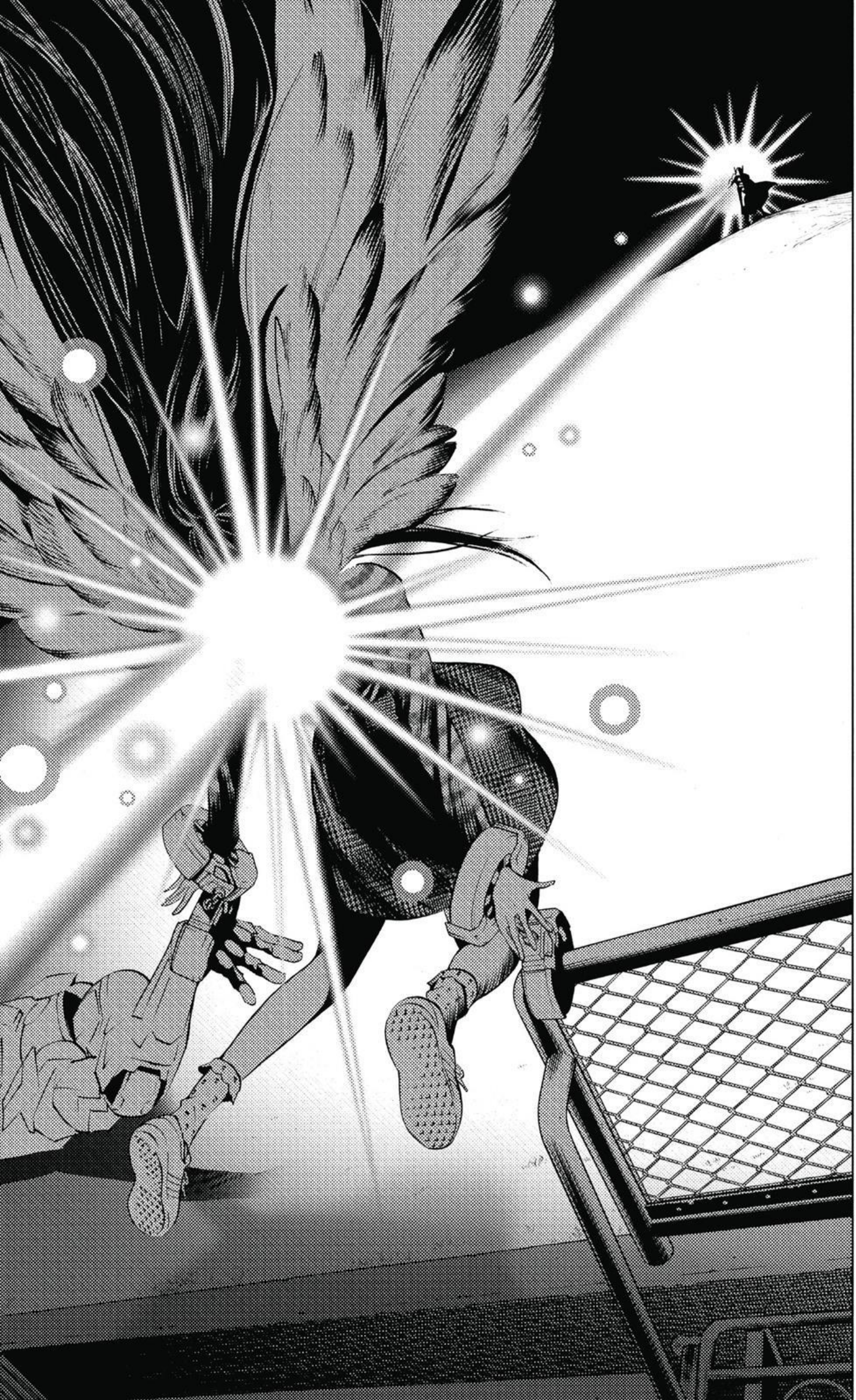
BUT I GUESS I CAN OVERLOOK A CUTE LITTLE ANGEL-- JUST THE KIND I LIKE.

YOU'RE NOT GOING TO LURE OUT ANY CANDIDATES WITH THAT GIRL ANYMORE.

I SEE. SO HER PURPOSE IS FINISHED.

WHAT'S THIS, ANOTHER ANGEL?

YOU'RE NOT THE ONE I WANT TO SEE.



DID HE JUST ...

...USE METRO-PON...

...ON A HELP-LESS LITTLE GIRL?

MURMUR---

BLEAGH!

I FEEL SICK...

MURMUR...

N... NO WAY...

MY GOAL IS TO ELIMINATE EVERY LAST RIVAL IN THIS COMPETITION.

TOO BAD. DID YOU THINK I WOULDN'T KILL HER IF NO GOD CANDIDATES EMERGED?

YES. I WANTED TO HAVE A SECRET LITTLE CHAT WITH YOU.

WHAT'S UP? COME DOWN TO SHOW ME THOSE PRETTY FEATURES?

SHH---

OUTSIDE OF MY OWN CANDIDATE DYING, I BASICALLY FEEL NOTHING AT THE DEATH OF ANY HUMAN BEING.

...

HA HA.

BECAUSE YOU'RE AN ANGEL?

YES. BUT...

WHAT DO YOU MEAN BY "TOO BAD"?

I THINK I'LL BE DELIGHTED WHEN YOU DIE.

IN THAT SENSE, YOU SHOULD BE GRATEFUL TO ME. I JUST LOWERED OUR STRUGGLE BY THREE RIVALS.

WELL, THAT MAKES SENSE. YOU WANT YOUR CANDIDATE TO BE GOD.

HE SEEMS TO BE TALKING TO HIMSELF...

EVEN WHEN WE COULD HEAR THE WORDS, THEY MADE NO SENSE...

...?

I DON'T GET IT.

MAN, YOU ANGELS ARE WEIRD ...

I WANT TO MAKE HIM HAPPY.

I DON'T WANT TO MAKE MY GOD CANDIDATE INTO GOD.

AND YOU'RE AN OBSTACLE TO THAT HAPPENING.

!

NASSE...

WHAT ARE YOU DOING?

I AM? ON WHAT BASIS?

NOPE, YOU'RE WRONG.

I'M THE ONE WHO'S GOING TO BE GOD.

FLASH!

AN OBSTACLE, HUH? OH WELL.

AT THE VERY LEAST, I'M GOING TO MAKE MY PARTNER KILL YOU.

FWUFF

HEH...

MAYBE IT'S BECAUSE MY CUTENESS IS SO ELITE.

THAT CUTE AND YOUNG, AND YOU'RE A SPECIAL-RANK?

SHH

MRMR

...

MRMR

OKAY, TIME TO GO.

JUST LEAVE WITH THE CROWD.

KTHNK

SHE'S RIGHT.

KAKEHASHI ...

LET'S GO...

DON'T STICK AROUND, OR YOU'LL STAND OUT.

JUST GO HOME WITH ALL THE NORMAL PEOPLE.

SHUP

SEE YOU LATER, METRO-POLIMAN.

SHHH...

NOW THEN...

...

SHING

SHING

I'LL TAKE THOSE WINGS AND ARROWS NOW.

YOU'RE YELLOW AND CHI-CHAN'S ANGELS.

FFT

...

HE... VANISHED.

THE MEDICS ARE RUSHING TO THOSE WHO FELL.

WELL, IT SEEMS... THAT WAS THE END.

MRMR

BUT ...

I GUESS WE'LL GO BACK TO THE STUDIO NOW...

WE'RE RATHER AT A LOSS FOR WORDS.

MRMR

SHING!

EIGHT TO GO.

WERE THEY FILMING A MOVIE?

WHAT WAS THAT, ANY-WAY?

A MUR-DER SHOW?

WERE WE JUST EXTRAS?

DID THEY REALLY DIE?

MURMUR

MURMUR

MURMUR

MURMUR

MURMUR

...AS THREE PEOPLE WERE MURDERED RIGHT IN FRONT OF ME...

I JUST WATCHED...

I COULDN'T DO A THING...

DRIP

SHK

YOU DID WELL TO STOP HIM.

FW

AHOO~

HERE, IF YOU SLOW IT DOWN, YOU CAN SEE WHERE METROPOLIMAN SWITCHED IN...

NOW'S NOT THE TIME FOR THAT. THREE PEOPLE ARE DEAD...

AND WITHOUT A SECOND THOUGHT.

SO HE KILLED THREE MORE...

NOT THAT I IMAGINE HE'LL APPEAR IN THAT FORM AGAIN.

THIS ONLY STRENGTHENS OUR NEED TO KILL METRO-POLIMAN.

YOU JUST NEED TO FIND SOME WAY TO HAVE MIRAI KILL HIM.

DON'T YOU DARE SAY THAT WHEN HE COMES BACK HOME.

WHY NOT? NEITHER MIRAI NOR SAKI WILL HAVE A GOOD FUTURE UNLESS HE IS ELIMINATED.

YES, I KNOW THAT.

BUT...

BA-BUMP

BA-BUMP

BA-BUMP

MIRAI'S STILL SUFFERING FROM THE TRAUMA OF HITTING HIS AUNT WITH A RED ARROW AND SEEING HER DIE.

...HE'S THE TYPE OF PERSON WHO CAN BE HAPPY AFTER COMMITTING MURDER YET.

AND HE'S NOT THE TYPE TO DO ANYTHING UNLESS HE FEELS THE NEED TO.

TRUE. DEMANDING THAT HE KILL IS ONLY LIKELY TO HAVE THE OPPOSITE EFFECT.

I DON'T THINK...

SHH

HH---

I COULDN'T DO A THING...

I WATCHED THREE PEOPLE DIE...

WE ANGELS WERE THE ONES WHO TOLD YOU NOT TO DO ANYTHING.

THAT WASN'T YOUR FAULT, KAKEHASHI. METROPOLIMAN DESERVES ALL THE HATE...

HATE...

THAT MAKES FOUR IN TOTAL...

OF COURSE I DO... I CAN'T FORGIVE HIM FOR KILLING THAT LITTLE GIRL...

DO YOU HATE METRO-POLIMAN, SAKI?

EVEN SAKI FEELS HATE...

YEAH ...

THE POLICE WILL BE GETTING INVOLVED.

IT SHOULD BE CLEAR BY NOW THAT THE THREE VICTIMS WERE UPSTANDING CITIZENS.

...

POLICE?

CAN THE POLICE EVEN CATCH HIM?

A PLACE WITHOUT ANY HUMAN CONTACT WHATSOEVER.

WE NEED TO EXPLAIN ALL OF THIS THOROUGHLY AND HAVE HIM LOCKED UP SOMEPLACE HE'LL NEVER ESCAPE FROM...

EVEN IF WE HIT HIM WITH A RED ARROW AND TURNED HIM IN, AFTER ANOTHER 33 DAYS HE'D DO IT ALL AGAIN.

...

EVEN IF THEY DO, THEY'LL JUST ARREST YOU AND SAKI FOR THE DANGER YOU REPRESENT.

I DON'T THINK THEY'LL BELIEVE ANYTHING YOU SAY.

SO WE HAVE TO KILL HIM.

I CAN'T DO IT...

BUT... I CAN'T.

EVER SINCE MY FAMILY DIED WHEN I WAS YOUNG, I CAN'T FORGET SOMETHING MY MOM AND DAD SAID TO ME.

THE WORDS KEEP RINGING IN MY HEAD SINCE I GOT BACK HERE.

THAT'S WHY...

I CAN'T HATE ANYONE.

I CAN'T KILL ANYONE.

YOU CAN DO IT, AKIRA!

MM.

MM!

YOU'RE ALMOST THERE!

MMM!

EEP!

BD

SLIP

AH!

OWK

HA HA HA HA HA!

HA

HAVING FUN, MIRAI?

YEAH.

OF COURSE I AM. BEING WITH MY FAMILY IS THE MOST FUN OF ALL.

SAME FOR ME... I'M HAPPIEST ON MY DAYS OFF, WHEN I CAN SPEND MY TIME WITH YOU.

DAD...

HMM?

MOM ALWAYS SAYS THAT I WAS "BORN FOR THE SAKE OF BEING HAPPY" OR SOMETHING.

YEAH, SHE DOES. IT'S KIND OF LIKE A CATCHPHRASE OF HERS. DON'T WORRY ABOUT IT.

NO, WHAT I MEAN IS...

I'M ALREADY HAPPY NOW.

?

SWISH SWISH

IN ORDER FOR *EVERYONE* TO BE HAPPY, WHAT SHOULD I DO?

SO IN ORDER TO BE HAPPY FOR THE REST OF MY LIFE...

HAPPY FOREVER...

DON'T YOU JUST TELL YOURSELF "I'M HAPPY"?

YOU THINK SO? I WAS BEING PRETTY SERIOUS.

TELL MYSELF THAT? WOW, WHAT A LAME ANSWER...

HUH?

WHAT DO YOU THINK IS THE WORST POSSIBLE THING FOR A PERSON TO DO, MIRAI?

THAT DOESN'T WORK FOR EVERYONE. AND THERE ARE TIMES YOU CAN'T BE HAPPY JUST BY THINKING IT.

LIKE... KILL SOMEONE?

...

THE ONE THING ABOVE ALL ELSE THAT A HUMAN BEING SHOULD NEVER DO.

HA HA HA! GOOD ANSWER. THAT IS ***WAY*** OFF-LIMITS.

BUT THAT'S ALREADY SOMETHING THAT'S PROHIBITED BY LAW.

I MEAN THINGS THAT HAVE NOTHING TO DO WITH THE LAW THAT A PERSON JUST SHOULDN'T DO.

NOTHING TO DO WITH THE LAW?

GEEZ, I DON'T KNOW.

I'M ONLY 36. THAT'S TOO YOUNG TO LECTURE YOU ABOUT LIFE...

...BUT I TRY TO LIVE BY A CERTAIN RULE.

THE WORST POSSIBLE THING YOU CAN DO IS HATE OTHERS.

NOTHING GOOD WILL EVER COME OF IT.

IT'S BAD FOR YOUR-SELF...

...AND BAD FOR OTHERS.

WHAT DO YOU MEAN BY THAT?

YOU'RE SO GROWN-UP, DAD.

GROWN? ALREADY? HA HA... WELL, THAT'S GREAT.

I FEEL LIKE I'VE GROWN JUST BY HEARING THAT.

"OF COURSE YOU SHOULDN'T KILL PEOPLE, BUT YOU START BY NOT HATING PEOPLE."

THE TRICKY PART IS THESE THINGS SOUND OBVIOUS AND SIMPLE, BUT THEY'RE NOT.

PERHAPS WE'D REACH "EVERYONE BEING HAPPY," AS MOM LIKES TO SAY.

IF THEY WERE THAT EASY, WE'D HAVE NO CONFLICTS OR WARS. MORE HAPPY PEOPLE, AND FEWER THAT ARE MISERABLE.

MOM, DAD... WHAT SHOULD I DO...?

THAT'S CORRECT. JUST THAT HE CANNOT BE IGNORED.

NOBODY SAID THAT YOU NEEDED TO KILL METROPOLIMAN.

FSH H H

...

ALLIES...

A THOUGHT OCCURRED TO ME AT THE STADIUM.

MOST OF THE CANDIDATES CAN'T THINK HIGHLY OF METRO-POLIMAN.

SO WHAT IF WE JOIN FORCES ...?

IS THERE ANYONE ELSE OUT THERE WHO WOULD JOIN US IN OUR CAUSE?!

TAKE ME WITH YOU.

I'M AFRAID OF METRO-POLIMAN.

THIS MAKES IT TWO-ON-TWO.

I SEE...

GIVEN THE WAY THIS COMPETITION WORKS, IT WOULD BE TO OUR ADVANTAGE TO GAIN SOME ALLIES.

PERHAPS WE SHOULD START BY GATHERING AS MANY CANDIDATES AS WE CAN FIND.

YEAH!

WE CAN SURMISE THAT METROPOLIMAN HAS RECEIVED THREE SETS OF WINGS AND ARROWS FROM THE CANDIDATES HE HAS KILLED SO FAR.

EVEN A NON-CANDIDATE CAN USE THEM IF PIERCED BY A RED ARROW FIRST, BUT THAT WILL ONLY LAST FOR 33 DAYS.

IF HANDED TO ANOTHER CANDIDATE, THESE TOOLS CAN STILL BE USED INDEFINITELY.

IN OTHER WORDS, METROPOLIMAN IS A SPECIAL-RANK, BUT HE MIGHT AS WELL HAVE THREE ALLIES WITH FIRST-RANK ANGELS.

WE HAVE A SPECIAL-RANK AND A SECOND-RANK...

...

...

THREE ...?

AT THE VERY LEAST, WE'LL WANT THREE COMPANIONS WITH FIRST-RANK ANGELS OR BETTER.

BUT HOW DO WE SEARCH FOR THEM...?

SHK...

TONK

FSH

HI...

WHAT WAS THAT?

HEAVEN!

AAAH!!

SAK!

...

!

A GOD CANDI-DATE!

SHIT

?!

I AGREE WITH YOUR PLAN.

FSSHH HHHH

HOWEVER, I USED ALL 14 OF MY ARROWS TO HELP SEARCH FOR OTHER CANDIDATES AT THE STADIUM AND CANNOT MAKE USE OF THEM RIGHT NOW.

I TOO AM A GOD CANDIDATE WITH WINGS AND RED ARROWS.

FIRST OF ALL, HIT ME WITH A RED ARROW.

THEN ORDER ME TO TELL YOU WHAT I'M REALLY THINKING, AND THE RESULTS SHOULD SATISFY YOU. LET'S GET ON WITH IT.

THAT WILL PROVE TO YOU THAT I'M NOT BEING CONTROLLED.

TO BE CONTINUED...

Tsugumi Ohba

Born in Tokyo, Tsugumi Ohba is the author of the hit series *Death Note* and *Bakuman。*.

Takeshi Obata

Takeshi Obata was born in 1969 in Niigata, Japan, and first achieved international recognition as the artist of the wildly popular *Shonen Jump* title *Hikaru no Go*, which won the 2003 Tezuka Osamu Cultural Prize: Shinsei "New Hope" Award and the 2000 Shogakukan Manga Award. He went on to illustrate the smash hit *Death Note* as well as the hugely successful manga *Bakuman。* and *All You Need Is Kill*.

PLATINVM END

VOLUME 2
SHONEN JUMP Manga Edition

°

STORY **T**sug**u**mi **O**h**b**a
ART Ta**k**e s**h**i O**b**a**ta**

°

TRANSLATION Stephen Paul
TOUCH-UP ART & LETTERING James Gaubatz
DESIGN Shawn Carrico
EDITOR Alexis Kirsch

°

ORIGINAL COVER DESIGN Narumi Noriko

°

PLATINUM END © 2015 by Tsugumi Ohba, Takeshi Obata
All rights reserved.
First published in Japan in 2015 by SHUEISHA Inc., Tokyo.
English translation rights arranged by SHUEISHA Inc.

°

The stories, characters and incidents mentioned in this publication are entirely fictional.

°

No portion of this book may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means without written permission from the copyright holders.

°

Printed in the U.S.A.

°

Published by VIZ Media, LLC
P.O. Box 77010
San Francisco, CA 94107

°

10 9 8 7 6 5 4 3 2 1
First printing, March 2017

www.viz.com

www.shonenjump.com

PLATINUM END

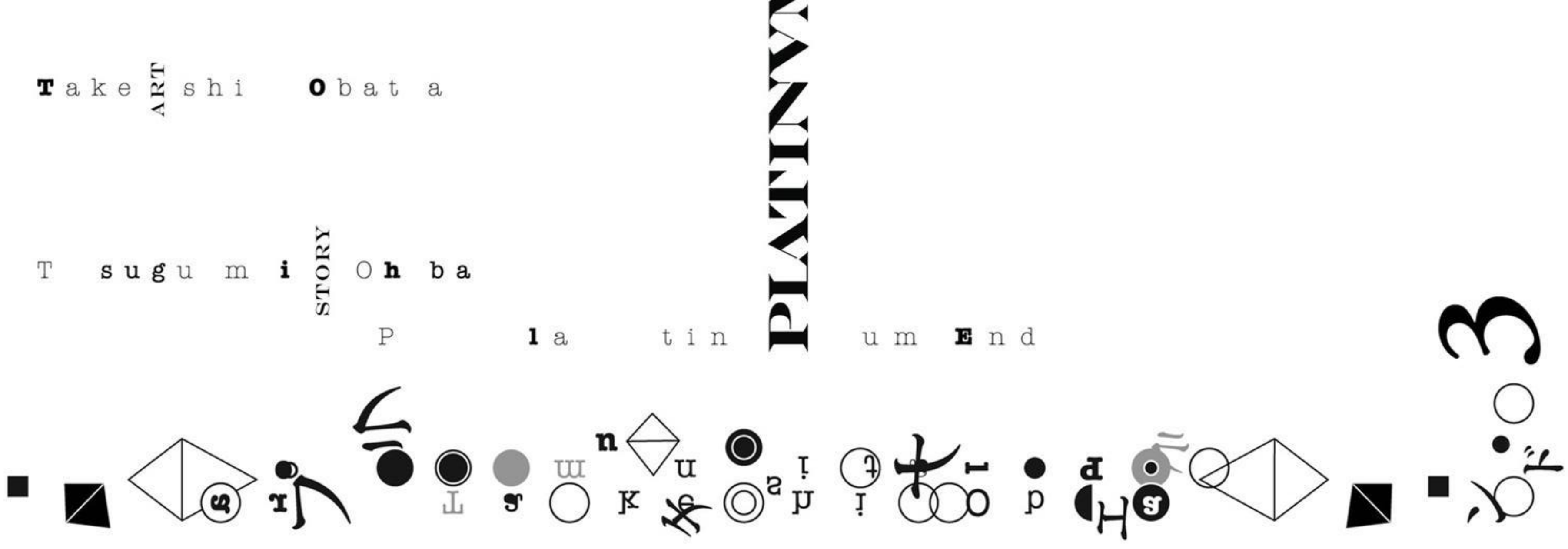
STORY
TSUGUMI OHBA

ART
TAKESHI OBATA

PLATINUM END

Takeshi Obata
ART

Tsugumi Ohba
STORY



CONTENTS

#7 Death Sentence
P3

#8 Two Painful Options
P73

#9 Tower of Nightmares
P141

Published by Yen Press, LLC
150 West 30th Street, 19th Floor
New York, NY 10001

#7 Death Sentence

I'VE GOT A FIRST-RANK ANGEL, BUT I CAN'T USE MY ARROWS AT THE MOMENT. DON'T WORRY!

HIT ME WITH A RED ARROW. THAT WILL PROVE THAT I'M NOT BEING CON-TROLLED.

FSHH

AAAAAA

WHY DOES HE SEEM SO DESPERATELY MISERABLE...?

WHAT IF I WAS UNDER METRO-POLIMAN'S CONTROL?

HFF

DO IT QUICK.

HFF

...

FSHH

HH

H

...

PIERCE HIM, SAKI.

HE'S GOT A POINT.

IT WILL GO THROUGH THE GLASS.

IT'S

WHAT ARE YOU WAITING FOR?! DO IT!

MP

?

WAIT A MOMENT.

ARE YOU SURE YOU WANT HIM FALLING IN LOVE WITH SAKI, MIRAI?

WELL... I...

UH...

AND IT'S NOT JUST UP TO MIRAI. THERE'S SAKI'S FEELINGS TO CONSIDER AS WELL.

IS THIS REALLY THE TIME?!

...

NO! IT'S JUST PROPER SENSE TO USE AN ARROW ON ANY GOD CANDIDATE WHO SHOWS UP!

!

IF SAKI CAN'T DO IT, THEN IT SHOULD BE YOU, MIRAI!

I DON'T HAVE MUCH TIME!

EITHER ONE OF YOU! JUST DO IT!

KNOCK

...BUT IN THIS CASE...

I FIGURED I SHOULD THINK VERY HARD BEFORE USING MY ARROWS...

IN FACT, YOU *SHOULDN'T* HIT HIM WITH ARROWS.

NO, I'M SAYING YOU DON'T NEED TO USE ANY ARROWS AT ALL.

WE SHOULDN'T?

YES.

SHF

I MEAN...

!

HE'S NOT LYING.

RIGHT?

...

FSHHH HHH HHH

...

THANKS.

SHF

SHF

IF NASSE SAYS YOU'RE NOT LYING, THEN IT'S BOUND TO BE TRUE.

SO NATURALLY, WE WANTED TO GET YOU FIRST...

NORMALLY IT WOULD BE YOU TRYING TO HIT US.

IN FACT, YOU HAVE NOTHING TO GAIN BY TELLING SOMEONE TO HIT YOU WITH AN ARROW.

...BUT YOU WILL NOT SPEAK YOUR OWN MIND, ONLY THE THINGS THAT MATCH UP WITH OUR POINT OF VIEW.

...

IF YOU'RE PIERCED, YOU WILL FOLLOW THE ORDERS OF THE PIERCER...

BUT IF WE'RE GOING TO JOIN FORCES, THEN AS NASSE SAYS, IT'S BETTER NOT TO PIERCE YOU.

...

FFT

ME TOO ...

I TRUST YOU.

SHF

SEE, I DON'T HAVE MUCH TIME...

THEN LET'S CONTINUE.

I SEE ...

YOU'RE NOT GOING TO PIERCE ME...

WHAT I MEAN IS...

YEAH ...

...YOU DON'T HAVE MUCH TIME...

WHEN YOU SAY...

...

I HAVE CANCER.

TERMINAL.

IT'S METASTASIZED ALL OVER MY BODY. NO POSSIBLE RECOVERY.

...

FOUR MONTHS AGO, I WAS GIVEN THREE MONTHS TO LIVE...

DON'T LOOK AT ME LIKE THAT.

I WAS 100 PERCENT CONVINCED IT WAS MY ESCORT TO THE AFTERLIFE.

AND RIGHT ABOUT THREE MONTHS AFTER THAT SENTENCE, AN ANGEL CAME TO ME.

NO.

HUH? YOU'RE NOT?

I SEE...

I SEE.

SO I'M NOT DEAD YET...

...

NANATO MUKAIDO.

I'M GOING TO DIE IN MOMENTS.

HOPE? DON'T BE STUPID.

YOU HAVE LOST YOUR HOPE IN LIFE.

I HAVE NO LIFE LEFT TO HOPE FOR.

IT'S JUST ONE LESS PUNY LITTLE MAN IN THE WORLD, LOOKING FORWARD TO THAT LAST SMOKE BEFORE HE DIES.

EVERY HUMAN BEING HAS TO DIE...

IT'S AN EARLY END, BUT THERE'S NOTHING I CAN DO... IT WAS MOSTLY WORTHWHILE.

I LIVED MY LIFE AS BEST I COULD, I THINK...

IS THAT SO? BUT...

I READ IN AN OLD BOOK THAT "THOSE WHO ACCEPT DEATH WHEN THEIR ABILITY TO LIVE IS DENIED THEM CAN BECOME STRONGER THAN THOSE WHO SIMPLY LOSE THEIR HOPE IN LIFE."

STRONGER? WHAT DO YOU MEAN?

IT IS A STORY THAT MIGHT CONVINCE YOU THAT LIFE IS WORTHWHILE AGAIN.

IF YOU CAN BECOME GOD BEFORE GIVING IN TO DISEASE...

...THEN YOU WILL OVERCOME IT, AND CAN END UP LIVING FOR THOUSANDS OF YEARS LONGER.

I THOUGHT... I WOULD BE LEAVING THEM HELP-LESS...

...

WITH 28 YEARS LEFT ON OUR MORTGAGE ...

THE SECOND ONE ON ITS WAY...

MY WIFE... OUR CHILD...

OHHH...

MAKE ME A GOD!!

I JUMPED AT THE CHANCE...

BUT IT WASN'T AS EASY AS IT SOUNDED...

AND NOW YOU HAVE THIS NUTJOB NAMED METROPOLIMAN RUNNING AROUND...

THE PROCESS CAN LAST UP TO 999 DAYS... AND IS CHOSEN FROM A FIELD OF 13...

...TO STOP WASTING MY TIME WITH LIFE-PROLONGING TREATMENT.

SO I DECIDED ...

IT'S OBVIOUSLY NOT GOING TO WRAP UP WHILE I'M STILL ALIVE.

SO I MADE UP MY MIND.

FORGET WAITING FOR DEATH IN MY BED. I'D RATHER USE MY WINGS AND ARROWS WHILE I'M STILL ALIVE!

I RESEARCHED THE RICHEST PEOPLE IN JAPAN-- I WON'T SAY WHOM-- AND USING MY RED ARROWS, GOT 200 MILLION YEN IN CASH.

THAT WILL BE FOR MY WIFE AND CHILDREN AFTER I'M GONE...

IT MEANS THEY'LL BE FINE, NO MATTER WHAT HAPPENS.

HOW CAN SOMEONE WHO ONLY THINKS OF HIS OWN NEEDS FIT THAT POSITION?

I'M A THIEF. I DON'T DESERVE TO BE GOD.

...

THAT'S NOT TRUE AT ALL.

YOU DID IT FOR YOUR WIFE AND CHILDREN. THAT'S THE BEST POSSIBLE USE FOR YOUR WINGS AND ARROWS.

HAH ...

YOU'RE WISHING FOR THE HAPPINESS OF YOUR FAMILY.

I AGREE ...

I STOLE THIS MONEY IN EXCHANGE FOR GIVING UP ON THE IDEA OF BEING GOD.

NO, THIS WAS MY PERSONAL DECISION.

WHAT CAN I DO TO ENSURE MY CHILDREN'S HAPPINESS?

I TRIED TO THINK ABOUT WHAT I CAN DO WHILE I'M STILL ALIVE...

I REALLY COULD DIE AT ANY MOMENT NOW.

...I HAVE TO MAKE SURE THAT METROPOLIMAN DOES NOT BECOME GOD.

AT THE VERY LEAST ...

JUST AS I WAS GETTING THAT IDEA, METROPOLIMAN SUMMONED US TO THE STADIUM.

LET THE 12 OF US MEET AND TALK THINGS OUT!

THE LOCATION... JINBO STADIUM.

...AND TEAM UP WITH THEM TO DEFEAT METROPOLIMAN.

IN ORDER TO DO THAT, I MUST MEET AS MANY CANDIDATES AS I CAN WHILE I STILL LIVE...

IF POSSIBLE, I'D LIKE TO MEET ***ALL*** OF THEM, SO I CAN SEE FOR MYSELF WHO IS BEST SUITED TO BE GOD.

I WAS CERTAIN THAT OTHER GOD CANDIDATES WOULD COME... SO I PIERCED 14 DETECTIVES AND PSYCHOLOGISTS— THAT BEING THE UPPER LIMIT OF RED ARROWS I CAN DEPLOY...

...AND SENT THEM ALL INTO THE STADIUM.

AND WE FOUND ...

...THAT YOU TWO WERE CLEARLY SHOWING SIGNS THAT YOU COULD SEE THE ANGELS AND ARROWS...

!

I MAY BE LOWER THAN SCUM ...

...

...BUT NOW THAT I DON'T CARE ABOUT MYSELF, I'VE GAINED CLEARER JUDGMENT OF OTHERS.

WHEN I SAW THE FOOTAGE OF YOU THE DETECTIVES SENT ME, I THOUGHT...

...

..."THEY LOOK LIKE GOOD PEOPLE."

?

THIS IS BAD NEWS.

AND DESPITE ALL OF OUR WARNINGS AND CAUTION, HE IDENTIFIED YOU AS CANDIDATES AT THE STADIUM.

I WAS EASILY ABLE TO IDENTIFY MIRAI AS A CANDIDATE UPON OUR FIRST MEETING.

AND WHAT ABOUT YOU TWO?

...

...BUT IT COULD EASILY HAVE SPIRALED OUT OF OUR CONTROL...

IT SEEMS THAT THIS TURNED OUT TO OUR BENEFIT IN THIS CASE...

DO YOU REALLY FEEL LIKE BEING GOD?

Heh...

ME NEITHER ...

I DON'T KNOW IF I...

...

OKAY, OKAY, THAT'S GOOD.

ANY HUMAN BEING WHO ***WANTS*** TO BE GOD ISN'T RIGHT IN THE HEAD.

YOU DID?!

ALSO, I FOUND ONE OTHER CANDIDATE AT THE BALLPARK.

!

BUT THE KID LOOKED LIKE THIS.

THEY FLEW AWAY, SO I DON'T KNOW WHO IT WAS...

LET'S WORK TOGETHER AND FIND THIS KID.

THIS PICTURE IS ALL THE EVIDENCE I HAVE TO GO ON FOR NOW.

...

YES, WE OUGHT TO DO THAT.

RIGHT.

?

I HAVE A CONDITION YOU MUST MEET FOR MY COOPERATION.

DO NOT GIVE UP ON LIFE.

PLEASE CONTINUE YOUR TREAT-MENT.

...

IT'S YOUR OWN EGO THAT'S SAYING IT'S OKAY TO DIE.

NO. I'VE ALREADY PASSED THE POINT WHERE I SHOULD HAVE DIED...

PLEASE THINK ABOUT THE REST OF YOUR FAMILY TOO...

KAKE-HASHI ...

TRY YOUR VERY BEST TO GET TREATMENT, TO SURVIVE AS LONG AS POSSIBLE, FOR YOUR FAMILY'S SAKE.

THAT'S MY CONDITION IF YOU WANT TO RECEIVE MY HELP.

I WANT TO LIVE FOR AS MANY DAYS AS POSSIBLE, IT'S TRUE.

YEAH... FINE...

WHY WOULD HE SAY THAT TO A DYING MAN?

GREAT ...

ANY TIME SPENT ON TREATMENT IS WASTED...

I WAS IN CHARGE OF PLANNING NEW PRODUCTS FOR AN APPAREL COMPANY-- UNTIL I HAD TO LEAVE, THAT IS.

OH, I NEARLY FORGOT. MY NAME'S NANATO MUKAIDO.

KI- KIN NG

TIKI NG

KI NNG

HOW SHOULD I USE THESE THREE SETS OF WINGS AND ARROWS?

MEANING THERE'S NO WAY TO USE THEM TO CAUSE DEATH WITHOUT HAVING THE WHITE ARROWS LIKE ME.

AND THEY WON'T KILL ANYONE ELSE IF YOU ORDER THEM TO COMMIT MURDER.

YOU CAN'T KILL SOMEONE WITH THE RED ARROWS JUST BY TELLING THEM TO DIE.

Heh...

SOMEONE WHO'S READY...

BUT WHAT IF IT'S A PERSON WHO ALREADY WANTS TO DIE?

WHITE ARROWS... THAT'S GREAT...

THOSE WILL COME IN VERY HANDY IN A BATTLE!

DON'T SHOUT LIKE THAT, MR. MUKAIDO.

WHAT?! YOU'RE A SPECIAL RANK WITH WHITE ARROWS?!

?

...

IF I DIE FIRST, PLEASE TAKE MY WINGS AND USE THEM FOR YOURSELF.

Ha ha ...

SO... HANAKAGO'S ANGEL REVEL IS A SECOND RANK WITH JUST RED ARROWS.

...

I TOLD YOU, DON'T TALK ABOUT DYING...

RIGHT, RIGHT, SORRY.

SMIRK

SHE'S KNOWN FOR BEING THE ANGEL OF KNOWLEDGE, AND WAS A SPECIAL-RANK ANGEL AT ONE POINT.

MY ANGEL'S NAME IS BARET.

SHE IS INDEED VERY LEARNED, BUT NOT WITHOUT FLAWS...

ANGELS, GODS... SHE HAS ALL KINDS OF HEAVENLY KNOWLEDGE GLEANED FROM HISTORY.

SHE WAS DEMOTED FROM SPECIAL RANK TO FIRST RANK FOR BEING A KNOW-IT-ALL.

YOU DON'T KNOW HER?

BARET?

KAKEHASHI'S ANGEL, NASSE, IS SPECIAL RANK.

Mirai Kakehashi

Nasse

I SEE. I'M GETTING THE FEELING THIS MIGHT ACTUALLY WORK.

I'M GOING TO BORROW YOUR TABLE AND TRY TO SUM UP EVERYTHING WE KNOW.

SHWP

MEYZA?

...I'M PRETTY SURE IT'S MEYZA.

MY ANGEL HAS YOU BEAT FOR SEX APPEAL.

OH! BASED ON WHAT METRO-POLIMAN SAID ABOUT HIS ANGEL ...

R Wh Wi

Meyz

Metropoliman (Identity Unknown)

+ R ×3 Wi ×3

MEYZA, ANGEL OF GREED, WHO WENT STRAIGHT FROM UNRANKED TO SPECIAL RANK USING SOME UNKNOWN MEANS.

RIGHT, BARET SAID SOME-THING ABOUT THAT...

SPECIAL RANK

Wings + Red arrows + White arrows

Nasse
Mirai Kakehashi

Meyza
Metropoliman
(Identity Unknown)

Muni

FIRST RANK

Wings + Red arrows

Baret
Nanato Mukaido

Balta

Emaka
Shogo Hatakeyama

Penema

Egura
Saburo Tabuchi

Ogaro

SECOND RANK

Wings or White arrows

Luta
Kyosuke Tonma

Revel
Saki Hanakago

Yazeli

Jami
Chiyo Nakayama

IF WE REMOVE METROPOLIMAN, THAT LEAVES FIVE CANDIDATES THAT HAVEN'T BEEN REVEALED, ONE OF WHOM I HAVE PHOTOGRAPHED...

PHEW.

THAT'S WHAT WE'VE GOT FOR NOW.

KTUNK

OH... THERE'S ONE OTHER THING I WANT US TO HAVE STRAIGHT.

IN THE FUTURE...

...DEPENDING ON WHAT WE DO, YOU MIGHT NEED TO COVER YOURSELVES UP IN PUBLIC.

THE WAY METRO-POLIMAN DOES.

IF WE *ARE* ABLE TO GET FIVE OR SIX OF US TOGETHER, YOU'LL WANT SOME COOL COSTUMES.

IF IT COMES TO THAT, I'M YOUR MAN.

TRUST ME, I DESIGNED OUTFITS FOR A CLOTHING COMPANY. I KNOW WHAT I'M DOING.

UMF

...YOU CAN ASSUME I'VE FINALLY DIED.

IF I'M NOT HERE WHEN YOU GET BACK FROM SCHOOL...

SEE YOU TOMOR-ROW.

Ha ha ...

SHNK

...

JUST... THINK ABOUT IT.

...

YES. BUT POSSIBLY VERY HELPFUL.

HE WAS... STRANGE.

SHWIP

HA HA, JUST KIDDING!

I TOLD YOU NOT TO SAY THAT STUFF!

BYE.

AFTER ALL, THOSE READY TO DIE ARE VERY STRONG INSIDE.

...

JOSO ACADEMY

DING-DONG

SKRITCH SKRITCH

THAT'S ALL FOR TODAY, CLASS.

UNTIL TOMORROW.

If I Become God

Kanade Uryu

BOW!

KTH UK

STAND!

FLIP

KTHUNK

If I Become God

K

KANADE.

HMM?

LET'S VISIT THE MIDDLE SCHOOL CLUB THIS TIME.

YESSS! ♡

MUST BE NICE TO BE THE HEADMASTER'S GRANDSON. YOU CAN GO ANYWHERE YOU WANT.

YOU REALLY LIKE THAT, DON'T YOU? WELL... I DO TOO.

C'MON, WILL YOU TAKE ME TO OBSERVE CLUB PRACTICE AGAIN?

I WISH I COULD GO OUT WITH A GIRL LIKE HER.

GIRLS THAT AGE ARE AT THEIR MOST BEAUTIFUL. THEY'RE SO PURE.

I CAN'T GET ENOUGH OF SAYURI. AND SHE'S THREE YEARS YOUNGER THAN ME...

SHIP

REALLY?!

IF YOU WOULD DIE TO DO IT WITH HER, I CAN MAKE HER FALL IN LOVE WITH YOU.

...

BUT THE PART ABOUT DYING IS A 100 PERCENT GUARANTEE.

...

I THINK I'LL PASS.

MINAMI-KAWA.

WHAT?

IF YOU COULD HAVE ONE WISH, ANY WISH, WHAT WOULD IT BE?

?!

IF I COULD HAVE ONE THING I REALLY WANTED?

YES.

MONEY. I *REALLY* WANT TO BE RICH.

NOT THAT.

ZWIP

DOESN'T COUNT?

NO.

YOU MEAN... LIKE RIDDING THE WORLD OF NUCLEAR POWER AND NUCLEAR WEAPONS?

YEAH, I LIKE THAT.

IT'S TOO SMALL, TOO PERSONAL... I MEAN SOMETHING THAT AFFECTS THE ENTIRE WORLD.

YOU KNOW WHAT? I'LL ACCEPT THAT.

...

THEN I WANT ALL UGLY WOMEN TO DISAPPEAR FROM THE WORLD.

YEAAH!

OH. RIGHT.

NO CAN DO. I WOULD DIE.

AND THEN I WANT EVERY GUY MORE HANDSOME THAN ME GONE TOO.

IF IT WAS SOMETHING TOTALLY IMPOSSIBLE UNLESS ANY WISH COULD COME TRUE...

IF IT WASN'T SOMETHING REALISTIC, LIKE MAKING PEOPLE DIE...

WHAT DO *YOU* WANT THEN, KANADE?

ME? LET'S SEE...

...

FSH

FSH

I WOULD BRING THE DEAD BACK TO LIFE.

YOUR LITTLE SISTER?

HUH? THEY ALL LEFT.

LET'S GO.

NO... WAIT A SECOND.

?

DID YOU KNOW THAT IN ARCHERY, THERE'S A SHORT-RANGE TARGET AT 28 METERS, AND A LONG-RANGE TARGET AT 60?

TAP TAP TAP

I KNOW 28 METERS IS A SNAP.

BUT 60 METERS...

...

GHH

WHIP

NG

TI

KW ING---

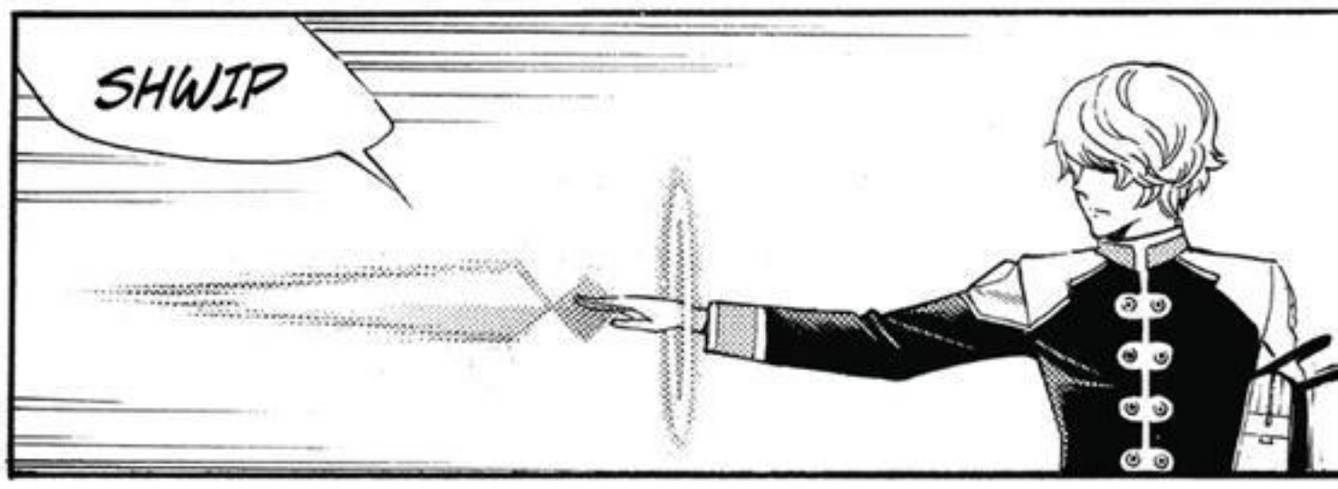
KI- KW II

VSH---

WHATCHA DOING?

?

?
OKAY. LET'S GO.


SHWIP

WITH THREE, I COULD GET OVER 90 METERS...
I SEE... IF I CONNECT TWO ARROWS, 60 METERS IS EASY.

HUP
HUP
HUP

SHA

TAK

JOSO INDUSTRIES
HEAVY CHEMICALS
TECHNOLOGY DEVELOPMENT SITE

DANGER
NO
ADMITTANCE

TAK

TAK

TAK

WELCOME BACK.

TAK

TAK

BEEP

5H

HH

TAK

TAK

TAK

TAK

BEEP

BEEP

BEEP

TAK

HAPPY BIRTHDAY ...

WE HAVE TO COMB OVER THE PAPERS, TV, ONLINE NEWS-- ANYTHING WE CAN FIND.

WE'LL SEARCH FOR THIS KID FIRST.

ANYONE WHO GOT RICH QUICK OR SUDDENLY GOT POPULAR ...

BE WARY OF ANYONE FITTING THESE CONDITIONS.

ANY ATHLETE IN A SPEED-BASED SPORT MAKING HUGE GAINS...

BING-BONG

NHT News Alert

A NEWS ALERT!

THAT'S THE BENEFIT OF AN ADULT.

WITH MR. MUKAIDO AROUND, HE MAKES IT VERY CLEAR WHAT WE OUGHT TO BE DOING...

NHT News Alert

Girl A, killer of multiple middle school students, has escaped from juvenile detention center.

AUTHORITIES HAVE RELEASED A NOTE THAT APPEARS TO BE A CRIMINAL DECLARATION.

WE NOW HAVE AN UPDATE ON GIRL A, THE ESCAPEE IN QUESTION.

THE GIRL WHO KILLED THOSE THREE FEMALE MIDDLE SCHOOL STUDENTS TWO YEARS AGO?!

I already killed three cute little girls💀 but once I'm free from this place I think I'll be killing more of the ugly ones this time♡

[redacted]

NHT News Alert

Girl A, killer of multiple middle school students

IF SHE'S UNDER METRO-POLIMAN'S CONTROL, AND HAS HIS WINGS AND RED ARROWS...

...

THIS IS WAY TOO UNNATURAL TO BE ANYTHING ELSE!

WHA... WHAT IS THIS?

...

AND WITH WINGS, SHE WON'T HAVE ANY TROUBLE ABDUCTING PEOPLE AND STAYING AWAY FROM THE POLICE.

RIGHT. SHE WON'T NEED A WHITE ARROW IF SHE HAS A KNIFE.

ALL THREE OF THOSE MURDERS WERE DONE WITH A KNIFE, RIGHT?

LOOKS LIKE WE'RE GOING TO NEED THOSE COSTUMES SOONER THAN I THOUGHT.

#8 Two Painful Options

GAH!

KAW!

GRAH!

GRAH

GRAH

GRAHH!

GAAH!

GRAH!

KARUI-ZAWA

CHEEP

CHEEP

CRAZY!

CRAZY!

THIS IS AWESOME.

AH!

MMM...

AHHH... THIS IS BLISS.

SAME FOR ME.

WHUP

SHH

WHUP

WHUP

THIS IS CRAZY.

THIS IS SO CRAZY.

SHE'S NOT *SERIAL KILLER GIRL A* FOR NOTHING. ALREADY ON TO THE NEXT VICTIM.

HUFF !!

KCHAK

HUFF !!

OOOO! METRO-POLIMAN! ♡

ALSO, YOU'RE BEING REALLY LOUD.

AT LEAST LOCK THE DOOR.

THUMP

THUMP ♪

WHAT? WHO'S THIS, MISURIN?

YOU CAME! I'M SO HAPPY!

Squawk!

RIGHT?

I HATE BOYS-- THEY'RE ALL SO FILTHY. MASTER POLIMAN'S THE ONLY ONE I LOVE.

...

WHAT? MISURIN MADE A MISTAKERIN?

BUT SHE WAS AS FAR DOWN AS I COULD GO!

I WAS JUST CHECKING YOUR WORK. SHE WAS TOO BEAUTIFUL! UGLY ONES, I TOLD YOU.

THIS ONE'S TOEING THE LINE TOO.

?

...

SHHP

WE COULD DO A THREE-SOME.

AWW, LEAVING ALREADY?

NOT INTER-ESTED.

YES, MASTER POLIMAN! ♡

FINE. JUST DO AS YOU'RE TOLD.

FWOSH

EVEN THE POLICE WANT TO KNOW.

HUH? I HAVE NO IDEA WHAT HE LOOKS LIKE.

AWWW, HE LEFT.

WHAT?!

ISN'T THAT KINDA CRAZY?

BUT YOU'RE THE ONLY ONE I WANT, MISURIN.

I'M SURE HE MUST BE VERY HANDSOME INSIDE THERE.

SO LET'S TRY OUT SOMETHING EVEN CRAZIER.

EXACTLY. IT'S SUPER CRAZY. I LOVE CRAZY AND DANGEROUS THINGS.

EEK! ♡

HERE, PUT ON THIS BLINDFOLD.

HUH?

I'LL TIE YOUR HANDS BEHIND YOU.

TUG

HUFF !!

OOH, WOW, THIS IS FUN! ♡

HUFF !!

SHH

I'LL USE THIS...

AND NOW...

but once I'm free from this place I think I'll be killing more of the ugly ones this time♡

NHT News Alert

Girl A, killer of multiple middle school students, has escaped from a juvenile detention center.

IT'S AN UNFORTUNATE AGE WE LIVE IN...

GIRL A'S NAME AND PICTURE WERE LEAKED ONTO THE INTERNET TWO YEARS AGO, RIGHT?

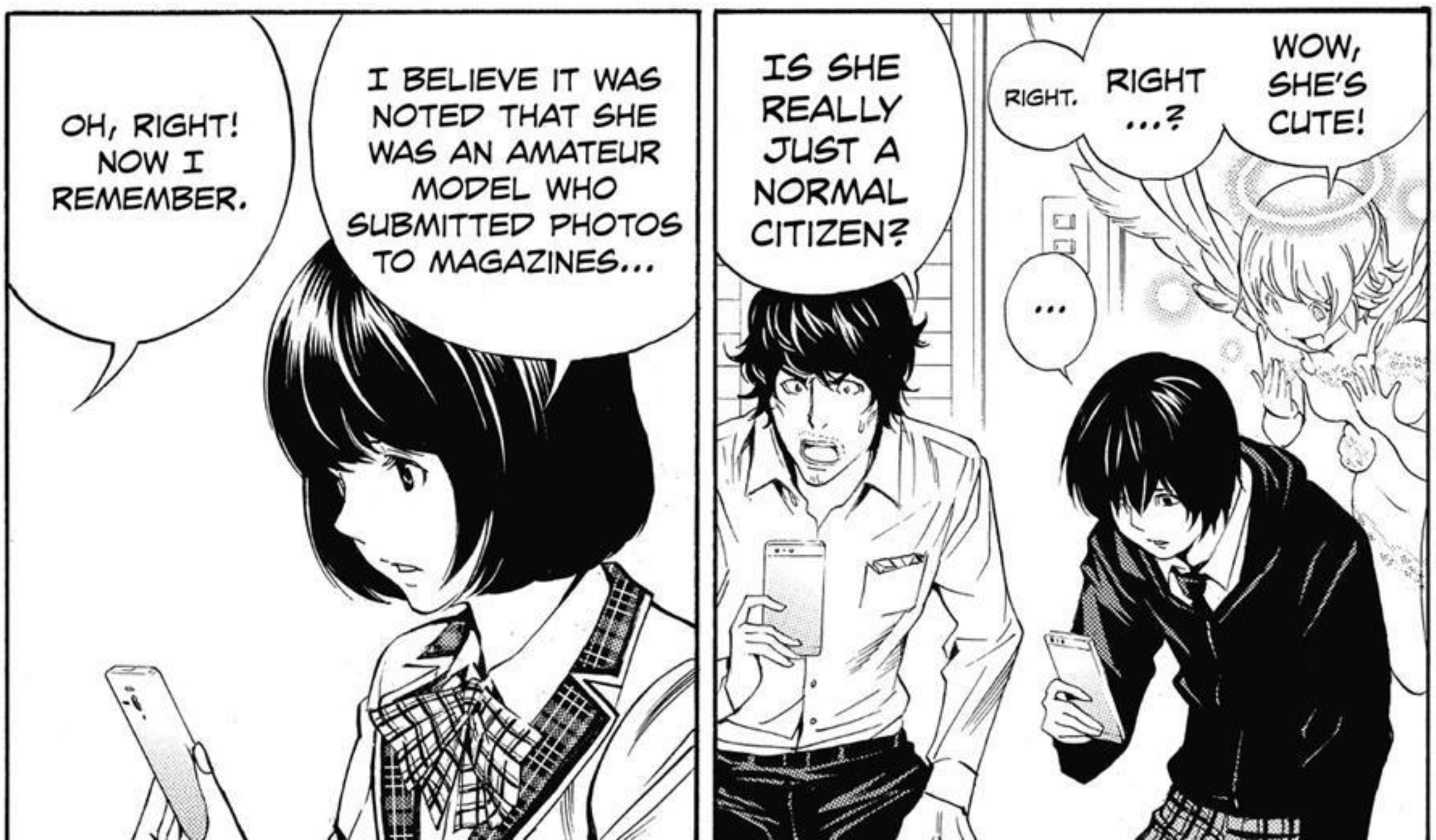
THAT'S TRUE.

BUT IT'S TO OUR BENEFIT TO BE ABLE TO RECOGNIZE HER.

This is the serial killer of middle school girls!! Mi³

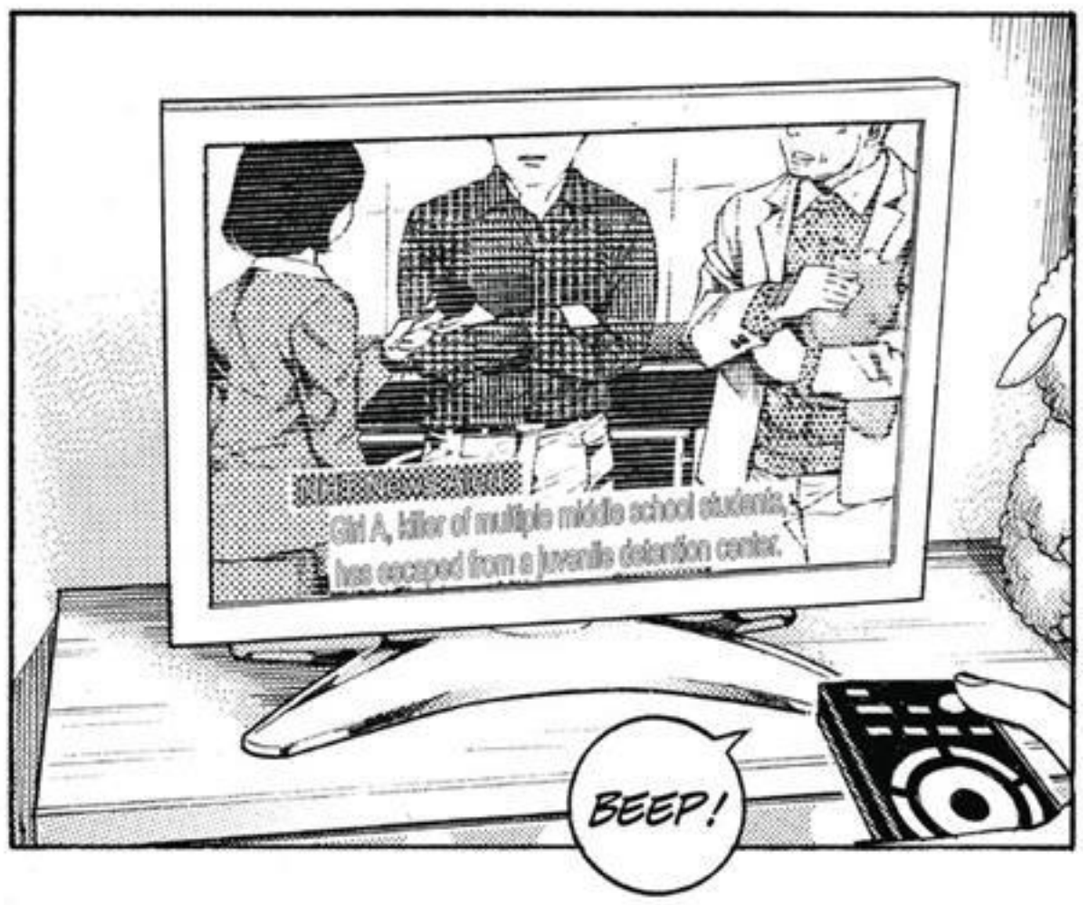
Name: Mimimi Yamada (age 14 in picture) Alias: Mi³ (Misurin)

The insane killer who's captivating the nation



THE NET'S BEEN IN A PANIC SINCE THE NEWS OF HER ESCAPE.

DURING QUESTIONING BY THE POLICE, SHE SAID, "I WANTED TO KILL PEOPLE," "IT WAS THRILLING WHEN I KILLED THEM" AND "I STILL WANT TO KILL MORE." THIS IS HORRIFYING...



IT SAYS SAKURA TV'S TALKING WITH A WITNESS RIGHT NOW.

HUH?!

SO YOU'RE SAYING THAT THE STAFF MEMBER HELPED HER ESCAPE ...?

THAT'S RIGHT.

YES, A STAFF MEMBER OF THE DETENTION CENTER RELEASED HER.

THAT'S RIGHT, WAVING HER HAND AND EVERY-THING.

IT WASN'T EVEN AN "ESCAPE," BLEEP WAS SENT OFF WEARING A UNIFORM.

WELL... THIS IS THE PART THAT'S TRULY HARD TO BELIEVE.

THIS IS HARD TO BELIEVE... SO WHERE DID GIRL A GO?

!

HUH?!

SHE JUST VANISHED.

SIGH...

BZT...

...

METROPOLIMAN COULD HAVE PIERCED THE STAFFER FIRST, BUT HE LIKELY GAVE HER ARROWS AS WELL.

SHE'S GOT RED ARROWS AND WINGS.

METRO-POLIMAN IS ONLY INTER-ESTED IN ELIMINATING RIVALS.

I AGREE ...

PROBABLY TO USE *GIRL A* TO LURE OUT MORE GOD CANDIDATES.

FOR WHAT PURPOSE?

...

SHE'LL HAVE A VERY EASY TIME KILLING IF SHE SEDUCES HER VICTIMS. IT COULD BE HAPPENING RIGHT NOW...

HE GIVES A SERIAL KILLER OBSESSED WITH YOUNG TEEN GIRLS SOME WINGS AND RED ARROWS...

ESPECIALLY IF IT HAPPENS JUST AFTER WE ALL WITNESSED A LITTLE GIRL'S MURDER AT THE BASEBALL STADIUM.

THAT POSSIBILITY WILL SPUR INTEREST IN FINDING AND STOPPING HER...

SO...

THE QUESTION IS, WHAT DO *WE* DO?

UM... DO?

DO WE IGNORE HER OR NOT?

YOU'RE ASKING US IF WE'RE GOING TO TAKE METRO-POLIMAN'S BAIT OR NOT?

THAT'S EXACTLY WHAT THIS IS.

...

ME? I THINK ...

WHAT DO YOU THINK WE SHOULD DO, MR. MUKAIDO?

THE POLICE WILL BE ABLE TO CAPTURE HER AFTER THAT, BUT SHE'LL HAVE THE OPPORTUNITY TO KILL ANYONE SHE WANTS, UP TO A MAX OF 14.

IN 33 DAYS, THE WINGS AND ARROWS THAT METROPOLIMAN GAVE *GIRL A* AFTER HITTING HER WITH HIS OWN RED ARROW WILL DISAPPEAR.

...
AND KILL HER.

WE SHOULD FIND HER...

BUT IN THE CURRENT CIRCUM-STANCES...

I AGREE.

I THINK THAT WHEN METROPOLIMAN COMES TO KILL US AS WE APPROACH *GIRL A*... USING OUR OWN WHITE ARROWS TO KILL HIM...

...IS THE BEST PLAN.

...TO KILL HIM...

USE WHITE ARROWS...

...

ooo

I'M THE ONLY ONE OF US WITH WHITE ARROWS.

YES. METROPOLIMAN IS THE ROOT OF EVERYTHING. IT WILL NOT END UNTIL WE KILL HIM.

THE SAME THING APPLIED TO METRO PINK AND GREEN.

IF WE KILL METROPOLIMAN, *GIRL A* BECOMES AN ORDINARY GIRL AGAIN AND CAN BE HANDLED APPROPRIATELY.

PERSONALLY... I WANT TO MAKE SURE I SEE HIM DIE BEFORE I FINALLY KICK THE BUCKET.

WHAT DO YOU THINK?

CLEARLY THERE'S NO LEVEL TO WHICH HE WON'T SINK, AS HE'S GIVING A SERIAL KILLER WINGS AND ARROWS.

…

YOU DON'T AGREE, KAKE-HASHI?

…

I DON'T WANT TO KILL ANYONE.

BUT IN THIS CASE, THINK OF IT AS SELF-DEFENSE. IN MY OPINION, WE SHOULD KILL HIM BEFORE HE KILLS US.

WELL, THAT WOULD BE THE PROPER CHOICE.

...TO PUT A STOP TO METROPOLIMAN AND *GIRL A*. RED ARROWS WOULD ALSO WORK.

MAYBE WE DON'T NEED TO USE WHITE ARROWS...

...IF ONE OF METRO-POLIMAN'S COMPANIONS HITS MIRAI WITH A RED ARROW AT THAT POINT, EVERYTHING WILL FLIP AGAINST US.

IN THAT CASE...

BASED ON THE EVENTS AT THE STADIUM, HE IS CAPABLE OF ANYTHING. I AGREE THAT IF WE HAVE THE OPPORTUNITY, WE OUGHT TO KILL HIM.

METROPOLIMAN ALREADY HAS TWO SETS OF WINGS AND ARROWS.

BUT MY MIND CAN'T PROCESS IT.

I UNDER-STAND WHAT YOU'RE SAYING.

...

...IF THAT MAKES IT *RIGHT* TO KILL SOMEONE ...

I DON'T KNOW...

I'D RATHER BE MURDERED... THAN BE A MURDERER.

I'D RATHER BE LIED TO THAN BE A LIAR. I'D RATHER BE BULLIED THAN BE A BULLY.

DON'T YOU SEE THAT?

IF YOU DON'T KILL HIM, HE'LL KILL YOU.

...

I BELIEVED THAT NO MATTER WHAT, I MUST NEVER HATE ANOTHER PERSON...

I LIVED BY THAT CREED UNTIL I EVENTUALLY ATTEMPTED SUICIDE.

...

...

WHOA... ARE YOU SERI-OUS?

...AND THAT THE STAKES ARE TOO HIGH TO STICK TO THAT NOW. I UNDERSTAND THE LOGIC BEHIND ALL OF IT.

I UNDER-STAND THAT... AND HOW THAT LED TO MY SUICIDE ATTEMPT...

THAT MIGHT BE THE PROPER WAY FOR A SAINT TO LIVE, BUT EVEN A LITTLE KID KNOWS YOU CAN'T SURVIVE THE REAL WORLD WITH THAT MIND-SET!

BUT...

LET'S SAY THAT I...

...THINK OF IT THIS WAY THEN.

IN MY OPINION.

BUT THAT'S THE BEST PART ABOUT YOU, MIRAI.

AND YOU ARE IN A POSITION TO HIT METRO-POLIMAN FIRST WITHOUT HIM NOTICING.

NO, THAT MS. HANA-KAGO HERE IS ABOUT TO BE KILLED BY METRO-POLIMAN.

...

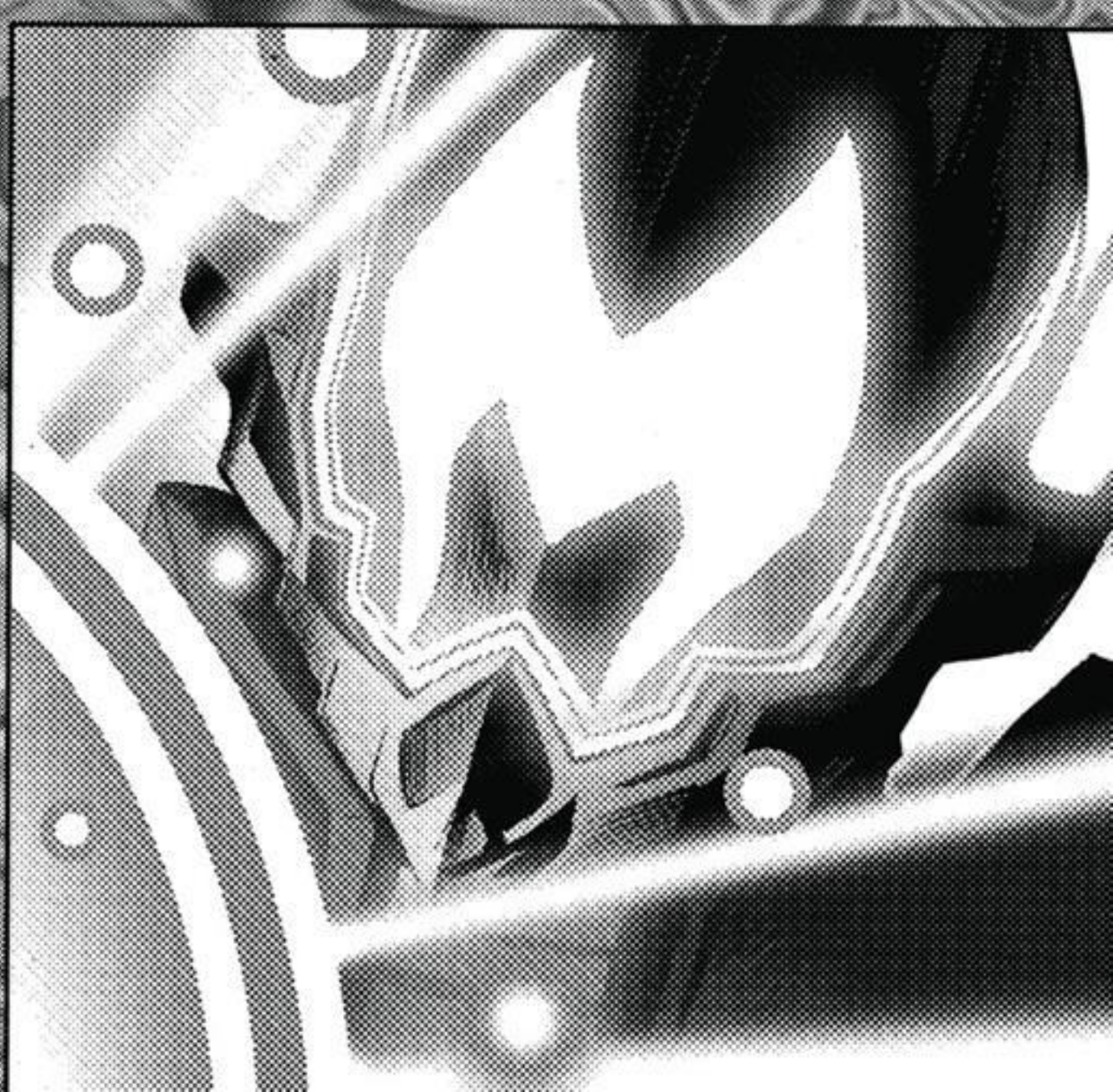
DO YOU USE RED OR WHITE?

YOU CAN ONLY USE ONE ARROW.

...OR A WHITE ARROW ...?

USE A RED ARROW ...

B4
B4



WHAT?

...OR WHITE ...

BA-BUMP

RED ...

BA-BUMP

WHITE ...

WHITE ...?!

IF HE'S LET HIS COMPANION HIT HIM WITH A RED ARROW...

BOTH SAKI AND I WILL DIE!

...THEN MY RED WON'T WORK ON METROPOLIMAN...

GRRG

ドドド

ZZZ
KW
ZPP

DON'T DO IT!!

NO-OO-OO!!

ドサッ

HUFF !!

HEY! WHAT'S WRONG?!

HUFF !!

KAKE-HASHI!

TALK TO US!

HUFF !!

HUFF !!

...

WHITE ...

HUFF!

HUFF!

USING A WHITE ARROW TO KILL HIM IS...

USING WHITE ...

...

BUT STILL, THE CHOICE WILL COME SOMEDAY...

OKAY, WE'LL LEAVE IT AT THAT FOR TODAY.

PHEW.

IF THEY'RE TRYING TO LURE GOD CANDIDATES INTO THE OPEN, THEY'LL SEND OUT A CLEAR SIGNAL.

I'LL BRING BARET ALONG TOMORROW, AND WE CAN HAVE A STUDY AND STRATEGY SESSION.

KAKE-HASHI...

THAT'S RIGHT. AND UNTIL THEN, WE SHOULDN'T ACT RECK-LESSLY.

...

GOING BACK TO THAT HYPO-THETICAL ...

IF I AM THE ONE ABOUT TO BE KILLED, YOU CAN USE RED.

BE-SIDES ...

MR. MUKAIDO ...

KSHUNK

I HAVE A HARD TIME IMAGINING METROPOLIMAN WOULD LET EVEN HIS COMPANION USE A RED ARROW ON HIMSELF.

I'M SORRY ...

BUT I WANT YOU TO LIVE AS LONG AS YOU POSSIBLY CAN...

...

SHE'S

ZIP

SEE YOU TOMOR-ROW.

YOU'RE GONNA MAKE ME CRY.

GEEZ, KID.

PERHAPS THERE ARE ONE OR TWO SOFTHEARTED FOOLS AMONG THE REMAINING CANDIDATES.

IF NO ONE SHOWS UP, THAT'S FINE TOO. MINAMIKAWA'S DREAM FOR ALL UGLY GIRLS TO DISAPPEAR WILL COME TRUE.

KNIGHT

YOU REALLY THINK WE CAN REEL THEM IN WITH *THIS*?

FWUF...

FWUF...

THE NEXT DAY

六階堂
MUKAIDO

...

CLINK

CLINK

DADDY, YOU HAVE SO MANY PILLS!

HERE'S YOUR WATER!

THANK YOU, NANAKA.

IT'S A SIGN OF MY GOOD HEALTH.

ARE YOU SURE IT'S HEALTHY FOR YOU TO BE TAKING SO MANY TRIPS OUT, NANATO?

NEWS ALWAYS COMES VIA THE PHONE FIRST.

...

BVV BVV BVV

!

BREAK BODY FOUND ATOP GRAND TOWER

THIS JUST IN.

BIP

BREAK BODY FOUND ATOP GRAND TOWER

IT WAS IDENTIFIED AS HIKARI YAISHI, AGE 14, WHO WAS REPORTED MISSING LAST NIGHT...

A DEAD BODY HAS BEEN FOUND ATOP THE PROMONTORY PLATFORM AT THE VERY TOP OF GRAND TOWER.

...AND BY 1:30, WAS NOT RESPONDING TO CONTACT ATTEMPTS, ACCORDING TO STATEMENTS.

SHE WAS IN SHIBUYA WITH FOUR FRIENDS AS RECENTLY AS ONE O'CLOCK YESTERDAY AFTERNOON ...

IN EITHER CASE, OBVIOUSLY DONE WITH WINGS.

REAL VISIBLE SPOT TO PLACE A BODY... OR NOT VISIBLE, I GUESS...

BODY FOUND ATOP GRAND TOWER

AND GIRL A'S ESCAPE WAS AROUND MIDDAY YESTERDAY. THAT WAS FAST...

!

WAIT A SECOND...

A YOUNG TEEN GIRL, HANGING OUT IN SHIBUYA...

KTHUMP

UNLESS—

NO... IT COULDN'T BE.

DSH DSH

NANATO?

HE REALLY IS FEELING BETTER...

I'M HEADING OUT!

SHHP

LET'S GO, BARET!

OKAY.

WHP

GSH

GUESS I SHOULD TAKE THIS, JUST IN CASE.

THP PA

HIKARI'S CAROTID ARTERY AND WRISTS WERE SEVERED WITH A SHARP BLADE...

THP PA

THP PA

THP PA

THP PA

BODY FOUND AT OP GRAND TOWER

THE SAME METHODS AS *GIRL A'S* PAST THREE MURDERS.

CAROTID ARTERY AND WRISTS...

SIX TAPS AT THE WINDOW. IT'S SO STUPID.

Just because his name has the kanji for "six"...

OH, THAT'S MUKAIDO.

TAP TAP TAP TAP TAP TAP

BA WHU MP

THIS IS MY ANGEL, BARET.

IT IS A PLEASURE TO MEET YOU.

FWUE--

HELLO ...

Tsk ...

I AM REVEL.

I'M NASSE! NICE TO MEET YOU, BARET!

I BORROWED IT FROM THE MILITARY FOR A BIT.

ZIP

OH, THIS?

WHAT'S THAT BIG BAG FOR?

JUST AN ASSORTMENT OF SUPPLIES ...

HUH?

...BUT IT SHOULD COME IN HANDY.

THIS MIGHT NOT MATCH A WHITE ARROW THAT CAN PIERCE BULLETPROOF GLASS AND NEVER MISS...

CHK

NOT TRUE.

USING HUMAN CREATIONS TO KILL A GOD CANDIDATE DOES NOT DISQUALIFY ONE FROM BEING GOD.

ON THE OTHER HAND, IT FEELS LIKE IT SHOULD BE AGAINST THE RULES TO USE THIS IN A COMPETITION TO DECIDE GOD WITH WINGS AND ARROWS.

I DIDN'T GIVE A CRAP ABOUT THE RULES, BUT...

THAT'LL MAKE THEM EVEN MORE USEFUL.

REALLY.

WHOA, REALLY?

...NOW YOU CAN HAVE THEM TOO.

CHK

...

AH... I...

THIS IS A CRIME! YOU'LL BE ARRESTED IN NO TIME!

YOU REALLY HAVE A KNACK FOR SAYING STUFF THAT EVEN A LITTLE KID KNOWS. SAVE YOUR BREATH.

IS THIS A SICK JOKE?!

DO I LOOK LIKE I'M JOKING?

I'M ABSOLUTELY SERIOUS.

BUT THAT MEANS THAT GUNS ARE QUITE EFFECTIVE AGAINST THOSE WHO ASSUME KILLING MEANS USING WHITE ARROWS. WE MIGHT HAVE BEEN ABLE TO KILL HIM WITH THESE AT THE STADIUM.

WHITE ARROWS LEAVE NO WOUNDS, AND THUS NO PROOF-- THEY TRULY ARE GIFTS FROM AN ANGEL.

THAT'S NOT WHAT I MEAN.

...

THE DISTINCTION IS MEANING-LESS TO ME-- I DON'T HAVE LONG TO LIVE.

CLICK

SURE, IT'S HARD TO PULL OFF THE PERFECT CRIME WITH A GUN... BUT YOUR TARGET'S STILL DEAD.

I'M SAYING, DO YOU WANT YOUR CHILDREN TO GROW UP WITH A MURDERER FOR A FATHER?

...WILL BE A HERO ONCE THE ENTIRE TRUTH IS LAID BARE.

THAT ONE *DOESN'T* MAKE ME CRY.

...

...THE ONE WHO DOES ...

LISTEN... NO MATTER WHO STOPS METROPOLIMAN, OR HOW...

KLCH

SHHK

SHHK

I'M NOT SAYING THIS BECAUSE I WANT TO BE A HERO.

I'M GOING TO TAKE THAT RESPONSIBILITY AND DO EVERYTHING I POSSIBLY CAN WITH IT.

I GOT THE OPPORTUNITY TO BE A CANDIDATE.

I JUST DON'T WANT TO BE THE FATHER WHO ACHIEVED NOTHING ...

THE FATHER WHO DIDN'T EVEN *TRY* FOR THE SAKE OF HIS CHILDREN.

THE RESPONSIBILITY OF A CANDIDATE...

...WAS INCORRECT.

THE IDEA THAT *GIRL A* COULD KILL UP TO 14 PEOPLE WITH RED ARROWS IN 33 DAYS...

?!

WE OUGHT TO HURRY.

EXPLAIN, BARET.

THAT'S ONLY TECHNICALLY TRUE.

OKAY.

BUT THE RED ARROWS CAN ONLY PIERCE UP TO 14 TARGETS.

PLIP

WHEN A HUMAN PIERCED BY A RED ARROW DIES, THE ARROW RETURNS TO THE HAND OF THE ONE WHO USED IT.

SO AS LONG AS THE USER KILLS THE VICTIMS, THE NUMBER OF ARROWS AT THEIR DISPOSAL IS INFINITE.

EVEN IF ALL 14 ARROWS ARE USED, IF THE 14 VICTIMS DIE, THE ARROWS WILL RETURN AND CAN BE USED AGAIN.

ER, I SUPPOSE ...

I didn't know that.

RIGHT? RIGHT?

WOW, BARET'S EXPLANATION WAS REALLY GOOD.

...

I PROCURED A NUMBER OF OTHER THINGS.

BUT WE DON'T HAVE TIME. WE'VE GOT TO MOVE INTO ACTION RIGHT AWAY.

!

ズボッ

...!

ZIP

DON'T WORRY. I'M NOT TELLING YOU TO KILL ANYONE. JUST HIT METROPOLIMAN WITH A RED ARROW.

YES, OF COURSE!

WELL? ARE YOU COMING?

WE NEED TO WRAP THIS UP AS QUICKLY AS WE CAN!

THE NUMBER OF VICTIMS INCREASES WITH EVERY PASSING MINUTE.

FW

DRIP

DRIP

DRIP

HUFF!

HUFF!

SHIVER

IT FEELS SO GOOD. I THINK I'M GONNA EXPLODE.

OH!

SHIBUYA, HERE I COME!

TIME TO GO PICK THE NEXT FRUIT.

EWE!

GLORP

FORGOT TO PUT CLOTHES ON.

Mistakerin!

#9 Tower of Nightmares

SHE'S STARTING TO SMELL!

MASTER POLIMAAAN!

WH

WHIN

IT'S FINE! NOBODY'S THERE.

WH

O

HOW DOES YOUR DUMPING SPOT LOOK NOW?

I WANNA DUMP THE BODY ALREADY.

OOOH

NOBODY'S THERE...?

OF COURSE NOBODY'S UP AT A PLACE LIKE THIS.

UGHHH, I CAN'T TAKE IT!

THEN TAKE A PICTURE THAT MAKES THE LOCATION CLEAR AND SPREAD IT ON THE NET.

KLICK

KLICK

WHOA! THAT SOUNDS CRAZY.

OKAY, I CAN DO THAT! ♡

SUPPOSE THEY STILL WON'T COME?

I BELIEVE THEY WILL.

...

BEEP

IF IT DOESN'T WORK, WE'LL NEED SOME MUCH BIGGER FIREWORKS.

HMPH.

FIN

THE PLACES THEY VANISHED FROM ARE HARAJUKU, SHIBUYA AND HARAJUKU, IN THAT ORDER.

LISTEN UP. *GIRL A'S* THREE VICTIMS FROM TWO YEARS AGO WERE IN THEIR SCHOOL UNIFORMS.

!

WHICH MEANS THAT *GIRL A* WILL STRIKE NEXT IN HARAJUKU!

THE VICTIM ON TOP OF GRAND TOWER YESTERDAY WAS IN HER UNIFORM, AND VANISHED FROM SHIBUYA.

A NEWS UPDATE!

AH.

DING-DONG!

BREAKING NEWS

BREAKING NEWS

ANOTHER YOUNG WOMAN'S BODY FOUND ATOP GRAND TOWER

!

FOLLOWING THE DISCOVERY OF THE BODY OF HIKARI YAISHI, AGE 14 YESTERDAY, A PICTURE OF A NEW VICTIM ATOP GRAND TOWER WAS UPLOADED ONTO SOCIAL MEDIA...

UPLOADED IMAGE

BREAKING

ANOTHER YOUNG WOMAN'S BODY FOUND ATOP GRAND TOWER

WE BRING YOU THIS BREAKING NEWS.

...

WHAT?!

ON SOCIAL MEDIA?

DAMN!

BUT THEY WENT STRAIGHT FOR GRAND TOWER FROM THE START.

TO STOP *GIRL A*, I ASSUMED WE SHOULD SEARCH IN SHIBUYA OR HARAJUKU.

AND I ALSO ASSUMED THAT *THEY* WOULD USE THAT TO GO AFTER US...

THIS ISN'T A BATTLE OF WITS.

WE SHOULD THINK OF IT MUCH MORE SIMPLY ...

!

JUST BEING ABLE TO GET ATOP GRAND TOWER MEANS YOU'RE A GOD CANDIDATE!

ANOTHER YOUNG WOMAN'S BODY FOUND ATOP GRAND TOWER

BUT THERE'S NO HIDING UP THERE.

IN THE STADIUM, WE WERE ABLE TO HIDE IN THE CROWD TO WATCH...

I SEE.

HE WANTS TO FIGHT OUT IN THE OPEN, AT THE TOP OF THE TOWER.

!

RIGHT... AT THIS RATE, THERE'S A DEATH A DAY. THAT'S AT LEAST 33 BODIES IN 33 DAYS.

BUT WE CAN'T JUST WAIT FOR THE NEXT BODY TO SHOW UP. WE NEED TO STAKE OUT SHIBUYA OR HARAJUKU...

HANG ON.

THIRTY-THREE VICTIMS ...

?!

IT SOUNDS LIKE *GIRL A* IS STILL HOVERING OVER GRAND TOWER.

THERE'S TONS OF PICTURES AND VIDEOS...

PEOPLE ARE ALL TALKING ABOUT "MISURIN FLYING."

Bolt Sank 4G

Mi_su_ri_n
It's Misurin☆

Misurin Maniac (u_u)
Whoa! Misurin's flying

Minmin@minmin3636
Misurin's flying above the tow

missmisslin@missmisslin
(((o(*°▽°*)o)))Misurin! Misurin!

Failed to Sleep@missmissmin
Oh crap!! Misurin's flying over Grand Tower☆

MRMR

THE TOWER IS TEMPORARILY SHUT DOWN! WE NEED YOU TO...

PEOPLE, PLEASE!

WHAT, REALLY?!

LOOK, UP THERE!

MRMR

MURMUR

MURMUR

MISURIN IS UP THERE...

WHAT... IS GOING ON HERE...?

H

...

WHO... *ARE* YOU ...?

WHOOSH

MMMM.

YAWN!

WHAT A MISTAKERIN !!

OH NOOO! I REALLY TRIPPED OUT THERE!

I was napping with Poliman! ♡

SIX IN ALL...

ONE, TWO, THREE ...

!

SORRY, MASTER POLIMAN!

KNOCK IT OFF.

WELL, IT'S A WASTE, BUT...

OH WELL!

?!

HERE WE GO.

ING---

GRIN

WET

MISU-
RIIIN
FLASH
!!

SHU

MISUGIRIIN...

ZWOOP

ATTACK!

SMACK

TWIST

FIN UP

MISU-
RIN
GAL-
AXY
!!

SHAK

MISU-
RIN
STAR-
LIGHT
!!

MISU-
RIN
EXCEL-
LENT!!

HD HD HD

MPD

?

ROLLING ... THUNDER ?

SHAK

MISURIIIN... UMM...

HFF HFF

GRIN

PHEW——!

OKAY, I'VE PIERCED YOU ALL. TAKE THE BODY AND GO BACK DOWN.

AND MAKE SURE THAT NO ONE ELSE CAN COME UP HERE. ♡

CAN YOU GIVE ME AN AUTOGRAPH LATER...?

I'M JUST HAPPY TO HAVE MET YOU IN PERSON!

YES, OF COURSE!

KWIIII

DON'T LEAVE THIS SPOT ...

WHAT... THE HELL... ARE YOU SAYING?!

ZSH

HAVE YOU NO PRIDE AS POLICEMEN?!

DON'T BE... IDIOTS...

KWIII

IF ANYONE'S BEING WEIRD, IT'S YOU, MR. HAYASHI.

HUH? MISURIN ASKED US TO DO IT.

WHOA!

FORGET IT. LET'S JUST GO.

SO WHAT?

I MIGHT... LOVE... MISURIN...

...BUT SHE'S A... MURDERER ...

KNOCK

TALK ABOUT DEDICATING YOUR LIFE TO YOUR JOB! WHAT IS THAT, LIKE 36 YEARS ON THE JOB?! HILARIOUS!

NICE WORK, GRAMPS! YOU'RE FIGHTING BACK AGAINST THE RED ARROW!

DAMN YOUUU!!

YES, MISURIN! ♡

BUT YOU'RE INTERFERING WITH ME, SO TAKE HIM AWAY. ♡

GCHA

NK

UGH...

SNAG

OKAAAY.

THEN DO AS I SAID.

THERE'S NO ONE LEFT, MASTER POLIMAN.

WHOOSH

LET'S GO, KAKEHASHI!

GIRL A ISN'T ACTING UNDER HER OWN WILL.

IT'S METRO-POLIMAN.

DOSH!!

SO HE HAS *GIRL A* SIT OVER THE TOWER, AND WHEN A CANDIDATE SHOWS UP, HITS THEM WITH A WHITE ARROW.

SINCE THE BODY WAS DUMPED THERE YESTERDAY, HE'S BEEN HOPING THAT A GOD CANDIDATE WOULD COME.

FIRST, I'LL ACT AS BAIT AND FACE OFF AGAINST *GIRL A.*

WHEN METRO-POLIMAN COMES TO KILL ME, YOU HIT HIM WITH THE ARROW.

WHICH MEANS...

...

THIS IS ***ALSO*** THE PERFECT CHANCE TO HIT METROPOLIMAN WITH A RED ARROW!

!

!

I CAN'T USE ANY ARROWS RIGHT NOW, REMEMBER.

OR YOU CAN USE WHITE...

!

ALL RIGHT.

YES.

RIGHT, BARET?

OR RED. RED IS FINE.

BUT THAT WILL NULLIFY THE ORIGINAL ARROW AND ACTIVATE THE NEWER ONE, EFFECTIVELY REVERSING YOUR POSITIONS.

IF A PERSON WITH RED ARROWS IS HIT BY A RED ARROW, IT IS POSSIBLE TO COMMAND THEM TO HIT YOU WITH ONE OF THOSE ARROWS.

WHICH MEANS IT SEEMS VERY UNLIKELY THAT HE IS DOING THAT.

You know everything, don't you!

GRKK...

OHHH!!

...BUT I APPRECIATE THAT WE'RE GOING TO THAT TOWER INSTEAD, WHERE THE VISIBILITY IS GOOD.

I WAS THINKING OF HAVING EITHER KAKEHASHI OR HANAKAGO PIERCE ME WITH AN ARROW FIRST, TO ENSURE THAT I DIDN'T GET HIT WITH A RED ARROW FROM THE CROWDS IN SHIBUYA OR HARAJUKU...

SHNK

CHK

IF WE HIT HIM WITH RED, WE CAN HANDLE EVERYTHING ELSE, INCLUDING *GIRL A.*

FWUP

IT'S A DIRECT CONFRON-TATION!

...WERE YOU PLANNING TO WEAR THAT SAILOR UNIFORM, MR. MUKAIDO?

UMM... IF WE WERE GOING TO SEARCH IN SHIBUYA AND HARAJUKU...

...

...

BEFT!

WHO ELSE WOULD DO IT?

Is he serious ...?

AND I DON'T WANT TO MAKE YOU BAIT, SINCE YOU DON'T HAVE WINGS.

METROPOLIMAN'S JUST LOOKING FOR GOD CANDIDATES TO SHOW UP.

YES, APPEARANCE-WISE, IT WOULD SUIT YOU BEST, HANAKAGO, BUT WE'RE NOT LOOKING FOR REALISM.

SHWIP

CHANGE INTO THAT. I PUT IT TOGETHER FOR YOU.

FWUMP

SHUM

I BORROWED MY OUTFIT FROM THE JAPAN SELF-DEFENSE FORCES.

KLAK

ZIP

ARE YOU SURE YOU'LL BE ABLE TO WEAR IT AROUND?

IT LOOKS HEAVY ...

THAT'S VERY THICK ARMOR ...

PHEW...

KLAK

RIGHT, BARET?

...BUT WEIGHT DOESN'T AFFECT THE FLIGHT SPEED OF THE WINGS.

YEAH. IT'S HEAVY FOR A SICK MAN TO CARRY...

YES.

CREAK

IT IS FINE, AS LONG AS THE WEARER CAN SUPPORT IT WITH HIS OWN STRENGTH. BUT YOU CAN ONLY CARRY ONE OTHER PERSON.

HOW IS THE SIZE, KAKEHASHI?

OOH.

LOOKS PERFECT TO ME.

...

THAT'S MOTORSPORTS WEAR DEVELOPED BY MY COMPANY.

GRK...

IT'S A NEW MATERIAL MADE FROM LEATHER AND ARAMID FIBERS...

IT'S LIGHT, FRICTION AND SHOCK RESISTANT, DOESN'T PUNCTURE EASILY, AND BOTH STRETCHABLE AND BREATHABLE.

WITH THE DUST MASK AND HOOD, YOU CAN HIDE YOUR FACE TOO.

HE DOES ...

YOU LOOK LIKE A SUPER-HERO, MIRAI!

...BUT I'M GLAD IT CAME IN HANDY HERE.

IT WAS TOO EXPENSIVE TO MASS-PRODUCE...

...

I'M JUST GOING TO SAY ONE THING, KAKEHASHI.

THERE'S NO CHANCE THEY'LL ATTACK HERE. CONTACT US IF ANYTHING HAPPENS.

REVEL AND HANAKAGO, YOU STAY HERE.

BARET AND NASSE, COME WITH US.

SHHK

OKAY.

IF THAT HAPPENED, I WOULDN'T BE ABLE TO DISOBEY YOUR ORDERS.

I WOULDN'T BE ABLE TO KILL.

I HAVE A FAMILY. IF WE WERE GOING TO PLACE A RED ARROW IN ME AS A SAFEGUARD IN SHIBUYA AND HARAJUKU, I WAS GOING TO HAVE YOU DO IT, NOT HANAKAGO.

THERE'S ANOTHER REASON I SAID I "APPRECIATED" THAT HE WANTS A CONFRONTATION ATOP THE TOWER.

I'M TALKING HYPOTHETI-CALLY.

W-WHAT...

...DO YOU MEAN BY THAT...?

CHAK

SHK

LET'S SAY THAT METROPOLIMAN DOESN'T SHOW UP...

DO YOU REALLY THINK THEY CAN BE CAPTURED?

...

ALL RIGHT.

THEN I'LL KILL GIRL A.

SHE'S AN UNCONTROL-LABLE MONSTER. SHE'S GOT HER OWN WINGS AND SHE'S ALREADY CONTROLLED BY A RED ARROW.

I NEED TO KILL HER.

YEAH, I KNEW THAT TOO. IF YOU CAN'T SEE THE TARGET, YOUR ARROW WON'T STRIKE TRUE.

IF SHE CAN'T SEE US, SHE CAN'T SHOOT AN ARROW. RIGHT, BARET?

BUT AT THE VERY LEAST, I'LL TAKE OUT HER EYES.

IF ANYONE DESERVES THE KNIFE, IT'S THE SERIAL KILLER!

IF WE LET HER ESCAPE, SHE'LL MURDER MORE INNOCENT GIRLS.

...

YOU'RE NOT GOING TO TELL ME YOU DISAGREE WITH *THAT.*

YES.

...

SAKI.

HEEE

ZSH

SHI--

JUST PROMISE ME THAT I'LL GET TO FINISH OFF METROPOLIMAN WHILE I STILL LIVE.

HMPH

KAKEHASHI.

TUG

SH

BOO

KW

KW

IF METROPOLIMAN DOESN'T SHOW UP...

...MR. MUKAIDO WILL KILL GIRL A.

AAAA

NO...

KILLING SOMEONE IS...

GRK

BBBB

...WITH MY RED ARROW!

SO I CAN HIT YOU...

PLEASE COME...

...METRO-POLIMAN!

TAP

Price: ¥1,380 In stock.

Place in Cart

Buy Now

Price: ¥1,380 In stock.

Kawaii Ribbon Barrette

KAWADO

awason

TAP TAP

WHAT DO YOU THINK YOU'RE DOING?

TAP

WHOOO

ROLL...

ONLINE SHOPPING.

HERE WE GO.

WHOOSH

BA-BUMP

BA-BUMP

WHOOSH

BA-BUMP

BA-BUMP

I WAS LOOKING FOR A CUTE RIBBON.

I'M NOT TALKING ABOUT THAT.

I MEAN, WHY ARE YOU HERE?

I'M WAITING FOR MASTER POLIMAN.

...

IS HE COMING?

HEY...

WHY DIDN'T YOU SHOOT ME BEFORE I NOTICED YOU?

NOW THAT I'VE SEEN YOU, I CAN JUST FLY AWAY TO SAFETY.

WHOOSH

HEE HEE...

AND WHY DIDN'T *YOU* USE YOUR RED ARROWS?

IN FACT, I'M JUST ITCHING TO DO SOMETHING CRAZY.

...I SHOULD STAY WITH THEM. I DON'T HAVE A CHOICE.

HE TOLD ME THAT IF SOMEONE FLEW UP HERE...

OH SHIT ...

!

PHEW.

COME CLOSER ...

C'MON.

SO DON'T JUST STAND AT THE EDGE THERE.

METROPOLIMAN WASN'T COMING WITH A WHITE ARROW...?

WHAT'S...

...HAPPENING...?

WHA...

HUH ...?

I WON

DA

MR. MUKAIDO!!

NO...

NO...

DOOM

BRRR

BRRR

MMM

FSH

FSH

FSH

HUH!!

HUH!!

AAAH!!

OH CRAP!!

A TERROR-IST BOMBING?!

BSST

BSST

MR. MUKAI-DO!

WHUP

HUFF!!

HUFF!!

MR. MUKAI-DO!!

MR. MUKAIDO!

TUG

NO... NO, DON'T DIE...

TUG

MR. MU-KAI-DO!!

PLEASE ... YOU CAN'T DIE!

MR. MUKAI-DO...

I'M SICK OF PEOPLE DYING!!

KOFF!!

KOFF!

MR. MUKAIDOU!!

GUH ...

GRGH ...

KOFF!!

IS THAT... YOU, KAKE-HASHI ...?

HUFF!

HUFF!

YES. OF COURSE, WE COULD TELL THAT IMMEDIATELY.

HE MADE IT!

YOU'RE ALIVE!

MR. MUKAIDO ...

I CON-SIDERED THIS AN OUTSIDE POSSIBILITY, BUT I DIDN'T THINK HE'D DO IT ON THIS SCALE...

HUFF!

HUFF!

HUFF!

RMB

RMB

GLAD I PICKED THE ANTI-EXPLOSIVE SUIT, JUST IN CASE...

THE KIND THAT BOMB SQUADS WEAR...

RMB

RMB

I'M GLAD.

RMB

IN ANY CASE, I'D BE DEAD IF YOU WEREN'T HERE...

I GUESS I WAS A SPLIT-SECOND TOO LATE TO FLY...

...

HE WON'T LIMIT HIS KILLING TO THE WHITE ARROWS NOW.

THAT'S WHAT YOU SAID.

YOU DON'T WANT TO SEE ANY MORE PEOPLE DIE.

...

HUFF

YES.

...

I AGREE... I DON'T WANT TO SEE PEOPLE DIE...

GR

RRG

DR RM RM RM

SO GIRL A... DIED IN THE BLAST.

GRGGR

RGG RG

THE SHOW'S ABOUT TO BEGIN.

BUT IT LOOKS LIKE...

...WE HAVE NO TIME TO GET SENTIMENTAL.

GRG

HE'S HERE.

AND NOW IT'S MINE.

TO BE CONTINUED...

GRRR

Tsugumi Ohba

Born in Tokyo, Tsugumi Ohba is the author of the hit series *Death Note* and *Bakuman。*.

Takeshi Obata

Takeshi Obata was born in 1969 in Niigata, Japan, and first achieved international recognition as the artist of the wildly popular *Shonen Jump* title *Hikaru no Go*, which won the 2003 Tezuka Osamu Cultural Prize: Shinsei "New Hope" Award and the 2000 Shogakukan Manga Award. He went on to illustrate the smash hit *Death Note* as well as the hugely successful manga *Bakuman。* and *All You Need Is Kill*.

PLATINVM END

VOLUME 3
SHONEN JUMP Manga Edition

°

STORY **T**sug**u**mi **O**h**b**a
ART Ta**k**e **s**h**i** Ob**a**ta

°

TRANSLATION Stephen Paul
TOUCH-UP ART & LETTERING James Gaubatz
DESIGN Shawn Carrico
EDITOR Alexis Kirsch

°

ORIGINAL COVER DESIGN Narumi Noriko

°

PLATINUM END © 2015 by Tsugumi Ohba, Takeshi Obata
All rights reserved.
First published in Japan in 2015 by SHUEISHA Inc., Tokyo.
English translation rights arranged by SHUEISHA Inc.

°

The stories, characters and incidents mentioned in this publication are entirely fictional.

°

No portion of this book may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means without written permission from the copyright holders.

°

Printed in the U.S.A.

°

Published by VIZ Media, LLC
P.O. Box 77010
San Francisco, CA 94107

°

10 9 8 7 6 5 4 3 2 1
First printing, August 2017

www.viz.com

www.shonenjump.com

4

PLATINUM END

STORY
TSUGUMI OHBA

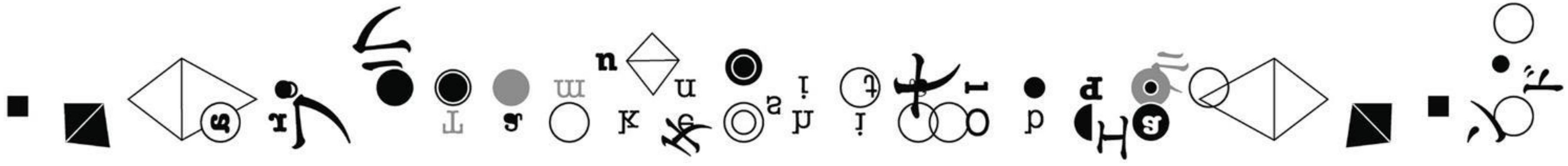
ART
TAKESHI OBATA

PLATINUM END

ART Takeshi Obata

STORY Tsugumi Ohba

Platinum End



4

CONTENTS

#10 Product of Coincidence
P3

#11 A Girl's Heart
P73

#12 Symbol of Promise
P119

#10 Product of Coincidence

RMMMMMM

HOW...?

WITH THESE WINGS AND ARROWS, OBVIOUSLY.

HOW CAN YOU JUST KILL PEOPLE LIKE THIS, WITHOUT A SECOND THOUGHT?

THAT'S NOT WHAT I'M ASKING.

A VERY SIMPLE ANSWER ...

WHAT I MEAN IS, DO YOU THINK IT'S ACCEPTABLE TO KILL PEOPLE LIKE THIS?

...

IN GRADE SCHOOL?

WHAT ARE YOU?

...

IS THAT WHAT YOU WANT TO HEAR?

"YOU MUSN'T KILL PEOPLE. THERE'S NOTHING MORE SACRED THAN LIFE."

IF YOU KNOW YOU SHOULDN'T KILL, THEN WHY DO YOU COMMIT MURDER?

THIS IS GETTING US NOWHERE...

THE BARE MINI-MUM, HUH ...?

GR M M M

UM... TO BE GOD?

NATURALLY, THERE WILL BE SACRIFICES...

...BUT WHEN I KILL, I TRY TO KEEP IT TO THE BARE MINIMUM.

...THE GOD CANDIDATES HAVE TO KILL EACH OTHER AND THE LAST REMAINING SURVIVOR BECOMES GOD.

YOU DO REALIZE THAT NO ONE EVER SAID...

YOU USED HER AND ALLOWED HER TO KILL KIDS WITH NO CONNEC-TION TO ANYTHING.

SAME FOR *GIRL A*...

THAT'S TRUE. IT'S JUST THE METHOD THAT I CHOSE FOR MYSELF.

DO YOU KNOW HOW IT FEELS TO LOSE SOMEONE YOU TRULY LOVE AND CARE ABOUT?!

DO YOU UNDER-STAND HOW IT FEELS TO LOSE FAMILY MEMBERS ...?

I LOST ...

...THE ONE FAMILY MEMBER I CARED ABOUT MOST. I KNOW EXACTLY HOW IT FEELS.

I DO.

...

I KNOW
THE FEELING
SO KEENLY
IT HURTS.
SO WHAT?

GRIM

THAT'S EXACTLY WHY...

WE KNEW FROM THE START THAT HE WAS NOT A MAN TO BE REASONED WITH.

IF YOU WERE BUYING TIME FOR ME TO RECOVER, I'M FINE NOW.

THIS CONVERSATION IS GOING EVEN FURTHER OFF THE RAILS...

TSK

...

BUT I STILL CAN'T ACCEPT IT...

I KNOW THAT.

DON'T WASTE YOUR THOUGHTS ON ALL THE NONSENSE.

JUST FOCUS ON HITTING HIM WITH AN ARROW.

THUD

OO

OH

...

...I'LL PUT AN END TO ALL OF THE UNNECESSARY SACRIFICES AS OF TODAY.

IN THAT CASE ...

I TAKE YOUR POINT.

I WILL NO LONGER KILL ANYONE BUT GOD CANDIDATES.

WOW

WE'VE GOT TWO INJURED !!

EVERY-ONE, GET BACK...

LET THE AMBU-LANCE THROUGH!

GRRR

GR

WM GR GG

GG

GR GG

AS OF THIS MOMENT, WE'RE AWARE OF FOUR FATALITIES AND 31 INJURED!

I'M REPORTING FROM THE SCENE AT GRAND TOWER!

Web

GET BACK!

NOW!

BREAKING
EXPLOSION AT GRAND TOWER
OVER 30 CASUALTIES
LIVE

...LEADING TO THE POSSIBILITY THAT SHE CARRIED OUT A SUICIDE BOMBING...

WE HAVE INFORMATION THAT GIRL A WAS PRESENT DURING THE EXPLOSION ...

DON'T WORRY. IT'S ALL RIGHT.

...

I CAN SEE A FIGURE THAT LOOKS LIKE METRO-POLIMAN. WHAT COULD THIS MEAN...?

OH... IT'S METRO-POLIMAN.

!

BUT THAT'S WHERE THEY WERE...

THERE, SEE?

IT'S NASSE.

DIFF

THANKS TO THAT, MY MIND IS CLEAR.

YEAH. REAL-WORLD OBJECTS CAN'T HARM OUR WINGS.

CAN YOU FLY?

E

E

E

ETO

AS HE SAYS, NORMAL FLIGHT IS QUITE POSSIBLE.

I KNOW THAT.

BUT I HAVE NO INTENTION OF JUST FLYING AWAY WITH MY TAIL BETWEEN MY LEGS.

BUT NOW THAT I'M NOT DEAD AFTER ALL, HE HAS NO REASON TO HANG AROUND.

HE CAME HERE TO GET MY ARROWS AND WINGS, ASSUMING I WAS DEAD FROM THE EXPLOSION ...

HOW-EVER ...

...

IF WE'RE NOT RUNNING... THEN WHY IS HE JUST WAITING THERE?

...BUT HE'S OUT-NUMBERED AND TOO SMART TO GET INTO A FIGHT HERE.

HE'S GOT TWO CANDIDATES RIGHT IN HIS SIGHT. HE MUST DESPERATELY WANT TO GET RID OF US...

MEANWHILE, *WE* WANT TO AVOID LETTING HIM GET AWAY FROM US.

BUT OUR MOST IMPORTANT GOAL IS TO PREVENT HIM FROM KILLING US AND TAKING OUR ITEMS.

IF HE DOES THAT, THEN HE REALLY CAN USE SHEER POWER TO SEIZE DIVINITY.

WE HAVE TO HIT HIM WITH A RED ARROW, NO MATTER WHAT.

RIGHT.

SO EITHER HE'S GOT A PLAN ALREADY... OR HE'S THINKING OF ONE NOW.

...

KILL

OKAY, IT'S TIME FOR YOU TO DIE.

!

HE MUST HAVE A PLAN...

IF THE WHITE ARROW COMES, I CAN JUST FLY AWAY.

LET'S PUT ON A LITTLE BLUFF.

GR M M M

WHICH ONE OF YOU SHOULD BE FIRST ...?

MEYZA.

WATCH MY BACK.

M...

MEYZA.

YEP!

THAT MUST BE MEYZA, THE SPECIAL-RANK ANGEL, *JUST LIKE YOU.*

NASSE.

FLIP

NASSE AND BARET, WATCH OUR BACKS TOO!

...

OKAY.

AND YOU, GET YOUR RED ARROW READY.

R-RIGHT!

RED
...

DA-

DA-

DA-

...

HE'LL BE MORE CAUTIOUS OF ME THAN YOU.

THERE WE GO. NOW HE THINKS THAT I'M THE ONE PAIRED WITH NASSE, HOLDING THE WHITE ARROWS.

THAT'S A LOT OF WHISPERING BETWEEN YOU TWO.

ZZRD--

I'LL KILL *YOU* FIRST.

THERE WE GO.

IN A ONE-ON-ONE FIGHT?

KILL ME? HOW WILL YOU KILL ME?!

THIS WILL DO THE TRICK.

HUH? I DON'T NEED TO RISK ANYTHING THAT DANGER-OUS.

KCHIK KCHIK

PSHAK

?!

!

INPUT IGNITION CODE: E-N-J-E-R.

ENJER

ACTIVATE

I HAVE ANOTHER BOMB HIDDEN AWAY.

!!!

SO I ARRANGED ANOTHER BOMB THAT *GIRL A* COULD USE TO THREATEN, "IF YOU DON'T COME TO ME, I'LL BLOW UP THIS BUILDING." JUST THE MESSAGE TO SPUR ON THE KIND OF NAIVE FOOLS WHO WOULD RESCUE TOTAL STRANGERS, DON'T YOU THINK?

I PUT *GIRL A* ON TOP OF THE TOWER, BUT SHE WOULD SERVE NO PURPOSE IF NO CANDIDATES APPROACHED HER.

...

I'LL GIVE YOU A HINT-- YOU CAN SEE THE BUILDING FROM HERE.

IF IT DOES GO OFF...

...AT LEAST HALF THE PRECIOUS LIVES WITHIN WILL BE LOST.

...

EITHER YOU DIE OR MANY INNOCENT PEOPLE WILL.

SO CHOOSE!!

GRRN

...

MR. MUKAI-DO!

GRN

HE'S LYING! HE MUST BE BLUFFING.

NASSE?

YEP, IT'S A LIE.

YES, THAT ANGEL IS KNOWN TO HAVE A TALENT FOR IDENTIFYING LIES.

...

IF SHE SAYS SO... THEN I GUESS HE'S LYING?

IT IS *HER* WORDS THAT ARE THE BLUFF.

BUT IT IS ONLY BY SEEING THE LIE IN THE FACIAL FEATURES OF THE LIAR...

YOU'LL ALL BLOW UP ONCE I PRESS THE BUTTON ON THIS PHONE.

DON'T BELIEVE ME, IF YOU PREFER.

THIS IS POINT-LESS.

HMPH.

SWISH

OKAY, THEN.

SO IT DOESN'T REALLY MATTER TO YOU WHO ELSE DIES.

...

OUR GOAL IS TO DEFEAT YOU!

WE'RE NOT HERE TO STOP *GIRL A'S* RAMPAGE FROM SPREADING!

DON'T GET THE WRONG IDEA!

...

ENJE

ACTIVA

ALL I HAVE TO DO IS TOUCH THIS.

UNDERSTAND THAT THIS IGNITION BUTTON WOULD NEVER HAVE BEEN PRESSED IF YOU'D BEEN BLOWN UP EARLIER.

ENJE

ACTIVATE

PEOPLE WILL DIE BECAUSE OF YOU EITHER WAY. I JUST WANT YOU TO KNOW THAT.

OKAY ...

HERE GOOOES ...

...

MM

WAIT!

HOW-
EVER.

MR.
MUKAIDO
...?

DON'T
DO IT.

OKAY.

GRRM
MM

ONLY
ONE
OF US
WILL
DIE.

GR

MM

R

M

YOU THOUGHT YOU GOT RID OF ONE GOD CANDIDATE.

SO IF YOU GET TO KILL ONE OF US, THAT MEETS YOUR INITIAL GOAL, RIGHT?

ALL RIGHT.

HMPH.

GR

THEN I WILL DECIDE WHICH ONE OF YOU DIES.

AND I GET TO TAKE THE WINGS AND ARROWS LEFT BEHIND.

THOSE ARE MY CONDITIONS.

...

MM

IF HE IS HIT WITH A RED ARROW BEFORE HE DIES, THE ONE WHO FIRED THAT ARROW GETS PRIORITY IN CLAIMING THEM.

AT THIS RATE, ONE OF THEM REALLY WILL BE KILLED AND LOSE HIS ARROWS AND WINGS.

OH, RIGHT ...

REVEL WAS GONNA DO THAT SO SAKI GOT WINGS.

HUFF HUFF

THIS IS DEMAGAWA ON THE SCENE!

WE'VE FOUND METRO-POLIMAN FLYING OVER GRAND TOWER, THE SITE OF THE EXPLOSION!

OKAY, WE CAN PATCH THIS IN LIVE!

WHO DO YOU SUPPOSE THOSE TWO FIGURES ARE?

HE SEEMS TO BE FACING OFF AGAINST SOMEONE!

WHH WHH

WHH WHH

WHH

...

AS I FIGURED.

IF YOU'RE GOING TO KILL ONE OF US, PICK THE SPECIAL RANK.

SHH...!

YOU'RE THE ONE WHO'S MORE TROUBLE TO LEAVE ALIVE.

NO, THAT'S NOT WHY.

MR. MUKAI-DO!

...YOU.

GRRRM

AND FOR MY VICTIM, I CHOOSE ...

HA HA... PERFECT! WE'LL MAKE THIS A PUBLIC EXECUTION!

BUT

NO.

...

ZR RD DDD

EITHER WAY, THANKS FOR OVER-ESTIMATING ME...

YEAH, RIGHT. YOU JUST WANT MY WHITE AR-ROWS.

I KNOW WHAT I'M DOING.

YOU CAN'T CHOOSE DEATH.

MY LIFE IS SHORT ...

...

HE MIGHT BE LYING, LIKE NASSE SAID!

AND WHAT IF HE ISN'T?

HAM
WOOF
WOOF

THE INSTANT YOU TRY TO FLY AWAY, I PRESS THE BUTTON.

AND IF YOU PRESS IT AND THERE'S NO EXPLOSION, WE KNOW IT WAS A BLUFF.

...

THAT'S A GOOD...

...POINT.

GH

AH

!!

KA

SHWIK

SHWIK

HUEE!!

HUEE!!

WAIT A SECOND ...

I WAS NOT AWARE THAT THEY COULD BE USED THIS WAY.

WINGS AND ARROWS ARE UNAFFECTED BY OBJECTS FROM THE HUMAN WORLD, BUT WHAT ABOUT OTHER ANGEL TOOLS?

EVEN YOU DIDN'T KNOW THAT, BARET?

FASCINATING.

HUEE!!

...

HUEE!!

I...
I...

YOU WANT PEOPLE TO DIE?

WHY ARE YOU TRYING TO INTERFERE?

...AM GOING ...

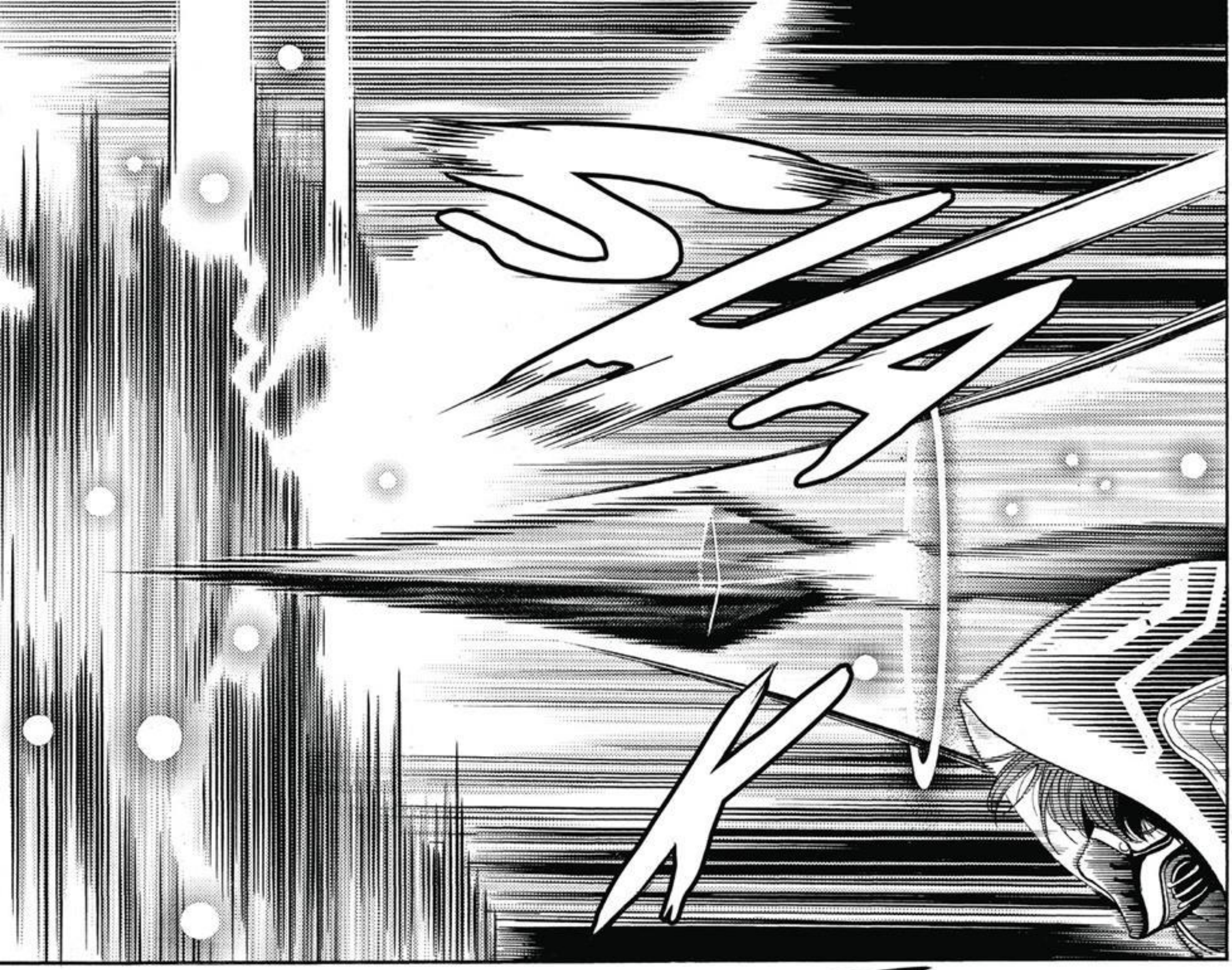
ENJER ACTIVATE

...TO HIT YOU WITH A RED ARROW!

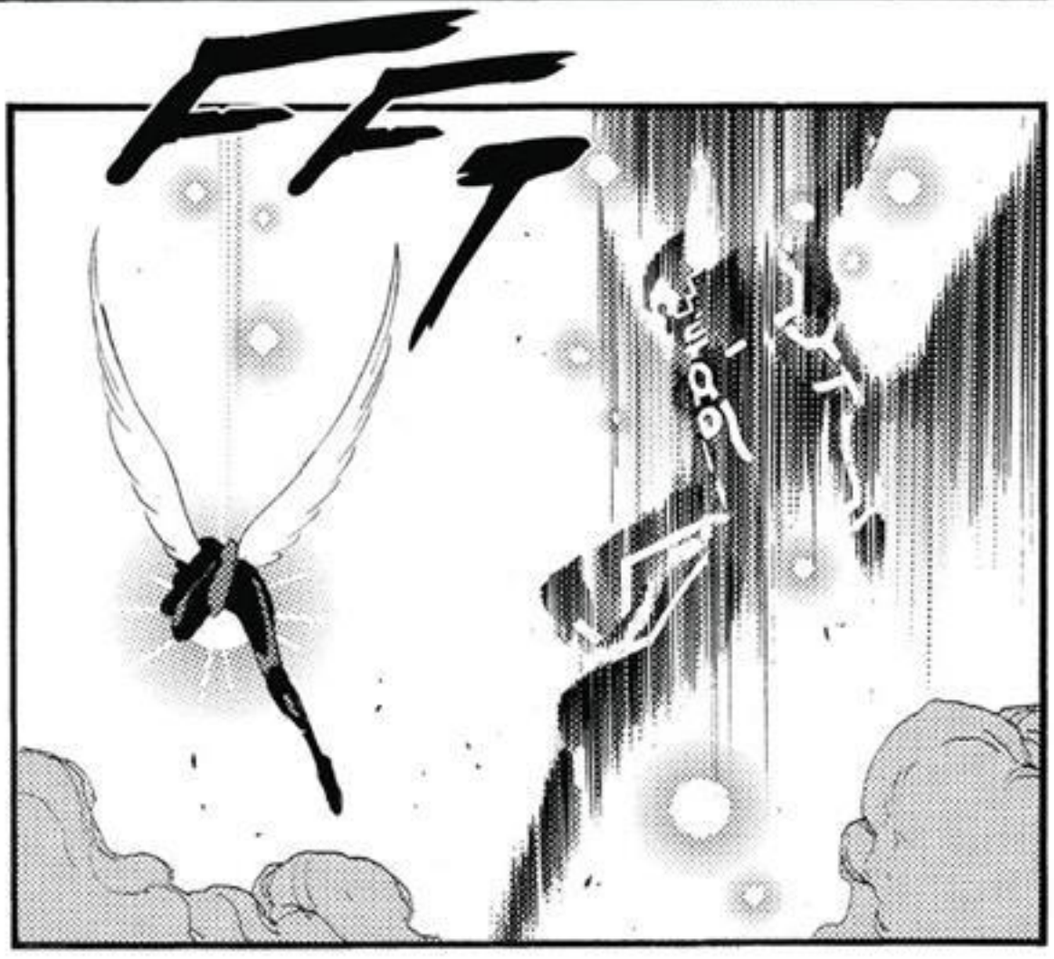
?!

SHIP

YAAAAAH!



HUEF!
HUEF!
HUEF!


FFT
ヒュイーン

...

HUE!

HUE!

ARE YOU A COMPLETE MORON?

A CHARGE ATTACK INSTEAD OF FIRING?

URG

SHH

...

I'M TIRED OF YOU. I'LL KILL YOU FIRST.

GOT IT?

FLY TO SAFETY!!

GO ASU

HA

IT

SHP

DUB

BUT WHY AREN'T YOU FLYING AWAY?!

THAT WAS IMPRESSIVE.

HUFF!

HUFF!

SHWIK

NO, REALLY, ARE YOU CRAZY?

KLAK

AAAA

SHWIK

KWAK

KAH

...

BUT HOW LONG DO YOU THINK YOU CAN EVADE DEATH DOING THINGS THIS WAY?

FOR A GUY WHO'S NOT GONNA BE GOD, THAT'S SOME GODLY SKILL YOU'RE SHOWING.

I...
I...

KWING

ZWIP

SHWAAA

...TO HIT YOU!

...GOING...

I'M...

...

WHIP

WHIP

WHIP

SHWIP

WITH RED...

WHAT WAS.....

GETTING

HEH ...

HUFF!!

HUFF!!

KIN

KING

HUFF!!

PSYCH.

FWUP

KA

!

SHWIP

KAKE-HASHI!

...

HUFF!!

HUFF!!

WHAT HAPPENED TO YOU?!

THIS ISN'T GOING TO GET US ANYWHERE.

HUFF!!

HUFF!!

HOW LONG ARE YOU GOING TO KEEP THIS UP?

IT'S PRETTY FREAKIN' LAME.

HAH!

THAT'S RIGHT.

SMIRK

IT'S QUITE PATHETIC.

SMIRK

NO, IT'S NOT. IT'S REALLY COOL.

...

HE'S GOING TO DIE AT THIS RATE!

WHY DOESN'T HE FLY AWAY?

WHY DOESN'T HE SHOOT HIS ARROW?

AAAH!!

KNG

AAAH!!

KNG

KNG

KNG

AAH!

KNG

KNG

...

WHAT CAN I DO...?

YOU CAN'T DIE NOW, KAKEHASHI. IT WILL RUIN EVERYTHING!

!!

...

HE WON'T TURN HIS BACK TO ME... BUT THIS DOES MEAN HE CAN'T TAKE HIS EYE OFF KAKEHASHI...

KAK

KNING

PERHAPS...

KIN

SHAK

THEN I CAN FOLLOW HIS LEAD...

ING

BUT IT'S AN OPPORTUNITY KAKEHASHI'S DESPERATION HAS CREATED...

I DON'T KNOW IF THIS WILL WORK.

SHK

KING

... DESPERATION MOVE!

!

AND ATTEMPT MY OWN...

BEHIND Y--

KA-

KLIK

BOOM

BBBB
BAM
BAM
BAM

BAM-BAM-BAM

ARROW!

BSHT

!

NG

!

!

WUP PA

WUP PA

HUFF!

HUFF!

WUP PA

HUFF!

HUFF!

R M B

HE GOT... AWAY...

...

NO... HE HAD THAT BULLET PROTEC-TION ALL OVER...

HUFF

HUFF

SHOULD I HAVE AIMED FOR HIS HEART...?

HRG! HRR!

BLEAAH!

URP!

I SAW HIM.

GRR

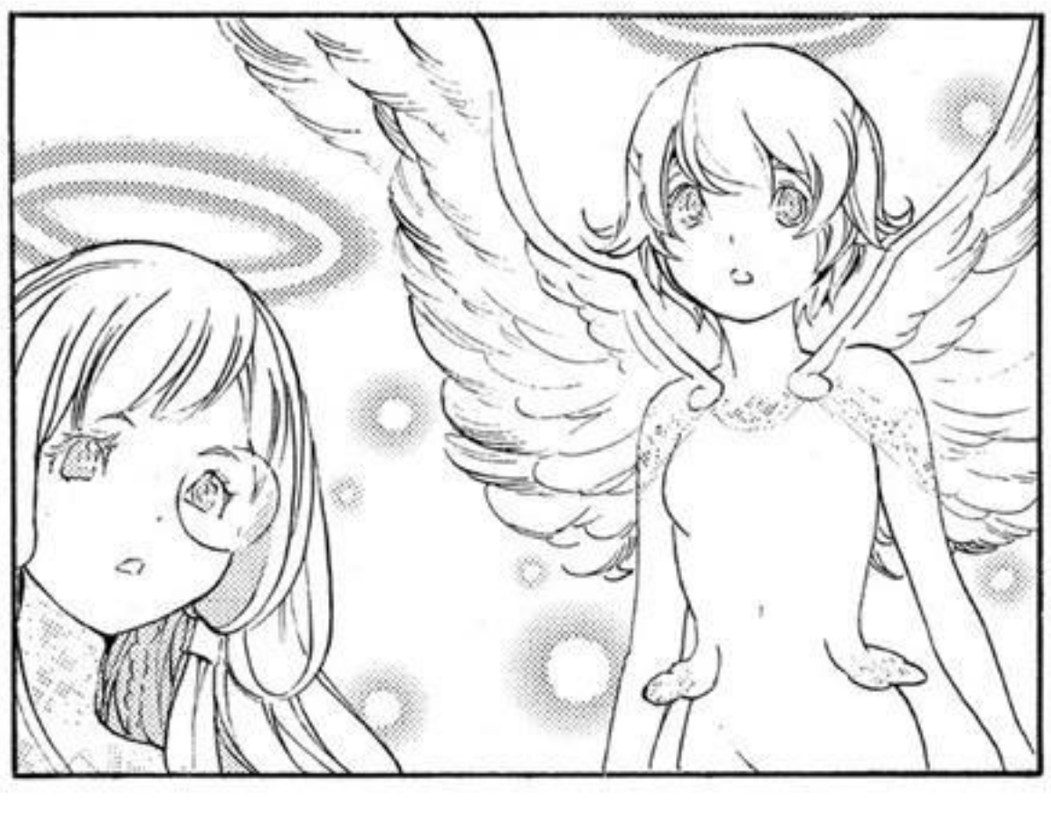
...

HUFF

HUFF!

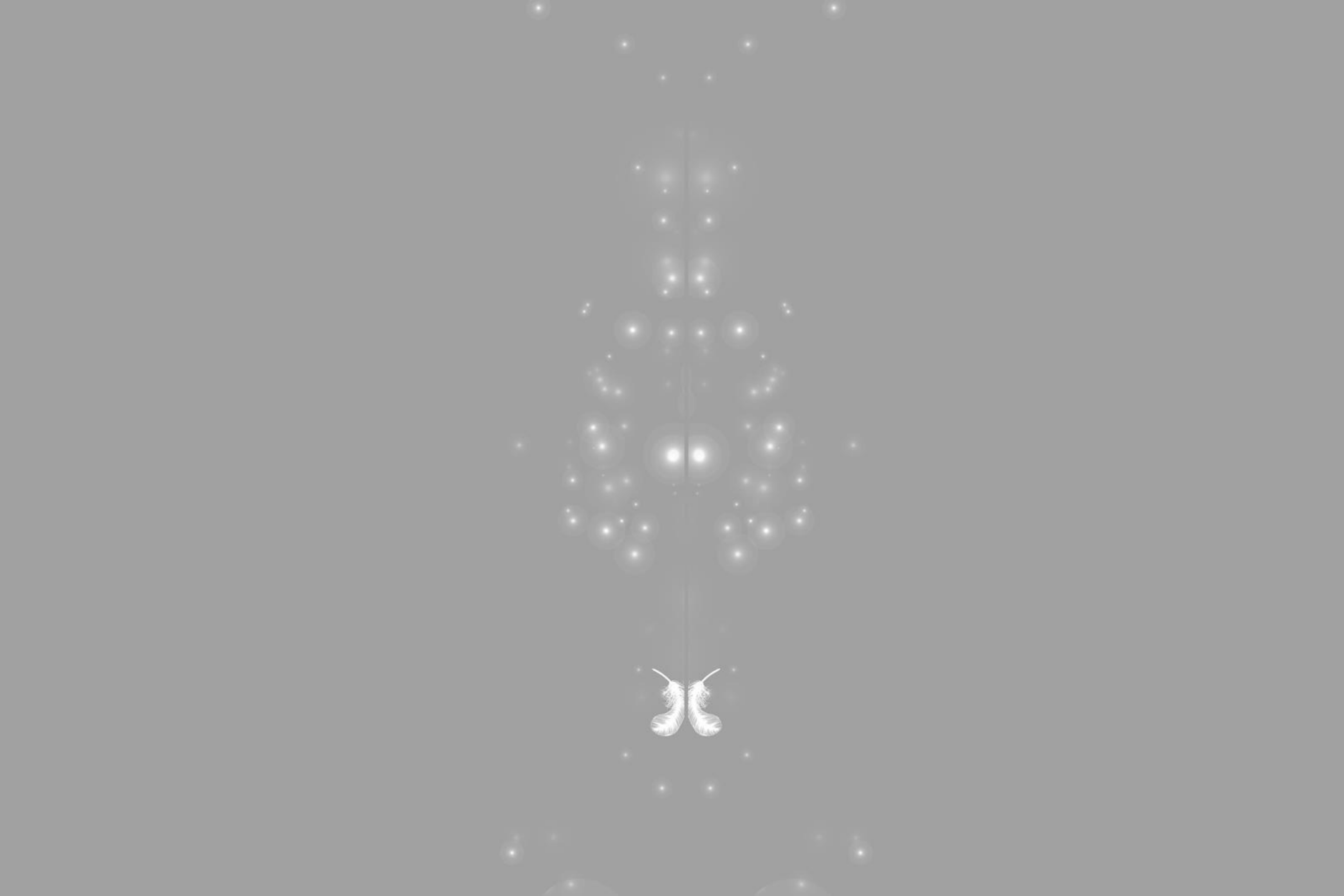
HUFF!

KAKE-HASHI ...



HUH?

WUPPA
I SAW HIS FACE ...
WUPPA



#11 A Girl's Heart

KUP!

METROPOLIMAN'S MASK SHATTERED, BUT SADLY, WE WERE NOT ABLE TO CAPTURE THE IMAGE ON CAMERA.

NOW METROPOLIMAN AND THE TWO NEW HEROES WHO FOUGHT AGAINST HIM ARE NOWHERE TO BE SEEN.

KUP PI KUP PI

...

MR. MUKAIDO!

KAKE-HASHI!

DOSHUDD

THANK GOODNESS...

KAKEHASHI'S ALL RIGHT...

Y-YES...

YOU OKAY...?

...

ハンコクH

SHUNK

ハンコクH

ハンコクH

ハンコクH

I COULDN'T PIERCE HIM...

HUFF.

...

HUFF.

AND I COULDN'T HIT HIM WITH THE ARROW.

THE MOMENT YOU FIRED, HE FALTERED, JUST FOR AN INSTANT.

HUFF.

LIVE

HUFF.

I'M JUST HAPPY WE WERE ABLE TO CATCH A GLIMPSE OF HIS REAL FACE.

IT'S A MIRACLE THAT YOU'RE ALIVE RIGHT NOW...

BUT I DON'T THINK MUCH OF THAT METHOD OF FIGHTING.

HUFF!

FSHK

HUFF!

HUFF!

...TO USE MY RED ARROW. I DIDN'T WANT TO DIE...

NO WAY... I JUST WANTED...

...YOU DID THAT RECKLESS FEINT TO BUY ME TIME TO FIRE?

UNLESS ...

KCHAK

BWUP

I WASN'T THINKING ANYTHING AT ALL. MY MIND WENT BLANK...

NO, THAT'S NOT TRUE...

...

...

TWITCH

TWITCH

I'M NOT CUT OUT FOR THIS.

TRY TO THINK WHEN FIGHTING. WHAT DO YOU SUPPOSE WOULD HAVE HAPPENED IF HE'D GOTTEN YOUR WHITE ARROWS?

WHUNK

SEEMS A BIT LATE FOR THAT.

I'M NOT MEANT TO BE A FIGHTER.

I'VE NEVER EVEN BEEN IN A FIGHT BEFORE.

WHEN THE KIDS AT SCHOOL TAUNTED, HARASSED AND HUMILIATED ME...

...ALL I DID WAS ABSORB THEIR VIOLENCE.

EVEN WHEN MY RELATIVES TOOK ME IN AND ABUSED ME...

...I ONLY PRETENDED I COULDN'T HEAR THEM AND NEVER FOUGHT BACK. I NEVER TRIED TO GET EVEN ...

THAT WAS MY WEAK-NESS.

I'M NOT SAYING THAT WAS STRENGTH.

I KNOW THAT.

IF YOU THINK THAT EQUATES TO STRENGTH, YOU'RE SORELY MISTAKEN.

SNAP

KSHUNK

I'M A COWARD.

I HATE EVEN THE IDEA OF ATTACKING OTHERS... IT SCARES ME.

...

LIVE

YEAH. YOU'RE VERY KIND-HEARTED, MIRAI.

NO...

I WOULDN'T SAY THAT.

PEOPLE ARE SUPPOSED TO COMPETE. IT FORCES YOU TO MAKE AN EFFORT TO APPROACH YOUR IDEAL.

THAT'S WHAT LEADS TO HAPPINESS.

WHIP WHIP WHIP

BUT WHAT I'M DOING NOW IS COMPLETELY DIFFERENT FROM THAT.

I UNDERSTAND HOW IT WORKS.

I DON'T UNDER-STAND HOW ANYONE CAN CELEBRATE THAT.

IT DOESN'T MAKE ME HAPPY TO HURT PEOPLE AND GAIN SOME-THING BY SACRI-FICING THEM.

WE'RE TRYING TO ***STOP*** HIM. I DON'T THINK OF KILLING HIM AS MAKING A SACRIFICE.

METRO-POLIMAN'S THE ONE SACRIFICING OTHERS TO FEED HIS OWN EGO.

MAYBE YOU'RE RIGHT...

...BUT THE POINT IS, I DON'T EVEN KNOW WHAT I'M DOING ANYMORE.

OR WHY ...

...

TO BE HAPPY.

ISN'T THAT RIGHT?

IT'S FOR EVERYONE TO BE HAPPY.

NASSE ...

...AND NOW I'M WITH SAKI.

I ESCAPED FROM MY PERSONAL HELL...

WHEN YOU APPEARED, I GOT WINGS AND ARROWS...

I FELT LIKE I WAS CLIMBING UP TO HEAVEN. THAT MAYBE I REALLY COULD BE HAPPY...

...IS SLAUGH-TERING ONE ANOTHER ...

...ALL WE'RE DOING RIGHT NOW...

BUT IN REALITY ...

I CAN'T TAKE THIS ANYMORE...

LIVE

...

WHY CAN'T I JUST LIVE A NORMAL LIFE?

SEEMS LIKE YOUR FIRST EXPERIENCE WITH BATTLE STILL HAS YOUR NERVES ON EDGE.

SO KAKEHASHI FEELS...

FIRST THING IS TO CALM DOWN.

AVOID INTENSE EXERCISE THAT MIGHT DISTURB THE WOUND. JUST KEEP IT CLEAN AND YOU SHOULD BE FINE.

ITASUGI PLASTIC SURGERY CLINIC

TO BE HONEST, I'VE NEVER HAD A PATIENT WHOSE HEAD HAS BEEN GRAZED BY BULLETS BEFORE.

CLINK

...HAPPY BEING WITH ME...

NO, I CAN TEND TO THE WOUND MYSELF.

THAT'S QUITE AN EXPERIENCE. GET REGULAR CHECKUPS AT THE HOSPITAL.

I HAD BULLETPROOF ARMOR, BUT IT ONLY PROTECTED SO MUCH...

I WAS SHOT AT POINT-BLANK RANGE...

IT'S QUITE ALL RIGHT.

I'M SORRY TO BOTHER YOU AFTER HOURS, DOCTOR.

KWIIIII

"I WON'T KILL ANYONE ASIDE FROM GOD CANDIDATES."

"I PLANTED MORE BOMBS ELSEWHERE."

SHA-

ALL LIES.

ZRRP

DAM-MIT!

WHAT'S WITH THOSE GUYS...?

HOW OLD?

WHAT DID HE LOOK LIKE?

HE WAS HAND-SOME...

...AND SMILING ...

UMM ...

HE WAS... OLDER THAN ME. MAYBE BY... TWO OR THREE YEARS.

PALE FACE, CLEAR FEATURES.

THAT'S ALL I REMEMBER...

SMILING?

MR. MUKAIDO.

HMM?

CAN YOU DRAW A PICTURE?

UH...

...

...

I DON'T THINK HE FEELS CALM AND COLLECTED QUITE YET.

PLUS...

SURELY YOU CAN IMAGINE HOW MUCH STRESS IT PUTS ON SOMEONE TO HAVE TO WATCH A LIFE-RISKING BATTLE LIKE THIS.

SHE WAS VERY WORRIED FOR MIRAI'S SAKE.

...

I THINK I'VE HAD ENOUGH FOR TODAY.

SAKI WAS WORRIED FOR ME...

I SEE... GOOD POINT.

SHE...

WE CAN CONTINUE TOMOR-ROW...

SAKI.

IF YOU'RE THAT TIRED, WHY DON'T YOU STAY HOME FROM SCHOOL TOMORROW?

I'M GOING TO TAKE A BATH...

CLICK

...

NO. I'M...

I'M FINE... BUT I THINK YOU SHOULD TAKE THAT ADVICE...

THAT'S IT.

IF METRO-POLIMAN'S CLOSE TO YOU IN AGE, THEN HE MIGHT BE A STUDENT.

HE CERTAINLY TOOK AN INJURY IN ALL OF THAT...

HE COULD VERY WELL BE ABSENT FROM SCHOOL AS A RESULT.

I HAVE THOSE 14 PEOPLE UNDER CONTROL WITH ARROWS. IF I MAKE THEM CALL ALL THE SCHOOLS TOMORROW...

BUT AREN'T THERE A WHOLE LOT OF SCHOOLS?

HMMMM...

I THINK MR. MUKAIDO IS THE MOST ENERGETIC OF ALL OF US!

THANKS TO HAVING A GOAL, I FEEL LIKE THE CANCER CELLS ARE DWINDLING DAY BY DAY...

THE NEXT DAY

...

MORNING!

...GOOD MORNING.

DID YOU SEE THAT EXPLOSION AT GRAND TOWER YESTERDAY?

THAT WAS CRAZY. TERRORISM IS, LIKE, SO SCARY.

BY THE WAY...

YOUR STALKER'S BACK...

N-NO, IT'S FINE!

I'M GOING TO GO TELL HIM OFF!

...

...

WHAT'S FINE?

WAIT, DON'T TELL ME...

NO, WE'RE NOT.

HUH?

ARE YOU GOING OUT WITH KAKEHASHI?

WE'RE NOT A COUPLE ...

...

THE WHOLE CLASS IS TALKING ABOUT IT.

PEOPLE HAVE SEEN YOU TWO TOGETHER...

OF COURSE NOT. NOT WITH MIRAI KAKEHASHI, OF ALL PEOPLE...

...

BESIDES ...

I CANNOT FALL IN LOVE WITH KAKEHASHI.

STOP IT, MAIKO!

WHICH IS WHY YOU SHOULD TELL HIM OFF...

OF... OF COURSE NOT.

WHY NOT? IT'S CREEPING ME OUT.

N- NO, IT'S NOT LIKE THAT ...

OOOOH, REALLY?

AND SINCE THEN...

I WAS GETTING HARASSED BY A BOY FROM A DIFFERENT SCHOOL ONCE, AND HE CAME ALONG AND DROVE THE BOY OFF...

SO HE'S BEEN PLAYING BODYGUARD FOR YOU, HUH?

YES...

HE'S JUST... PRE-TENDING TO BE MY BODY-GUARD ...

...

BUT IF YOU THINK ABOUT IT, THAT MAKES IT EVEN WORSE.

WON'T IT MEAN THAT HE'S GETTING OFF JUST FROM PROTECTING YOU, WITHOUT HAVING BEEN ASKED?

HE'S TRYING TO BE HAPPY BY PROTECTING ME...

...

I KNOW, I KNOW... DON'T WORRY. I'LL MANAGE THIS MYSELF.

BUT ...

YOU'RE OVER-THINKING THIS, MAIKO... KAKE-HASHI'S NOT LIKE THAT.

HOW OFTEN DO YOU HEAR A STORY IN THE NEWS ABOUT SOMEONE WHO KILLS ANOTHER PERSON BECAUSE THEY WERE DEDICATING THEM-SELVES AND FELT OBLIGATED TO RECEIVE SOMETHING IN RETURN?

YOU DON'T WANT TO OWE A STALKER ANYTHING.

MURMUR

JOSO ACADEMY

MURMUR

WHAT HAPPENED TO YOUR FACE, URYU?

I MISSED A STEP ON THE STAIR-CASE...

YEAH, IT DOES.

BUT THAT HEADBAND KINDA MAKES YOU LOOK COOLER, KANADE.

WHOA, ARE YOU OKAY?

MURMUR

MURMUR

...

NO WAY ooo

NO ooo

YOU KNOW WHAT? I'LL ACCEPT THAT.

THEN I WANT ALL UGLY WOMEN TO DISAPPEAR FROM THE WORLD.

but once I'm free from
this place I think I'll
killing more of the u
ones this time♡

BUT THE PART ABOUT DYING IS A 100 PERCENT GUARAN-TEE.

...BE SERIOUS...

YOU CAN'T...

WAIT, WAIT, WAIT...

IF METROPOLIMAN WAS INVOLVED IN THAT GRAND TOWER EXPLOSION, IT WOULD EXPLAIN...

MAYBE THEY COULD EVEN MAKE A FLYING SUIT...

KANADE'S FAMILY RUNS JOSO INDUSTRIES, WHICH IS RUMORED TO BE IN THE WEAPONS BUSINESS...

GZOZ

GZOZ

BUT WHAT CAN I DO...?

NO.

GULP

ELEVEN ENEMIES ...

DEAD SISTER ...

MURDERED!

WHAT SHOULD I DO?

WHAT'S MORE IMPORTANT IS THAT METRO-POLIMAN IS A MURDER SUSPECT...

...

I'M THE ONLY ONE WHO SUS-PECTS KANADE OF THIS ...

I'LL INTERACT WITH HIM THE SAME WAY I ALWAYS HAVE.

WE'RE NOT GREAT FRIENDS. SOMETIMES HE JUST LETS ME USE HIS PRIVILEGE AS GRANDSON OF THE HEADMASTER TO CHECK OUT THE GIRLS AT CLUB PRACTICE. I'M JUST A HANGER-ON, LIKE GOLDFISH POOP...

GULP

THAT'S IT!

HA HA, YOU NEVER LEARN.

WELL, I GOT TURNED DOWN BY YET ANOTHER GIRL...

REALLY, MINAMI? AGAIN?

YOU'RE SO SHAL-LOW.

HAHA HA

AAAH!

GACK

WHAT'S WITH THE DRAMATIC LOOK ON YOUR FACE, MINAMIKAWA?

HUH? IT'S MUKAIDO.

TAP-TAP-TAP
TAP-TAP-TAP

THEY HAVEN'T RETURNED FROM SCHOOL YET.

KSHUNK

I NEED TO ASK YOU SOMETHING, REVEL.

?

THAT'S TRUE. I WAS WONDERING ABOUT THAT MYSELF.

...BUT I NOTICED THAT HANAKAGO WAS ACTING STRANGELY YESTERDAY TOO...

I'M AWARE THAT KAKEHASHI WENT THROUGH A LOT EVEN BEFORE ALL OF THIS...

...

...

WHY DID SHE LOSE HER WILL TO LIVE IN THE FIRST PLACE?

I DON'T KNOW.

I'VE ASKED, BUT SHE WON'T TELL ME WHY SHE'S SO LIFELESS...

WHAT DO YOU MEAN? HOW CAN HER OWN ANGEL NOT KNOW?

THEN WHY DID YOU CHOOSE HER AS YOUR CANDIDATE?

BECAUSE SHE WAS TRYING TO DIE.

SUICIDE?

I BELIEVE SO...

AFTER ALL, SHE WAS WALKING INTO THE SEA IN THE BITING CHILL OF MARCH.

DROWNING ...?

SHE DENIED IT, SAYING THAT SHE WAS JUST PLAYING A GAME. BUT...

CLICK

NOPE.

AND SHE STILL WON'T TELL YOU WHAT HAPPENED THAT LED UP TO THAT?

I SHOWED UP A BIT EARLY, I GUESS. SORRY TO HAVE LET MYSELF IN.

WEL-COME BACK.

KCHAK

MR. MUKAIDO?

IT'S FINE.

YO.

WELCOME BACK, MIRAI!

KSHAK

SNAP

SO THE SCHOOL CALLS DIDN'T PAN OUT. THEY CAN'T TELL YOU WHICH INDIVIDUAL STUDENTS ARE ABSENT.

THAT PROTECTION OF PRIVACY THING?

I TRIED TO PUT THIS PHOTO UP ONLINE TOO, BUT IT GOT TAKEN DOWN RIGHT AWAY.

HAPPENED SEVERAL TIMES.

THIS MEANS WE JUST HAVE TO FLY AROUND AND SEARCH.

KAKEHASHI AND I WILL TAKE TURNS LOOKING FOR THEM.

WELL, THERE'S ALSO THE HIGH POSSIBILITY THAT METRO-POLIMAN WILL TAKE HIS OWN ACTIONS TO REVEAL HIMSELF.

THAT SOUNDS BORING. AND EXTREMELY HARD.

...YOU NEED TO BE ABLE TO PERFORM IN THAT EVENT, KAKE-HASHI.

IF HE COMES AFTER US BEFORE I REGAIN THE USE OF MY RED ARROWS AGAIN...

...

...

YES, SIR.

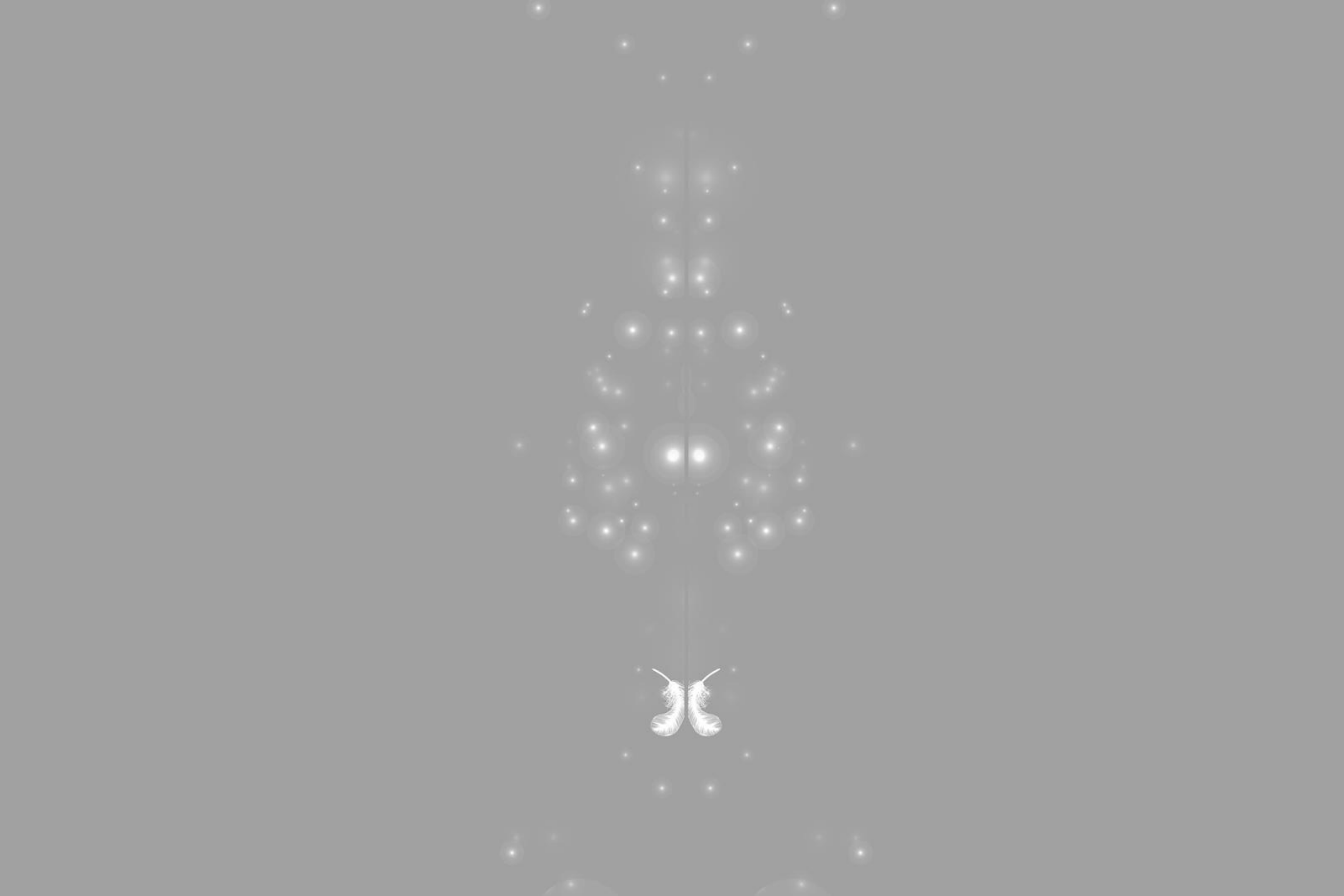
KCHAK

KRIK

HMM?

KAKE-
HASHI.

I NEED
TO TALK
TO YOU...



#12 Symbol of Promise

I WANT YOU...

...TO SLEEP IN MY BED TONIGHT.

UH...

W-
WHA...!
YOU
CAN'T...!

THAT'S
A GREAT
IDEA!

SAKI,
WHAT
ARE
YOU...

THERE'S SOMETHING I NEED TO TELL YOU.

I WON'T BE ABLE TO DISCUSS IT WITHOUT THAT.

NO.

W-WELL, YOU CAN TALK WITHOUT ***SLEEPING*** TOGETHER...

BÁ BUM...

HUH?

YOU GOT IT!

REVEL, NASSE, I WANT YOU TO FIND SOMEWHERE ELSE TO GO UNTIL MORNING.

BUT, NASSE!

I-I DIDN'T! I DON'T CARE!

DIDN'T YOU KNOW THAT?

IT'S A VERY SPECIAL THING WHEN A HUMAN MAN AND WOMAN SLEEP UNDER THE SAME BLANKET FOR THE FIRST TIME.

AT ANY RATE, WE'RE JUST THIRD WHEELS HERE.

H-
HEY...

TUG

COME ON,
LET'S GO.

...

GUH

TWING

OR
I'LL
GET
MAD.

PSST
PSST

RIP

WHAT
IS SAKI
THINKING
...?

SHF

TO BE HONEST, SAKI'S THE ONE PERSON EVEN I CAN'T SEE THROUGH.

HUH? REALLY?

...

I CAN'T EVEN TELL WHEN SHE'S LYING.

KCHAK

WBBL...

PHEW...

FWAM

BRUP

BRUP

BRUP

FF

I SUPPOSE YOU STILL DON'T HAVE MUCH APPETITE. AND YOU'RE FEELING SORE, AREN'T YOU?

ARE YOU HUNGRY, NANATO?

SORRY, NO.

...

YOU NEED TO GET YOUR REST.

THERE YOU GO AGAIN, TRYING TO AVOID GIVING ME A STRAIGHT ANSWER.

IT'S NOT THE PHYSICAL PAIN I'M WORRIED ABOUT BEFORE I DIE, IT'S THE MENTAL PAIN.

WE PROMISED THAT WE WOULD NEVER KEEP SECRETS FROM ONE ANOTHER.

THAT'S RIGHT, WE DID...

WHAT ARE YOU DOING EVERY DAY WHEN YOU GO OUT? BE HONEST WITH ME.

HOW CAN YOU KNOW WITHOUT TELLING ME FIRST?

YOU'D ONLY ASSUME THE CANCER'S REACHED MY BRAIN.

I DON'T THINK YOU WOULD BELIEVE ME IF I TOLD YOU.

WH

TMP

DO YOU LOVE ME?

I LOVE YOU.

AND I LOVE YOU AND THE KIDS.

...I AM FIGHTING ALONGSIDE A TEAM OF COMRADES AGAINST AN EVIL THAT THREATENS THE WORLD.

FOR THE SAKE OF THOSE I LOVE SO MUCH...

AM I SUPPOSED TO BELIEVE THAT? OR LAUGH AT IT?

EVERY SINGLE DAY IS A BATTLE FOR ME. PLEASE UNDERSTAND THAT.

HOPE IT TURNED YOU ON...

HOW WAS IT BEING PRESSED AGAINST THE WALL?

CLICK

NIGHT.

THUMP

IT WOULD BE BEST IF YOU BELIEVED ME WITH A SMILE.

SHU

BBBMp

KAKEHASHI
...

BBBMp

BBBMp

I WANT...
TO DIE...

DIE ...?

I KNOW, I KNOW. PLEASE, JUST LISTEN TO ME.

I KNOW THAT TELLING YOU I WANT TO DIE IS THE WORST POSSIBLE THING I COULD SAY.

...

...I'VE COME TO REALIZE...

AS I'VE WATCHED YOU...

YES...

...YOU SAID THAT ONCE.

...THAT I OUGHT TO FIND MY OWN HAPPINESS.

...HEADING FOR THE SAME GOAL ...

I THINK YOU'RE A COMPANION...

COMPANION ...?

YEAH.

...

IT'S EXTREMELY IMPORTANT FOR GOD CANDIDATES TO BAND TOGETHER LIKE THIS.

THAT'S NOT TRUE...

BUT ALL I DO IS STAND BEHIND YOU FOR PROTECTION.

YOU CALL US COMPANIONS.

...

...I'M JUST A WIMP WHO SAYS HE'S AFRAID TO ATTACK PEOPLE. MY WAY OF FIGHTING IS PATHETIC.

BUT WHILE THAT SOUNDS COOL AND HEROIC...

...

I'M LITERALLY BAGGAGE THAT WAITS FOR YOU TO USE YOUR WINGS FOR ME.

...I DECIDED THAT I WANT TO DO EVERY-THING I CAN... TO FULFILL MY RESPONSIBILITY AS A CANDIDATE.

BUT AFTER WE MET MR. MUKAIDO ...

...

IF OTHER CANDIDATES AREN'T GOING TO STEP UP, WE HAVE TO...

WE HAVE TO STOP OTHER CANDIDATES WHO WOULD USE INNOCENT LIVES AS DISPOSABLE TOOLS.

FOR THE SAKE OF MR. MUKAIDO'S CHILDREN... FOR THE FUTURE.

I DON'T HAVE THE RIGHT TO BE YOUR COMPANION...

?

I DON'T KNOW WHAT YOU MEAN...

YES.

THE RIGHT?

BUT I DON'T RECALL ALL THE DETAILS OF WHICH WAS WHICH.

I REMEMBER...

DO YOU REMEMBER WHEN OUR FAMILIES WENT TO THE BEACH AND WENT CAMPING TOGETHER... WHEN WE WERE IN KINDERGARTEN AND FIRST GRADE?

VMM

M

MMM

SHWAA

SHWAA

AH!

AH HA HA!

SHE SAID SHE WANTED TO TRY IT HERSELF.

ACTUALLY, I'M JEALOUS.

RAISING A GIRL LOOKS TOUGH.

SHWAA...

PLIP

OOH, I WANNA FIND ONE!

LET'S LOOK TO-GETHER.

PEEP PEEP

CHUP

CHIRP

I FOUND A FOUR-LEAF CLOVER!

AWW, JUST A BIT LONGER!

COME ON, WE'RE LEAVING! IT'S ABOUT TO RAIN.

OOH, NICE ONE, MIRAI! YOU'LL HAVE A HAPPY LIFE NOW.

HERE, SAKI, YOU CAN HAVE MINE.

HUH?

ARE YOU SURE?

YEAH.

YAY! THANKS...

YOU CAN HAVE IT. YOU'RE MY FRIEND.

OH.

A YELLOW LADYBUG.

AND YELLOW IS THE COLOR OF HAPPINESS.

PLUS THERE'S A FOUR-LEAF CLOVER.

IT'S THE ULTIMATE COMBO.

LADYBUGS BRING GOOD LUCK TOO, YOU KNOW.

SHE'S THE ONE WHO FOUND IT, ACTUALLY.

WOW, YOU'RE RIGHT...

COME ON, LET'S GO.

MIRAI.

WHAT?

...

FSHH

AFTER WE START FIRST GRADE, THE BOYS ONLY PLAY WITH BOYS, AND THE GIRLS ONLY PLAY WITH GIRLS, RIGHT?

I GUESS SO...

BUT...

THAT'S JUST HOW IT GOES. IF YOU PLAY WITH BOYS, THEY'LL GET NAUGHTY, RIGHT?

THIS FOUR-LEAF CLOVER IS A SYMBOL OF THAT.

OF COURSE!

YOU AND I WILL ALWAYS BE FRIENDS, MIRAI.

YEAH, I GET IT.

BUT THEN ...

I SAID WE'D BE FRIENDS FOREVER ...

...

THAT'S RIGHT. BACK THEN, THAT WAS ALL IT TOOK TO BE HAPPY ...

...

...I PICKED ON YOU.

IN-STEAD, I PICKED ON YOU.

AFTER YOU LOST YOUR FAMILY AND WERE ALL ALONE, I DIDN'T TRY TO CHEER YOU UP.

YOU PICKED ON ME?

I CALLED YOU "PIGSTY KAKEHASHI" LIKE THE OTHER CHILDREN.

AND I HELD MY NOSE WHEN YOU WALKED PAST.

PIG-STY!

PIG-STY!

PIG-STY!

GROSS!

PLUG YOUR NOSE!

HERE HE COMES! HOLD YOUR NOSE!

NO WONDER HE STINKS SO MUCH!

YOU SMELL LIKE AN ANIMAL!!

IT'S NOT HIS, HE'S JUST A PET THERE!

YEAH, BECAUSE YOU LIVE IN A PIGSTY!

YOUR NAME'S *PIGSTY*, NOT MIRAI!

HERE COMES PIGSTY!

SO YOU JOINED IN...?

YES...

INSTEAD, I BETRAYED YOU, RIGHT AFTER SAYING WE'D BE FRIENDS FOREVER...

I'M THE WORST PERSON THERE COULD POSSIBLY BE...

...MAYBE YOU WOULD BE HAPPY...

I THOUGHT THAT IF I GAVE BACK THAT FOUR-LEAF CLOVER...

YEAH, THAT'S TERRIBLE ...

IN ELEMENTARY SCHOOL I WAS THE CLASS REPRESENTATIVE SOMETIMES.

I ALWAYS JUST PLAYED ALONG WITH WHOEVER I WAS AROUND.

SO I PICKED ON YOU.

IT MADE ME EVEN WORSE...

I ONLY PLAYED THE GOOD GIRL IN FRONT OF THE TEACHERS AND PARENTS.

...

I KNOW THIS ONLY SOUNDS LIKE AN EXCUSE...

...BUT I HATED MYSELF. I WAS ALWAYS CRYING WHEN I WAS ALONE.

AND THEN, THAT DAY...

THE DAY OF OUR MIDDLE SCHOOL GRADUATION, I THOUGHT IT WAS MY LAST CHANCE...

I WENT ...

...TO FIND YOU SO THAT I COULD APOLOGIZE.

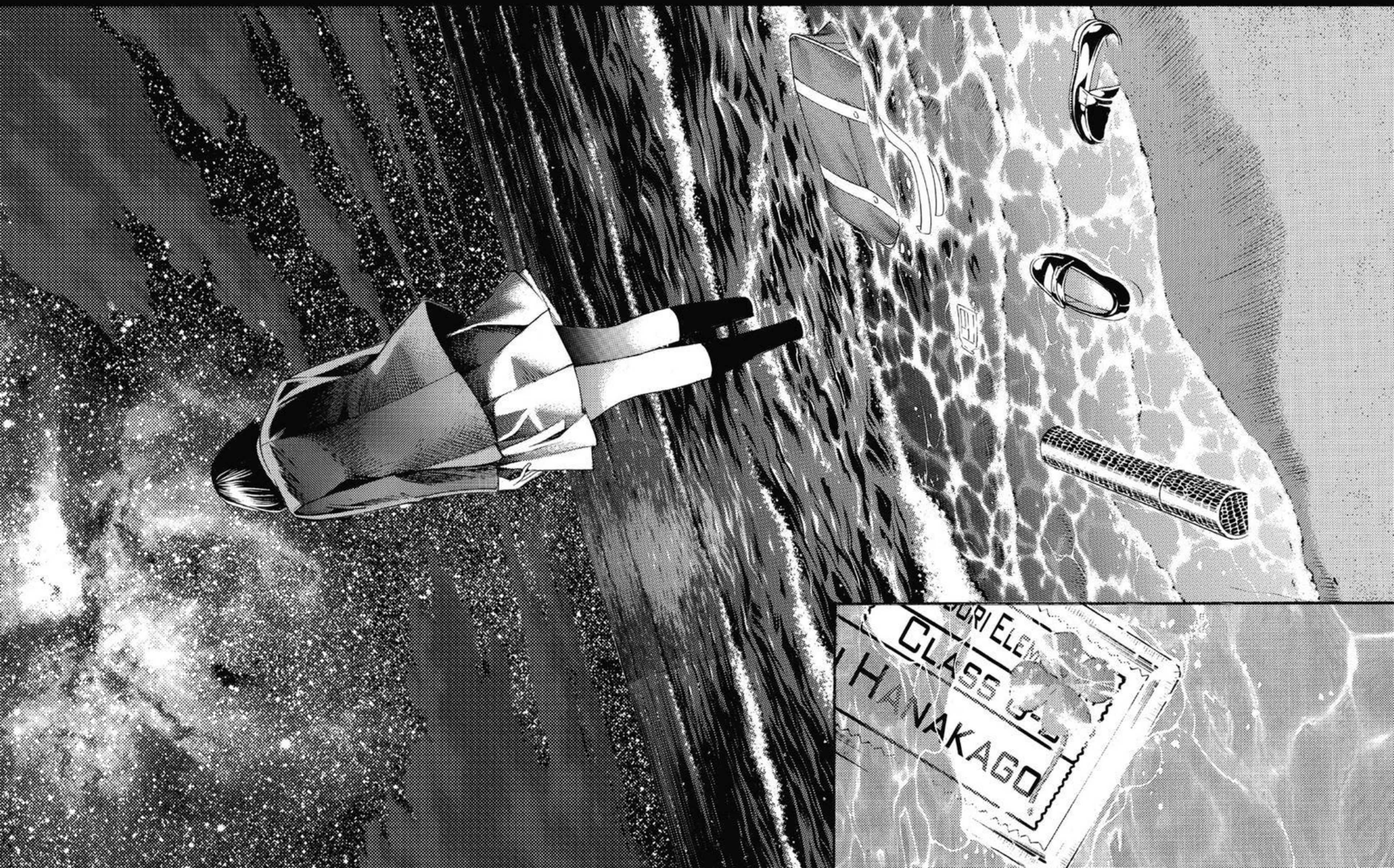
I RAN AND RAN, AND...

FSHHH!!

...I JUST...

...WENT STRAIGHT TO THE...

I WAS SO AFRAID...


CLASS
HANAKAGO

news.noon.co.●●pj

News

rit of Insurance Murders Surrenders

733

JMONDAI DITAL

A man turned himself in to authorities yesterday confessing to a triple homicide automobile explosion seven yea ago.
He killed the victi his relatives by and made it loo an accident to their life insu

Apartments where the killer lived.

Inheritance and insuranc reverts to Mirai Kakeha

The only survivor o accident w

I WAS INCREDIBLY RELIEVED WHEN I FOUND OUT YOU WERE STILL ALIVE.

THAT WAS WHEN I MET REVEL.

"I'D RATHER BE BULLIED THAN A BULLY."

THE WORDS ARE LIKE DAGGERS IN MY HEART.

I WAS EVEN MORE RELIEVED WHEN I HIT YOU WITH MY RED ARROW AND LEARNED THAT YOU DIDN'T HATE ME AFTER ALL...

BUT EVER SINCE THEN, ALL THE THINGS YOU'VE SAID...

THEY JUST SEEMED LIKE THEY WERE PERFECTLY APPLICABLE TO ME...

...AND THEN YOU HELPED ME WITH YOUR WINGS AND FOUGHT FOR ME...

YOU COMPLETELY RISKED YOUR LIFE FOR ME YESTERDAY...

...AND JUST THE SIGHT OF THAT FILLED ME WITH TERRIBLE PAIN...

IT MADE ME WONDER... WHY I'M EVEN ALIVE...

SO...

...I WANT YOU TO KILL ME.

...AND THEN COMMAND ME TO DIE...

USE YOUR WHITE ARROW... OR YOUR RED ARROW TO MAKE ME DO WHATEVER YOU WANT...

...

KILL ME...

I WANT YOU TO KILL ME, KAKE-HASHI.

YOU OUGHT TO BE THE ONE TO KILL ME.

YOU YOURSELF SAID I WAS TERRIBLE.

PLEASE.

JUST DO IT ...

SHF...

KNOCK

KNOCK

KNOCK

OH!

LOOK!

HUH?

BEHIND

ME?

KAKE-
HASHI?

?

SHF

!

!

...

GK

FF

W-
WHAT
IS HE
...

MIRAI
UNDID
HIS
PART
OF THE
CIRCLE!

...

HUH

WHA

YOU'RE SAYING THAT YOU WON'T KILL ANYONE, AND IF I WANT TO DIE, I NEED TO DO IT MYSELF, AREN'T YOU?

...

WHO

KAKE-HASHI...

I CAN'T JUST WAIT HERE AND WATCH IT HAPPEN!

NO, SIT BACK.

SAKI!

SHOOSH

STAY AWAY...

!

DON'T COME CLOSER, REVEL.

...

...

WHAT?

YOU DON'T HAVE TO SAY IT LIKE THAT!

IF SAKI WANTS TO DIE, SHE'D BETTER DO IT SOON.

OTHER GOD CANDIDATES WILL SEE YOU FLOATING WITH YOUR WINGS OUT LIKE THAT.

WELL, IF YOU SAVED HER LIFE ONCE ALREADY AND SHE STILL WANTS TO DIE, REVEL, THEN IT'S YOUR FAULT. YOU PICKED THE WRONG PERSON FOR A CANDIDATE.

...

GEEZ, NASSE!

GOT IT? IF SHE FALLS, YOU CAN'T SAVE HER THIS TIME.

FF

SAKI!!

WAP

...

I...

I LIED.

I DON'T ...

...WANT TO DIE.

I WANT TO LIVE!

I WANT TO OPEN THE DOOR TO TOMORROW WITH YOU AND MR. MUKAIDO ...

I'M SORRY!
I'M SORRY!

WAH

KNEE

HUG

PHEW

YOU SAY THINGS LIKE "I'D RATHER BE BULLIED" AND "I WON'T HATE PEOPLE," THINGS THAT SOUND PRETENTIOUS ...

ZEON

...BUT THEN YOU ACTUALLY *ACHIEVE* THEM.

YOU'RE INCRED-IBLE...

AT THIS POINT, I HAVE TO JUST COME CLEAN AND TELL THE TRUTH.

KAKE-HASHI ...

I'LL ADMIT ...

IT'S ALL RIGHT. YOU CAN STOP.

NO! I NEED TO SAY THIS.

...I'M TRAPPED BETWEEN GUILT...

...AND ATTRACTION TO YOU...

AND LET ME BE WITH YOU.

PLEASE FORGIVE ME.

FSH

THERE'S NOTHING TO FORGIVE.

SO YOU COULD TELL THAT SAKI'S WISH FOR DEATH WAS JUST ANOTHER LIE, HUH?

SHEESH.

...

JUST LIKE WE DID WHEN WE SEARCHED FOR FOUR-LEAF CLOVERS.

LET'S DO THIS TOGETHER.

I'M NOT ANGRY AT YOU.

NOPE.

I THINK SAKI JUST REALIZED WHAT HER TRUE FEELINGS WERE RIGHT NOW.

OF COURSE HE'D SAVE HER IF SHE FELL.

HUH? REALLY?

IF ANYONE WAS LYING, IT WAS MIRAI.

BUT... THEN WHY DID HE DO THAT...?

WELL, WE DIDN'T HEAR WHAT THEY WERE TALKING ABOUT INSIDE.

GOOD POINT...

I DUNNO.

HMM... MAYBE IT WAS TO DRAW THE TRUE SAKI OUT OF HER?

SO MUCH FOR YOUR TALENT.

NO PROBLEM!

REVEL...

NASSE...

SORRY, WE'RE GOING BACK.

YEP.

SO THEY'RE SLEEPING SEPARATELY AFTER ALL.

WE EVEN HAVE HIS DNA...?

...

BASED ON TESTS FROM PIECES OF THE SHATTERED MASK AT THE SCENE, HE HAS BLOOD TYPE B-NEGATIVE.

AGE BETWEEN 15 AND 20, HEIGHT ABOUT 5'9", PALE AND HANDSOME.

THE POLICE HAVE NO DNA MATCH IN THEIR DATABASE.

THE NEXT DAY

SO HERE'S WHAT WE KNOW ABOUT METROPOLIMAN...

I'VE STILL GOT THOSE DETECTIVES UNDER MY RED ARROW CONTROL. I'LL PUT THEM ON THAT.

ACTUALLY, THERE MIGHT BE A POSSIBILITY THERE...

BUT THERE ARE TONS OF SURGEONS EVEN JUST IN THE CITY... IT'LL BE VERY HARD.

HE WAS HURT PRETTY BADLY. WHAT IF WE ASK AROUND AT HOSPITALS FOR MORE INFORMATION?

!

JUST IN CASE, WE MIGHT WANT TO SEARCH AROUND FOR ANY SURGEONS WHO HAVE DIED IN THE LAST TWO DAYS...

JUST SAY THE WORD AND I'LL HELP.

IF NECESSARY, I CAN USE UP TO TEN OF MY ARROWS, LEAVING FOUR FOR PROTECTION.

HUH?!

UH, OKAY ...

KAKEHASHI, WE NEED YOU TO DRAW WHAT YOU REMEMBER OF METRO-POLIMAN'S FACE UNDER THE MASK.

THAT'S GOOD TO HEAR.

I THINK WE SHOULD MOVE TO A LOCATION A BIT LARGER AND BETTER SUITED FOR ACTION.

ON TOP OF THAT...

...THIS APARTMENT IS GETTING A LITTLE CRAMPED.

I AGREE.

WE'RE IN! IT'S TOO SMALL FOR THREE PEOPLE AND THREE ANGELS!

OOOH.

IF THEY PUT UP A FIGHT, I'LL USE THESE ON THEM.

BUT WHAT ABOUT YOUR PARENTS?

I'M JUST DECIDING ON THE COLORS AND DESIGNS TO MAKE OURS DISTINCT FROM KAKEHASHI'S.

PLUS, I'LL HAVE OUR COSTUMES DONE SOON.

THAT'S NOT A BAD IDEA.

BECAUSE IT'S THE COLOR OF HAPPINESS AND GOOD LUCK TO ME.

COSTUMES ...

...I'D LIKE TO HAVE YELLOW.

IF WE GET TO CHOOSE OUR COLORS ...

WHY YELLOW?

YELLOW?

YES?

OH, AND BARET...

...

?

I'D LIKE TO ASK YOU SOMETHING.

...I CAN GROW MY OWN WINGS...

PERHAPS THROUGH BARET...

TO BE CONTINUED...

If angel tools are returned before a God is determined, the person who returned them shall die.

Angel tools from deceased God candidates can also be given to other human beings.

When a God is determined, the angel tools of the other candidates are forfeited.

Noncandidate human beings cannot see angel tools.

Angel wings can fly faster than the human eye can follow.

The tools an angel can give to a person depends on the angel's rank.
Special rank: Wings, red arrows, white arrows
First rank: Wings, red arrows
Second rank: Wings or red arrows

God candidates are chosen from among people who have lost their reason or will to live.

God is determined from among 13 human beings selected by 13 angels. The process shall take no more than 999 days.

The angel tools of deceased God candidates can be claimed and used by other candidates.

Angels shall not use their own arrows and wings to directly affect God candidates.

If the pierced person dies, that red arrow will be returned to its owner.

When a person is under the effect of a red arrow, they cannot be pierced by other red arrows.

Any person pierced by a white arrow will die without fail.

When a red arrow is used on another person possessing red arrows, they may be ordered to use those red arrows on the original shooter. In this case, the effect of the second arrow overrides the first.

Even a person under the effects of a red arrow may be unable to perform certain actions if lacking an adequate reason or intent to do them.

The speed of the wings is not affected by any amount of weight the user can carry unassisted. However, they cannot lift more than one extra person.

Wings can fly faster than arrows.

Arrows cannot be fired while utilizing faster-than-sight wing flight.

Angel arrows can strike any target with perfect accuracy, but only if the shooter can see the target.

Any person pierced by a red arrow will fall in love with the user for 33 days before the effect wears off.
The effect will only work on a specific person once.

Red arrows can pierce up to 14 people at one time.

T s u**g** u mi **O**h b **a**

Born in Tokyo, Tsugumi Ohba is the author of the hit series *Death Note* and *Bakuman*。.

Ta**k** e s**h** i O b a **t**a

Takeshi Obata was born in 1969 in Niigata, Japan, and first achieved international recognition as the artist of the wildly popular *Shonen Jump* title *Hikaru no Go*, which won the 2003 Tezuka Osamu Cultural Prize: Shinsei "New Hope" Award and the 2000 Shogakukan Manga Award. He went on to illustrate the smash hit *Death Note* as well as the hugely successful manga *Bakuman*。 and *All You Need Is Kill*.

PLATINVM END

VOLUME 4
SHONEN JUMP Manga Edition

°

STORY **T**sug**u**mi **O**hb**a**
ART Ta**k**eshi Obat**a**

°

TRANSLATION Stephen Paul
TOUCH-UP ART & LETTERING James Gaubatz
DESIGN Shawn Carrico
EDITOR Alexis Kirsch

°

ORIGINAL COVER DESIGN Narumi Noriko

°

PLATINUM END © 2015 by Tsugumi Ohba, Takeshi Obata
All rights reserved.
First published in Japan in 2015 by SHUEISHA Inc., Tokyo.
English translation rights arranged by SHUEISHA Inc.

°

The stories, characters and incidents mentioned in this publication are entirely fictional.

°

No portion of this book may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means without written permission from the copyright holders.

°

Printed in the U.S.A.

°

Published by VIZ Media, LLC
P.O. Box 77010
San Francisco, CA 94107

°

10 9 8 7 6 5 4 3 2 1
First printing, December 2017

www.viz.com

www.shonenjump.com

PLATINUM END

STORY
TSUGUMI
OHBA

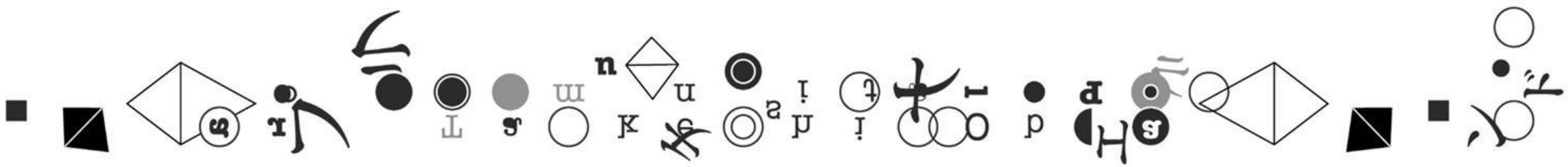
ART
TAKESHI
OBATA

PLATINUM END

Takeshi Obata ART

Tsugumi Ohba STORY

Platinum End



CHARACTERS

Kanade Uryu

Grandson of the Joso Academy headmaster and son of the Joso Industries president. He assumes the form of the Metropoliman character and purges the other god candidates.

Meyza

The special-rank angel who chose Kanade. For unknown reasons, she was elevated from rankless to the top special rank.

Baret

The first-rank angel who chose Mukaido. Possesses great knowledge about the celestial world.

Nanato Mukaido

An apparel company employee who leaves work due to late-stage cancer. A family man with a wife and kid.

Mirai Kakehashi

First-year high school student. His parents and brother died in an accident when he was seven. After a painful life with his abusive relatives, he attempted to commit suicide and survived through Nasse's help.

Nasse

A special-rank angel who wants to bring happiness to Mirai's life. Bright and bubbly.

Revel

A second-rank angel who chose Saki as his god candidate.

Saki Hanakago

Mirai's old friend and fellow student. The object of his affections.

Story

PROMISE

Mirai accepts her feelings and tells her they should work together like they did as children.

HER CONFESSION

Saki reveals that she joined her classmates in bullying Mirai. She chose death out of her guilt.

CLASH

Mirai joins Mukaido in the fight against Metropoliman, and witnesses the face behind the mask.

Story

"My time has come.
I leave the seat of god to the next human.
To a younger, fresher power.

The next god shall be selected from
the 13 humans chosen by you 13 angels.

When the chosen human is made the next god,
your angelic duty is finished, and you may live
beside that god in peace.

You have 999 days remaining..."

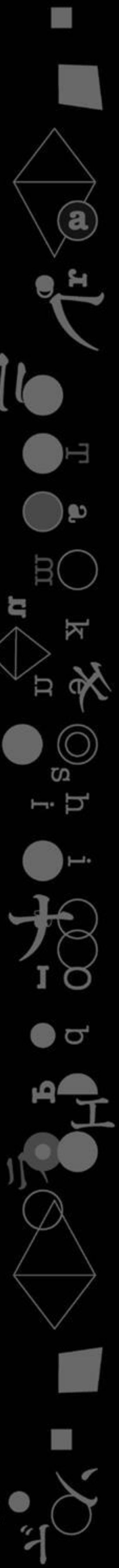
CONTENTS

Prologue ..... to numb

#13 Face of Determination
P5

#14 The Man in the Mirror
P69

#15 The Doorway Lure
P135



#13 Face of Determination

BARET ...

I WANT WINGS OF MY OWN.

THAT IS ALL WELL AND GOOD ...

...BUT YOU CAN ONLY GAIN WINGS BY TAKING THEM FROM A DECEASED GOD CANDIDATE.

THERE ARE A NUMBER OF WAYS FOR THIS TO HAPPEN.

ONE.

KILL A GOD CANDIDATE YOURSELF.

FLIP.

TWO.

HIT A DYING GOD CANDIDATE WITH RED ARROWS.

THIS WILL GIVE YOU PRIORITY OVER THE CANDIDATE WHO KILLED THEM WHEN IT COMES TO SEIZING THE WINGS.

IN HER CASE, THE TOOLS WOULD VANISH AFTER 33 DAYS, BECAUSE SHE WAS NOT A CANDIDATE.

RECEIVE WINGS OR ARROWS FROM ANOTHER GOD CANDIDATE WHO PROCURED THEM THROUGH EITHER OF THE METHODS I JUST MENTIONED-- THE SAME WAY THAT METROPOLIMAN GAVE THEM TO *GIRL A*...

THREE.

THAT IS ACCURATE.

WE CAN GET ALL OF HIS STUFF AT ONCE!

SIMPLE! ALL WE GOTTA DO IS TAKE OUT METROPOLIMAN AND GIVE HIS TOOLS TO HANAKAGO.

THESE ARE THE FOUR METHODS.

FOUR.

IF A GOD CANDIDATE DIES THROUGH ILLNESS, ACCIDENT OR SUICIDE, THE ITEMS CAN BE TRANSFERRED BY REQUEST, BEFORE THE ANGEL TAKES THE BODY TO THE CELESTIAL REALM.

SHH---

LASTLY ...

...THAT YOU JUST HAVE TO BE THERE WHEN I DIE FROM CANCER.

MEANING ...

...

KAKE-HASHI.

IT'S NOT A JOKE ANYMORE.

MR. MUKAIDO, I THOUGHT WE AGREED, NO TALKING ABOUT...

IT'S MY OWN BODY... I CAN TELL.

...

I'M BASICALLY JUST LIVING OFF THE DRIVE TO STOP METROPOLIMAN.

AND THE BELIEF THAT IF WE SUCCEED, GOD WILL BE CHOSEN PEACEFULLY.

...

NO! DON'T SAY THAT!

SHF

YOU'LL GET YOUR WINGS FROM ME OR HIM-- WHOEVER DIES FIRST. SO THERE'S NO RUSH.

SAKI ...

IT'S NOT THAT SIMPLE ...

AND IN ORDER TO HELP, I NEED TO HAVE THE SAME MOBILITY YOU DO.

I WANT TO JOIN YOU TWO AND HELP STOP METROPOLIMAN AS SOON AS POSSIBLE.

DON'T TRY TO TELL ME IT'S TOO DANGEROUS.

IF YOU'RE JUST GOING TO LEAVE ME BEHIND TO BE PROTECTED, THEN I'M NOT WORKING WITH YOU ANYMORE.

I WANT TO SAVOR THE JOY OF WORKING WITH YOU GUYS AND ACHIEVING OUR GOALS TOGETHER.

GETTING WINGS FROM YOU AFTER YOU DIE ISN'T GOING TO MAKE ME HAPPY AT ALL.

HANA-KAGO ...

...

SAKI

...

WHAK

THAT'S VERY SWEET OF YOU TO SAY.

GOOD POINT.

YANK

UMMM...

KIND OF...

SHE'S CHANGED, YOU NOTICE THAT? SOMETHING *HAPPEN* YESTERDAY AFTER I LEFT?

SO I WANT TO START BY DOING WHATEVER I CAN FOR NOW.

IN FACT, SHE MIGHT BE EVEN *MORE* PROACTIVE...

BUT THE SAKI YOU'RE SEEING NOW MIGHT BE THE REAL THING...

KWING

HER OWN PARENTS?

HUH?

...AND MADE IT SO THAT I CAN MOVE OUT.

THIS MORNING, I USED MY RED ARROWS ON MY PARENTS...

TAP TAP

NOW, AS FOR A BASE OF OPERATIONS ...

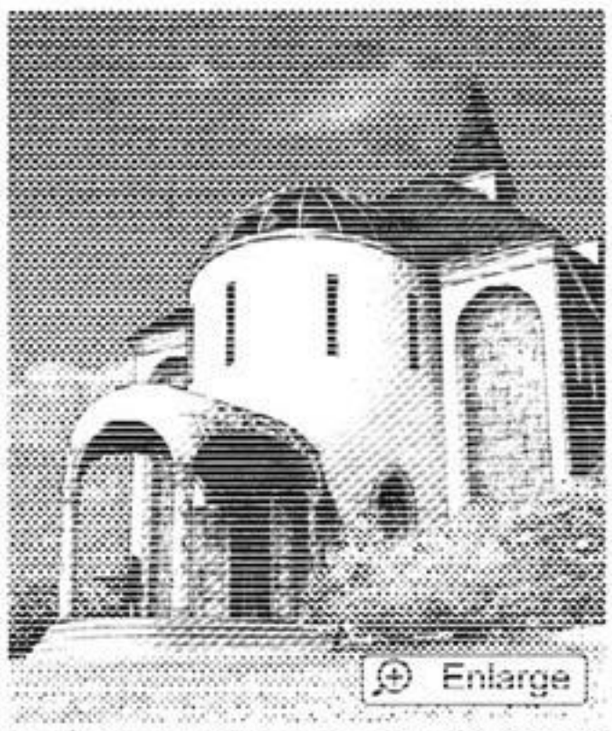
HOW DOES THIS LOOK?

IT'S A BIT... DIFFERENT... I'LL ADMIT...

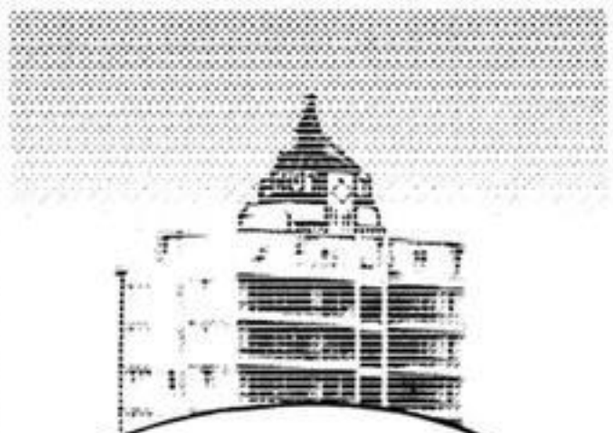
TOP>This Month's Picks>Listing Details

SORT BY AREA! OUR TOP PICKS

We show you the best listings for the area where you want to live.
We guarantee we've got several properties that suit your needs, so feel free to send us an em



This exclusive top-floor listing has its own garden! Bask in your own sky view with this chapel, all for you. Email now!



A CHURCH ...?

IT'S THE PENTHOUSE OF A HIGH-RISE APARTMENT BUILDING, SO WE WON'T HAVE TO WORRY ABOUT BEING SEEN COMING OR GOING.

TRUE, IT'S NOT YOUR ORDINARY PROPERTY ...

BUT IT'S NOT BAD.

IT'S QUITE LOVELY.

THE ANGELS ARE THE ONES MOST INTERESTED-- GO FIGURE.

OOOH, THAT'S REALLY COOL!

HA HA!

GOOD POINT.

OH.

OF COURSE, I'LL NEED TO TAKE THE ELEVATOR UP AND DOWN, BUT THAT'S ALL RIGHT...

AND I CAN TAKE OUT A SINGLE ROOM ON A LOWER FLOOR UNDER A DIFFERENT NAME.

...

THAT'S RIGHT. YOU'LL JUST HAVE TO WAIT FOR A BIT ON THOSE...

IF WE NEED TO, I CAN BE YOUR SET OF WINGS, SAKI.

THERE'S A VERY SIMPLE WAY FOR SAKI TO GAIN WINGS.

I THINK YOU'RE ALL FORGETTING ONE THING.

FWUP

THERE IS?

HUH?

I JUST HAVE TO BECOME A FIRST-RANK ANGEL.

SWIT

NG

OOOH!

REVEL, A FIRST-RANK ANGEL? THERE'S AN IDEA...

YES YES YES! THAT'S BRIL-LIANT, REVEL!

WHAT MUST I DO TO REACH FIRST-RANK STATUS?!

IS THAT POSSIBLE?

I AM SWALLOWING MY PRIDE TO ASK THIS...

BARET.

FWUF

REVEL...

I NEVER THOUGHT I'D SEE HAUGHTY REVEL ASK FOR HELP...

SO I COULD DO IT BY GAINING MORE KNOWLEDGE THAN YOU, BARET?

...

THERE IS NO OFFICIAL PROTOCOL OR TEST FOR ANGEL PROMOTION.

ANY ANGEL WHO DISTINGUISHES THEMSELF IN SOME WAY NATURALLY RISES.

...

I SUSPECT SO, IN THAT CASE.

HUH?

REALLY?

SPECIAL RANK!

THAT IS NOT A PROBLEM.

I HAVE ALREADY BEEN DOWNGRADED FROM SPECIAL RANK TO FIRST RANK. IT IS ACTUALLY MORE REALISTIC THAT REVEL COULD SHOOT FROM SECOND RANK UP TO SPECIAL RANK.

BUT THEN YOU'LL NO LONGER BE THE ANGEL OF KNOWL-EDGE...

YEAH, BE SPECIAL RANK LIKE ME! THEN YOU CAN HAVE WHITE ARROWS TOO!

I'LL DO IT!

SAKI TOO...?

SPECIAL RANK...

AH HA HA!

...

YEAAAH!

YOU CAN DO IT, REVEL!

SOME SAY IT COMES DOWN TO GOD'S WHIM.

BUT THERE'S NO HARD RULE. I CANNOT GUARANTEE IT WITH CERTAINTY.

onth's Picks>Listing Details

BY AREA! OUR TOP PIC

ou the best listings for the area where you v

tee we've got several properties that suit yo

Enlarge

ve top-floor listing has
en! Bask in your own
h this chapel, all for

AS FOR THE PENTHOUSE, I THINK WE OUGHT TO BUY IT.

ONE OF YOU WILL NEED TO PUT TOGETHER THE FUNDS FOR THAT.

I CAN'T USE MY RED ARROWS FOR SOME TIME.

NOW THAT WE'RE ALL ON THE SAME PAGE AND MOTIVATED, LET'S GET BACK ON TOPIC.

THERE.

I'LL DO IT.

...

THERE ARE PEOPLE OUT THERE WORTH TRILLIONS OF YEN. THEY OUGHT TO SHARE SOME OF THAT WEALTH TO HELP THE IMPOVERISHED, AND EVEN MORE SO IF IT'S FOR THE SAKE OF PEACE IN OUR FUTURE...

HUH? ARE YOU SURE, SAKI?

AHA-HA!

ER, YEAH.

REALLY?!

AND WE'LL BE ABLE TO TEST OUT YOUR SUIT SOON, HANAKAGO.

IF YOU WEAR IT WHEN YOU GO "FUND-RAISING," IT SHOULD PREVENT ANY TROUBLE FROM FOLLOWING US.

YOU'LL BE MY WINGS WHEN IT COMES TO THAT, RIGHT?

THIS GUY NEVER EVEN TRIED TO USE HIS ARROWS.

OR PERHAPS HE *COULDN'T.*

SSHH---

AND...

UNLIKE WITH THE REDS, YOU *CAN'T* ACTUALLY RUN OUT OF WHITE ARROWS BECAUSE THEY WORK INSTANTLY. SO HE HAS TO HAVE A FIRST-RANK ANGEL.

HE COULD HAVE KILLED ME WITH WHITE, BUT HE TRIED TO TAKE ME ALIVE WITH RED.

...THE IDIOT WHO RUSHED IN IS SPECIAL RANK.

THANK YOU, SAKURA TV.

WITH THIS MUCH FOOTAGE, OUR COMPANY'S TECH ALONE CAN PERFORM QUITE A LOT OF ANALYSIS.

...

WE'VE GOT ALL THESE SETS OF RED ARROWS.

I'M GOING TO FIND THEM.

KWI I

SO... WHAT NOW?

W-WHAT...

...ARE YOU DOING...?

PRI VAT E
VE STIG ATO

SWING...

SO MY WAY OF SPEAKING MAY BE... ODD...

I HAVE BARELY SPOKEN... TO A PERSON... IN MANY YEARS...

AH...

I... I ALSO HAVE GAINED... A M-MASAMUNE KATANA...

TH-THIS IS... A TREASURED NAGAMITSU BLADE...

?

?

I... I CANNOT HIDE... MY SURPRISE ...

AND Y-YET... I MUST ADMIT...

I WAS GOING TO USE MY RED ARROW ON YOU FOR MY OWN PURPOSES. HOWEVER...

...YOU HAVE ALREADY... BEEN PIERCED...

?

ARROW ...?

I...I DON'T UNDERSTAND... WHAT YOU'RE SAYING! BESIDES, I HAVE CLIENT CONFIDENTIALITY...

I...

I WOULD LIKE TO KNOW... WHO IT WAS WHO P-PIERCED YOU... ALREADY ...

HA HA!

THIS ...

THIS IS... FUNNY.

HA HA.

HA HA.

MWOOP

OOHG!

I'LL TELL YOU ANYTHING YOU WANT TO KNOW ...

A-ALL RIGHT, BUDDY ...

PLIP

PLIP

PLIP

LOST

J-JUST "GO TO JINBO STADIUM," THAT'S ALL THEY SAID...

THAT'S ALL I KNOW!

I DIDN'T EVEN GET A NAME ...

...

HOW-EVER... YOU WOULD HAVE A MEANS ...

...OF C-C-CON-TACT, YES?

OH?

SHING

YAY, PAPA'S BACK!

KCHAK

I'M HOME.

BRRR

RRR

RRRM

六階堂

MUKAID

CREAK

TU

NK

HERE'S SOME WATER.

NO, YOU ARE!

YOU'RE SO CONSID-ERATE, NANAKA.

YOU NEED TO TAKE YOUR MEDICINE, RIGHT?

OOH!

YEAH! YOU'RE ALREADY MAKING MY THIRD PIANO RECITAL OUTFIT!

I AM?

BUT...

I KNOW. THANKS, PAPA.

AH, RIGHT. IT'S ALMOST READY. YOU'LL LIKE IT.

...IT'S TOO EARLY TO MAKE ME A WEDDING DRESS.

BLOFT

...

YOU... YOU SAW THAT?

...

...SO I WENT INTO THE ROOM AND SAW IT.

YEAH. I WANTED TO SEE MY RECITAL DRESS ...

...SO YOU SHOULD AT LEAST WAIT UNTIL I GET TO MIDDLE SCHOOL TO MAKE IT.

I MIGHT BE BIGGER OR SMALLER WHEN I GROW UP...

?

TUNK

I GUESS I JUST HAVE TO GROW INTO THE RIGHT SIZE FOR IT.

OH, SILLY PAPA.

I'LL BE THE PERFECT BRIDE FOR PAPA'S DRESS.

I JUST WANT TO SEE YOU ALL GROWN-UP AND WEARING YOUR WEDDING DRESS SO BAD...

I GOT A LITTLE CARRIED AWAY...

YEAH... YOU'RE RIGHT. PAPA'S BEING A BIG DUMMY...

YES, PAPA!

GO ON, TIME FOR BED.

...

MMF...

WHAT?

NANA-KA.

TEP TEP

ARE YOU GOING TO BE A GOOD BIG SISTER TO THE NEW BABY WHEN IT COMES?

YES... I'LL BE THE BEST BIG SISTER EVER!

GOOD NIGHT!

SUU

EE

ZE

TMP TMP

TMP

I'D BETTER TURN IN TOO...

GOOD NIGHT.

THUMP

CLICK

...

URGH...

FSH...

GAH...

AAAH...

DAMN IT...

WOW, IT'S HUGE!

THIS IS PRETTY NICE.

HA HA!

I CAN FLY AS MUCH AS I WANT IN HERE!

OH, THAT REMINDS ME...

THIS PLACE GOT A NAME FOR ITSELF A FEW YEARS AGO AS THE *CHAPEL AMONG THE CLOUDS.*

BUT DUE TO THE OWNER'S PERSONAL ISSUES, IT HAD TO BE SOLD OFF IN THE MIDDLE OF RENOVATION.

MAY I TRY IT ON?

OF COURSE.

I'VE FINISHED UP *YOUR* SUIT, HANAKAGO.

WOW, REALLY?!

HUH? WHERE'S MIRAI?

CHIRP

CHIP CHIP

...

UMM.

I SUPPOSE THIS ROOM WILL DO...

CLK

WHAT IS THIS...?

FWUF

FWUF

THUMP

CHIP CHIP

WHSH

WHSH

OHH...

JUST THINKING, THIS REMINDS ME OF THE PARK I USED TO VISIT WITH MY FAMILY...

WHATCHA SPACIN' OUT FOR?

NOTH-ING...

THEY'RE CELESTIAL TOMES.

WHAT'RE THESE, REVEL?

OH! SAKI!

EACH DROP CONTAINS MORE INFORMATION THAN A THOUSAND BOOKS IN THE MORTAL REALM.

THEY CONTAIN THE MEMORIES OF ALL GODS AND ANGELS FROM THE GENESIS OF THE HEAVENS UNTIL NOW.

BUT I *HAVE* TO. WE NEED TO GET YOU THOSE WINGS AS SOON AS POSSIBLE, SAKI.

WELL, DON'T OVERDO IT.

A-ALL OF THESE...? WOW...

I'VE GOT TO MEMORIZE ALL OF THESE IF I WANT TO BE THE ANGEL OF KNOWLEDGE...

...

!

SORRY TO INTRUDE. I WAS LOOKING FOR A ROOM I COULD USE TO CHANGE INTO MY SUIT.

THANK YOU...

YOU CAN THANK ME ONCE YOU GET YOUR WINGS.

WAIT.

I WAS JUST ABOUT TO TAKE A LITTLE BREAK.

SO... I CAN ASSESS YOUR SUIT... IF YOU WANT...

WELL... HERE IT IS...

I AGREE.

WE CAN PUT THIS PLACE TO USE IMMEDIATELY.

HOW DO I LOOK?

...

I AGREE.

IT'S SO *CUTE!!*

NO WAY...

THE TAIL.

THE EARS!

N-NO!

IS THAT WHAT YOU'RE INTO?!

THE FIT IS PERFECT.

AHA.

...!

FOLD IT DOWN, AND YOU'VE GOT A FACE-COVERING, GOGGLE-STYLE WEARABLE COMPUTER.

!

TWEEEE---

THIS IS A STEALTH-SHIELD MODEL OF HEADGEAR.

PSHT

SEE THAT? IT WORKS BY FOLLOWING YOUR EYE MOVEMENT.

BEEP

VROOOO

...

NOTHING SHADY WHAT-SOEVER.

BAM

EVERY ELEMENT OF THIS SUIT IS THE PRODUCT OF LOGICAL, RATIONAL DESIGN.

TWEEE---

I'LL DO MY BEST!

THANK YOU SO MUCH, MR. MUKAIDO.

IT SEEMS NICE!

KWIK

...

Wow, Saki...

OOOH!

WHAT?!

YES. YES?

IT'S FROM A DETECTIVE UNDER MY ARROW CONTROL.

MMMM...

!

WE'RE GOING TO THE HOSPI-TAL.

INTO YOUR SUIT, KAKE-HASHI!

BEEP

SUDDEN, UNEXPLAINED HEART FAILURE. NO EXTERNAL WOUNDS. SIGNS THAT HE HAD JUST TREATED A PATIENT.

ZIIIP

THE NIGHT OF THE TOWER EXPLOSION, A SURGEON IN WARD EIGHT DIED.

HANA-KAGO'S SUSPICION WAS CORRECT.

KCHAK

EVEN THOUGH HE SAID HE WOULDN'T KILL ANY NONCANDI-DATES?!

FLIP

JUST GOES TO SHOW YOU CANNOT TRUST A THING HE SAYS!

TUG

IT WAS A SMALL CLINIC, BUT THE SECURITY CAMERA FOOTAGE AROUND THE ENTRANCE WAS COMPLETELY ERASED.

YOU READY?

YEAH.

CLIK

SAKI...!!

...

FEY

!

K

NO, WAIT...

...

A RED ARROW?!

SAKI!

IT'S ALL RIGHT.

NO.

IT'S ONE OF MY ARROWS. I CAN SENSE IT.

SHH

IF ANY OF MY ARROWS COME BACK TO ME, THAT MEANS...

ONE OF THE 14 YOU PIERCED WITH IT HAS DIED.

THAT'S CORRECT.

IN OTHER WORDS ...

NO! MORE IMPOR-TANT THAN THAT!

!

NOW YOU CAN USE THAT ARROW AGAIN.

COME WITH ME, KAKEHASHI! WE CAN WORRY ABOUT THE DOCTOR LATER!

KWIK

BEEP

BEEP

AYA

Facetel

BARET! NASSE!

COME AND SPOT US, LIKE USUAL!

METRO-POLIMAN?!

DAMN! MY WIFE'S NOT PICKING UP!

IF ONE OF MY ARROWED DETECTIVES HAS BEEN KILLED, THEN...

RRR

RRR

YES! IT'S POSSIBLE HE'S FOUND MY IDENTITY!

OKAY!

SORRY ABOUT THIS-- WE'VE GOT TO RUSH TO MY HOME AT TOP SPEED!

POW

I HAVE TO DO WHATEVER I CAN TO GET SAKI WINGS...

...

WHO IS THAT?! JUST SOME GUY?

MR. MUKAI-DO!

!

OKAY!

KAKE-HASHI, TAKE CARE OF HIM!

BARET, NASSE, COVER US!

FW UP

DAMN IT!

KSSH

AYA, NANA-KA!

AYA!

NA-NA-KA!

WH AM

KILLING

OSH

!

WH

GA

エルルゥ…

エルルゥ…

AA…AAH…

AAAAAH::

Y-YOU TOO... ARE... ARE...

...A GOD CANDI-DATE?

VERY STRANGELY ... DRESSED ...

V-VERY FUNNY... HA HA... HA HA!

CHK

SHING

HA HA!

HA HA!

SH

TING!

HIK

...

YOU DID IT, MIRAI!

YOU DID IT...

WINGS!

WAY TO GO!!

YOU USED A RED ARROW! WITHOUT HESITATION!

#14 The Man in the Mirror

HAJIME SOKOTANI WAS BORN POOR AND UGLY.

GOOD GOD, IT HURTS TO LOOK AT YOU!

EW! LOOK AT THAT KID'S FACE!

REALLY? CAN'T AFFORD TEXTBOOKS? SAD!

HE HASN'T PAID FOR HIS SCHOOL LUNCHES.

I HEARD HIS UGLY MOM ACTUALLY WORKS IN A BROTHEL.

I WISH I'D NEVER GIVEN BIRTH TO YOU.

AS HE GREW, HIS POVERTY AND UGLINESS ONLY INTENSIFIED.

SHH

THIS PATTERN HIT ITS PEAK DURING PUBERTY.

...

...

SPLISH

SPLISH

KTONK

…

FW UMP

HEE!

HEE!

WUMF

WUMF

WOBL...

HA HA...

HYA HA HA HA HA!

HYA HA!

HA HA!

KI

I

I

FWMF

AHA HA HA!

(I CAN'T DO THIS!)

GUEH!

(I WANNA DIE!)

AAUGH!

(I CAN'T GO ON!)

I AM BALTA.

FIRST-RANK ANGEL, AT YOUR SERVICE.

IF YOU BECOME GOD... OR EVEN JUST A GOD CANDIDATE, INTERESTING THINGS WILL HAPPEN.

THAT'S WHAT MY INSTINCTS TELL ME.

WELL?

...

I W-WANTED ...

...TO TALK... TO A... G-GIRL ...

J-J-JUST ONCE ...

SURE. THIS WILL HELP YOU DO THAT.

KWIN

APPEARANCE AND WEALTH CAN HAVE A HUGE INFLUENCE ON ONE'S LIFE...

THAT'S HOW THIS WORLD WORKS... FEEL LIKE CHANGING THAT?

DO WE HAVE A DEAL?

DOING

DONG

DOING

KILL

!

SHAKE

SHAKE

SCIENCE ROOM

UM UM

UH... UH...

W- WELL, I...

...I'VE ALWAYS BEEN... W- WATCHING YOU...

C-CAN I... HOLD YOUR HAND?

YES.

UH...

UMM ...

C- CAN I...

...K... KI...

HEE!

...KISS YOU ...?

HEE!

!

MM-M!

MMM!

MWUH!

!

HUFF!

HUFF!

AAA-
AAAUGH!

AAAH
...

AH...
AAAH!

KTMP

AAA
AA-
AU
UGH!

AA
AA
!!

AAAUGHH!!

I...
I SAW US K-KISSING... IN THE CLASSROOM MIRROR... AND I F-FELT SICK...

TH... THERE'S NO WAY... I COULD REALLY BE WITH A G-GIRL...

WHAT'S WRONG? YOU USED THE RED ARROW ON THE GIRL YOU LIKED, DIDN'T YOU?

...

...

YOU'RE FULL OF SELF-LOATHING.

W-WOW... YOU *DO* HAVE GOOD INSTINCTS.

THAT WASN'T INSTINCT-- IT'S JUST OBVIOUS.

TWO WEEKS LATER

OPOLIMAN
NOUNCEMENT

OR TECHNICALLY, THE HERO THAT WEARS THE METRO-POLIMAN SUIT.

GOOD EVENING. I AM METRO-POLIMAN.

THAT GOD CANDIDATE HAS MADE HIMSELF A SUPERHERO ...

...

I WILL FIGHT AGAINST EVIL FOR THE SAKE OF PEACE.

WHAT DO YOU THINK?

...

THAT'S SO COOL ...

SHVR

SHVR

TH...

SHVR

SHVR

HEH!

YOU REALLY *ARE* INTER-ESTING!

METROPOLIMAN

LIVE

I WILL NOT SKULK AND HIDE.

HE... HE'S SO HEROIC ...

COME AFTER ME AT ANY TIME!

H-HE CAN TALK WITHOUT STUT-TERING, RIGHT INTO THE CAMERA ...

U-UNLIKE ME... HE'S O-OVER-FLOWING WITH CONFIDENCE...

I SUSPECT THAT THIS MAN...

THAT'S UNDER-STANDABLE. HE'S TOTALLY UNLIKE YOU.

YOU ADMIRE HIM, DON'T YOU?

...IS BLESSED WITH PLENTIFUL WEALTH AND FRIENDS, HAS NEVER WANTED FOR ANYTHING IN HIS LIFE AND IS ATTRACTIVE AND POPULAR WITH WOMEN.

...

A-ATTRAC-TIVE...

P...P-POPULAR ...

POH!

...

I...

I CAN BE...

THAT'S JUST WHAT MY INSTINCTS SAY.

AND THEY TEND TO BE CORRECT.

I... I WANT TO BE ATTRAC-TIVE TOO!

I'LL USE AN ARROW ON A G-GOOD PLASTIC SUR-GEON!

TH-THAT'S THE BEST WAY... TO BE POPULAR ...

BE A COOL RICH GUY ...

I'LL... I'LL STEAL MONEY.

#1 COSMETIC SURGEON

NIP THE BAGGY EYELIDS AND MAKE THE EYE FOLDS PARALLEL.

WE'LL FINE-TUNE THE PROFILE BY SHAVING THE CHEEK AND CHINBONES.

THEN TRIM BACK THE BASE OF THE NOSTRILS AND STRAIGHTEN THE BRIDGE...

...

THE PLACE... JINBO STADIUM.

LET THE 12 OF US MEET AND TALK THINGS OUT!!

I SEEK A PEACEFUL RESOLU-TION.

RTTL

RTTL

NOT UNTIL I CAN BE POPULAR ... WITHOUT RED ARROWS ...

N-NOT YET ...

SHVR

SHVR

I'M AMAZED AT THE POWER OF HUMAN TECHNOLOGY.

DONE YET?

I C-CAN'T WAIT TO SEE HIM ON TV AGAIN...

...T-TOMOR-ROW...

WELL, AT LEAST YOU'RE BEING SENSI-BLE.

BUT HE'LL KILL ME IF HE LEARNS I'M A CANDIDATE.

I... I WANT TO MEET HIM.

HFF

HFF

CLANK

I AWAIT YOU THERE.

METROPOLIMAN LIVE ANNOUNCEMENT LIVE

OH! OHHH! AND HE JUST... SLAUGH-TERED THAT LITTLE GIRL!

L- LOOK! STAGE TWO!!

HE KILLED YELLOW WITH A WHITE ARROW ...

F- FANTAS-TIC!

M- MAD RES-PECT!

A... AMAZING ...!

IF WE WANT TO KNOW, GOING TO THE POLICE MIGHT BE THE QUICKEST ROUTE.

P-POLICE?

WELL, HE'S COMMITTED MURDER, AFTER ALL.

INDEED. IT'S WHY HE DRESSES THAT WAY.

W-WE STILL DON'T KNOW WHO M-MISTER POLIMAN IS YET... RIGHT?

FLASH BACK

COSMETIC SURGERY

NOW LET'S TAKE THESE BANDAGES OFF.

EVERY-THING LOOKS GOOD.

…
♡

MRMR

MRMR

TH...
THIS
IS...

...
ME
...?

WOW
...

HUH
...?

B-BMP

SH-
SHE'S
MY
TYPE
...!

...

I-
I'VE
NEVER
TRIED
...

...W-
WHAT'S IT
CALLED?
"HITTING
ON" A
GIRL...?

M-
MAYBE
I'LL
TEST
THINGS
OUT ON
HER
FIRST...

R-
REMEMBER...
I'M NOT
LIKE...
THE O-
OLD ME...

I'M
ATTRACTIVE
NOW...

WELL,
HERE
GOES
...

O-OH NO!
SHE'S
LEAVING!

SK

!

...PULL THIS OFF?

C-CAN I...

YES?

...

B-BMP

B-BMP

?!

"HIZE"?

MWWUp

H...
H-
HIZE...
(HI!)

TEP TEP TEP

CREEP!

WHAT? THIGHS ?!

ER...
I M-
MEAN,
YOU HAVE
N-NICE
HEYES...
Y-YOU
KNOW,
LIKE...

...

DASH

AAAUGH!

AUGH!

HUH?

GRP

...

GYURP

GYURP

...

HUFF!

HUFF!

IT... IT... IT'S NOT WORKING!

M-MY SURGERY WON'T HELP...

...IF I'VE N-NEVER EVEN *TALKED* TO A G-GIRL BEFORE ...

WHOA, OH MY GOD... WHAT A STUD!

IS SOMETHING WRONG?

BROOKLYN METS

FEELING SICK?

...

...

I'M TALKIN' RIGHT UP MY ALLEY...

DAMN, YOU ARE FINE.

...

WELL?

TWIK

YOU INTO CLUBBING? I KNOW A GOOD PLACE.

SAY, YOU WANNA GO CHILL SOME-WHERE?

I SEE. SO IT'S A PROBLEM OF COMMUNICATION SKILLS NOW.

ZOO

HELLO?

WHAT WAS THAT?

HUH?

SHB

OK!

I'M SO HAND-SOME NOW...

...BUT I STILL CAN'T TALK TO GIRLS.

OK

HEY, DON'T SWEAT IT. THAT'S WHAT THE RED ARROWS ARE FOR.

I SHOULD FIX MY EYEBROWS TOO...

ARE... ARE MY LIPS STILL FUNNY-LOOKING ...?

BEEP

FWAP

NEWS UPDATE?

PLINK

OH!

METROPOLIMAN NEWS
METROPOLIMAN IN BATTLE ABOVE GRAND TOWER

MISTER POLI-MAN'S IN BATTLE!

AT TOWER

AWE-SOME!

W-WHAT'S ALL THIS...?

OH!

I C-CAN'T WAIT!

I... I GET TO SEE HIM KILL MORE GOD CANDI-DATES!

TRYING TO PIERCE HIM...

DAMN YOU!

WH-WHO'S THAT ...?

H-HANG IN THERE, MISTER POLIMAN!

D-DAMN! NOT AGAIN!

THERE! LEFT! RIGHT!

GET 'EM, MISTER POLIMAN!

MiS...

BLAM

BLAM

METRO-POLIMAN IS GONE!

HE FLEW OFF TO ESCAPE. I ASSUME HE'S FINE.

HE'S SIMPLY VANISHED!

IS... IS HE ALL R-RIGHT?

TH... THEY SHOT HIM...

GRAK

SHVP

T-TWO OF THEM!

H-HOW DARE THEY D-DEFY MISTER POLIMAN ...

SHVP

SHVP

MTTR

MISTER POLI-MAN ...

MISTER POLI-MAN ...

MTTR

?

HRRNG

PROTECT?

I WILL G-GUARD MISTER POLIMAN... BE HIS S-SERVANT...

SERVANTooo

AHHH...

I MUST PROTECT HIM.

MISTER POLIMAN ...

HOWEVER, MY INSTINCT TELLS ME THAT IF HE BECOMES GOD, IT WILL BE AKIN TO THE EXTINCTION OF HUMANITY.

THAT'S WHAT I'VE ALWAYS SAID ...

THAT'S FINE ...

I D-DON'T CARE ABOUT THIS STUPID WORLD...

LET IT ALL GO TO HELL...

YOU REALIZE THAT HE'S TRYING TO KILL ALL THE CANDIDATES. IT'S DANGEROUS TO APPROACH HIM.

I-I KNOW... BUT... THERE M-MUST BE A WAY...

...THE WORLD HE CREATES ...

I'VE DECIDED... I WANT TO SEE...

HAH!
HAH!
I NEED... A W- WEAPON...
I- I SHOULD BE MORE... SUPERHERO-LIKE...
R-RIGHT NOW... I'M LESS INTERESTED IN GIRLS...
HEY, YOU'RE PRACTI- CALLY WEARING A MASK ALREADY.
A HEROIC ONE...
...THAN I AM IN GETTING CLOSER TO MISTER POLIMAN...
RANGER SWORD!
HAH!
SCTL
IF I G- GET TO WORK WITH HIM... I'LL N- NATURALLY BECOME P- POPULAR...
...
LIKE ...
A K- KA...
SCTL
KATANA ...

...FROM THAT P-POLICE-MAN I USED A RED ARROW ON...

AT LAST, I'VE G-GOT THE CRIME SCENE REPORT OF THE G-GRAND TOWER INCIDENT...

SCTTL SCTTL

THREE DAYS LATER

IT'S HERE!

調査報告書

YES, IT'S COMPLEX, BUT YOU OUGHT TO READ IT.

S-SO MANY WORDS ...

BIG WORDS ...

BROKEN MASK AUGMENTED FOR BULLET PROTECTION, JOSO TECHNOLOGY PATENT NO. 5X26XX...

BLOOD TYPE B-NEGATIVE, DNA SAMPLE ACQUIRED, THREE TYPES OF SUITS CONFIRMED, 26 CM BOOTS...

一、グランタワー事件、事故の調査について

グランタワー最上部への死体遺棄、発砲、爆発事故

複数名（以下、対象者）によって起こった事件及び事

なお本報告書は、与えられた時間及び条件のもとにお 分

を行った結果をまとめたものであるが、今後の調査におい 実等が に場合には、

の結論等が変わる可能性がある。

二、本件事故概要

（イ）グランタワー最上部への死体遺棄インターネットへの投稿により、グランタワー最上部への調査に向かった警察署員によって女性1名の遺体を確認、回収。

（ロ）本件事故の対象者について

女性の遺体発見時、グランタワー最上部にて女性1名を確認。その後、特殊なスーツを着用した3名を確認。本項目及び（イ）について、移動手段、最上部への死体遺棄及び侵入方法は一切不明である。

（ハ）爆発について

グランタワー内部に仕掛けられたと思われる爆発物により、爆発が発生。その影響によりグランタワー上部が数十メートルにわたり激しく損傷、崩れ落ちた

運動能力の測定と解析及び燃料消費率の算定

補足事項

本件事故後に行われた現場検

後日実施した現場検証の際に

SHOW

THIS W-WILL HAVE TO WAIT...

A-AT ANY RATE, I'VE GOT MORE COSMETIC SURGERY...

KSHUNK

TH-THAT'S ONLY BECAUSE YOU L-LIKE ME ALREADY... I N-NEED MORE...

I DON'T KNOW, DO YOU REALLY NEED MORE WORK? YOU'RE CERTAINLY DAZZLING ENOUGH AS IT IS.

4F COSMETIC SURGER

OOH, YOU'RE SO SASSY FOR A TEENAGER.

I-I'M AT AN AGE W-WHERE I'M CONCERNED ABOUT MY APPEARANCE.

IN FACT, TWO YEARS AGO WE HAD A VISIT FROM THE SON OF JOSO INDUSTRIES...

WELL, LOTS OF PARENTS SHELL OUT FOR THEIR CHILDREN'S SAKE.

OH.

...

JOSO INDUSTRIES?

...

I GUESS I SHOULD MENTION THAT HE PAID ME LOTS OF HUSH MONEY AND THREATENED TO KILL ME IF I TALKED...

...BUT I *REALLY* WANT TO SHARE ALL MY SECRETS WITH YOU.

TH-THEN... WHAT DID HE ...?

...AND HE KNEW IT TOO.

THE TRUTH IS, HE WAS ALREADY IMPOSSIBLY HANDSOME. HE DIDN'T NEED ANY WORK DONE...

WELL ...

ISN'T THAT ALARMING?

HE SAID, "I WANT TO KNOW HOW TO PRESERVE MY SISTER'S BODY SO PRISTINELY IT LOOKS LIKE SHE'S STILL ALIVE.

"TELL ME HOW."

MY, MY, HOW FASCINATING.

HIS DNA.

IF HE'S IN HIGH SCHOOL, IT'S BOUND TO BE THE JOSO ACADEMY THAT JOSO INDUSTRIES RUNS.

MY INSTINCTS ARE SAYING THAT WE SHOULD LOOK INTO THIS.

L-LOOK INTO WHAT ...?

JOSO ACADEMY

OH, HI!

MORN-ING.

SO YESTER-DAY...

DING—DONG

OH NO, I'M LATE!

KWI II

DING—DONG...

JOS

DING—DONG

!

D- DO YOU KNOW... THE BOY WHOSE F-FAMILY OWNS THIS SCHOOL ...?

NOD...

I... I'D LIKE A PIECE OF HIM... LIKE...

...A STRAND OF H- HAIR...

OH, YOU MEAN KANADE URYU. EVERY GIRL IN THE SCHOOL KNOWS HIM. BUT TO BE HONEST, I PREFER *YOU*...

FS

HH-HH

Received Messages

お知らせ
the
ere to view

利用ありが
確定しま...

DNA Match

I have attached the results of the precision test on the biological materials you provided, for your perusal. If possible, I would appreciate knowing where you acquired this sample, but given the volume of cells contained with

ages

DNA Matc

!

THE NEXT DAY

I D- DON'T KNOW WHAT HE LOOKS LIKE...

I NEED TO CONSIDER... MY NEXT STEP C- CAREFULLY ...

FWUP

LOOKS LIKE MY INSTINCTS WERE CORRECT.

K- KANADE... URYU... THAT SETTLES IT.

WHAT IS IT, NOGUCHI?

YES?

KANADE?

DING-DONG

DING-DONG

THE OTHER DAY, I SNUCK A STRAND OF YOUR HAIR OUT ON HIS ORDERS.

I AM UNDER THE RED-ARROW CONTROL OF HAJIME, A GOD CANDIDATE WHO WORSHIPS YOU.

PLEASE COME TO THE DANCE ROOM ALONE AFTER SCHOOL.

HAJIME WANTS TO WORK FOR YOU AS YOUR SERVANT.

SHH...

KWANG

GOOD-BYE.

SHWUU
KTING
IN THAT CASE...
SO IT'S TRUE...

DANCE ROOM ...

AFTER SCHOOL ...

SERVANT ..!

THERE'S STILL TIME.

FWUMP

IS SHE... DEAD?!

WAIT...

MRMR

G- GET HER TO THE NURSE'S OFFICE!

YOU OKAY?

UM... NOGUCHI?

OH MY GOD!

NO!

MRMP

AAAH!

...

ARE YOU KIDDING?! GET HER AN AMBULANCE!

SERIOUSLY, CALL THE HOSPITAL!

OH CRAP, MAN!

DING—DONG

DING—DONG

CLIK

KCHAK

...

A-ARE YOU... KANADE URYU?

OF C-C-COURSE NOT... RIGHT?

I HAVE USED A RED ARROW ON A STUDENT THAT OTHERS SAY LOOKS LIKE ME AND HAVE INSTRUCTED HIM TO REPEAT THE WORDS I'M SAYING THROUGH AN EARPIECE.

CORRECT. I WOULD NEVER BE FOOLISH ENOUGH TO SHOW UP MYSELF.

DO YOU HAVE A PHOTO OF MY FACE?

I AM WATCHING THE DANCE ROOM THROUGH A CAMERA FEED THAT WAS ALREADY INSTALLED.

DO YOU HAVE A PHOTO OF MY FACE?

N-NO... I'VE ONLY HEARD THAT Y-YOU'RE PERFECTLY HANDSOME ...

SO I EXPECTED... A M-MORE HANDSOME FACE...

OH! V-VERY SMART OF YOU...

AND YOU'RE NOT REALLY ON THE OTHER SIDE OF THAT MIRROR, ARE YOU, HAJIME?

AND YOU'RE NOT REALLY ON THE OTHER SIDE OF THAT MIRROR, ARE YOU, HAJIME?

17:05:29

IF YOU REALLY WANTED TO HIT ME WITH AN ARROW, YOU'D PUT UP AN EVEN THICKER ONE-SIDED MIRROR IN FRONT OF THE ACTUAL MIRROR, THEN HIT THE UNSUSPECTING VICTIM.

IT'S EASY ENOUGH TO DEDUCE.

COR-RECT?

THEN MY ONLY CHOICE WOULD BE TO EVADE CONTINUOUSLY WITH WINGS UNTIL SOMEONE OPENED THE DOOR-- IN THE WORST-CASE SCENARIO, THAT MIGHT BE TOMORROW, AND I'D BE WITHOUT FOOD AND WATER...

R-RIGHT ...

SO IF THE REAL ME SHOWED UP, YOU COULD JUST HOLD YOUR ARROW AT THE READY ON THE OTHER SIDE OF THE MIRROR AND THREATEN ME.

N-NO, NO THREATS. I J-JUST WANT TO BE YOUR SERVANT...

THAT'S R-REALLY ALL THERE IS TO IT...

SO WHAT WERE YOU GOING TO THREATEN ME INTO DOING?

...

ANYONE COULD COME UP WITH YOUR IDEA. IT'S NOT THE MOST CONVINCING PITCH FOR YOUR INTELLECT.

TO KILL SOMEONE WITH WINGS, TRAP THEM IN A BOX.

A ONE-SIDED MIRROR BOX IS THE IDEAL SCENARIO.

N-NO, I WAS JUST L-LUCKY... OR SH-SHOULD I SAY, MY ANGEL HAS VERY GOOD INSTINCTS ...

SO I MUST ADMIT THAT YOU'RE NOT A FOOL.

BUT... YOU DID SUCCEED IN FINDING ME.

INSTINCTS ...

THAT'S A FIRST-RANK ANGEL HE HAS.

BALTA, THE ANGEL OF INSTINCT.

...

IF HE'S MAKING HIMSELF USEFUL, SHOULD I GO AHEAD AND TAKE ADVANTAGE OF THAT?

AND HE'S BEING VERY CAREFUL, KNOWING THAT I WOULD KILL HIM IF WE MET IN PERSON.

WELL, HE SUCCEEDED IN FINDING ME...

SO YOU WANT TO WORK FOR ME WITHOUT MEETING ME?

IS THAT WHAT YOU'RE SAYING?

YES.

THIS SOUNDS SUSPICIOUSLY CONVENIENT FOR ME.

L-L-L... LIKE I SAID, I AM YOUR SER... SERVANT ...

!

IF... IF I TRAP THEM INSIDE ...?

CORRECT.

I... I'LL D-DO MY BEST!

HUFF

I... I WANT TO BE YOUR SER- VANT!

YOU HAVE TO FIGURE OUT HOW TO TRAP A GOD CANDIDATE INSIDE OF IT.

HERE'S AN IDEA. I'LL PROVIDE THE BOX.

IF YOU SUCCEED, I'LL MAKE YOU MY SERVANT.

THEN CONTACT ME AGAIN LATER.

I'LL PUT IT IN THE MIDDLE OF THE DESERT.

IT'LL CONTAIN A GPS THAT WILL ALERT ME IF YOU GET WITHIN TWO KILOMETERS OF ME.

LET'S SAY...

I'LL GIVE YOU A DEVICE FOR SAFE COMMUNI-CATION.

...IN THE DESERT!

ONCE I TELL YOU THE LOCATION, YOU'LL HAVE 30 MINUTES TO GET IT.

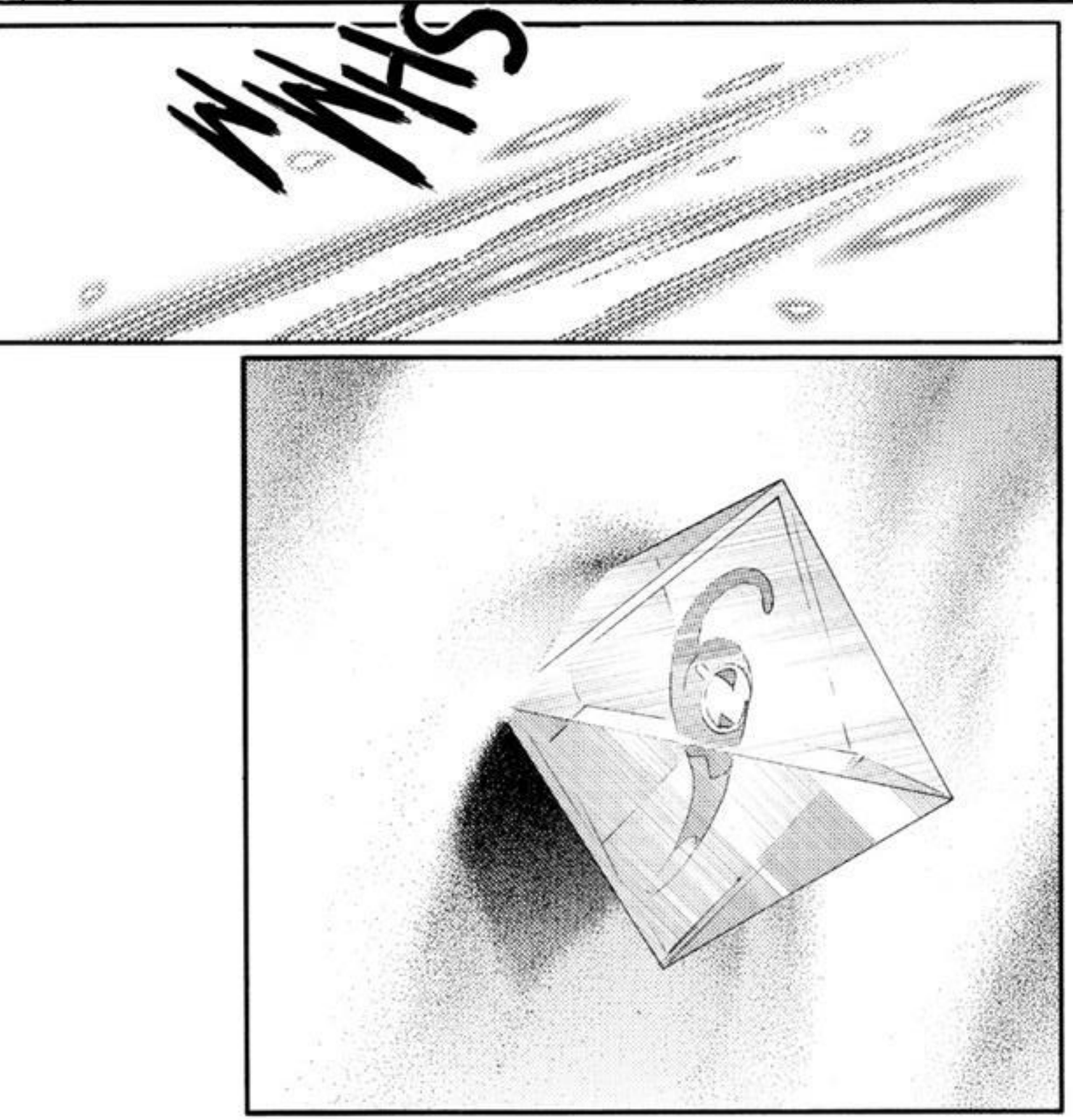
IT'LL TAKE LESS THAN FIVE MINUTES.

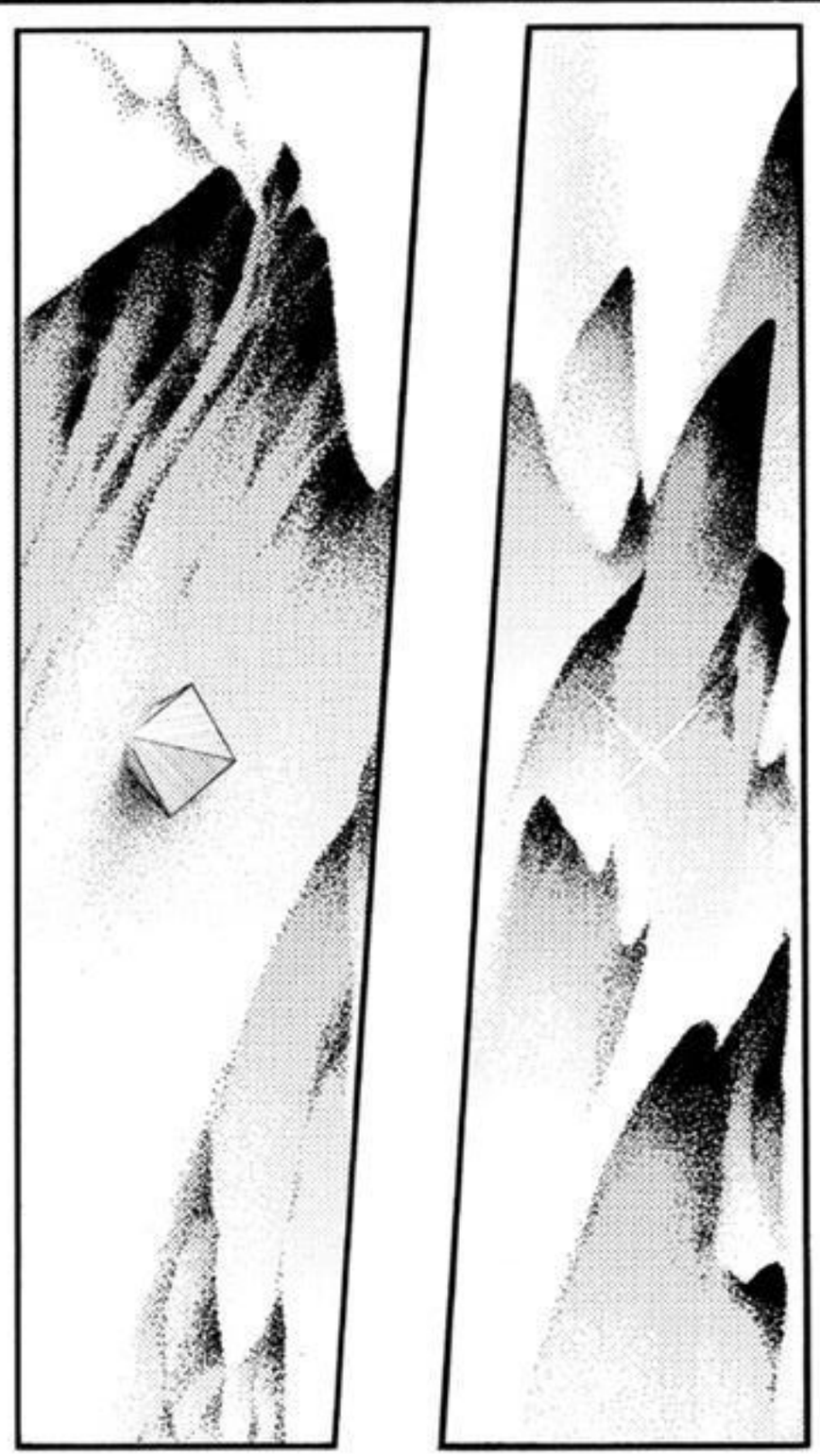
KCHAK

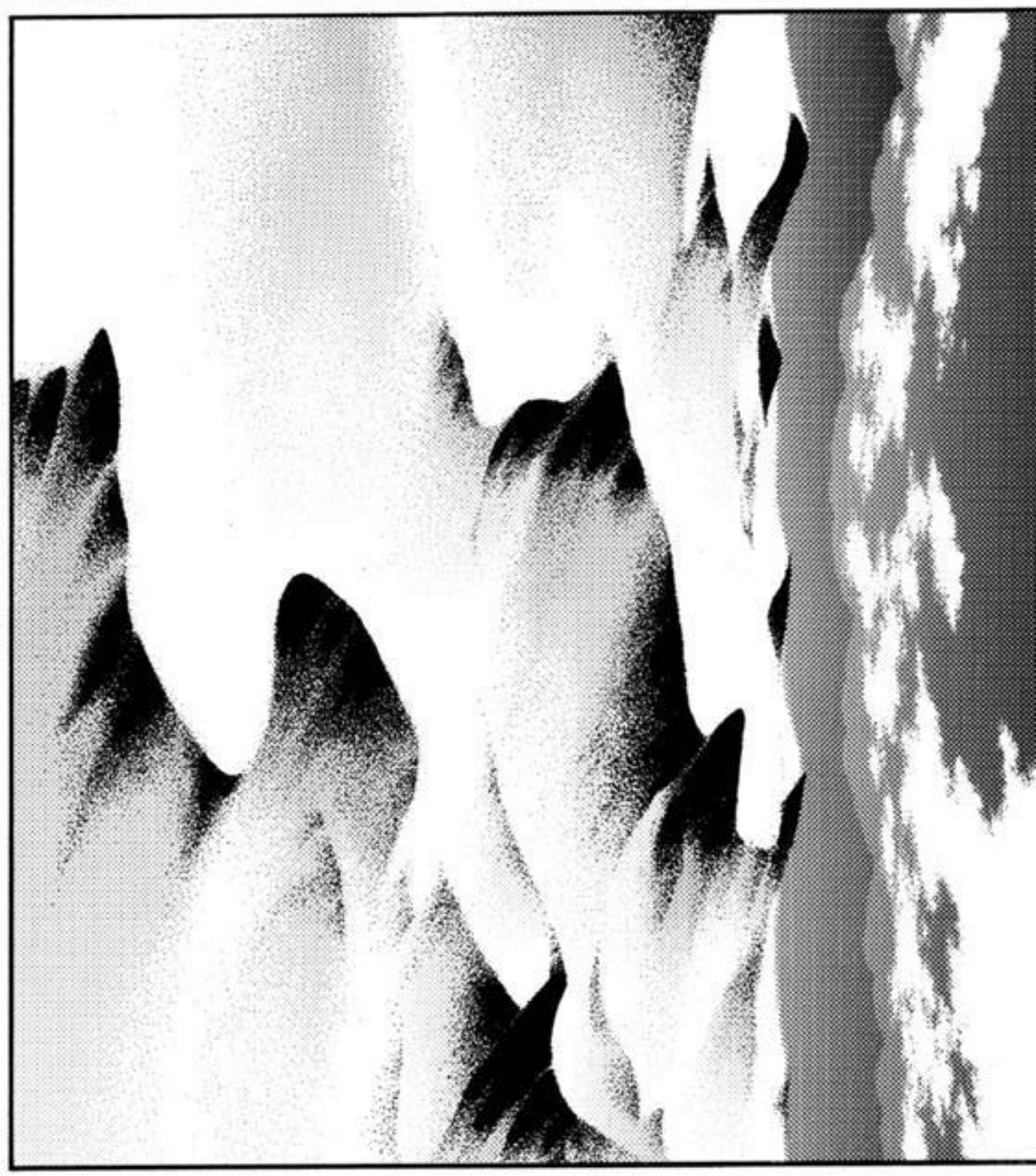
WAIT FOR ME TO GET BACK.

I'M GOING TO GO PUT IT THERE NOW.

THUMP


SHH





IS... IS THIS SAFE? WHAT IF IT'S A BOMB?

I D-DOUBT HE'S WATCHING FROM A DISTANCE ...

TOO BAD. I B-BROUGHT MY ANGEL ALONG TO EARN HIS T-TRUST...

FW

TING

GULP ...

KWUP

GOT IT!

CHK

I CAN USE THIS TO REPORT TO MISTER POLIMAN!

SKWM

...YOU SAY?

THE ANGEL OF INSTINCT ...

YES, THAT SETTLES IT.

HIS ANGEL IS BALTA.

SIGN: MINAMINO AMUSEMENT PARK

HWEH-HEH!

HWEH!

MIRROR HOUSE

ZSHH

GNYORP

GRNGG...

HRG

NEARLY THERE.

AND THEN I'LL BE HIS SERVANT ...

THE BAIT IS IN THE TRAP. NOW TO WAIT FOR THAT CANDIDATE...

SIGH

#15 The Doorway Lure

TING

THE WIFE AND DAUGHTER OF THE H-HATEFUL CANDIDATE N-NANATO MUKAIDO, WHO SH-SHOT... MISTER POLIMAN IN THE HEAD...

SHLIK

TING

M... MISTER POLIMAN, THE B-BAIT IS... IN THE TRAP...

SHLIK

TING

REALLY? EXCELLENT.

M-MAY I SAY... SOME-THING?

I'VE G-GOT MUKAIDO'S SMARTPHONE NUMBER TOO.

WHOOO

GOOD. YOU WORK FAST.

SH-SHALL I USE THAT RED ARROW ON THE M-MOTHER HERE?

I CUR-RENTLY HAVE 13 ARROWS IN USE, W-WITH ONE REMAINING.

Y-
YES...
OF
COURSE.

SAVE IT
FOR A GOD
CANDIDATE.

WITH
13 IN USE
ALREADY?
IS HE AN
IDIOT?

...

B-
BUT OF
COURSE
YOU
WOULD
THINK OF
THAT...

W-WHAT
A BOLD
SUGGES-
TION...

!

KWING

DO YOU
NEED ME
TO KILL ANY
OF THOSE 13
SO YOU CAN
GET THE
ARROW
BACK?

WHAT?

HMM?

B-BUT THEY'RE ALL...
OFFICERS, DETECTIVES,
S-SECURITY GUARDS,
S-SURGEONS...
TH-THEY HAVE LITTLE
CONNECTION TO GOD
CANDIDATES...

DO YOU FEEL HESITATION ABOUT KILLING TOO, HAJIME?

I WANT H-HUMANITY TO... CRUMBLE INTO RUIN...

NO...

!

THE ONE WHO CHARGED ME DIRECTLY AT GRAND TOWER...

VMM

YOU SAID... ME "TOO"?

M... MISTER POLIMAN ...

YES...

HE SHOULD HAVE A SPECIAL-RANK ANGEL, BUT HE WAS A COWARD WHO COULDN'T KILL, COULDN'T USE HIS WHITE ARROWS.

CAN I ACTUALLY MAKE USE OF THIS GUY?

HERE WE GO...

LET'S SEE HOW TRUSTWORTHY HE REALLY IS...

EVEN A CRAZY-LOOKING GUY WITH A KATANA WOULDN'T NORMALLY DESERVE A WHITE ARROW RIGHT OFF THE BAT.

TH-THE KNAVE...

HE T-TRIED TO USE A RED ARROW ON ME TOO...

HE... HE...

GRRR

GU

HAH!

G-GOOD POINT!

LET HIM GO INTO THE BOX AS YOU ARE... WITH JUST THE ONE RED ARROW.

I'M GOING TO TELL MUKAIDO THE LOCATION OF THE HOSTAGES.

HE WILL FLY THERE RIGHT AWAY, I'M SURE.

YES?

NOW, HAJIME ...

THAT'S RIGHT.

I'VE PREPARED THE BOX FOR YOU.

I HAVE TO H-HANDLE THEM ALONE ...?

B-BUT I THINK... HE WILL COME WITH THE COWARD AGAIN.

...

!

SMIRK

IF YOU CAN GET A GOD CANDIDATE IN THERE, I'LL MAKE YOU MY SERVANT.

WHAT DID I TELL YOU?

자기도

자기도

자기도

…자도

…

…

…

IT'LL BE ALL RIGHT, MR. MUKAI-DO.

...

...

I'M CERTAIN THAT THEY'RE SAFE.

IF THEY'RE MEANT TO BE HOSTAGES, YOUR WIFE AND DAUGHTER WON'T BE HARMED.

IN EXCHANGE, THEY'RE GOING TO WANT THE LIVES OF MR. MUKAIDO... AND ME...

HOSTAGES...

IF METROPOLIMAN'S INVOLVED IN THIS...

...THEN I CAN'T IMAGINE THAT HE'LL HESITATE TO ELIMINATE THE HOSTAGES ONCE. HE GETS WHAT HE WANTS...

...

WHIR

MR. MUKAI-DO!

PLEASE, TRY TO REMAIN REMAIN CALM!

...

...

THIS IS WHAT I HAVE TO DO TO *BE* CALM.

WHY DO YOU HURT AND BLAME YOURSELF?

HUH ...?

WHAT, BARET?

IF ANYONE IS WORTHY OF YOUR HATRED, IT IS ME.

YEAH, THAT'S TRUE.

IF YOU HADN'T GOTTEN INVOLVED, I WOULD HAVE JUST WASTED AWAY AND DIED ON MY OWN...

...

GRAK--

IF MY WIFE AND KIDS GET KILLED, I'LL HATE YOU...

I'LL WANT TO KILL WHOEVER WAS RESPONSIBLE-- HUMAN, ANGEL OR GOD...

IF I HADN'T MADE YOU A GOD CANDIDATE, THIS WOULD NEVER HAVE HAPPENED.

OH, RIGHT.

I THOUGHT I WAS DOING THIS FOR MY WIFE AND KIDS...

BUT I CHOSE TO TAKE THIS OFFER. I WENT ALONG WITH IT.

WHAT GOOD HAVE I DONE FOR THEM ...?

GOD CANDI-DATE? I'M A JOKE.

INSTEAD OF PROVIDING FOR THEM, I'VE PUT THEM IN DANGER...

AND LOOK AT ME NOW.

80%

Metropoli

Blocked Location

call

BEEP BEEP BEEP

BEEP BEEP BEEP

KEEP YOUR VOICE DOWN, OLD MAN...

THE OLD MINAMINO THEME PARK.

ONCE YOU'RE THERE, YOU'LL KNOW THE PLACE.

WHERE ARE THEY?!!

ASSUMING YOU'RE UP TO THE TASK ...

HURRY UP AND SAVE THEM.

BEEP

ZZZ

ME TOO!

YOU'LL JUST GET IN THE WAY!

STAY HERE!

WE'LL BE BACK SOON.

HANG ON, SAKI.

BUT... I HAVE MY SUIT NOW...

YOU CAN'T FIGHT WITHOUT WINGS!

WILL

I'LL GO WITH YOU!

HE'S BEEN STUDYING IN HIS ROOM THIS WHOLE TIME.

WHERE'S REVEL?

REVEL...

Spell 14

I CAN'T KEEP MY CONCEN-TRATION...

THERE'S JUST SO MUCH INFORMATION HERE...

I CAN'T DO IT...

...

!

REVE!

KUAK

WHAT DO YOU WANT?

I'M TRYING TO FOCUS RIGHT NOW!

KEEP AN EYE ON SAKI. MAKE SURE SHE DOESN'T TRY TO LEAVE.

HUH?

OKAY!

DS

THOU-SANDS, MILLIONS OF YEARS ...

AN INFINITE STREAM OF INFORMA-TION...

THE ENTIRE HISTORY OF THE HEAVENS ...

LET'S GO! NASSE, BARET, LIKE WE ALWAYS DO!

LEFT BEHIND AGAIN, HUH?

THEY MIGHT NOT RETURN.

HUH?

I'M ALWAYS SITTING BACK...

EVEN WHEN KAKEHASHI WAS ALL ALONE...

THE MUKAIDO FAMILY HAS BEEN TAKEN HOSTAGE.

THIS ISN'T LIKE AT THE TOWER.

I'VE NEVER BEEN A SOURCE OF STRENGTH TO ANYONE...

I WANT TO SAVOR THE JOY OF WORKING WITH YOU GUYS AND ACHIEVING OUR GOALS TOGETHER.

WITH MY OWN WINGS, I CAN COME TO YOUR AID...

...SHE'S GONE BACK TO LOOKING THE WAY SHE DID THAT FIRST DAY...

JUST WHEN I THOUGHT SAKI WAS FINALLY IN GOOD SPIRITS...

AT THIS RATE, THAT MIGHT NEVER ...

HANG ON, SAKI!

I HAVE TO DO THIS!

FWUP

I WANT TO HELP SAKI.

THIS IS NO GOOD!

SKWW

MIRROR HOUSE

MIRROR HOUSE

!

THAT MUST BE THEM!

FLIP

IT'S THAT GUY AGAIN!

FLOH!

MIRROR HOUSE

MY RED ARROWS WON'T WORK ON HIM.

HE WOULD BE DEAD IF HE WERE A CANDIDATE, SO HE MUST BE A NORMAL PERSON BEING USED...

SO HE IS CONNECTED TO METRO-POLIMAN!

THAT MEANS HE HAS TO BE CONTROLLED BY A RED ARROW.

MR. MUKAIDO, WHAT SHOULD WE--

!

WHAM

THEY'RE ALIVE!!

AYA! NANAKA!

MIRR

SHHP

!

WHAM

HANG ON! I'M COMING TO SAVE YOU!

WHAM

SHAK

HE'S IN!

...

SHAK

NO, DON'T GO IN THERE !!

MIRROR HOUSE

...

SHHP

TAK

TAK

KWUP

AYA-

NANAKA!

I D-DIDN'T THINK IT WOULD BE SO EASY...

TH-THESE HOSTAGES WORK SO WELL...!

HA HA HA HA!

YOU... YOU MAKE ME LAUGH!

FWOOSH

W-WHICH MEANS YOU'RE A SITTING DUCK INSIDE!

TH-THIS IS PERFECT... THE BEST POSSIBLE THEME PARK ATTRAC-TION F-FOR HUNTING GOD CANDI-DATES!

HILAR-IOUS!

THESE ARE M-MAGIC MIRRORS!

GO IN, AND YOU'LL NEVER FIND YOUR WAY OUT...

Y-Y-YOU CANNOT SEE OUTSIDE FROM WITHIN ...

WHAT...? WHAT IN THE WORLD ARE YOU TALKING ABOUT?

GRAB

ARE YOU IN LOVE WITH ANY MAN BE-SIDES ME?!

KOFF! KOFF!

RIP

ARE YOU ALL RIGHT?!

LOVE...? I DO, I LOVE YOU...

DO YOU LOVE ME?!

WH... WHAT?

MMF

GOOD! HE DIDN'T HIT YOU WITH AN ARROW!

L...

LOVE?

WHOOO

LOVE.

LOVE.

SH-
SHE
LOVES
...

...

...
HIM?

WHAT
iS...

...
LOVE
...?

H
HEY!

HUH? A WHITE ARROW ...?!

!

MIRAI'S USING A WHITE ARROW...?

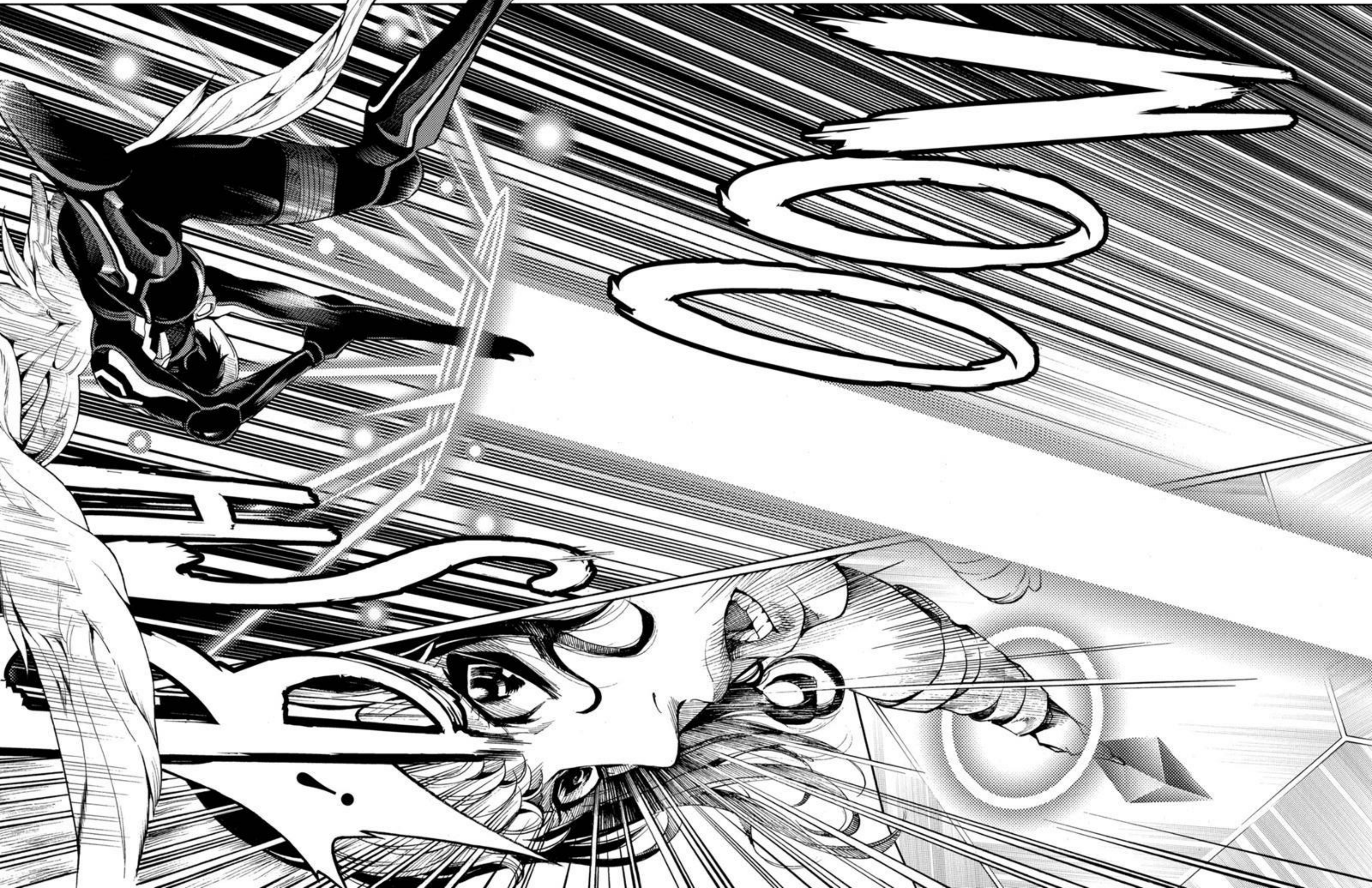
LET THEM OUT, OR I'LL SHOOT!

WHITE

I THOUGHT YOU W-WERE A COWARD WHO COULDN'T USE WHITE ...

WHO

HEH


KAIDO!

HEH!

...SO YOU'RE FINALLY AWAKE.

WAS...

THAT...

SHK

HE REALLY DID IT.

!

I SEE...
HE KNEW THAT BY SHOWING OFF THE WHITE ARROW, HE COULD FORCE THE OPPONENT TO EVADE...

EVEN IF IT WASN'T FOR REAL, HE STILL MANAGED TO SHOOT THE WHITE ARROW!

GOOD JOB!

THIS PLACE IS DANGER-OUS...

WE DON'T KNOW WHERE THE ENEMY COULD BE HIDING.

JUST BARELY!

MR. MUKAI-DO!

CAN YOU HEAR ME?

ZZ

ZSSSH

H

THERE'S NO WAY TO GUARANTEE SAFETY.

WE'RE AT A TOTAL DISADVANTAGE.

BRRT

CHK

BRRT

N-
NANATO...
WHERE'D
YOU GET
THOSE
GUNS?!

WHAT...
WHAT'S
GOING
ON?!

TING

TING

FIGURES
...

WH... WHAT'S HAPPENING TO US...?

I'M SORRY YOU HAD TO GET INVOLVED IN THIS...

PAPA ...

DAMN IT ALL...

AT THIS RATE, I'M WORTHLESS BOTH AS A FATHER AND AS A GOD CANDIDATE.

SMIRK

HAJIME...

KCHIK

IN TEN SECONDS, I WANT YOU TO APPEAR 20 METERS NORTH OF THE MIRROR HOUSE, 20 METERS IN THE AIR-- WITH YOUR ANGEL BEHIND YOU THIS TIME.

A- ALL RIGHT ...

14K

14K

KCHAK

IN THREE SEC- ONDS.

ALL RIGHT. I'M GOING TO SHOW YOU PROOF OF THAT.

G- GREAT!

14K

...

I DID AS YOU SAID AND GOT HIM IN THE BOX... MAKE ME YOUR SERVANT!

WHAT?

M... MISTER POLIMAN ...

DOOM

WHOOOO

MIRROR HOUSE

HEE!

HEE!

DOOM

AN AN-GEL!

DOOM

BEHIND YOU!

KWING

HE'S A FULL GOD CANDIDATE?

ZZRD

!

GRRGR

SPARRRRRRGGGH

FWUP

METRO-POLIMAN!

I AM B-BLESSED BY HIS PRESENCE ...

HEH HEH ...

TH-THERE HE IS... MISTER POLIMAN ...

AT THE VERY LEAST, WE CAN KILL MUKAIDO.

YOU LOST THE MOMENT THAT MUKAIDO WENT INSIDE.

FWUP

KWING

SHALL I DO IT NOW?!

HE'S A GOD CANDIDATE-- SO DOES THAT MEAN METROPOLIMAN USED A RED ARROW INSTEAD OF KILLING HIM...?

ANOTHER ANGEL...

IS SOMETHING HAPPENING OUTSIDE...?

WHAT'S THIS?

IF HE TURNS HIS WHITE ARROW ON MUKAIDO, IT'S ALL OVER...

...

I DON'T WANT ANY FATALITIES!

I'M TIRED OF DEALING WITH YOU.

GO ON, RUN.

...

YOU DON'T INTEND TO *FIGHT* ME, DO YOU?

I TOLD YOU, RUN AWAY! THEN AT LEAST *YOU'LL* SURVIVE THIS DISASTER.

YOUR TENACITY AND LUCK WON'T HELP YOU LIKE THEY DID LAST TIME. NOT WHEN IT'S TWO-ON-ONE.

ONCE WE SHOOT ARROWS FROM BOTH SIDES, YOU'RE JUST GOING TO RUN ANYWAY!

DO IT AL-READY!

TMP

!

SHIIII--

TO BE CONTINUED...

If angel tools are returned before a god is determined, the person who returned them shall die.

Angel tools from deceased god candidates can also be given to other human beings.

When a god is determined, the angel tools of the other candidates are forfeited.

Noncandidate human beings cannot see angel tools.

Angel wings can fly faster than the human eye can follow.

The tools an angel can give to a person depends on the angel's rank.
Special rank: Wings, red arrows, white arrows
First rank: Wings, red arrows
Second rank: Wings or red arrows

God candidates are chosen from among people who have lost their reason or will to live.

God is determined from among 13 human beings selected by 13 angels. The process shall take no more than 999 days.

The angel tools of deceased god candidates can be claimed and used by other candidates.

Angels shall not use their own arrows and wings to directly affect god candidates.

If the pierced person dies, that red arrow will be returned to its owner.

When a person is under the effect of a red arrow, they cannot be pierced by other red arrows.

Any person pierced by a white arrow will die without fail.

When a red arrow is used on another person possessing red arrows, they may be ordered to use those red arrows on the original shooter. In this case, the effect of the second arrow overrides the first.

Even a person under the effects of a red arrow may be unable to perform certain actions if lacking an adequate reason or intent to do them.

The speed of the wings is not affected by any amount of weight the user can carry unassisted. However, they cannot lift more than one extra person.

Wings can fly faster than arrows.

Arrows cannot be fired while utilizing faster-than-sight wing flight.

Angel arrows can strike any target with perfect accuracy, but only if the shooter can see the target.

Any person pierced by a red arrow will fall in love with the user for 33 days before the effect wears off.
The effect will only work on a specific person once.

Red arrows can pierce up to 14 people at one time.

T s u**g** u mi **O**h b **a**

Born in Tokyo, Tsugumi Ohba is the author of the hit series *Death Note* and *Bakuman。*.

Ta**k** e s**h** i O b a **t**a

Takeshi Obata was born in 1969 in Niigata, Japan, and first achieved international recognition as the artist of the wildly popular *Shonen Jump* title *Hikaru no Go*, which won the 2003 Tezuka Osamu Cultural Prize: Shinsei "New Hope" Award and the 2000 Shogakukan Manga Award. He went on to illustrate the smash hit *Death Note* as well as the hugely successful manga *Bakuman。* and *All You Need Is Kill*.

PLATINVM END

VOLUME 5
SHONEN JUMP Manga Edition

°

STORY **T**sug**u**mi **O**hb**a**
ART Ta**k**eshi O**b**a**ta**

°

TRANSLATION Stephen Paul
TOUCH-UP ART & LETTERING James Gaubatz
DESIGN Shawn Carrico
EDITOR Alexis Kirsch

°

ORIGINAL COVER DESIGN Narumi Noriko

°

PLATINUM END © 2015 by Tsugumi Ohba, Takeshi Obata
All rights reserved.
First published in Japan in 2015 by SHUEISHA Inc., Tokyo.
English translation rights arranged by SHUEISHA Inc.

°

The stories, characters and incidents mentioned in this publication are entirely fictional.

°

No portion of this book may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means without written permission from the copyright holders.

°

Printed in the U.S.A.

°

Published by VIZ Media, LLC
P.O. Box 77010
San Francisco, CA 94107

°

10 9 8 7 6 5 4 3 2 1
First printing, April 2018

www.viz.com

www.shonenjump.com

6

PLATINUM END

STORY
TSUGUMI OHBA

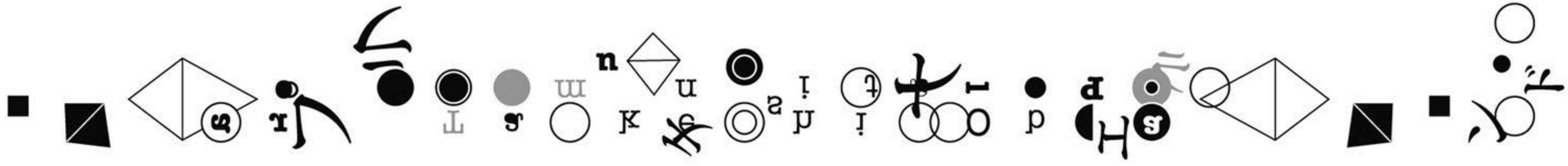
ART
TAKESHI OBATA

PLATINUM END

ART Takeshi Obata

STORY Tsugumi Ohba

Platinum End



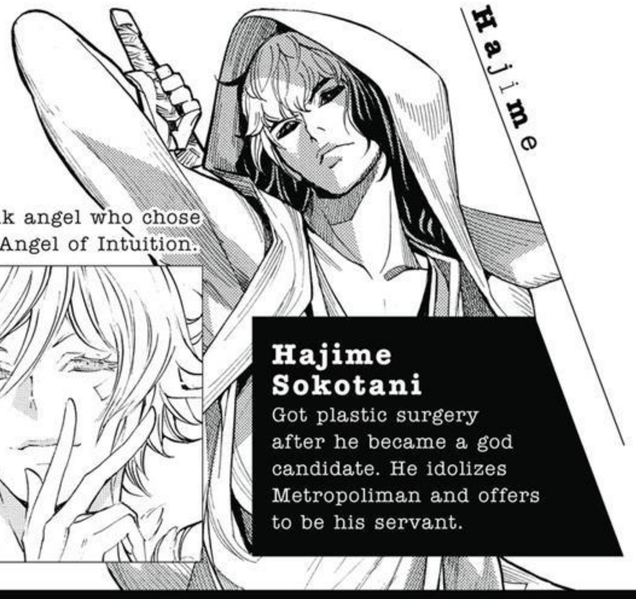
CHARACTERS

Kanade Uryu

Grandson of the Joso Academy headmaster, son of the Joso Industries president. He assumes the form of the Metropoliman character and purges the other god candidates.

Meyza

The special-rank angel who chose Kanade. For unknown reasons, she was elevated from rankless to the top special rank.



Balta

The first-rank angel who chose Hajime. The Angel of Intuition.

Hajime Sokotani

Got plastic surgery after he became a god candidate. He idolizes Metropoliman and offers to be his servant.

Baret

The first-rank angel who chose Mukaido. Possesses great knowledge about the celestial world.

Mirai Kakehashi

First-year high school student. His parents and brother died in an accident when he was seven. After a painful life with his abusive relatives, he attempted to commit suicide and survived through Nasse's help.

Nasse

A special-rank angel who wants to bring happiness to Mirai's life. Bright and bubbly.

Nanato Mukaido

An apparel company employee who leaves work due to late-stage cancer. A family man with a wife and kid.

Revel

A second-rank angel who chose Saki as his god candidate.

Saki Hanakago

Mirai's old friend and fellow student. The object of his affections.

Story

TRAP

On Kanade's orders, Hajime lures Mukaido into a trap using his family as hostages. In the process of saving them, Mukaido gets locked inside the building.

God candidate Hajime Sokotani worships the powerful Metropoliman, and attempts to contact Kanade to make his pitch to be a servant.

SERVANT

BELOVED

Mirai, Saki and Mukaido get back to basics with a new home base. But then someone abducts Mukaido's family.

Story

"My time has come. I leave the seat of god to the next human.
To a younger, fresher power.

The next God shall be chosen from the 13 humans chosen by you 13 angels.When the chosen human is made the next god, your angelic duty is finished,and you may live beside that God in peace.

You have 999 days remaining..."

CONTENTS

#16 Where the Tears Go
P5

#17 The Throbbing of the Heart
P55

#18 Your Own Worth
P109

#19 The Glass Vessel
P163

#16 Where the Tears Go

SHH

HE WENT IN!

!

MIRROR HOUSE

!

SHK

MR. MUKAI-DO!

I'LL GET YOUR DAUGHTER!

GRAB YOUR WIFE AND FLY AROUND INSIDE HERE AS FAST AS YOU CAN!

WHUP

WHY DID YOU COME IN...?

AK

KWI

TO SURVIVE!

IT'S THE ONLY WAY TO ENSURE ALL FOUR OF US SURVIVE !!

KYU

...

I CAN'T SEE THEM ANYMORE ...

FFT

WE'VE DONE IT, MISTER POLIMAN!

IT'S THE ONLY OPTION TO ENSURE THAT MUKAIDO ISN'T KILLED...

...BUT HE *MUST* BE STUPID, JOINING HIM IN THERE.

WE CAN JUST WAIT FOR THEM TO TIRE AND STOP FLYING.

YES. I DIDN'T IMAGINE MUKAIDO WOULD JUST WALK RIGHT IN THERE.

THE OTHER IDIOT, SURE...

W- WHY DID MUKAIDO DO THAT...?

...

THAT SETTLES IT.

IT MUST BE... LOVE OF FAMILY.

FAMILY...

LOVE...

L- LOVE OF... FAMILY...

WHAT IS THAT?

I CAN'T LOSE MY COOL iN FRONT OF M-MiSTER POLiMAN...

OH NO ...

I FEEL SO... iRRiTATED ...

WHAT?

URRGH!

AUGH!

...

HFF!

HFF!

MIRROR HOUSE

WAIT, I GUESS YOU'RE ALL WHITE TO BEGIN WITH.

YOU'RE MY TYPE OF GIRL, ANGEL... BUT YOU'RE LOOKING PALE.

MIRAI...

YOU SAID YOU'D BE DELIGHTED WHEN I DIED, RIGHT?

YOU WERE GOING TO HAVE YOUR PARTNER KILL ME?

WASN'T THAT IT?

AND NOW IT'S JUST A MATTER OF TIME BEFORE THAT PARTNER OF YOURS PERISHES... IT'S FUNNY, REALLY.

...BUT YOU DON'T EVEN FEEL LIKE ARGUING TODAY?

WHAT'S WRONG? I KNOW YOU ANGELS CAN'T INTERFERE DIRECTLY...

FWE

Y-
YOU'RE
LEAVING?

ALL
RIGHT,
HAJIME.

OF COURSE.
I DON'T NEED TO
WAIT AROUND HERE
FOR THEM TO STOP.
AND I DON'T WANT
TO EXPOSE MYSELF
IN YOUR PRESENCE.

MIRROR HOUSE

LET ME
KNOW WHEN
THEY STOP,
AND I'LL
FINISH THEM
WITH WHITE
ARROWS.

D-DO
YOU THINK...
THAT I
WOULD TURN
MY ARROWS...
ON YOU?

H-
HE'S SO
COOL!

WHOA...
SUCH
CRAFTY
STRATE-
GY...

SHWA

Y-
YES,
SIR.

JUST
LET ME
KNOW.

FLAP

THAT MEANS
LIMITING
EXPOSURE TO
OTHER GOD
CANDIDATES.

ALL
POSSIBILITIES
MUST BE
TAKEN INTO
ACCOUNT,
NO?

DO YOU HAVE A PLAN?

KI

NO, I DON'T!

Y-YOU DON'T?

WAIT...

IT'S CRUCIAL THAT WE ALL SURVIVE! YOU CAN'T DO ANYTHING IF YOU DIE FIRST!

THAT INCLUDES COMING UP WITH AN ESCAPE PLAN!

AS LONG AS WE'RE ALIVE AND HAVE OPTIONS, WE HAVE TO MAKE USE OF THEM!!

T-TRUE, BUT... MY STAMINA'S NOT GOING TO HOLD OUT FOREVER...

IN-DEED.

TAK

THEY REALLY HAVE NO PLAN.

HE COULD HAVE LIVED AS LONG AS HE DIDN'T FOLLOW MUKAIDO INSIDE.

TAK

TAK

SHRK

HOW LONG ...

...WILL THEY LAST?

SHRK

TING

TING

WOOO

HOW LONG HAS IT BEEN...?

WHEN YOU FLY AT TOP SPEED, IT'S HARD TO GET A SENSE OF TIME.

THERE MUST BE A WAY...

SO WHAT DO I DO...?

AT SOME POINT, I'LL COME TO A STOP.

I CERTAINLY CAN'T FLY LIKE THIS FOREVER.

SHIR

SHIR

TUG

...

IT'S OKAY... DON'T BE SCARED.

...

I GUESS I CAN TRY...

?!

MR. MUKAI-DO!

WE MIGHT HAVE A WAY OUT!

!

!

!

!

HMM ...

HE DID SAY "MIGHT HAVE."

REALLY?

OR IS IT A LIE?

DON'T PANIC. THEY CANNOT ESCAPE.

M... MISTER POLI-MAN... I JUST HEARD ONE OF THEM SAY THEY HAVE A WAY OUT!

NO, WAIT! THEY MUST BE LISTENING IN!

I'LL TELL YOU HOW TO DO IT NOW!

MIRROR HOUSE

MIRROR HOUSE

...THEN HE WON'T BE ABLE TO HEAR US IF WE LEAVE!

IF HE CAN HEAR WHAT WE'RE SAYING NOW...

BUT IF THEY CAN HEAR US, THEN IT MIGHT MAKE IT EASIER FOR METRO-POLIMAN TO FIGURE OUT!

OR YOUR WIFE, OR NANAKA ...

OH! I SEE...

...

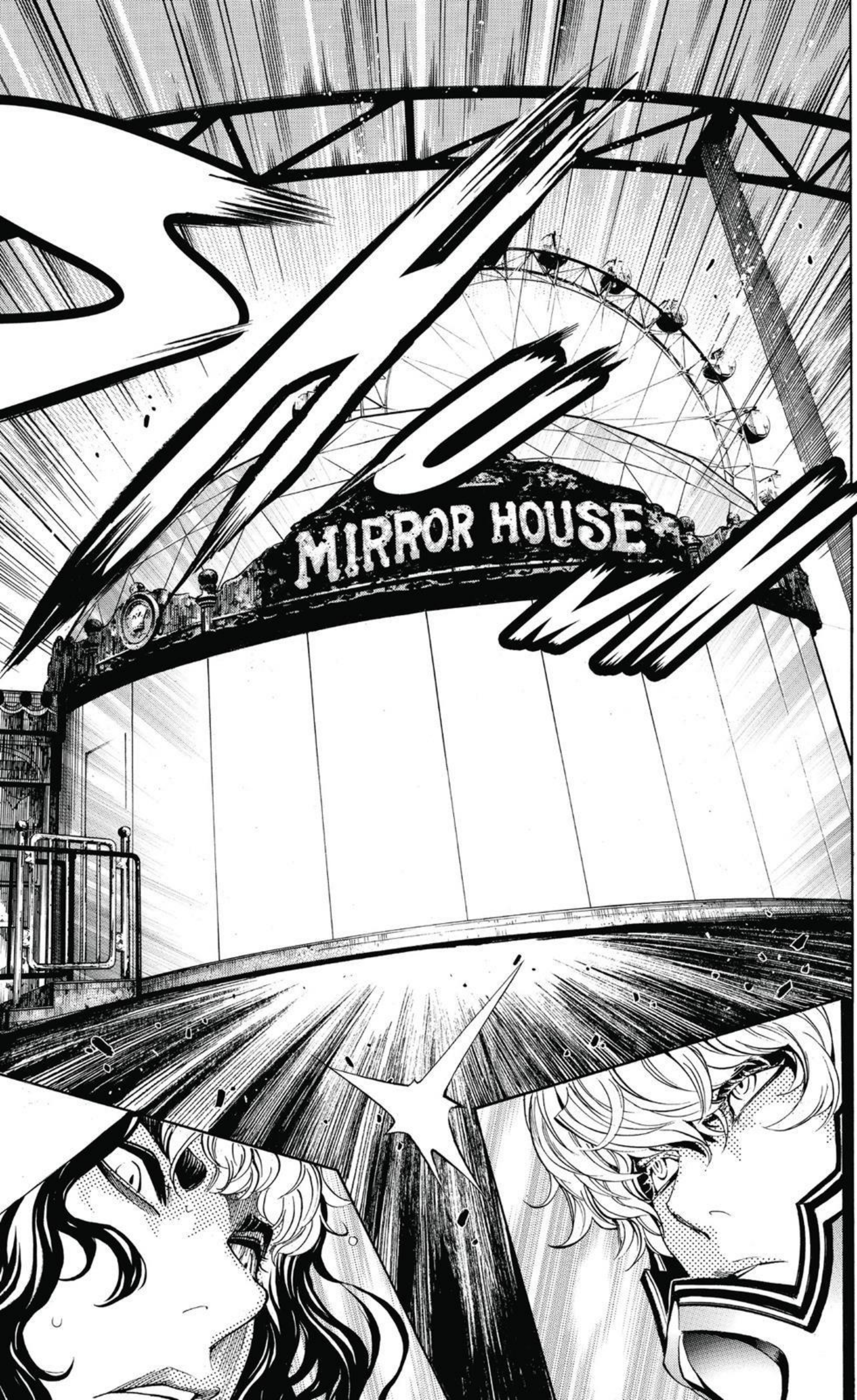
THAT MAKES SENSE ...

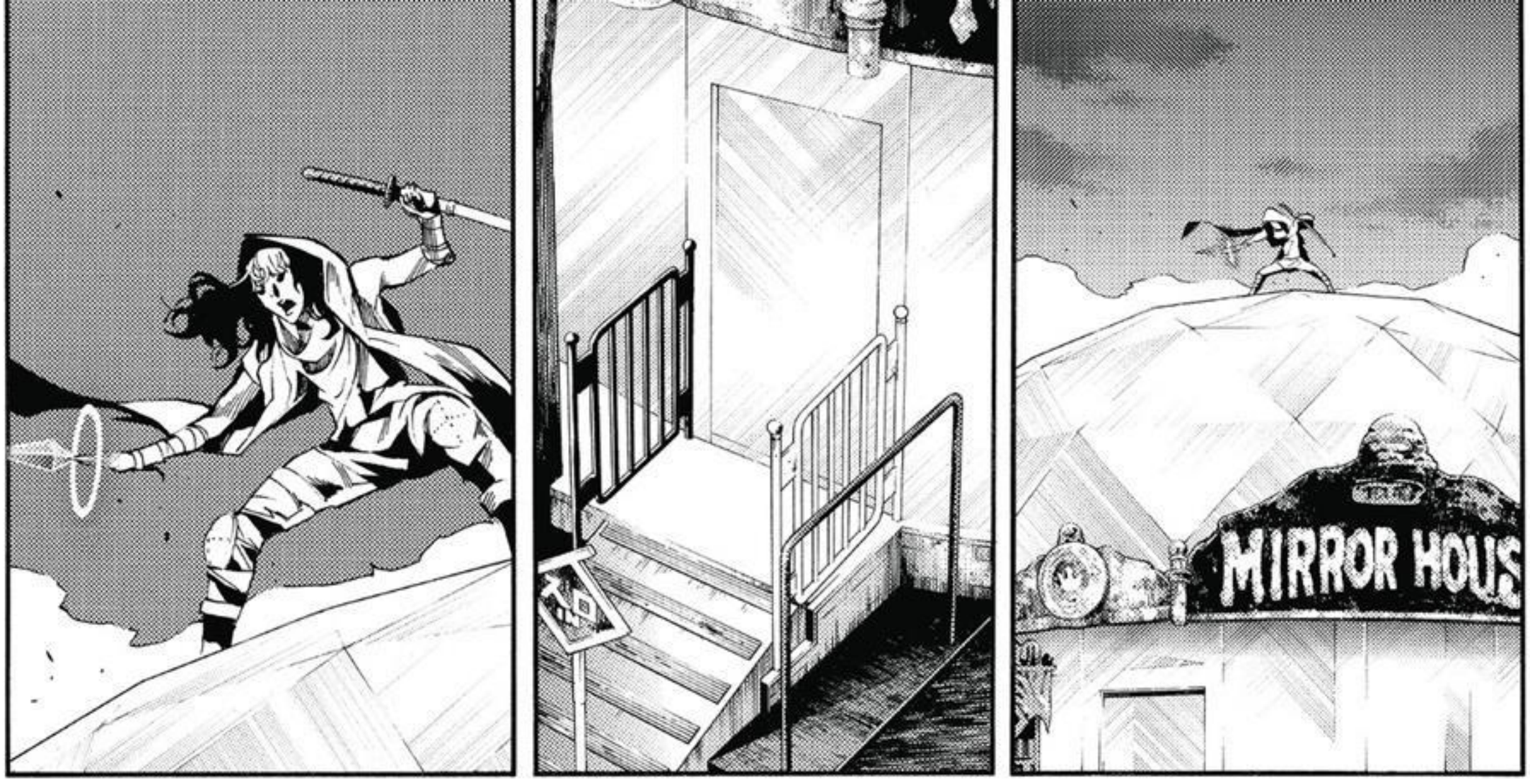
TO FIGURE OUT?

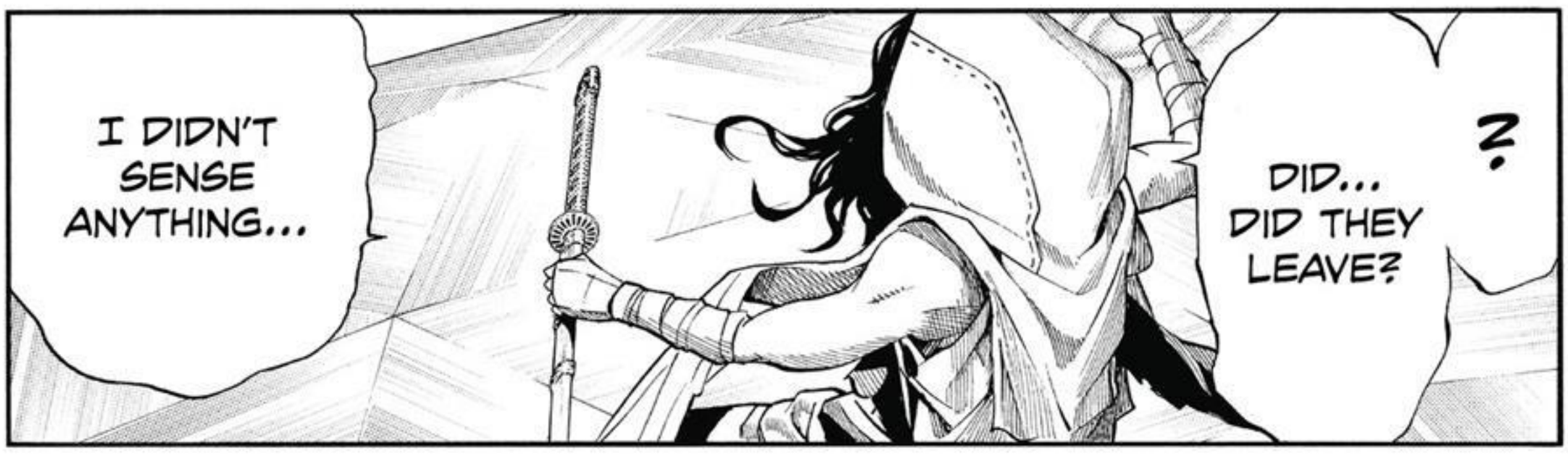
LEAVE? BUT HOW...?!

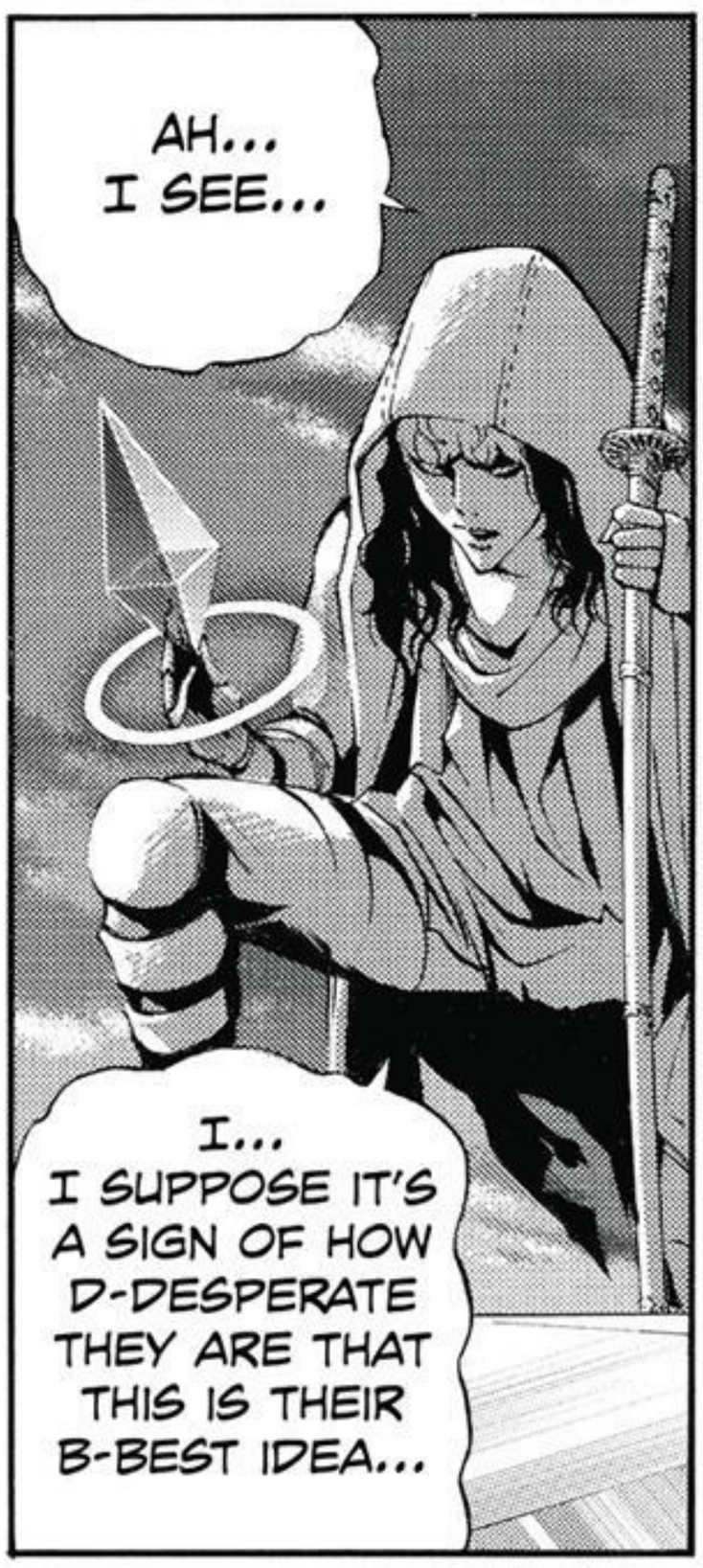
ALL RIGHT, LET'S LEAVE.

GOT IT! LET'S GO!


MIRROR HOUSE


MIRROR HOUS


I DIDN'T SENSE ANYTHING...
DID... DID THEY LEAVE?
?


AH... I SEE...
I... I SUPPOSE IT'S A SIGN OF HOW D-DESPERATE THEY ARE THAT THIS IS THEIR B-BEST IDEA...

HA HA HA! SO BECAUSE WE CAN'T SEE THEM, THEY THINK THEY CAN PRETEND TO HAVE ESCAPED IF THEY JUST STAY QUIET?!
WHAT A CRUDE BIT OF CHILD'S PLAY!!

CLICK

CLICK

CLICK

CLICK

...

THAT'S RIGHT.
NOW LISTEN TO ME.
UNTIL I KILL THEM,
DO NOT ATTEMPT TO
CONFIRM IF THEY
ARE INSIDE.

JUST
DON'T
OPEN
THE
DOOR.

THIS IS
INTRIGUING.

AND ONLY
YOU CAN
SENSE MIRAI
KAKEHASHI.

IN THIS
SITUATION,
I AM THE ONLY
ONE WHO CAN
SENSE IF NANATO
MUKAIDO IS
INSIDE THE
BUILDING.

WHAT?

M... MISTER POLI-MAN...

...

...

Y-YES?!

HAJI-ME.

IT HAS BEEN... H-HALF A DAY NOW... THEY'RE DEFINITELY STILL INSIDE, RIGHT?

ER... Y-YES... OF COURSE! I-I WOULD NEVER SUGGEST ANYTHING ELSE...

...THAT THIS IS JUST WHAT THEY WANT US TO THINK, RIGHT?

THE ONLY REASON YOU'RE BRINGING THIS UP AT ALL IS TO REMIND ME...

ZSH
ZSH
...
SNIFF
SNIFF
...
I DO NOT SEE THEIR ANGELS ANYWHERE...
WHAT ?
MISTER POLIMAN.
Y-YES, SIR! I... I JUST WANTED TO REPORT...
IF THEY JUST WANT TO CONVINCE US THEY'RE NOT INSIDE, THEIR ANGELS WILL ASSIST IN THE ILLUSION.
...

WH

OK

YEAH.

IF IT WAS JUST THAT HAJIME FELLOW, HE MIGHT NOT HAVE FIGURED IT OUT...

YEAH. HE DOESN'T CARE THAT WE'VE MOVED. WE'RE RIGHT HERE, BUT HE'S NOT LOOKING FOR US.

BUT I CAN'T TELL WHAT BALTA IS THINKING.

OH, MIRAI...

MIRAI'S INSIDE, DESPERATELY THINKING OF A WAY TO GET OUT...

THERE MUST BE ANOTHER WAY...

BUT IT WILL BE HARD TO GET THE ANSWER FROM THEM...

IF THEY LOCKED MR. MUKAIDO'S WIFE AND DAUGHTER IN HERE, THEY MUST KNOW HOW TO GET OUT.

IF I CAN JUST SAVE AYA AND THE KIDS...

THIS IS BAD... THE PAIN IS GETTING WORSE, AND I CAN'T TAKE MY MEDICATION... HOW MUCH LONGER CAN I LAST?

IT'S... QUITE RE-MARK-ABLE.

OF COURSE THEY'RE DESPERATE.

IF THEY STOP, THEY DIE.

Y-YES, SIR.

AND THEY'VE BEEN IN FOR HOURS AND HOURS... WITHOUT W-WATER...

IT... IT'S SEALED INSIDE! IT M-MUST BE HOT IN THERE.

M... MISTER POLIMAN.

AGAIN? WHAT IS IT?!

...

...

CHIRP

CHIRP

MIRROR HOUSE

入口

...

W-WHAT IF WE POURED IN WATER OR CONCRETE TO F-FINISH THEM OFF...?

WHAT IS IT NOW?

M-MISTER POLIMAN, THINKING OF WATER G-GAVE ME AN IDEA...

Y-YES... OF COURSE...

ISN'T THAT RIGHT?

CREATING AN OPENING TO DO THAT MIGHT ONLY GIVE THEM AN OPPORTUNITY TO BREAK FREE...

ONLY CONTACT ME IF THEY STOP OR SOMETHING CHANGES.

LISTEN. THEY ARE INSIDE.

THUMP

Y-YOU ARE CORRECT, SIR...

I NEED YOU TO BEHAVE. I KNOW IT'S BORING, BUT WE ARE NOT CONNECTED SO THAT YOU CAN CHAT WITH ME WHENEVER YOU FEEL LIKE IT.

OKAY, HAJIME ...

TAP

TAP

TAK

TAK

CLK

PSHHHT

I'M GOING TO GET SOME REST.

ONLY IF THEY STOP OR SOMETHING HAPPENS. GOT THAT?

BEEP

Y- YES ...

SHHHT

HAJIME SOKOTANI... EVEN MORE USELESS THAN I THOUGHT.

VWEEE

I'LL GET RID OF HIM AS SOON AS MUKAIDO'S TEAM IS GONE.

IN-DEED.

PSHHHHH

URGH ...

ZZZT...

ZT...ZT...

KOZK

...

WOBL...

MY HEAD'S ABOUT TO BURST ...

HUFF!

HUFF!

CHIRP

CHIRP

SAKI...

HAVE YOU BEEN WAITING HERE ALL NIGHT?

THEY HAVEN'T... COME BACK.

AND THEY'RE NOT MESSAGING BACK.

I'M SURE THEY'RE FIGHTING FOR THEIR LIVES RIGHT NOW...

THEY MUST STILL BE ALIVE.

KAKE-HASHI...

MR. MUKAIDO AND HIS FAMILY...

IT'S OKAY, SAKI...

I'LL DO MY BEST TO BECOME A FIRST-RANK ANGEL...

AND I'M NOT ABLE TO DO A THING TO HELP THEM.

I'M GOING TO THEM. I CAN'T STAY HERE.

THANK YOU, REVEL.

IT'S ALL RIGHT.

NO, SAKI!

THEY'LL KILL YOU!!

I'LL FIGHT WITH-OUT WINGS ...

SAKI ...

I FEEL THE SAME WAY...

I KNOW!

BUT AT THIS RATE ...

YOU'VE LOST CONFIDENCE IN YOUR ABILITY! YOU'RE MAKING A MISTAKE!!

YOU'RE ACTING THE SAME DESPERATE WAY YOU DID WHEN YOU WALKED INTO THE OCEAN!

TONK

IF ONLY I WERE A FIRST-RANK ANGEL, I COULD GIVE YOU WINGS... AND HOPE.

BUT I'M JUST NOT GOOD ENOUGH ...

RONI

I'M SORRY, SAKI... SORRY YOU HAVE A WORTHLESS ANGEL...

REV-EL ...

HUH?

YOU'RE... CRYING...

R... REVEL?

DRIP

DRIP

THE ANGELIC TEXTS CLAIMED THAT IT WAS ONLY HUMANS WHO SHED TEARS FOR THE SAKE OF OTHERS...

WAIT... THAT DOESN'T MAKE SENSE... ANGELS DON'T SHED TEARS...

DRIP

DRIP

!

WAIT... THESE ARE...

HUFF!

HUFF!

HUFF!

HUFF!

CAN'T FOCUS...

DAMN! MY SIGHT IS BLURRING...

HUFF!

HUFF!

HUFF!

HUFF!

AYA, NANAKA... I'M SORRY...

UNLESS WE GET A MIRACLE... THIS IS IT...

HUFF!

HUFF!

...AND NOW I FEEL LIKE BEGGING GOD BEFORE I DIE...

AN ANGEL BROUGHT ME TO THIS POINT...

IT'S IRONIC...

REVEL
...

REVEL

GOD...

!

THERE IS MERELY NO PRECEDENT.

NO ANGEL HAS DONE THIS BEFORE NOW.

I AM UNFIT TO BE AN ANGEL.

Y-YES...

YOU HAVE SHED TEARS.

YOU ARE THE FIRST ANGEL TO CRY FOR THE SAKE OF A HUMAN BEING.

YOU NOW HAVE FIRST RANK AND A NEW TITLE.

YOU HAVE BECOME ABLE TO UNDERSTAND AND EMPATHIZE WITH HUMAN FEELINGS.

HUMAN FEELINGS?

REV-EL, ANGEL OF EMOTION...

CHK

ANGEL OF EMOTION ...

I'M... FIRST RANK?

TAKE IT, SAKI.

SAKI

IT'S YOUR WINGS.

RING!

SHINA

SAKI

REVEL...

LET'S GO TO MIRAI AND MUKAIDO!

LET'S GO, SAKI!

YES!

SHA

A

OH.

!

SAKI!

WHAT'S THE SITUATION, BARET?

WELL ...

YOU DID IT, REVEL!

HEH HEH!

MY, MY, LOOKS LIKE THE WHOLE GROUP IS HERE.

!

WOOO

BALTA!

WHAT DO YOU INTEND TO DO?

BALTA, ANGEL OF INTUITION...

GREAT, ANOTHER CREEP...

... CONGRATS ON YOUR PROMO-TION.

OH, AND REVEL ...

I DECIDE HOW TO ACT ON MY OWN, FOLLOWING MY INTUITION.

AND MY HUNCH SAYS...

!

THE NEW ARRIVAL HOLDS THE KEY TO EVERYTHING.

I WILL...

WHAT DOES THAT MEAN?

I SUPPOSE IT MEANS YOU SHOULD DO AS YOU WILL.

!

SAKI, I'M SURE METRO-POLIMAN HAS HIM UNDER THE CONTROL OF A RED ARROW ALREADY!

IT'S ONLY GOING TO TIP HIM OFF!

...

GO AHEAD, SAKI. SHOOT HIM IF YOU WANT TO.

JUST BE CAREFUL OF ANY CAMERAS METROPOLIMAN MIGHT BE USING TO WATCH.

WHAT WILL HAPPEN NEXT?

HEH ...

GR

RG

GG

GR

RR

CAMERA DETECTION APP, ON.

KSHAK

GGG

MIRROR HOU

BEEP

THIS IS A BLIND SPOT... I'M SAFE.

THREE CAMERA STATIONS. DISTANCE; 29.2 METERS...

I'VE BEEN PIERCED?

HUH ooo?

GOT HIM!

BABUMP

BUT... WHO DID IT...?

WHO...

WHO...?

B-BUMP

THIS FEELING!

THIS FEELING

NOT

I LOVE THAT GIRL... WITH THE CAT EARS!!

IT'S LOVE!

TOO

I LOVE
...

Mooo
MISTER
POLIMAN

ooo

I...
I AM...
MISTER
POLIMAN'S
SERVANT...

HKKG

GAH...
NO! I
CAN'T...

AAAA

17 The Throbbing of the Heart

KNE

!

KNE

M... MISTER POLI-MAN!!

KNE

WHAT IS IT ?!

KNE

I... I AM MISTER POLIMAN'S SERVANT...

BUT...

BUT...

KNE

I FEEL MY LOVE FOR HER GROWING BY THE MOMENT...

BUT I JUST LOVE HER SO MUCH.

GR

RG

GG

GG

GR

RG

"MISTER POLIMAN"?! WHAT WAS THAT VOICE...? WHAT HAPPENED?!

WE'RE COMPLETELY TRAPPED IN HERE. IF SOMETHING'S CHANGING, THAT'S GOOD...

IT'S BEEN NEARLY TWO DAYS SINCE WE PRETENDED TO LEAVE...

SO IF THEY ARE MOVING, IT MUST BE TO FINISH US OFF FOR GOOD...

NO... ACTUALLY, THEY HAVE NO REASON TO DO ANYTHING BUT WAIT.

HE'S NOT THE TYPE TO FALL FOR A RUSE LIKE THIS.

TWO DAYS... I'M WORRIED ABOUT MR. MUKAIDO... AND HIS WIFE AND DAUGHTER...

HE'LL BE ABLE TO FIND ANY NUMBER OF WAYS TO DETECT IF WE'RE STILL IN HERE, BUT HE DOESN'T SEEM TO BE ATTEMPTING ANYTHING.

HUFF...

HUFF...

HUFF...

AYA, NANAKA...

I'M SORRY...

I'M SORRY...

HUFF...

HUFF...

I'M A HAPPY, LUCKY MAN...

I GET TO DIE SURROUNDED BY MY LOVING FAMILY.

THERE CAN'T BE A BETTER WAY TO GO.

WITH MY BEAUTIFUL, CARING WIFE AND MY ADORABLE KID... CAN'T ASK FOR ANYTHING ELSE.

KINDA FEEL LIKE I ACTUALLY UNDERSTAND THAT NOW...

"DON'T YOU DARE GO EVEN A DAY BEFORE I DO," OR SOMETHING...

"YOU CAN'T DIE BEFORE I DO."

WASN'T THERE AN OLD SONG LIKE THIS?

I CAN'T, HUH ...?

YOU CAN'T TALK LIKE THAT.

WILL YOU MAKE ME A PROMISE, NANATO?

DON'T GIVE UP.

I DON'T HAVE LONG EITHER WAY, SO I DON'T KNOW IF I CAN KICK THE SMOKING HABIT NOW.

PROMISE WHAT?

I WANT NANAKA AND OUR NEW BABY ...

I WANT THEM TO SEE.

BA DUM

MIRROR HOUSE

BA DUM

BA DUM

KWT

I CAN'T DIE YET!

WHAT IS IT, HAJIME? WHY AREN'T YOU SAYING ANYTHING?

AH!

THE ONE WAY I CAN'T AFFORD TO DIE... IS IF MY PASSING LEADS TO THE MURDER OF MY FAMILY!!

HUFF!

HUFF!

...TO SEE THEIR DADDY DOING HIS BEST TO STAY ALIVE UNTIL THE VERY END...

HUEF!

SERVANT ooo

SERVANT ooo

I... I AM MISTER POLIMAN'S... SERVANT...

HUEF!

HUEF!

I TOLD YOU ONLY TO CONTACT ME WHEN THEY STOP, OR SOMETHING ELSE HAPPENS.

TOK

TOK

MY... MY RE-PORT ...

...IS ...IS THAT ...

!

SO WHAT IS IT?

...SO...
CUUUUTE!!

SHE'S
...

AND
MAKE HIM
THINK THE
FEELING'S
MUTUAL...

I'VE GOT TO
MAKE HIM
FALL IN-LOVE
WITH ME...

PWIP

PWIP

OH
MY...

AH...
AAH...

HER DARK, SHINING EYES...

THE PERFECTLY SHAPED BUST, NEITHER TOO SMALL NOR TOO BIG... HER HIPS...

THE SHORT, BOBBED HAIR...

THE C-COMBINATION OF HER STRAIGHT-LACED, ALMOST P-PLAIN LOOKS AND THAT WILD COSTUME...

THOSE PINK, PLUMP LIPS...

IT'S... IT'S JUST TOO MUCH... OH, MY SWEET CAT-EARED GIRL, I...

LOVE
.....!!

TH...

!

THIS
IS...

?!

...LOVE...

I
LOVE
YOU
...
...

L...
O...
V...
E...

LOVE
...?

...FEELING!

A HEART LEAPING INTO FLIGHT...

WHAT A FEELING.

WHAT A TREMENDOUS...

THINKING OF HER...

IT SQUEEZES MY BREAST.

OOOOH

MY HEART BEATS MADLY.

BADUMP BADUMP

...MAKES MY HEART DANCE AND SING.

MY BIRTH, ALL THOSE YEARS AGO, WAS LEADING UP TO THIS MEETING WITH THIS GIRL.

F-FATHER, MOTHER... TH-THANK YOU FOR BRINGING ME INTO THE WORLD.

I... I'M SO HAPPY...

...THAT I WAS BORN.

...IS SHIMMERING.

THE TREES, GRASS, BUGS, ANIMALS ...

...ALL ARE SPARKLING ...

...SPARKLING ...

I'VE NEVER EXPERIENCED SUCH A GLORIOUS THING...

THE ENTIRE WORLD...

PWIP

PWIP

SHE'S LURING ME ONWARD!

SHE'S INVITING ME...!

SHHF

I... I WANT TO SEE HER UP CLOSE... I WANT TO SPEAK TO HER...

I WANT TO GO WHERE SHE IS.

...THESE FEELINGS FOR HER!!

I WANT TO EXPLAIN...

...

!

WHAT IN THE WORLD ARE YOU DOING, HAJIME?

KCHAK

I...

I NEED TO GO... TO THE BATHROOM... SO... CAN YOU COME... AND STAND GUARD IN... MY PLACE ...?

GRRRRRR

SO I WILL LEAVE MY RADIO HERE ...

I-I MEAN, IT WOULD BE RUDE TO YOU ...

I... I DON'T WANT YOU TO HEAR THE SOUNDS ...

TUNK

...

GO AND GET IT OVER WITH.

NOBODY'S WATCHING YOU NOW.

B-BUT I WOULD PREFER... TO DO IT IN A PLACE... WHERE YOUR CAMERAS C-CAN'T SEE. I M-MAY BE YOUR SERVANT, B-BUT I STILL HAVE M-MY PRIDE...

FLIP

BE BACK AT ONCE.

MIRROR HOUSE

...

I... I WANT TO KNOW YOU BETTER...
WH... WHAT IS YOUR NAME...?
I'VE LOVED YOU... F-FROM THE MOMENT I FIRST SAW YOU...
I... I'M... HAJIME... SOKOTANI...

I...
I'M...

YOUR NAME ...

PLEASE LET THOSE PEOPLE OUT OF THE MIRROR HOUSE!

MIRROR HOUSE

PLEASE!

YOU CAN DO IT, SAKI.

...

B-BUT ...

!

HIS... HIS SERVANT ...

I... I AM MISTER POLI-MAN'S... SERVANT ...

ONLY MISTER POLIMAN CAN OPEN THAT BUILDING.

PLEASE, I WANT YOU TO LET THEM OUT...

THEY'RE PEOPLE THAT ARE TRULY PRECIOUS TO ME...

CHK

I... I...

I WOULD DO...

...A-A-ANYTHING FOR YOU.

IF IT WOULD MAKE YOU HAPPY...

SHING

PRE-CIOUS ...

PRE... SHUS ...?

I'LL DO ANY-THING !!

MIRROR HOUSE

WHAT ARE YOU DOING, HAJIME ?!

MIRROR HOUSE

I'M... SAVING S-SOME P-PRECIOUS PEOPLE FROM THIS TRAP... W-WITH THE WOMAN I LOVE!!

I... I'M...

KWAAT

A RED ARROW?!

THE WOMAN YOU LOVE?!

ALL RIGHT!

YES! IT WORKED!

...

KRAK

DID YOU HEAR THAT, MR. MUKAIDO?!

YEAH!

DON'T SLOW DOWN YET!

BUT IT COULD BE SOME KIND OF TRAP!

WHAK

KLANG

TOO

STOP IT, HAJIME!

REVEAL?!

IT'S NOT A TRAP! A BEAUTIFUL WARRIOR DRESSED IN YELLOW HAS SWOOPED IN ON WINGS TO HELP!

KCHING

SHE USED A RED ARROW ON THE MAN!

REVEL, A SECOND RANK...

HE LIKELY ASCENDED TO FIRST RANK OR BETTER SO THAT SHE COULD HAVE WINGS.

SO, THERE WERE OTHERS.

FWAP

WHAT A PAIN IN THE ASS...

THERE ARE PLENTY OF WAYS TO DESTROY THE MIRROR HOUSE FROM THE OUTSIDE.

...

CLANG

WHAK

MUKAIDO WILL SOON DIE, WITH OR WITHOUT MY HELP, BUT IF THAT OTHER IDIOT ESCAPES, HE WILL BE TROUBLE DOWN THE ROAD.

UNLIKE ME... HE'S SO FULL OF CONFI-DENCE...

HE'S SO COOL...

I... I WISH I COULD BE LIKE HIM...

SH- SHOW THEM ALL, MISTER POLIMAN!

SERVANT ...oo

ER... Y- YES?

HAJIME!

ZZSH

WEREN'T YOU SUPPOSED TO BE MY SERVANT?

!

I W-WISHED I'D NEVER BEEN B-BORN ...

I... H-HATED MY PARENTS FOR MAKING ME UGLY... HATED M-MYSELF FOR BEING UGLY...

B-B... BEFORE I WAS A GOD CANDIDATE... I WAS UNLOVED AND UNLOVING.

TECHNI-CALLY...

...I *WAS.*

BUT ...

TH-THAT YOU WOULD BURN DOWN THE W-WORLD ...

THEN, WHEN I M-MET YOU, I BELIEVED YOU WOULD M-MAKE MY WISH COME TRUE...

...THE MEANING OF LIVING ...

THE CAT-EARED GIRL TAUGHT ME...

SHE HELPED ME REALIZE ...

I...
I...
I CAN
DO IT
TOO...

MUKAIDO IS SACRIFICING HIS LIFE FOR THE SAKE OF HIS FAMILY!

I CAN GIVE... MY EVERY-THING... FOR HER SAKE !!!

I...
I UNDER-STAND IT NOW!

I UNDER-STAND IT DOWN IN MY BONES!!

GRIK

S-SAY... WHAT YOU WILL...

THERE ISN'T A HUMAN BEING ALIVE WHO WILL FALL IN LOVE WITH A KATANA-SWINGING LUNATIC COVERED WITH OBVIOUS PLASTIC SURGERY!!

I CAN'T BELIEVE HE WAS STUPID ENOUGH TO GET SHOT!

CHING

SHIN

TH-THANKS TO THE RED ARROW...

YOU OBLIVI-OUS CLOWN! YOU LET THE RED ARROW CONTROL YOU!!

...I'VE COME TO UNDER-STAND... SOMETHING *WONDER-FUL!*

KRAK

THE WORDS OF A PERSON WHO DOES NOT TREASURE LIFE HAVE N...N...NO EFFECT ON ME!!!!

I'M COMING TO KILL YOU NOW! YOU AND THE GIRL!

GRN

YAY, WE GET TO WORK WITH THE BOSS!

LET'S GO, MEY-ZA!

SHWIP

!

I GOT THROUGH ...

I'M GETTING THE SHIVERS.

ONE, TWO ...

OOH, THREE OF US?

KWIZZ

WHAT'S THAT ...?

RIGHT AWAY.

SKRAAAAKKKK

PLK

PLK

GRK...

HSSSS

FSHHH...

KBOOM

WARNING
DANGER, DO NOT ENTER

WHOOPS...

KOHHH

KOHHH

MESSED UP THE LANDING THERE.

NO, YOU JUST WANTED TO LOOK COOL AND STAND OUT.

STMP

LET'S USE THIS TO BLOW UP THE WHOLE HOUSE, BOSS!

CLICK

PSST

CHAK

CHAK

NOPE, WON'T WORK.

IF I COULD PUT POISON ON THIS, IT'D BECOME A PROPER WHITE ARROW.

ALAS... MORE ROOM FOR EXPERIMENTATION, I SUPPOSE.

THEY CAN FLY AWAY FROM DANGER, LIKE AT THE TOWER. BETTER TO INJECT GAS INSIDE.

FSH

NICE TO MEET YOU, CAT-EARS.

FOUR OF THEM..!

!

THAT'S VERY BRAVE AND COOL OF YOU, BUT IT'S FOUR-ON-TWO.

I... I KNOW THAT'S NOT THE REAL ODDS!

D-DON'T TREAT ME LIKE A FOOL...

BA DUMP

TH-THAT MEANS... YOU'RE THE ONLY ONE I N-NEED TO WORRY ABOUT, POLIMAN.

ONLY A WHITE ARROW WILL LAND NOW.

I- I'VE ALREADY GOT AN ARROW OF LOVE STUCK IN ME.

BUT...

THIS IS BAD, SAKI. WE SHOULD ESCAPE NOW, WHILE HE'S CONFRONTING THEM...

!

YES! WE CAN GET OUT THAT WAY!

RIGHT!

HIS KATANA!

IT CRACKED THROUGH!

LOOK, MR. MUKAIDO!

!

BLAM

HOPE IT'S ENOUGH!

BLAM

THAT'S IT!!

CHK

THREE BULLETS LEFT.

ARE YOU ALL RIGHT, MR. MUKAIDO?!

SWOOP

FWIP

HMPH!

CHK

YEAH!

SAKI!

KAKE-HASHI!

I HAVE WINGS NOW...

THANKS!

ZOOM

HOW ABOUT IT? WHY DON'T WE SQUARE OFF AND SETTLE THIS ONCE AND FOR ALL IN A TEAM BATTLE?

HUFF!

HUFF!

FOUR-ON-FOUR ...

HUFF!

I OUGHT TO JUST KILL THEM ALL RIGHT HERE, BUT...

HAJIME KNOWS MY IDENTITY.

...

...THAT METROPOLIMAN ONLY FIGHTS WHEN HE HAS A CLEAR ADVANTAGE!

AS THE NEWLY MADE ANGEL OF EMOTION WHO CAN READ THE FEELINGS OF OTHERS, I CAN TELL YOU...

IT'S POINTLESS, NANATO MUKAIDO.

REVEL'S TRYING TO PROVOKE THEM INTO FIGHTING, BUT THAT WILL BACKFIRE...

THEY HAVE A FULL COMPLEMENT OF ANGELS. THAT PUTS ME AT A DISADVANTAGE.

IT MAKES IT EVEN LESS LIKELY THAT THE COWARDLY METROPOLIMAN WILL FIGHT US. WE SHOULD REGROUP AND LOOK FOR ANOTHER OPPORTUNITY.

I CAN TELL THAT IT'S REALLY MR. MUKAIDO'S EMOTIONS HE'S FOCUSING ON RIGHT NOW.

REVEL, ANGEL OF EMOTION... HE'LL KNOW SAKI'S FEELINGS BECAUSE HE'S ALWAYS AROUND HER, BUT HE CAN'T KNOW WHAT METROPOLIMAN'S THINKING...

NANATO MUKAIDO DOESN'T HAVE MUCH TIME LEFT...

I WANT HIM TO BRING IT TO A FINISH HERE...

HUFF!

HUFF!

#18 Your Own Worth

IF I MISS THIS CHANCE, I WON'T GET ANOTHER.

OBVIOUSLY METROPOLIMAN WANTS TO USE THIS OPPORTUNITY TO REMOVE GOD CANDIDATES...

HUFF!

HUFF!

WHOOSH

I'M GOING TO MOVE MY FAMILY TO A SAFE LOCATION.

GO ON, MOVE THEM.

HUHN!

YOU DON'T THINK WE'RE GONNA LET YOU DO THAT, DO YOU?!

YOU CAN'T FIGHT PROPERLY WITH THEM AROUND, CAN YOU?

I'LL GIVE YOU TIME.

TAKE HER, YELLOW.

GOT IT.

GOOD, HE WANTS TO FIGHT.

YELLOW?

AND THEN THERE'S RED!

NANATO MUKAIDO IS GREEN.

THAT'S HER COSTUME COLOR.

SHIK

KSHAK

CHK

KCHA

K

CHAK

NANATO
...

CLIK

WHEN YOU SAID YOU WERE FIGHTING AN EVIL THAT THREATENS THE WORLD WITH YOUR COMRADES... YOU WERE SERIOUS.

YOU DON'T HAVE TO WORRY.

NANAKA WILL BE ALONG RIGHT AFTER YOU...

I WAS CHOSEN BY GOD TO BE A HERO.

AND... I *WILL* RETURN.

FWF

!

BUT, NEITHER MUKAIDO'S GUN NOR HAJIME'S KATANA CAN BREAK MY SPECIAL SUIT, AFTER ALL OF ITS UPGRADES.

THEIR REASON FOR FIGHTING IS TO KILL ME.

SHE HAS NO WEAPONS. A TEENAGER AT BEST.

THE WOMAN'S ANGEL JUST TURNED FIRST-RANK.

THE OTHER GUY HAS WHITE ARROWS, BUT HE CAN'T BRING HIMSELF TO KILL PEOPLE.

IF ANYTHING, THEY'RE **DESPERATE** FOR A CHANCE TO MURDER...

CLIK

CLIK

GOAHH...

NONE OF THE PEOPLE ON MY SIDE WILL HESITATE TO KILL.

GOAHH...

IT'S HUMAN NATURE TO KILL OTHER HUMANS ...

IT'LL BE A BLOW-OUT.

CLICK

SHUNK

CAN'T WAIT TO SHOOT SOME-ONE WITH THESE!!

RAAAAH!!

THAT WAS HUSHED UP WITHIN THE FORCE, AND NEVER WENT PUBLIC...

UH-OH.

FORMER SDF OFFICER RYUJI BAKUMATSU, WHO VANISHED WITH A LARGE SUPPLY OF WEAPONRY...

...

GUESS WE HAPPEN TO THINK ALIKE, DON'T WE? STILL, THREE MEASLY PISTOLS...?

I GET IT... I HEARD ABOUT THREE 9 MM HANDGUNS AND A TRUCKLOAD OF AMMO GOING MISSING AFTER ME-- WHICH MUSTA BEEN YOU.

CLANK CHAK

MEANWHILE, I'M FULLY DECKED OUT WITH A TYPE 87 5.56 MM ASSAULT RIFLE, TWO 12.7 MM MACHINE GUNS, AND AN 84 MM RECOILLESS RIFLE!!

I WAS TIRED OF AIMING THEM AT ROCKS, TREES AND ANIMALS IN THE BACKWOODS, SO IT'S A GOOD THING BOSS HIRED ME JUST BEFORE I WENT OVERSEAS TO WORK AS A MERCENARY!!

KCHUNK

GSHANK

ZZIP

WHAT ARE YOU, A JUNKIE?!

HOW RUDE.

CLINK

IF YOU WANT TO GET HIGH, I RECOM-MEND THIS ONE.

NEED A DOWNER TO TAKE THE EDGE OFF?

ENOUGH TALKING.

WHOOPS! GOT A BIT EXCITED THERE.

PSST

DEPENDING ON THE PERSON AND THE METHOD, DRUGS CAN TAKE YOU TO A HIGHER RANK-- SEVERAL RANKS, IN FACT.

I WAS FOMERLY IN A TOP-SECRET DEVELOPMENT PROGRAM FOR A CERTAIN AGENCY.

MY AREA OF EXPERTISE IS BIO-WEAPONRY.

CRAZY BITCH!

IN TERMS OF MY DESIRE FOR HUMAN TEST SUBJECTS, I'M NO DIFFERENT FROM YOU.

THAT'S THE STUFF ...

TWIK

TWIK

TWIK

OOOH!

AAAH!

ON THE OTHER HAND...

...WHAT'S UP WITH HIM?

HE'S KINDA CREEPY ...

HIS MASK ISN'T THE ONLY WEIRD THING ABOUT HIM...

IS HE GONNA BLOW PEOPLE APART FROM THE INSIDE WITH HIS MIND? (LOL)

WHAT DOES HE HAVE, PSYCHIC POWERS?

SLIM

?

SHE'S TALKING WITH SOME-ONE...?

I GET IT.

YES. YES.

SAKI, I NEED TO SAY SOME-THING...

SHH

PUSH

HUH?

WHERE ARE WE ...?

...

WAIT.

IT'S A SAFE PLACE. WE'LL BRING NANAKA RIGHT AWAY.

WHAT ARE YOU GUYS FIGHTING AGAINST...?

...

I THINK METROPOLIMAN IS AN EVIL PERSON... WHO WANTS TO RULE OVER ALL OF HUMANITY LIKE A DICTATOR...

...

AND THE REST OF YOU?

I THINK ...

...WHILE MR. MUKAIDO IS FIGHTING BACK FOR THE SAKE OF HIS CHILDREN AND HIS FAMILY'S FUTURE.

...THAT THIS IS GOD'S JUDGMENT UPON ME...

A TRIAL ...

A TRIAL FROM GOD, PERHAPS...

IT'S MY ATONEMENT FOR MY SINS...

...TO SEE IF I'LL BE ALLOWED TO CONTINUE LIVING.

SUK

KAKE-HASHI, I HEARD FROM REVEL ...

!

GOT IT.

OKAY.

SUK

COME ON, LET'S TAKE YOU TO YOUR MOM...

PAPA ...

SO...
SHALL WE BEGIN?

CAN YOU KILL ORDINARY, INNOCENT PEOPLE WHOM I MERELY HIT WITH RED ARROWS?

THERE'S JUST ONE THING I WANT TO ASK...

DON'T BE FACE-TIOUS.

THOSE AREN'T "INNOCENT" PEOPLE.

ooo

ooo

UMM
...

?

?

...

IS IT...
BAD...
TO KILL
THEM?

...COULD
YOU DO
IT?

IF I
TOLD
YOU TO
KILL...

I WILL...
KILL
THEM.

I... CAN KILL.

I FEEL THE JOY OF MEETING YOU EMANATING F-FROM MY BEING.

B-BUT... I AM D-DIFFERENT NOW.

B-BEFORE I LOVED YOU... I M-MIGHT HAVE KILLED OUT OF SHEER RAGE AND FRUSTRATION.

B-BA-BMP

B-BA-BMP

B-BA-BMP

KILL

ANYONE AND ANYWHERE... AS L-LONG AS YOU WISH FOR IT...

M-MY LIFE IS WORTH... W-WHAT-EVER YOU USE IT FOR...

HE REALLY IS ENTERTAINING...

...

SURE IS!

HE IS QUITE SUSCEPTIBLE TO RED ARROWS.

MY MIND IS MADE UP.

...

HE WOULD KILL FOR MY SAKE...

FOR THE SAKE... OF THE FUTURE.

... ORDER ... ABOUT METRO-POLIMAN ...

HERE'S MY...

SAKI ...

SAKI!!

YOU MAY KILL HIM.

SHING

I JUST WANT THIS TO END...

WE HAVE TO PUT AN END TO METROPOLIMAN NOW...

KRRR

RED ...

KILL

DON'T WORRY-- I WON'T ORDER YOU TO USE YOUR WHITE ARROWS.

I'M SORRY TO HAVE DRAGGED YOU INTO THIS.

CAN YOU PLAY ALONG?

YOU UNDERSTAND WHAT I MEAN, RED.

KWIT

...

AND YOU, YELLOW.

NOD

NOD

KING

READY?

SHK

PAK

WHY'D THEY HAVE TO USE SAKI TO FIGHT?

AWW, WHAT A WASTE.

BAKUBUMP

TH-THIS IS NECESSARY FOR US TO WIN OUR FIGHT...

AYA, FORGIVE ME...

HE LOOKS SO MUCH MORE GALLANT AND MANLY WHEN HE'S FIGHTING...

I LOVE HIM SO MUCH, I CAN'T LOOK AT HIM...

I'LL DO THIS FOR YOU...

MR. MUKAIDO ...

I'D DO ANYTHING FOR KAKEHASHI...

FINISH THE FIGHT!!

READY?

TUG

GOT IT!

ALL RIGHT!

HUH?

WHAT DID THEY JUST DO?!

WOW, YOU'RE REALLY STUPID, AREN'T YOU?

THAT MEANS RED ARROWS WON'T WORK ON ANY OF THEM.

SO OUR RED ARROWS WILL HAVE NO EFFECT.

CAN'T GET THEIR WINGS AND ARROWS UNLESS WE KILL ALL FOUR.

IT'S EXACTLY WHAT I EXPECTED THEM TO DO...

HEH...

THERE.

NOW YOU'RE THE ONLY ONE VULNERABLE!

I'M THE FINAL BOSS.

IF YOU WANT TO CHALLENGE ME, YOU'LL HAVE TO STOP THE OTHER THREE FIRST.

THEN I WON'T FIGHT UNTIL THE VERY END.

WHY DO I DOUBT THAT? YOU'LL RUN AS SOON AS THE NUMBERS TURN AGAINST YOU.

I'M NOT RUNNING.

MEAN-WHILE, YOU WON'T LET RED USE HIS WHITE ARROW.

CAN YOU REALLY FIGHT WITH THAT HANDI-CAP?

THAT DIDN'T SEEM LIKE A LIE.

HE'S NOT LYING.

HMM?

GRRR

DOOR

I CAN'T WAIT ANY-MORE !!

LET'S GET THIS STARTED!!!

...FOR THE SAKE OF THE CAT-EARED GIRL!!

I WILL FIGHT...

WHAP

BOOM

BLAM BLAM BLAM

HOW D'YOU LIKE THE TASTE OF THAT 12.7 MM MACHINE GUN FIRE?!

...I'M THE ONLY MAN ALIVE WHO CAN HANDLE BOTH OF THESE WEAP-ONS AT ONCE!!!

BLAM BLAM BLAM

EVEN WITH THIS MILITARY ASSIS-TANCE SUIT HELPING ME...

IT WAS DESIGNED FOR ANTI-AIR USE!

BLAM

WAY BETTER THAN TREES AND ANIMALS !!

HYA HAAA!! SHOOTING PEOPLE IS THE BEST!!

I AM THE BEST !!

PEOPLE ARE THE BEST!!

...TO DODGE ...

...THE BULLETS ...

WOW.

IT'S SO EASY ...

!

THE ARROWS AND WINGS ARE A GOD CANDIDATE'S WEAPONS!!

HUH!

HUH!

WHEN YOU FLY, THE BULLETS GO IN SLOW MOTION.

HEH!

THEN ...

84 MM RE-COIL-LESS RIFLE !!

... HOW ABOUT *THIS* ?!

CHK

THERE WON'T EVEN BE SCRAPS OF FLESH TO RECOVER !!!

BOOM

CHK

THE ARROWS AND WINGS CAN'T TOUCH HUMAN-WORLD MATERIAL, BUT ARROWS WILL HIT OTHER ARROWS.

AND WINGS CAN HIT OTHER WINGS!

SAKI.

YEAH!

HEH ...

SHM

M

OH ?!

?

DID THAT DO THE TRICK?!

3

0

0

M

TCH!

SHM

?!

UNK

!!

GRRR

GRRR

!!

AND WINGS CAN ONLY SUPPORT THE WEIGHT OF ONE EXTRA PERSON!

WHAAAT?!

GRRRGGKKKR

I CAN'T MOVE!!

THEREFORE, HE CANNOT FLY IF THE OTHER TWO HOLD DOWN HIS WINGS WITH THEIR OWN!!!

YOUR DOWN-FALL.

ハハハ

BOOM

AAAH!

URG...

CLUNK

AH!

AAAH!

MY HAND!

AAA!

GH!

GAAH!!

MY RIGHT HAND!

AAAGH!!

HURRY, AND YOU MIGHT STILL REATTACH IT.

FWUP

NICE JOB!

WE'LL SEE ABOUT THAT...

IMPRES-SIVE, REVEL.

THAT WAS DEEPER KNOWLEDGE THAN MINE.

WITH ACCURATE, DECISIVE JUDGMENT!

I WAS THE ANGEL OF PLOTS TO BEGIN WITH.

ONCE I GAINED KNOWL-EDGE, THE IDEA SIMPLY CAME TO MIND.

THE REAL WORK IS YET TO COME.

URP!

GEK!

SAKI ...

MM!

WOBBL

...

I KNOW.

KAKEHASHI, I... I...

HUH!

HUH!

LET'S KEEP GOING.

...

WE CAN DO THIS!

HUH!

HUH!

SHE'S PUKING! (LOL)

LOSER.

IT'S FOUR-ON-THREE!

#19 The Glass Vessel

I KNOW HOW TO COUNT, THANK YOU VERY MUCH.

I WAS THE ONE WHO TAUGHT MY SISTER HER NUMBERS IN THE BATHTUB.

FWAP

FWAP

WH

OOSH

HUFF!!

HOW LONG AGO WAS THAT ...?

ANYWAY, I GUESS I CAN SEE THAT LOSING ONE ISN'T GOING TO FORCE YOU TO RETREAT ...

HUFF!!

WE'RE ONLY GETTING STARTED.

JUST MAKE SURE YOU DON'T KICK THE BUCKET BEFORE I HAVE THE CHANCE TO KILL YOU MYSELF, STAGE 4.

DON'T WORRY. I'M NOT GOING TO DIE BEFORE I'VE WITNESSED YOU PERISH...

...

I DO NOT THINK IT IS ABSOLUTELY NECESSARY TO FORCE A CONCLUSION HERE.

...

OF COURSE.

I DON'T NEED YOUR OPINIONS.

...

OR PERHAPS... ABOUT THE POPULACE AT LARGE.

YOU'RE THE ONES WHO MUST WORRY ABOUT WHETHER TO FLEE OR NOT.

ZRD...

WHAT DO YOU MEAN...?

?!

ZRDD

THE MORE, THE BETTER.

WHAT I'VE LEARNED FROM FIGHTING WITH YOU IS THAT HOSTAGES ARE THE MOST EFFECTIVE TOOL.

TAP

TAP

ZRD

SNAP

TIME FOR THE EXPERI-MENT.

FUYUKO KOHINATA.

POP

IT'S A CHEAPO COSTUME I GOT AT A THRIFT STORE, BUT IT WORKS WELL.

I WAS SHOWERING WHEN I GOT THE CALL...

SORRY ABOUT THE OUTFIT.

WHOOSH

CLUNK

WHAT DO YOU SUPPOSE THIS IS?

!

FSV'S SELLING POINT IS THAT IT INFLICTS CRITICAL LOSS OF IMMUNITY, WHILE SIMULTANEOUSLY PUMPING THE VICTIM FULL OF PATHOGENS.

SHK

IT'S AIR-BORNE AND EXPLOSIVELY CONTAGIOUS.

WATCH THIS.

DRIP

TSST

IT'S THE WORLD'S GREATEST VIRUS, SOMETHING I COOKED UP AFTER COUNTLESS COMBINATIONS AND REVISIONS... AND BASED AROUND THE WHITE BLOOD CELL.

I CALL IT *FSV*-- FUYUKO'S SPECIAL VIRUS.

SQUEE!!

SQUEE!

TH

SQUEE!

SQUEE!!

SPLURT SPLUT

BLRT

BLUB BLUB

SQUEE!

SQUEE!

HEE HEE HEE.

SPLAT SPLAT

HEE HEE HEE HEE HEE!

SQUEE!

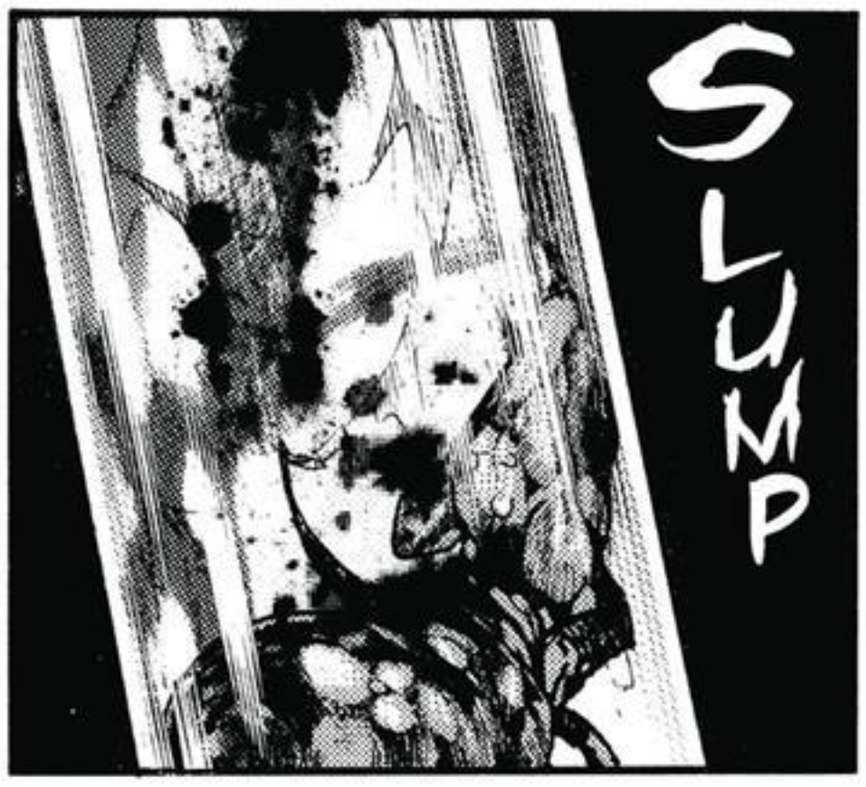
SQUEE!

SPLIT SPLAT

LOOK, LOOK! IT'S SUCKING IN ALL THE PATHO-GENS AND GERMS FLOATING IN THE AIR!

WHAT A REACTION! IT'S IN ABSOLUTE HELL RIGHT NOW.

GLAK


SLUMP

HEE
HEE
HEE
...
SMOOCH

IT'S
DEAD
...
...

SMIRK

THE DEAD-LIEST IN HISTORY ...

GOOD BABY...

OH, IT'S PHENO-MENAL... I'M GETTING HIGH JUST *IMAGINING* IT.

AN ACT OF UNPRECE-DENTED BIO-TERRORISM.

WHAT DO YOU THINK?

A RELEASE OF FSV WILL CAUSE THE DEATHS OF THOUSANDS-- ***MILLIONS.*** IT COULD SPREAD OVERSEAS AND CAUSE AN INTERNATIONAL DISASTER...

SPLISH

OH, DEAR, DEAR, DEAR... YOU LOOK LIKE YOU WANT ME TO STOP.

SHH...

HEE HEE, ALL RIGHT.

I MIGHT CONSIDER IT... IF YOU ACCEPT MY CONDITION.

SLIP!

?!

THIS IS CRAZY ...

THEY'RE INSANE ...

CLIK

THERE ARE TWO WAYS TO RELEASE THIS BABY...

WHEN I PRESS THIS SWITCH...

...AND WHEN I DIE.

GRRGGG

IT'S ON NOW, OF COURSE.

THERE'S AN ACTIVATION CHIP INSERTED IN MY HEART...

...AND I'M THE ONLY ONE WHO CAN TURN IT ON OR OFF.

I WANT TO USE THIS ON PEOPLE!

PEOPLE!

YOU'LL HAVE TO BE MY TEST SUBJECTS.

I WANT TO TRY OUT A NEW SOLUTION OF MINE FOR DIS-SOLVING BODIES.

I WANT TO SEE WHAT HAPPENS WHEN LIVING PEOPLE MELT!

YES ...

DIS-SOLVING PEOPLE.

D... DISSOLVING ...

AAAAH!

I WANT TO TEST, I WANT TO TEST!

I WANT TO MELT, I WANT TO MELT!

THE ONLY THING LEFT IS A HUMAN SUBJECT!

JUST 0.01 CC WAS ENOUGH TO MELT A TEST RAT, BONES AND ALL!

HEH HAH ...

HEH ...

AH!

BMP

AH!

BMP

PSSST

HEY, WATCH OUT!

AAH!

CALM YOURSELF, FUYUKO.

PST

PST

THE FIRST TEST SUB-JECT ...

...

HEE HEE HEE ...

AH!

AH!

…WILL BE YOU, RED.

!

THIS IS NOT A BLUFF. IF YOU REFUSE TO BE HER TEST SUBJECT, WE WILL SPREAD FSV.

I THOUGHT YOU WEREN'T GOING TO KILL ANYONE BUT GOD CANDIDATES.

...

HE'S NOT LYING.

IF YOU FOUR DIE, NONE OF THE NON-CANDIDATES WILL!

MORON.

IT'S THAT SICKENINGLY NAIVE SIDE OF YOU THAT REALLY DRIVES ME CRAZY. WE'RE IN A FIGHT TO THE DEATH-- YOU THINK I CARE ABOUT LYING?

DON'T WORRY, THIS NEEDLE'S STRONG ENOUGH TO GET THROUGH THAT SUIT.

OKAY, RED. STASH YOUR WINGS AND GET ON TOP OF THE FERRIS WHEEL.

THE FOUR OF US DIE...

...OR THOUSANDS UPON THOUSANDS WILL...

OHHH

YOU COME LATER.

NO WAITING.

THE FIRST SUBJECT SHOULD BE...

WAIT!

WHEN ALL FOUR OF YOU ARE DEAD, I'LL GET ALL OF YOUR TOOLS.

IT WAS STUPID OF YOU TO USE YOUR REDS ON EACH OTHER WHERE I COULD SEE.

WHICH ONES DON'T WANT TO LIVE, WHICH ONES DON'T SEEM LIKELY TO RUN, AND WHOSE WINGS AND ARROWS GO TO WHOM WHEN THEY DIE-- CONSIDERING THESE THREE ISSUES, THE ORDER BECOMES OBVIOUS.

...

...?

AFTER... WE'RE DEAD... OUR TOOLS...?

KAKEHASHI...

WHO

TEP

SHF...

!

...

...

FF

MIRAI...

NO, WAIT... IF SHE DIES, THE VIRUS DEPLOYS...

I COULD FLY UP AND USE MY GUN...

IF HE USES A WHITE ARROW FIRST...

HNG ...!

DON'T GO!!

NO, DON'T ...

KA...

IF YOU DISAP-PEAR OR MAKE THE SLIGHTEST MOVEMENT, I'LL PRESS THE BUTTON!!

NOBODY MOVE!!

SHUKK

CLANK

HRM...

DROP YOUR KATANA, HAJIME.

DROP YOUR GUNS, STAGE 4.

I CAN'T THINK OF A GOOD PLAN ...

IT'S NO USE ...

...

HURRY UP!!

HEH...

ONE STEP EACH.

ALL RIGHT, RED.

KRIK

WHO

SHH - - -

THE VIRUS WILL SPREAD ...

PEOPLE WILL DIE...

WHOOSH

CRK

CRK

WHAT CAN I DO...?

WHOOO

PLEASE, PLEASE, DON'T GO!!

DON'T GO...

NOOOOOOOO!!

NO! NO...

SHUT HER UP!

THAT RED ARROW'S WORKING DOUBLE-TIME.

IF YOU DIE, I... I...

P-PLEASE, MISS CAT-EARS.

ISN'T THAT RIGHT, MISS CAT-EARS?

NO. WE CAN'T ALLOW HUNDREDS OF THOUSANDS TO DIE, EITHER...

GLARE

IT IS M-MADNESS... TO THROW AWAY YOUR LIFE FOR S-STRANGERS...

ONE'S LIFE SH-SHOULD ONLY BE RISKED FOR L-LOVED ONES!

...EVEN IF IT IS TH-THOUSANDS OF THEM.

TH... THEN WHAT SHOULD WE...?

GNORP

HUH?!

...I JUST DON'T WANT RED TO DIE!!

I... I DON'T KNOW... BUT...

I DON'T KNOW.

WHOOO

I REALLY DO...

THE ARROW DOESN'T MATTER!

BUT THIS IS THE RIGHT CHOICE... YOU WOULD UNDERSTAND IF YOU WEREN'T AFFECTED BY THE RED ARROW...

THANK YOU.

IT'S NOT GUARANTEED THAT SHE'S GOING TO KILL ME.

TST...

...

BUT SHE WOULDN'T BE ALL BENT OUT OF SHAPE AND CRYING IF IT WASN'T FOR THE RED ARROW, RIGHT?

KAKE-
HASHI,
NO...!!

KEEP
THAT
BRAIN
WORKING...
THINK!

SHIT!

THINK!!

THAT'S NOT WHAT I SHOULD BE THINKING ABOUT NOW.

I'VE GOT TO STICK UP FOR ALL LIFE, TO FIND A WAY FOR NO ONE TO DIE...

I CAN'T GIVE UP, NOT UNTIL THE VERY END ...

SHOULD MY OWN LIFE BE THE MOST IMPORTANT THING TO ME?

PEOPLE CAN'T BE HAPPY IF THEY'RE DEAD...

THAT THING THAT HAJIME SAID...

I DON'T KNOW THE ANSWER...

NO... IF I CAN SAVE MANY LIVES BY GIVING UP MY OWN...

BUT...

HOW CAN WE PREVENT THE VIRUS FROM DEPLOYING?

IF SHE DIES, IT AUTOMATICALLY EJECTS. WE CAN'T KILL HER. SO HOW DO WE PREVENT HER FROM PRESSING THE SWITCH?

CONVINCE HER TO SEE THE ERROR OF HER WAYS?

THAT'S A PIPE DREAM. AND POLIMAN'S GOT RED ARROWS.

ONE MORE METER.

FORGET BEING A CANDIDATE... ALL I N-NEED IS TO BE WITH HER...

TWO MORE METERS.

THAT'S IT. GOOD BOY.

AND THEN WE GO IN ORDER AFTER HIM...

THIS IS BAD! HE'S GOING TO DIE!

I MUST ESCAPE... WITH CAT-EARS...

...THE WOMAN'S ARROW LOSES POWER...

IF WE CAN KILL METRO-POLIMAN...

WHO?

DAMN... DAMN! WHAT CAN WE...

AND I'M SURE TESTING IT ON PEOPLE WAS HER HEARTFELT DESIRE TO BEGIN WITH...

NO, WAIT... HIS SUIT WILL DEFLECT SWORDS AND BULLETS...

DON'T GET SCARED AND FLY OFF TO SAFETY.

DEATH

...

STOP.

WHOOO

I WANT TO SEE.

I WANT TO SEE IT.

THE WAY YOU DISSOLVE...

PLIT...

...

!

WHA...

WINGS!!

HIT IT!!

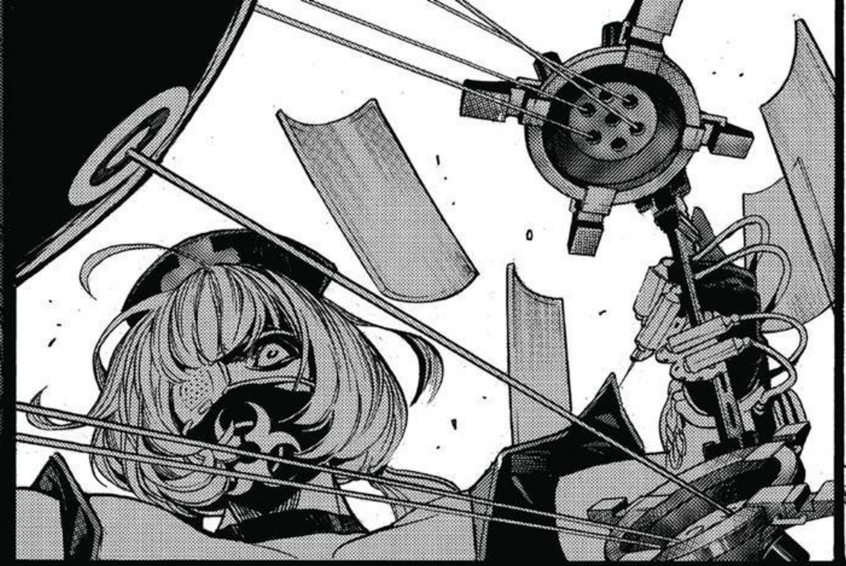
OH NO... WE'VE GOT TO...! RUN...

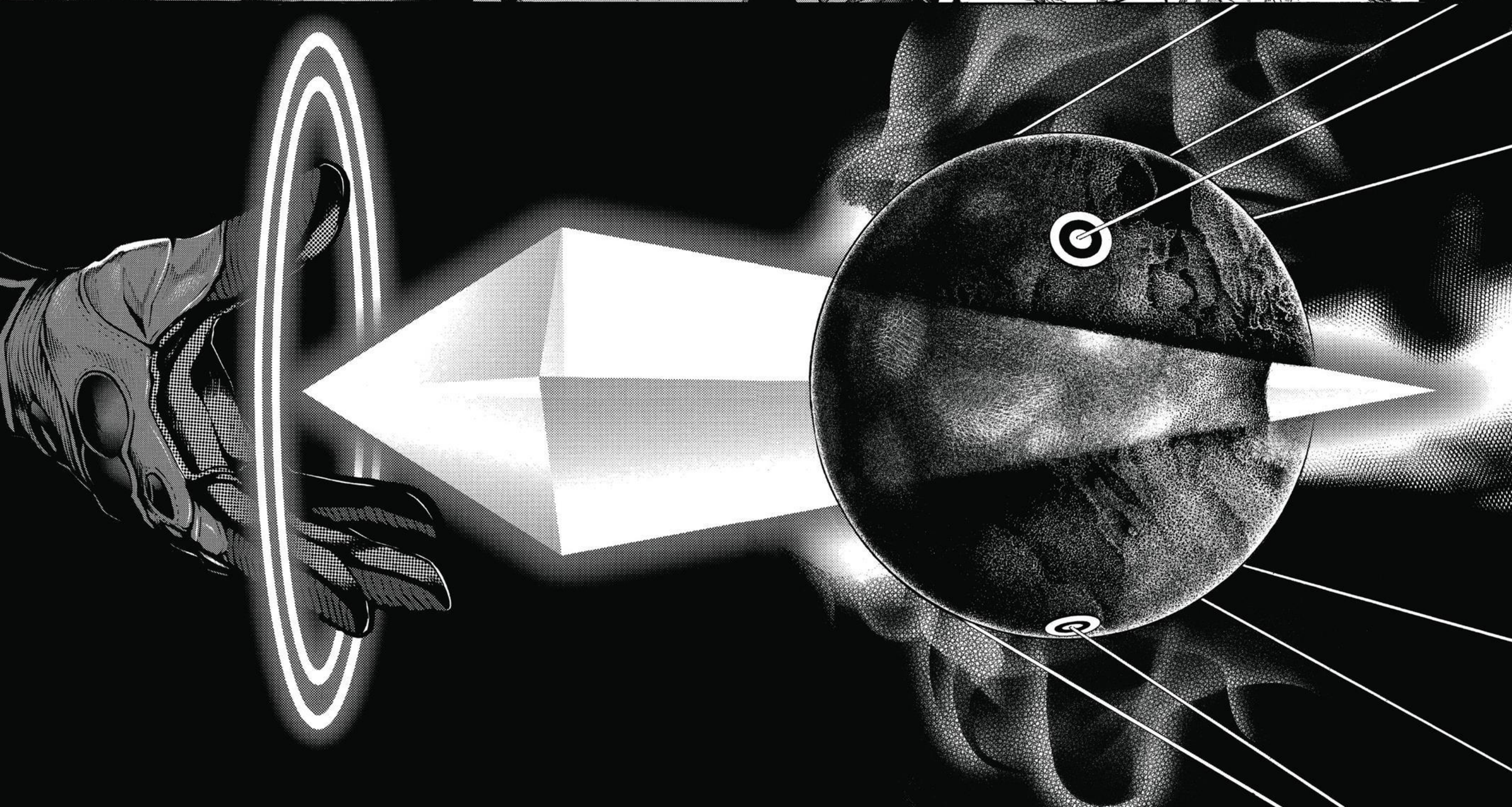
IF HE TRIES...

...I PRESS IT...

...TO RESIST...

!





HOW DID HE THINK OF...?

IF IT WAS CONSTRUCTED WITH CELLS TAKEN FROM HUMAN BEINGS, IT CAN MOST CERTAINLY PERISH.

KRIK...

KRAK...

KAKEHASHI...

YOU DID IT...

AND THE ARROW PASSES THROUGH WITHOUT BREAKING THE GLASS, SO NONE OF THE VIRUS ESCAPED.

FSHHH

KRIK...

KRAK...

HE USED A WHITE ARROW... ON THE VIRUS...

THAT'S RIGHT, THE VIRUS IS DEAD.

IT'S DEAD.

IT'S CHANGING COLOR...

BOTH AT THE TOWER, AND AT THE MIRROR HOUSE...

NO, YOUR FIXATION ON NOT KILLING ANYONE WORKED...

YOUR FIXATION ON LIFE...

FINISH IT!

THE VIRUS IS DEAD!

KAKAHASHI...

NOT SUITED FOR BATTLE? NOTHING COULD BE FURTHER FROM THE TRUTH...

KAKAHASHI...

PLIP

PLIP

PLOP

TO BE CONTINUED...

T s ug u mi **O**h b **a**

Born in Tokyo, Tsugumi Ohba is the author of the hit series *Death Note* and *Bakuman。*.

Ta **k** e **s h** i O b a **t**a

Takeshi Obata was born in 1969 in Niigata, Japan, and first achieved international recognition as the artist of the wildly popular *Shonen Jump* title *Hikaru no Go*, which won the 2003 Tezuka Osamu Cultural Prize: Shinsei "New Hope" Award and the 2000 Shogakukan Manga Award. He went on to illustrate the smash hit *Death Note* as well as the hugely successful manga *Bakuman。* and *All You Need Is Kill*.

PLATINVM END

VOLUME 6
SHONEN JUMP Manga Edition

°

STORY Tsugumi Ohba
ART Takeshi Obata

°

TRANSLATION Stephen Paul
TOUCH-UP ART & LETTERING James Gaubatz
DESIGN Shawn Carrico
EDITOR Alexis Kirsch

°

ORIGINAL COVER DESIGN Narumi Noriko

°

PLATINUM END © 2015 by Tsugumi Ohba, Takeshi Obata
All rights reserved.
First published in Japan in 2015 by SHUEISHA Inc., Tokyo.
English translation rights arranged by SHUEISHA Inc.

°

The stories, characters and incidents mentioned in this publication are entirely fictional.

No portion of this book may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means without written permission from the copyright holders.

°

Printed in the U.S.A.

Published by VIZ Media, LLC
P.O. Box 77010
San Francisco, CA 94107

°

10 9 8 7 6 5 4 3 2 1
First printing, August 2018

VIZ MEDIA
viz.com

SHONEN JUMP
shonenjump.com

ratings.viz.com
RATED M MATURE

PARENTAL ADVISORY
PLATINUM END is rated M for Mature and is recommended for mature readers.
This volume contains suggestive themes.

7

PLATINUM END

STORY
TSUGUMI
OHBA

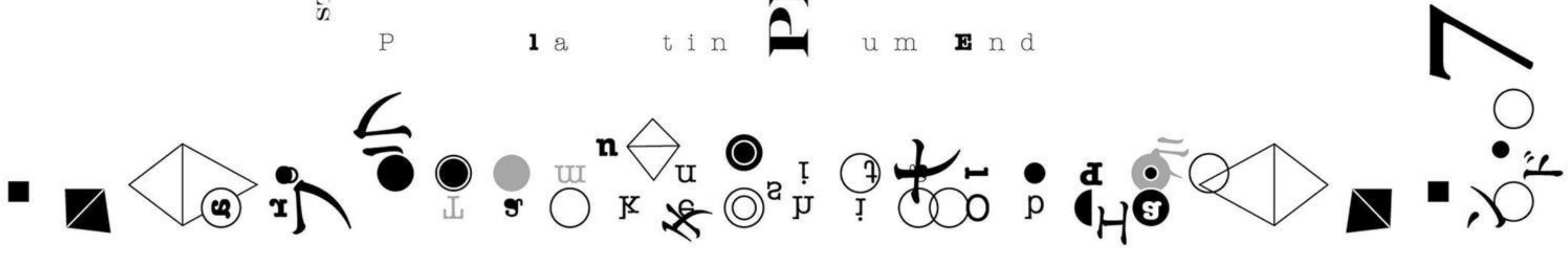
ART
TAKESHI
OBATA

PARENTAL ADVISORY
EXPLICIT
CONTENT

PLATINUM END

ART Takeshi Obata

STORY Tsugumi Ohba



CHARACTERS

Kanade Uryu

Grandson of the Joso Academy headmaster, son of the Joso Industries president. He assumes the form of the Metropoliman character and purges the other god candidates.

Meyza

The special-rank angel who chose Kanade. For unknown reasons, she was elevated from rankless to the top special rank.

Balta

The first-rank angel who chose Hajime. The Angel of Intuition.

Hajime Sokotani

Got plastic surgery after he became a god candidate. He idolizes Metropoliman and offers to be his servant.

Baret

The first-rank angel who chose Mukaido. Possesses great knowledge about the celestial world.

CHARACTERS

Mirai Kakehashi

First-year high school student. His parents and brother died in an accident when he was seven. After a painful life with his abusive relatives, he attempts to commit suicide and survives through Nasse's help.

Nasse

A special-rank angel who wants to bring happiness to Mirai's life. Bright and bubbly.

Nanato Mukaido

An apparel company employee who leaves work due to late-stage cancer. A family man with a wife and kid.

Revel

A second-rank angel who chose Saki as his god candidate.

Saki Hanakago

Mirai's old friend and fellow student. The object of his affections.

Story

FACE OFF

They escape through the gash created by Hajime's katana. But then Metropoliman appears with some companions...

ESCAPE

Saki finds the chance to hit Hajime with a red arrow. He turns his katana on the building where Mirai and Mukaido are trapped.

ANGEL TEARS

Revel sheds tears for the first time as an angel when he sees Saki blaming herself. He gets promoted to the first-rank Angel of Emotion.

Story

"My time has come. I leave the seat of god to the next human.
To a younger, fresher power.

The next god shall be chosen from the 13 humans chosen by you 13 angels.When the chosen human is made the next god, your angelic duty is finished,and you may live beside that god in peace.

You have 999 days remaining..."

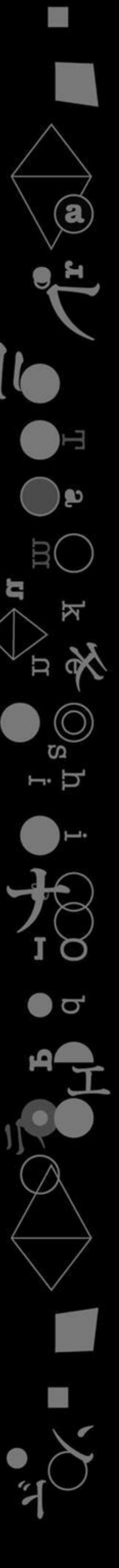
CONTENTS

#20 A Fine Line Between Offense and Defense P5

#21 Their Choices P55

#22 Eternal Beauty P101

#23 World Peace P145



FINISH IT!!

FISH

HH

20 A Fine Line Between Offense and Defense

FINISH...

PLIK

PLIT...

WITH... WHITE?

DA-BUMP

AS LONG AS YOU HAVE HER BY THE ARM, KOHINATA CANNOT ESCAPE THE WHITE ARROW!

NOW'S OUR CHANCE!

HE CAN CARRY ONE PERSON WITH HIS WINGS, BUT IF WE ATTEMPT TO INTER-FERE, WHO KNOWS WHAT THEY'LL TRY?!

LISTEN TO ME! THIS IS ALL UP TO RED!

...TO TAKE ADVANTAGE OF THIS OPPOR-TUNITY!

THIS IS THE ONLY MOMENT WE HAVE ...

WHATEVER YOU DO, DON'T LET GO!

SHE'S GOT TO HAVE MORE OF THAT VIRUS HIDDEN AWAY SOME-WHERE!

I'M SORRY. I KNOW I TOLD YOU THAT I WOULDN'T ORDER YOU TO USE YOUR WHITE ARROWS...

HEF

HEF

BUT YOU'RE THE ONLY CHANCE WE'VE GOT...

...

KAKEHASHI HAS NO CHOICE BUT TO KILL HER...?

OH NO...

...

W-WHICH IS WHY...

...WE HAVE TO KILL HER... NOW.

GFHK!

HUFF! HUFF!

HMPH.

OF COURSE I DO.

DO YOU STILL HAVE MORE, FUYUKO?

THIS IS GOOD.

NOW HE CANNOT AFFORD TO LET GO.

HEE HEE ...

CLOCK IN, CLOCK OUT-- A VERY NORMAL LIFE.

YES.

BY THE WAY, FUYUKO, YOU WORKED AT A PHARMACEUTICAL RESEARCH COMPANY, RIGHT?

AS AN OFFICE WORKER.

IF I HADN'T BEEN DEALING IN DRUGS AND VIRUSES...

...I MIGHT HAVE HAD A... NORMAL... KIND OF HAPPINESS. EVEN MARRIAGE...

OH WELL...

HAPPINESS...

GAH!

DAM-MIT!

HUEE!

HUEE!

DON'T LET THEM DISTRACT YOU! SHE'S A TERROR-IST!

PLEASE! YOU'RE THE ONLY ONE WHO CAN DO IT!

WE HAVE TO STOP THEM! RIGHT HERE! RIGHT NOW!

MR. MUKAIDO...

KWING

DON'T HESI-TATE!

USE YOUR WHITE AR-ROW...

...

EVERY HUMAN BEING LIVES FOR THE SAKE OF BEING HAPPIER...

EVERY HUMAN BEING IS BORN FOR THE SAKE OF BEING HAPPY.

DUB DUB DUMP

IF I DON'T KILL HER, PEOPLE WILL DIE.

BUTooo BUT WHAT SHOULD I DO...?

LIKE... KILL SOME-ONE?

THE ONE THING ABOVE ALL ELSE THAT A HUMAN BEING SHOULD NEVER DO.

I WANT YOU TO LEAD A VERY HAPPY LIFE, MIRAI.

IN OTHER WORDS, UNLESS EVERYONE IS HAPPY, YOU CANNOT HONESTLY BE HAPPY YOURSELF.

UNLESS YOU'RE HAPPY, YOU CANNOT HONESTLY CELEBRATE THE HAP-PINESS OF OTHERS.

I CAN'T JUST KILL SOMEONE...

AND YET, IF I DON'T KILL THIS ONE PERSON, THE HAPPINESS OF THOUSANDS WILL BE RIPPED AWAY...

WHOOSH

HE'S FIGHTING ...

WHAT IS RED DOING ...?

F- FIGHTING ...? HOW ...?

...WITH HIMSELF ...

HE'S LOCKED IN BATTLE...

EVERYONE'S HAPPINESS. MR. MUKAIDO'S HAPPINESS... SAKI'S HAPPINESS... EVEN THIS WOMAN DESERVES HAPPINESS...

SO... WHAT ABOUT MINE...?

...WITH ...HIM-SELF ...

IN BATTLE ...

WHOOSH

THEY'RE PLANNING SOMETHING ...?

...?

I COULD ASK YOU THE SAME THING ...

I'M WAITING FOR THE BOSS'S ORDERS.

HE STUCK A RED ARROW IN YOU. HOW COME YOU'RE NOT ACTING ON HIS ORDERS?

ZMMF

I CAN'T ... DAMN!

HUFF!

SSOOSH

... HOLD OUT.

HUFF!

DID HE FINALLY KICK THE BUCKET?

MR. MUKAI-DO!

AK

HUFF!

HUFF!

HUFF!!

SH

ARE YOU KID-DING?

HUFF!!

KRRD

HUFF!
HUFF!
HUFF!
HUFF!
HUFF!
HOW-EVER ...
THAT'S RIGHT.
DIDN'T YOU SAY THAT YOUR-SELF?
ANYONE WITH WINGS CAN EASILY DODGE THAT THING.
...
HA HA. YOU THINK SO?
IN THAT SENSE, IT'S STILL EFFECTIVE...
HAVING IT POINTED AT YOU FORCES YOU TO PAY ATTENTION.
HUFF!
HUFF!
HUFF!

...

DO IT...

...OR PULL THE TRIGGER ANYMORE...

I DON'T HAVE THE STRENGTH TO STAY AIRBORNE...

...

DID THAT... FOOL HIM?

...KAKE ...HASHI ...

HUEE!

HUEE!

HUEE!

HUEE!

!

I WANT TO SEE HER AND METRO-POLIMAN DIE WITH MY OWN EYES!!

PLEASE FINISH THEM OFF!!

WELL SAID, MUKAIDO.

THIS WILL FURTHER TANGLE RED IN HIS MORAL QUANDARY, LEAVING HIM HELPLESS.

HE IS NOT YET ABLE TO SUMMON THE DETERMINATION TO KILL KOHINATA. IN FACT, HE NEVER WILL.

NOR WILL HE BE ABLE TO LET GO.

THE CONDITIONS ARE RIPE.

KI

ZRRP

METRO-POLIMAN SUMMONED A WHITE ARROW!

HA HA ...

?!

DA-

DA-

DA-BUM

WHAT CAN HE DO FROM THAT DISTANCE?!

HE'S ATTACHED TWO ARROWS TOGETHER. THAT MEANS IT'LL REACH RED!

...

WELL? WHAT WILL YOU DO NOW?

WHY ISN'T HE JUST SHOOTING IT...?

?!

EP.11 P

WHITE!

OH, SO NOW YOU'RE GOING TO KILL ME?

YOU SHUT UP!

NO! PIERCE HER NOW!

...TO DE-FLECT ...

IT'S... ONLY...

PIERCE HER!!

ARE YOU FAMILIAR WITH THE LAW OF INERTIA?

AS LONG AS YOU'RE HOLDING ON TO HER, IT DOESN'T MATTER WHICH OF YOU FLIES-- IT'S STILL A ONE-ON-ONE SITUATION.

IT'S OKAY, YOU DON'T NEED TO UNDER-STAND THAT.

THE SIGNAL!

SHE'S
UNDER
ARREST
BRRR
BRRR
BRR

OH NO !!

KAKE-HASHI!

TIME TO MELT.

BUT, HE'S UNABLE TO USE HIS ARROW OR LET GO OF HER.

I WAS HOPING, IN THE MOMENT THAT HE GRABBED HER ARM, THAT THEY'D SHOOT EACH OTHER WITH SYRINGE AND WHITE ARROW.

...BUT SOME MENTAL INTERFERENCE WILL ENSURE HE CANNOT REACT IN TIME.

THERE ARE THREE SYRINGES, MORE THAN ONE HAND COULD NORMALLY BLOCK...

SO WHEN KOHINATA LETS THE SYRINGES LOOSE, THAT FORCES HIS FREE RIGHT HAND TO REACT TO THEM.

THE ARROW IS FIRST!!

MISS CAT-EARS!

!

SWAK

NOOO!!

SLIMM

!

THE WHITE ARROW ....!

!

WHIP

WHIP

SAK-!

I WON'T LET YOU DIE.

...TO COME AFTER ME!

IT CHANGED DIRECTION...

RGH ...

HEH.

I CAN CARRY SAKI ON HER OWN.

SHOULD I...?

IF I LET GO OF KOHINATA'S HAND...

OH NO.

SHE'LL DIE!!

NOOO!

I DON'T HAVE ENOUGH TIME!

HOH

KI

AI

DOZ

HAJIME!

THE SECOND ONE.

I CAN DO IT!

ONE MORE LEFT...

...AND KILL IT!

I'LL SLICE...

SHUK

BUP

BUP

BUP

BUP

AH...

SPLURK

AHHH!!

AAAH!

!!

SLURP

OOOH, LOOK AT IT *DRIP!*

YES! *YES!*

HUH?

WHAT IS... THIS?

GAK!!

... SHIT ...

THIS IS BULL...

GIK

GAK

TW

IK

MISS ...

MISS CAT-EARS.

A-
ARE
YOU...
OKAY
...?

...

FSSHHH

SHLUP

SHLUP

I'M...
S-SO
GLAD...

BLOP

BLORP

I
WAS...
U-USE-
FUL.

I S-
SAVED
MISS
CAT-
EARS...

I WAS ...

I... I...

SHULK

...

...AND H-HIDEOUS...

GLURP

SHULK

I WAS BORN... P-POOR...

SH

BECAUSE NOW...

I'M GLAD I MET YOU, MISS CAT-EARS.

BUT... BUT...

SPLAT

KWIIIIII

...I AM HAPPY!

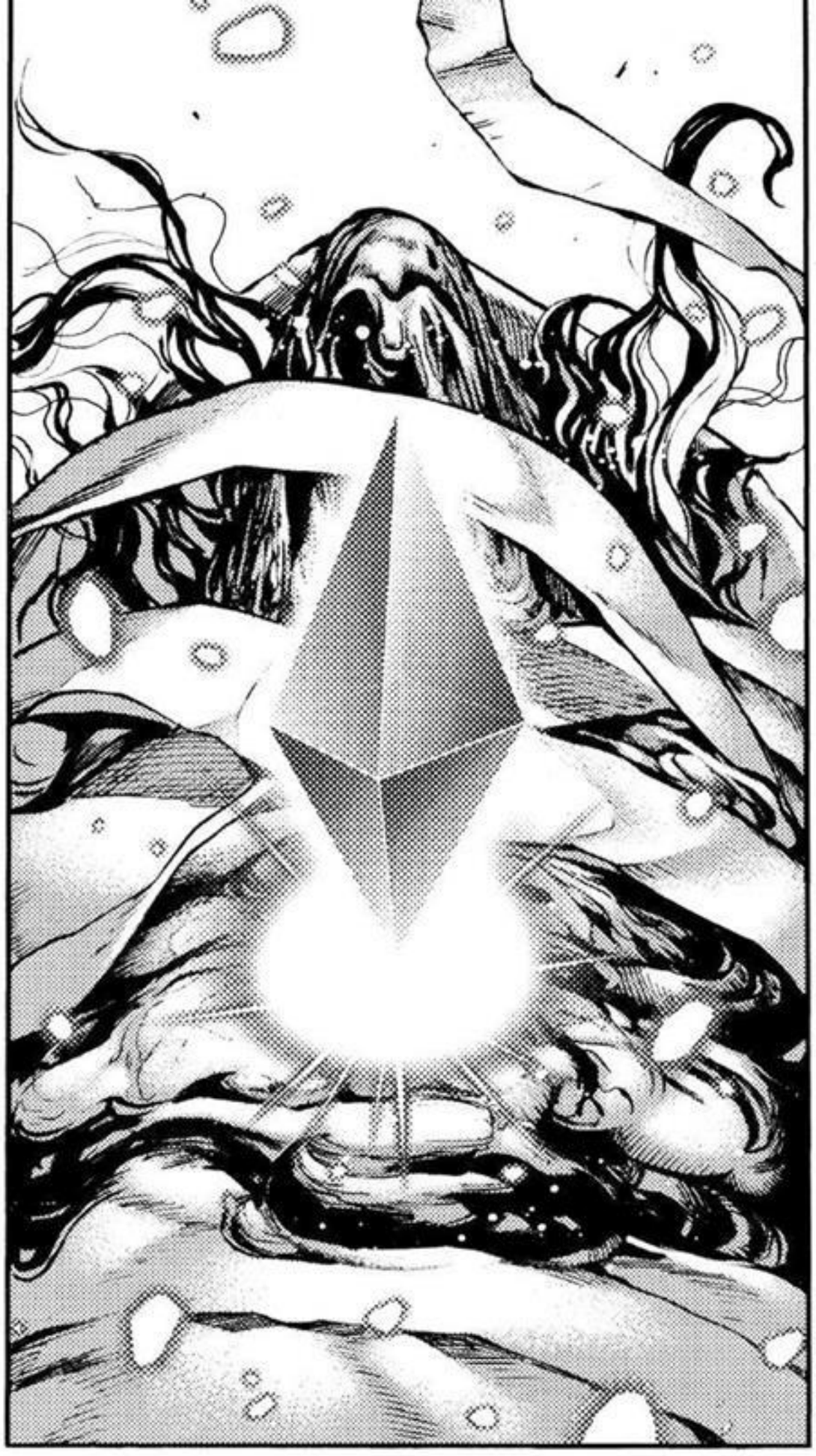
YOU ...

... PROTECTED ME...

I'M...

I'M GLAD I WAS BORN...

#21 Their Choices

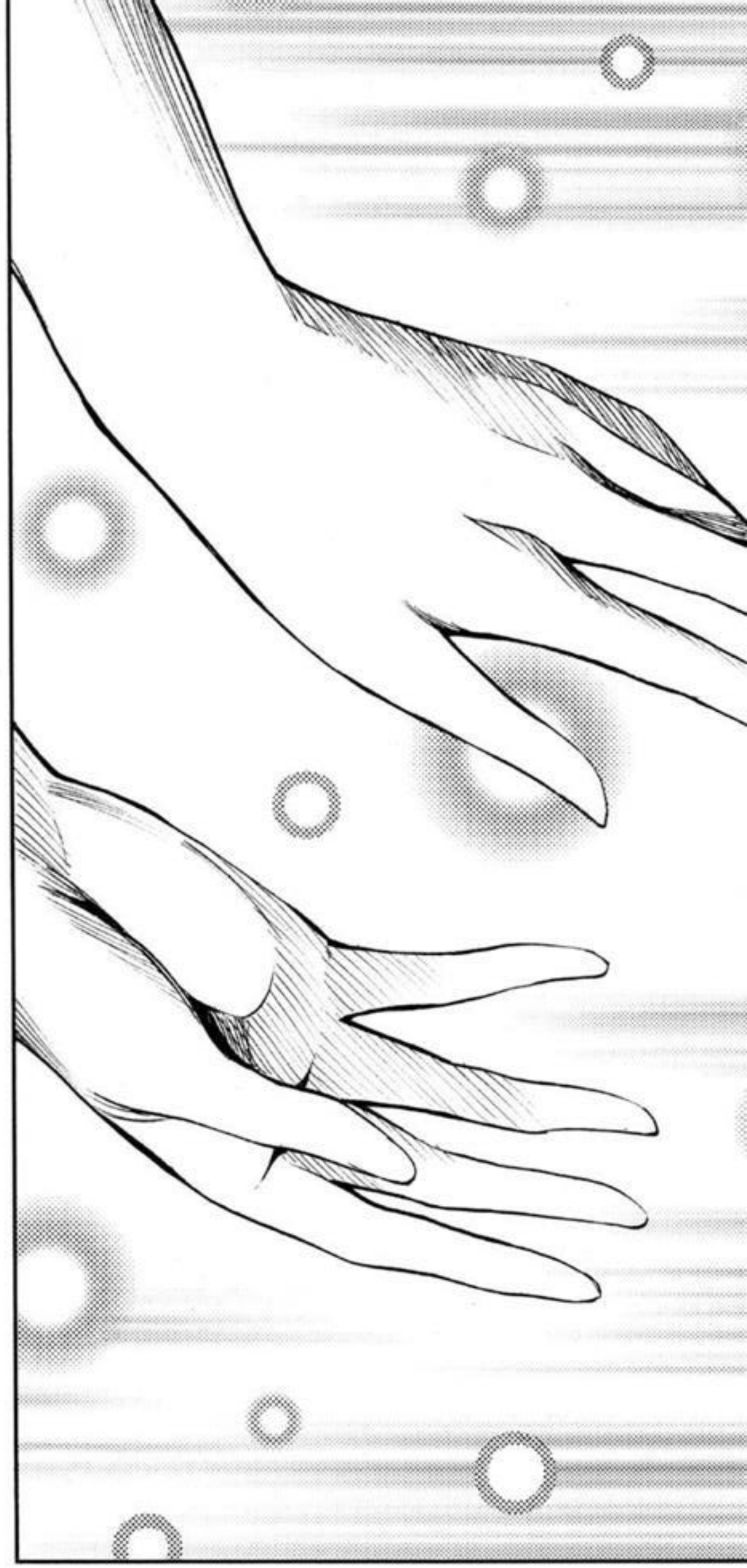


YOU...
YOU
PROTECTED
FOR ME...

KSHH

...

SSHH



CLINK

CLINK

HERE YOU ARE, MISS YELLOW.

AND DON'T FORGET THIS.

SHING!!

THE RED ARROW I USED ON HIM...

HMPH.

I THINK THE GREATEST SALVATION FOR HAJIME SOKOTANI IS THAT HE DIED IN THE HAPPIEST WAY HE POSSIBLY COULD HAVE.

WELL, THAT WAS ENTERTAINING. A WHOLE HOST OF IDIOTS WILLING TO DIE FOR OTHERS THROUGH THE COMPULSION OF THE RED ARROW.

I'M ACTUALLY QUITE GRATEFUL THAT HAJIME DIED, IN FACT.

IF YOU WANT TO THANK ANYONE, THANK RED.

HAJIME DIED BECAUSE YOU COULDN'T MAKE THE DECISION TO KILL KOHINATA ALREADY.

...HAJIME WOULD BE...

IF I HAD KILLED KOHINATA

...

N-NO... YOU'RE WRONG...

YOU TWO KILLED HAJIME! SO I SHOULD BE THANKING *YOU!*

IN FACT, HE DIED PROTECTING YELLOW. YOU PEOPLE MIGHT AS WELL HAVE MURDERED HIM.

NEITHER RED NOR YELLOW... HAS ANY NEED... TO BLAME THEMSELVES...

HUEF!

HUEF!

THE ONLY ONE WHO WANTS DEATH AND IS CONTRIBUTING TO IT... IS YOU, METRO-POLIMAN.

N-NOBODY... WANTS TO KILL... ANYONE.

HUEF!

HUEF!

HUEF!

NO... THAT'S NOT TRUE...

IT'S NOT ABOUT WHOEVER'S FAULT IT IS.

IT'S NOT TRUE...

I FEEL SAD... THAT HAJIME DIED...

THAT'S NOT THE POINT, EITHER...

HE DIED IN A HAPPY WAY...?

P... PEOPLE...

IN FACT... IT'S SAD WHEN *ANYONE* DIES, PERIOD...

PEOPLE ARE SUPPOSED TO *LIVE*. THAT'S WHY TAKING THEIR LIVES IS NOT ACCEPTABLE.

HOW SICKENING CAN YOU GET?

...

HEY, IT'S NOT LIKE THERE'S A TIME LIMIT ON THIS.

YOU'RE PRETTY LAZY FOR AN ANGEL, HUH?

MAYBE I'LL STICK AROUND TO WATCH UNTIL THEY'RE DONE.

HMM, THIS IS INTER-ESTING.

KSH

FWUF---

...

RIGHT?

I FEEL SAD... TOO...

...

BOTH KOHINATA AND HAJIME WERE YOUR PARTNERS. AND YET YOU TREAT THEM LIKE--

FOR ONE THING, THEY WEREN'T MY PARTNERS. THEY WERE TWO IDIOTS WHO ARE DEAD NOW.

I'M *ESPECIALLY* GLAD THAT HAJIME'S GONE.

AFTER HE BEGGED TO BE MY SERVANT, I LOOKED INTO HIM.

I COM-PLETELY *HATE* GUYS LIKE HIM.

WHAT A MISERABLE CREEP.

NO MONEY, NO EDUCATION, NO FRIENDS.

A PARENT WHO DIDN'T WORK, JUST DRANK AND GAMBLED.

RAISED IN A CARDBOARD SHACK UNDER THE BRIDGE.

JUST ABSOLUTE BOTTOM RUNG.

A DISGUSTING CREEP WHO HAD TO HIDE HIS UGLINESS IN THE SHADOWS AND COULD ONLY PEEK AT THE GIRLS IN CLASS WHEN THEY WEREN'T LOOKING.

TOTALLY IGNORED IN SCHOOL.

YOU KNOW, THOSE FILTHY, NASTY THINGS THAT SPEND ALL OF THEIR TIME SCUTTLING AROUND IN THE GARBAGE.

HE REMINDED ME OF SOMETHING.

A TOTAL GARBAGE PERSON WHO WAS DESTINED TO LEAD A MISERABLE LIFE NO MATTER HOW HARD HE TRIED.

COCK-ROACHES!!

THOSE THINGS THAT EVERYONE WANTS TO KILL, YOU KNOW?

AM I RIGHT? HE'S A COCK-ROACH!

OR ARE YOU ONE OF THOSE BLEEDING HEARTS WHO CAN'T EVEN KILL A ROACH?

AREN'T WE ALL BETTER OFF WITH HIM DEAD?

I DON'T KILL THEM JUST FOR THE SAKE OF IT.

GRRR

THE REVERSE?

?

IT'S THE RE-VERSE.

I BET YOUR FELLOW SQUAD MATES JUST *LOVE* THAT.

SO YOU'RE A SOLDIER WHO CAN'T EVEN KILL A BUG IN A WAR.

WORDS WILL NEVER MAKE HIM CHANGE HIS WAYS.

HFF!

YOU'RE... WASTING YOUR TIME, RED.

HFF!

...

KOFF!

HE'S... A...

KOFF!

GAHK

...

BLGH

...

ZMMF

MR. MUKAI-DO!

TWITCH

TWITCH

ジリリリ

GO... BACK...

!

I'M TAKING YOU TO A HOSPITAL, MR. MU-KAIDO!

SHIK

...

I NEED... TO SEE HIM DIE FIRST...

KWIK

HERE, TAKE GREEN.

HE CAN'T FLY ON HIS OWN.

SHHH

ZMF

HUFF!

HUFF!

METRO-POLIMAN... THE COWARD ALWAYS WAITS... TO GO LAST...

CLANK...

NEXT UP IS THAT BOY BEHIND YOU...

YOU WANT TO FORCE OUR PACIFIST RED TO BATTLE THAT UNARMED BOY TO THE DEATH... THAT'S EXACTLY THE SORT OF THING YOU'D COME UP WITH.

THAT'S RIGHT!

...

HAH... THAT'S QUITE AN ACCUSATION.

...AND HE'LL STAND BACK AND LAUGH ABOUT IT.

SHIVER

SHIVER

HE'S THE KIND OF GUY WHO WILL MAKE A KID LIKE ME FIGHT...

RATTLE

RATTLE

WHETHER I WIN OR I LOSE...

...I'M JUST GOING TO BE LEFT FOR DEAD LIKE THE OTHER TWO...

WHAT ARE YOU TALKING ABOUT?

HEY.

?

I WON'T! I DON'T WANNA DIE!! I'M GONNA RUN AWAY CUZ I'M SCARED !!!

I'M NOT GOING TO FIGHT!

...

STAY BACK! DON'T KILL ME!

WAAAH!

WAAAH! NO!

HEY!

MOMMY!

NO! NO!

WHOOP

GUK

STOP HORSING AROUND!

NYAAH!

SHM

?

...

HEH!

TSK.

ALL THESE IDIOTS...

A DREG OF SOCIETY MADE UP WITH PLASTIC SURGERY.

A MUSCLE-BOUND MORON WITH A MILITARY FETISH.

AN INSANE, SADISTIC JUNKIE.

AND A COWARDLY LITTLE CHILD.

PLUS A FLIGHTLESS GEEZER WHO NEEDS MEDICAL ASSISTANCE AND A LITTLE KITTEN HELPER WITH NO USEFUL SKILLS.

I GUESS IT'S JUST A ONE-ON-ONE BETWEEN ME AND THE GUY WHO THINKS HE'S A SAINT.

LET'S FIGHT.

ABOUT TIME!

...

I TOLD YOU, IT'S THE REVERSE.

YOU CAN'T USE WHITE ARROWS OR EVEN SQUISH A BUG...

DON'T GET EXCITED NOW.

YOU THINK YOU'RE SOME KIND OF PROUD, MIGHTY, SUPERIOR HUMAN BEING...

...BUT COCK-ROACHES DON'T KILL PEOPLE.

YOU'RE LESS THAN A COCK-ROACH.

NO...

AND THAT MEANS YOU'LL BE ABLE TO KILL ME?

IS *THAT* THE RATIONALE YOU'RE GOING TO USE?

HA HA!

I SERIOUSLY DON'T GET YOU.

GRR!

I WON'T.

I TRIED TO THINK OF THE BEST WAY TO DO THIS.

...AND THEN RECEIVE YOUR DUE PUNISHMENT UNDER THE LAW.

...

PIERCE YOU WITH A RED ARROW, THEN BLINDFOLD YOU, THROW YOU IN JAIL, HAVE YOU CONFESS ALL YOUR CRIMES...

PFFT!

I FEEL BAD ABOUT IT, BUT IT'S THE ONLY WAY.

THAT'S THE BEST YOU COULD COME UP WITH?!

THIS STUFF IS MAGICAL! IT'S COMPLETELY UNREAL! HOW IS A SYSTEM OF LAW GOING TO DISPENSE JUSTICE ON *THAT*?!

ARE YOU GOING TO PROVE THE EXISTENCE OF ANGELS? "OH YEAH, WE USE RED ARROWS TO CONTROL PEOPLE'S MINDS AND WHITE ARROWS TO KILL THEM"?

WHY DON'T YOU GET IT?

I WON'T KILL YOU.

JUST USE A WHITE ARROW TO KILL ME!

THE WHITE ARROW IS CLEAN, SIMPLE AND GUARAN-TEED!!

THIS WILL MAKE ME HAPPIER.

YOU CANNOT FIND YOUR OWN HAPPINESS AFTER THAT.

I THINK A NORMAL PERSON IN HIS RIGHT MIND WOULD GRAPPLE WITH HIS CONSCIENCE UNTIL HIS DYING DAY IF HE COMMITTED MURDER.

HA HA HA! A SUB-ROACH!

AND I REFUSE TO LOSE MY HAPPINESS OVER KILLING A SUB-ROACH THING LIKE YOU.

KWOOO

...I CAN FINISH HIM OFF AFTER THAT.

IF YOU HIT HIM WITH THE RED...

I'LL DO THE DIRTY WORK ...

HEH.

HEH...

SKRSH

YES... THAT'S IT, RED...

I'M SORRY, MR. MUKAIDO.

...IS KILLING HIM WITH MY OWN TWO HANDS.

THEN MY HAPPINESS ...

IF NOT KILLING HIM IS WHAT MAKES YOU HAPPY...

I UNDER-
STAND IT.

ACTUALLY
...

I DON'T
SUPPOSE YOU'D
SEE EYE TO EYE
WITH ME ON THAT,
THOUGH...

...LET'S DANCE!!

YOUR RED! MY WHITE! UNTIL ONE OF THEM HITS THE TARGET...

ALL RIGHT.

NOD

IT'S THE PEOPLE LIKE YOU, WHO FIGHT ON NOTHING BUT EMOTION AND MOMENTUM, THAT DIE FIRST.

...I'LL TAKE THAT SUIT OFF YOUR HANDS AFTER I KILL YOU.

LIKE I SAID...

DO YOU REMEMBER MY PROMISE?

THE ONES WHO ARE PATIENT AND METHODICAL SURVIVE TO THE END.

THAT'S RIGHT.

I'LL USE WHITE, AND YOU'LL USE RED. A ONE-ON-ONE FIGHT, FAIR AND SQUARE.

IS THAT RIGHT?

#22 Eternal Beauty

THAT'S THE LAST PHRASE I'D EXPECT OUT OF ***YOUR*** MOUTH.

FAIR AND SQUARE ...?

OOOH

HOW ABOUT WE SET UP SOME SIMPLE RULES?

BUT ARROWS CAN BE EVADED THROUGH FLIGHT.

...

DON'T DO IT, RED. DON'T TRUST HIM.

...

FINE, *YOU* CAN LAY DOWN THE GROUND RULES.

I CAN DO IT MY WAY...?

YEAH.

SO IT'S UP TO YOU.

I'M NOT GOING TO BOTHER SUGGESTING ANYTHING, SINCE YOU WON'T TRUST ME.

ASSUMING YOU CAN COME UP WITH SOMETHING.

?

WE STAND STILL AND TAKE TURNS FIRING ARROWS.

...

THAT'S RIGHT.

SO WE HAVE TO HAVE OUR FEET ON THE GROUND, WITHIN THE ARROW'S RANGE, AND TAKE TURNS SHOOTING?

IF YOU EVADE, THEN YOU TRADE OFF AT A CLOSER DISTANCE...

SO ONE PERSON SHOOTS, AND THE OTHER DODGES.

SHH

NOT A BAD SUGGESTION FOR AN IDIOT.

HMPH.

...

THAT'S RIGHT.

SAME THING GOES FOR YOUR DYING FRIEND AND THE CAT GIRL.

AND WE CAN HAVE OUR ANGELS AT OUR BACKS?

RIGHT. WHO KNOWS WHAT YOUR LACKEY WHO FLEW AWAY MIGHT TRY.

...

WHOOSH

FAIR AND SQUARE? ONE-ON-ONE?

WHITE VERSUS RED...

HEADS, I GO FIRST. TAILS, IT'S YOU.

WHAT-EVER.

WE'LL FLIP FOR ORDER.

...SHS

II

PI-

1

NG

!

KING

HE DE-FLECTED IT!

SHM

PLOP

JUST A LITTLE WARM-UP TO TEST YOUR RE-FLEXES.

...

GO AHEAD-- YOU FIRST.

WSH!

STEP ON UP AND TAKE YOUR SHOT.

COME THREE METERS CLOSER... NO, BETTER MAKE IT FIVE.

SHIKI

KING

WHAT?

YOU USED YOUR ARROW, RATHER THAN FLYING...?

SHM

!

!

WASN'T THE PART ABOUT KEEPING OUR FEET ON THE GROUND MEANT TO ENSURE THAT THERE WOULD BE A PROPER END TO THE DUEL?

IF I COULD JUST FLY OUT OF THE WAY, WHAT WOULD BE THE POINT OF THE DUEL?

ARE YOU KIDDING? WHY DID YOU COME UP WITH THAT RULE?

WAIT, ARE YOU SAYING YOU DIDN'T EVEN THINK IT THROUGH THAT FAR?

...

OR DID YOU THINK THAT YOU WERE THE ONLY PERSON CAPABLE OF DEFLECTING AN ARROW?

I AM NOT INFERIOR TO YOU IN A SINGLE ASPECT.

THERE IS NOTHING YOU CAN DO THAT I CANNOT.

GAK

DON'T PLAY WITH ME.

...

THERE ISN'T A PERSON ON THIS EARTH WHO CAN BEAT ME IN ANY FACET IMAGIN-ABLE.

DO YOU UNDER-STAND WHAT THAT MEANS?

SO...

...YOU'RE A GOD, HUH?

YOU ALREADY THINK...

GOD

...

I LIKE THE SOUND OF THAT...

GOD

...

GOD.

OOOOH, WOW!

THANK YOU, BIG BROTHER! YOU REMEMBERED YOUR PROMISE!

THESE FLOWERS WILL MAINTAIN THEIR BEAUTY FOR ETERNITY AND WILL NEVER WILT.

OF COURSE I DID. I HAD MY RESEARCH TEAM BUILD IT.

OOOH!

SHFF

IT'S BEAUTIFUL.

SO BEAUTIFUL.

LIKE A DREAM.

I'M SO HAPPY.

DO YOU LIKE IT?

IT'S THE *BEST*!

YOUR GOD?

YOU'RE MY GOD. YOU MAKE EVERY WISH COME TRUE.

BEAUTIFUL THINGS MAKE PEOPLE HAPPY.

THEN THAT MAKES YOU MY BEAUTIFUL, ADORABLE ANGEL, REA.

...IS BECAUSE SHE WAS BORN INTO A HAPPY, WEALTHY FAMILY.

THE REASON REA IS SO BEAUTIFUL IN BODY AND MIND...

WITH MONEY, YOU CAN CREATE BEAUTY. LIKE THESE FLOWERS, FOR EXAMPLE.

SHE NEVER HAD TO COME INTO CONTACT WITH THE UGLY SIDE OF LIFE.

I HEARD YOU SCORED TOPS IN THE NATION AGAIN, BIG BROTHER. CAN YOU TEACH ME MATH?

Middle School
Math 1

OUR RELATIONSHIP IS BEAUTIFUL TOO.

OF COURSE.

YOU ALWAYS HAVE THE BEST TASTE.

CAN YOU PICK OUT THE CLOTHES FOR ME TO WEAR TO THE PARTY?

WEALTH PROVIDES A NATURAL ENRICH-MENT TO THOSE WHO ARE BLESSED WITH IT.

AM I PRETTY?

CAN YOU BE MY TENNIS COACH?

YES, VERY PRETTY.

YOU'RE SO ATHLETIC.

YOU'RE GIVEN THE BEST, YOU LEARN FROM THE BEST AND YOU GAIN GREATER BEAUTY.

...FROM THE WORLD OF FILTH AND POVERTY.

SHE MUST BE PRO-TECTED ...

AND THAT WHICH IS UGLY CAN ONLY BREED UGLINESS.

IT MAKES THE POOR DIRTY, THEIR HEARTS SQUALID, THEIR MINDS UGLY.

SAYING THAT ONE'S HEART IS PURE DESPITE BEING POOR IS A LIE THE WEAK TELL THEMSELVES. POVERTY PRODUCES ONLY FILTH.

...IS THE TRUEST, MOST CORE SENTIMENT THAT HUMANITY POS-SESSES.

LOVING WHAT IS BEAUTI-FUL...

BIG BROTHER ...

I HAVE VERY GOOD NEWS.

WHAT IS IT?

HMM?

I WAS APPROACHED BY A BOY WHO CONFESSED HIS AFFECTION FOR ME.

I'M THINKING...

...THAT I WOULD LIKE TO PURSUE THIS OPPORTUNITY...

SHE'LL BE RUINED.

BIG BROTHER?

SO WHAT WILL HAPPEN TO OUR PERFECT SIBLING RELATIONSHIP?

I'M THE ONE WHO POLISHED REA'S BEAUTY TO A SHINE.

IT'S SO EASY TO FALL ASTRAY.

HUH?

IT'S TOO EARLY...

...

...

YOU CAN'T.

...

FWAP

BROTHER ...?

I'M SURE YOU'LL LIKE HIM...

TST..

HE'S... HE'S VERY NICE...

...

THAT'S ALL IT TAKES FOR EVERY-THING TO FALL APART...

SEE HOW QUICK THAT WAS?

STOP, REA!

THAT...
THAT
HURTS.

YOU SHOULD KNOW BETTER.

REA!

HIRU

NO!
STOP!

REA!!

NO!

LET GO OF ME!!

R...

SMACK

RE...

REA!

ZSH

ARE YOU ALL RIGHT, REA?!

KSHUF

REA!

HUH? WHAT?

I'M JUST FINE.

OH, BUT MY HEAD IS SPINNI...

SLUMP

UH...
REA...?

R... REA...

!

UH-OH... I NEED AN AMBULANCE...

SYMPTOMS OF A MAJOR BRAIN INJURY...

THEN SHE WON'T BE DEFILED BY ANYONE. SHE CAN MAINTAIN THIS BEAUTY... THIS ETERNAL YOUTH...

BUT... IF SHE DIES JUST LIKE THIS...

SHUK

SHUK

TEK

TEK

TEK

G-SHUNK

TEK

...SHE WILL BE 14 YEARS OLD, BEAUTIFUL AND UNSULLIED...

FOR ALL OF ETERNITY...

THE CONTENTS OF THE COFFIN WILL NEVER BE EXPOSED.

THINK

...SHE WERE STILL ALIVE...

BUT I WISH...

SHIN

MAYBE I SHOULD...

HRG!!

KILL

WHAT BETTER COMPANION COULD THERE BE FOR THE ANGEL OF GREED?

I COULD JOIN REA...

KL

KL

...PURELY DEDICATED TO HIS OWN DESIRES...

THE SON OF A TREMENDOUSLY WEALTHY CORPORATE PLUTOCRAT...

YOU MOURN THE LOSS OF SOMEONE PRECIOUS TO YOU.

THERE IS BUT ONE WAY TO BE REUNITED WITH HER.

YOU MUST BECOME GOD...

...AND MAKE HER YOUR ANGEL.

WHOOO

MIRROR HOUSE

SHWING

KWING

...A GOD.

THEY'RE STREAMING METRO-POLIMAN'S BATTLE LIVE.

WAIT, REALLY?

AGAIN?

IT'S THE SAME RED GUY HE FOUGHT AT GRAND TOWER.

YOU ACTUALLY REMEM-BER THAT DETAIL?

16:07:34

16:07:34

16:07:34

16:07:34

EASY PEASY...

...LIGHT AND BREEZY.

#23 World Peace

OH.

METRO-POLIMAN'S HAVING ANOTHER BATTLE THING?

IT'S STREAMING ONLINE.

THIS IS ELABORATE, HUH? SO MANY SPECIAL EFFECTS.

NO WAY, THE BALLPARK AND TOWER SCENES WERE BOTH TOTALLY REAL!

HUH? THIS ONE TOO?!

SO WHY IS THE BACK-GROUND BLURRED OUT?

MAYBE SO YOU CAN'T IDENTIFY THE LOCATION?

BUT WHY?

IS IT JUST ME... OR IS THIS GETTING KINDA DANGEROUS?

DHO

16:07:50

16:07:50

16:07:50

16:07:50

DHO

SHIBUYA 109

ZSH

SKRT

MIRROR HOUSE

NOT EVEN 20 METERS APART NOW.

THEY'RE SO CLOSE ...

HUE!

HUE!

KAKEHASHI...

IF THEY GET ANY CLOSER...

WHAT'S WRONG? IT'S YOUR TURN.

ONCE WE GET CLOSE ENOUGH, IT BECOMES A SIMPLE BATTLE OF REFLEXES...

I'LL BE DAMNED IF I LET YOU BE THE GOD OF THIS WORLD.

I WON'T LET IT HAP-PEN.

I'M THE ONE WHO WILL BECOME GOD.

THERE'S NO USE PLANNING.

WHY SO PESSI-MISTIC?

SURE, YOU'LL DIE-- BUT THE WORLD MIGHT ACTUALLY IMPROVE.

...

IT'LL CHANGE, THAT'S FOR SURE... BUT IT CAN'T POSSIBLY GET BETTER!

THAT'S PREPOS-TEROUS!

YOU'LL FIND THAT'S NOT TRUE.

HUFF!

YOU ONLY WANT DIVINE POWER IN ORDER TO SERVE YOUR OWN GREEDY DESIRES. YOU WON'T SPARE A SINGLE THOUGHT FOR THE REST OF THE WORLD.

HUH?

I'VE DONE MY OWN THINKING ABOUT WHAT COULD BE DONE TO IMPROVE THE WORLD.

?!

OOH ?

If I Become God

Kanade Ura

BUT AS SOON AS I HAD A SINGLE IDEA, I GAVE IT ALL UP AS POINTLESS. THE ENTIRE CONCEPT IS STUPID.

BESIDES, HOW CAN YOU EVEN BELIEVE IN SOMETHING AS UNREALISTIC AS GOD?

...THEIR INVISIBILITY TO ALL BUT THE PEOPLE THEY'VE CHOSEN AND THE EXISTENCE OF THEIR SPECIAL POWERS...

BUT WHETHER THEY'RE ACTUAL ANGELS OR SOME KIND OF MILITARY SUPERWEAPON... OR EVEN EXTRA-TERRESTRIAL BEINGS...

THE SAME GOES FOR ALL OF THE ANGELS PRESENT HERE.

...ARE SOLID FACT.

BUT, MAN, YOU SURE LIKE TO LISTEN TO YOURSELF TALK.

YES, THAT'S IT. YOU NEED TO MAKE EVERYONE SEE THAT.

DO WE HAVE AN I.D. ON THE LOCATION YET?

WHAT DO YOU SUPPOSE IS GOING ON HERE...?

FIRST THE STADIUM, THEN GRAND TOWER...

POLICE HEADQUARTERS

WE'RE STILL LOOKING.

THERE ARE MULTIPLE LAYERS OF SECURITY ON THE STREAM, AND IT'S TAKING SOME TIME TO CRACK.

FIRST GOD ...

NOW ANGELS ...

16:09:4

16:09:4

WHAT IS HIDDEN BEHIND THIS FOOTAGE...?

BUT FOR WHAT PURPOSE ...?

IT SEEMS THAT THE ENTIRE STRING OF EVENTS WAS ORCHESTRATED BY THIS COSTUMED SUSPECT.

I WAS CHOSEN BY THE ANGELS.

SO WHY WOULDN'T I PLACE MY BETS ON THIS POWER?

IN FACT, THESE ABILITIES WERE *MEANT* FOR ME...

WHAT IS IT...

WHAT HOPE DID THE ANGEL BRING YOU?

WHAT IS IT THAT CAUSED YOU TO DESPAIR?

BUT IF YOU'RE TRYING TO DISTRACT ME SO RED CAN GET A BETTER SHOT, YOU'RE PRETTY CLEVER FOR AN ALLEY CAT.

NOW SHUT UP BEFORE I KILL YOU.

IF YOU THINK I'M ACTUALLY GOING TO TELL YOU, YOU'RE AN IDIOT.

I INTEND TO HAVE THIS FIGHT THE PROPER WAY.

THAT'S NOT WHAT SHE MEANT. YELLOW WAS ASKING YOU OUT OF KINDNESS AND CONSIDERATION.

SO SHOW ME THAT YOU CAN AVOID AN ARROW FROM THIS DISTANCE.

...

VERY CLOSE...

CRIK

CRAK

YOU'RE RIGHT ...

THAT HURTS, TO NOT HAVE BEEN SUCCESSFUL WITH THAT SHOT.

TOO BAD, YOU ALMOST GOT HIM.

SHUP

...

HE'S A TREACHEROUS COWARD. THERE'S NO NEED FOR US TO PLAY BY THE RULES.

DON'T FALL FOR HIS TAUNTS, RED.

RIGHT?

YOU STILL NEED TO DEFLECT MY SHOT, FAIR AND SQUARE...

NOW, NOW, LET'S NOT GET AHEAD OF OURSELVES HERE.

ZSH!

RM

USE YOUR WINGS OR MOVE YOUR LEGS, AND YOU LOSE.

HE'S TOO CLOSE ...

HUFF!

HE'S CLOSE ...

HUFF!

THIS DISTANCE ...

CAN I MANAGE IT?

MMF...

THE LEG!

SO MAYBE I CAN...

ACTUALLY, THE CLOSER HE IS, THE EASIER IT MIGHT BE TO TELL WHERE HE'S AIMING...

...

...

SWISH---

WAIT ...!

YELLOW?

JUST TELL ME ONE THING.

...IF YOUR HOPES COME TRUE... AND THE RESULT IS A WORLD THAT LEAVES US NO WORSE OFF THAN WE ALREADY ARE...

SO MAYBE ...

I DON'T ACTUALLY WANT TO BE GOD.

AND I DON'T KNOW WHAT WORLD WOULD BE A GOOD WORLD FOR THE PEOPLE IN IT.

N-NO, YELLOW!

ARE YOU GOING TO PLEAD WITH ME? "WE'LL LET YOU BE GOD, AS LONG AS YOU SAVE US"?

WHAT ARE YOU TALKING ABOUT, ALLEY CAT?

TWING...

...

OR ARE YOU GOING TO PROPOSE A DEAL TO SAVE YOUR BELOVED RED?

YEAH ...

DON'T LISTEN. HE'S KILLED SO MANY PEOPLE ALREADY. HE CANNOT BE GOD WITHOUT PAYING THE COST FOR HIS SINS.

BUT ONLY IF GOD TRULY EXISTS.

DON'T GIVE ME THAT CRAP. IT DOESN'T MATTER HOW MANY PEOPLE I KILL. WHEN GOD DOES IT, IT'S DIVINE JUSTICE!

YOU MAY KNEEL TO ME IF YOU DO.

UNDER-STAND NOW?

MY ONLY POINT IS THAT IF THERE IS AN ULTIMATE BEING THAT STANDS ATOP ALL LIFE, I AM THE MOST SUITED TO THAT ROLE.

YOU'RE COMPLETELY FULL OF YOURSELF...

AHG

GH

HE DID IT!

I KNOW EXACTLY WHAT YOU'RE TRYING TO DO. I JUST MADE IT LOOK LIKE YOU TEMPTED ME INTO SHOOTING, BECAUSE THAT WILL MAKE YOU OVERCONFIDENT INSTEAD.

YOU THINK YOU LURED ME INTO SHOOTING?

SHUM

THERE ARE NO SPECIAL PEOPLE.

I DON'T JUST THINK IT.

I *AM* SPECIAL.

YOU HONESTLY THINK THAT YOU'RE SOME KIND OF SPECIAL, CHOSEN HUMAN BEING...

NO ONE IS BETTER OR WORSE THAN ANYONE ELSE.

HMPH... LET ME GUESS.

ARE YOU ONE OF THOSE GUYS LIKE HAJIME, WHO GREW UP POOR WITH A BAD EDUCATION AND NO FRIENDS?

BINGO.

...

YOU DON'T SENSE THAT I'M SPECIAL BECAUSE YOU'RE AN IDIOT.

THE INFERIOR MAN CANNOT FATHOM THE SUPERIOR SOUL.

IT'S BECAUSE OF YOUR ENVIRONMENT. YOU DIDN'T GET A GOOD EDUCATION, AND YOU CAN'T RECOGNIZE THINGS THAT ARE IN-HERENTLY BETTER.

...

NO WONDER I FIND YOU SO IRRITATING.

YOU'RE EXACTLY LIKE HAJIME.

SO AS YOU REQUESTED, I WILL LET YOU HEAR THEM BEFORE I KILL YOU.

NOW I WANT TO PUT MY IDEAS INTO PRACTICE.

I'VE CHANGED MY MIND.

ZMMF

...

WHO'S GOING... TO LISTEN...

KOFF!

KOFF!

WHAT?!

KILL ...?

ARE THEY GONNA SHOW HIM KILLING THEM?!

THIS IS WHAT I WILL DO WITH THIS TWISTED WORLD...

INSTEAD, ALL MEMBERS OF SOCIETY WILL LIVE RICH, FULL LIVES.

I WILL GET RID OF POVERTY AND INEQUALITY.

I WILL ELIMINATE ALL DISPARITY.

EQUALITY
...

CLAP

CLAP

...TO BRING ABOUT EQUALITY?

CHANGE THE WORLD...

SURELY THAT'S NOT SO SURPRISING.

ESSENTIALLY, IT JUST MEANS GETTING RID OF PEOPLE LIKE HAJIME.

WHA ...?

...

I WILL ELIMINATE ALL OF THE SCUM THAT GETS FAT OFF THE WELFARE STATE, DONATIONS, VOLUNTEERS, CHARITIES AND SO ON.

THEY ARE PARASITES WHO LIVE OFF OUR TAX MONEY.

WHAT ARE YOU TALKING ABOUT?

WH...

WHAT I'M SAYING IS THAT IF WE ELIMINATE THE IMPOVERISHED, THE DISPARITIES IN OUR SOCIETY WILL VANISH.

IT IS UNFAIR FOR THE WEALTHY TO BE EXPECTED TO FEED AND CARE FOR THE SCUM OF THE WORLD WITHOUT ANY RETURN.

ANYONE SHAMELESS ENOUGH TO BE PITIED AND BLESSED IN THIS WAY AND CALL IT "EQUALITY" DESERVES TO DIE.

EQUAL-ITY MEANS THAT NONE ARE TREATED AS SPECIAL.

MUR MUR...

WHAT THE...

HOW AWFUL.

...

...

THAT'S HORRIBLE DISCRIMI-NATION!

HOW CAN HE SAY THAT?

C-
CAN
HE
EVEN
...

HE
CAN.

AND
THAT'S...
WHAT
YOU...

THERE ARE A NUMBER OF CONDITIONS ...

...BUT IF HE BECOMES GOD, HE CAN BRING THIS ABOUT.

THAT'S RIGHT.

IF I BECOME GOD.

...

EVERY HUMAN BEING ...

...NO MATTER HOW THEY WERE BORN... HAS A RIGHT TO HAPPINESS ...

YES, THEY HAVE THE RIGHT! BUT THEY CANNOT MAKE USE OF IT!

INSTEAD, THEY CLING TO THE FEET OF OTHERS AND PULL THEM DOWN INTO MISERY TOO!

TO THOSE WHO ARE FORCED TO ASSIST COMPLETE STRANGERS THEY HAVE NO CONNECTION TO, YOUR WORDS ARE EMPTY PLATITUDES! THE EXCUSES OF A FOOL BRAINWASHED BY FALSE MORALITY!!

YOU... YOU DON'T HAVE THE RIGHT... TO TAKE AWAY...

...PEOPLE'S POSSIBILITIES... THEIR HAPPINESS...

WHAT, THAT OLD "EVEN THE POOR CAN CLIMB THEIR WAY OUT OF POVERTY" CHESTNUT?

THAT'S JUST A MATTER OF PROBA-BILITIES.

THE PROBABILITY THAT SOMEONE BORN TO A WEALTHY FAMILY WILL BE MATERIALLY AND SPIRITUALLY FULFILLED IS OVERWHELMINGLY HIGH.

BEAUTIFUL PEOPLE PRODUCE BEAUTIFUL PEOPLE. UGLY PIGS PRODUCE UGLY PIGS.

WE'RE DONE WITH THE WORLD IN WHICH YOU CAN'T SPEAK THIS OBVIOUS TRUTH WITHOUT A MASK TO HIDE YOUR IDENTITY.

...UGLINESS MUST BE ELIMINATED, EVEN AMONG THE WEALTHY.

THERE-FORE...

IT MAKES ME SICK! THE MOST DISGUSTING THING OF ALL IS WHEN THE COCKROACH DARES TO CRAWL UP TO *YOU*, THE HUMAN BEING!

JUST DIE ALREADY SICK GERM NASTY

DO YOU UNDERSTAND ME?

HAJIME IS THE PERFECT EXAMPLE.

HE WAS BORN TO HIDEOUS PARENTS, WHICH FORCED HIM INTO A HIDEOUS, MISERABLE LIFE.

EVEN WITH RED ARROWS, HE WAS SO STUPID BY NATURE THAT THE BEST HE COULD DO WAS GET PLASTIC SURGERY OUT OF HIS OBSESSION WITH BEAUTY.

I ONCE ASKED A FRIEND, IF YOU HAD ANY WISH THAT COULD COME TRUE, WHAT WOULD IT BE?

MY FRIEND SAID...

"I WANT MONEY.

AND IF THAT WON'T WORK, THEN I WANT ALL UGLY GIRLS TO VANISH."

DO YOU UNDER-STAND? THAT'S THE TRUE SENTIMENT THAT LIES BENEATH HUMANITY'S FACADE.

THE WORLD IN WHICH EVERYONE IS RICH AND BEAUTIFUL.

THAT IS THE WORLD I SHALL CREATE.

16:16:01

DHO

WAAAH!

WAAAH!

WAAAH!

WAAAH!

WE GONNA GET KILLED?

WHAT'S GONNA HAPPEN TO US?

HA HA, DON'T BE A DUMB-ASS.

WHAT'S WRONG WITH THAT?

EVERYONE IS RICH...

YIKES. I'D BE KILLED!

ARE YOU CRAZY?!

TWO MORE BEERS OVER HERE!

CLAP

CLAP

I'LL PAY YA TO GET RID OF *MY WIFE*!

THATTA BOY, GOD! YOU GOT THE RIGHT IDEA!

THAT'S... KANADE...

THAT'S...

THEN I WANT ALL UGLY WOMEN TO DISAPPEAR FROM THE WORLD.

...

HE'S REALLY SOME-THING.

I CAN SEE WHY MEYZA CHOSE HIM.

I'M WILLING TO ALLOW FOR SOME OF THE LOWER CLASSES TO BE SLAVES, IF THEIR LOOKS ARE SUFFICIENT.

BUT SOME KIND OF SERVANT CLASS WILL BE NECES-SARY.

IF I BECOME GOD, I MIGHT TAKE YOUR WINGS AND ARROWS AND ALLOW YOU TO LICK MY BOOTS.

YOU ARE NOT UNPLEASANT TO LOOK AT, ALLEY CAT.

LICK THEM NOW.

IN FACT, WHY WAIT?

THAT'S NOT A WORLD WITHOUT INEQUALITY. IT'S JUST YOUR OWN WISH FULFILL-MENT...

YOU... YOU SICK BAS-TARD!

SHUT UP, OLD MAN.

HURRY UP AND KICK THE BUCKET AL-READY.

HRRG ...!

KSHUNK

IS YOUR SPEECH OVER?

ゴースト

FIVE METERS.

MY TURN NEXT.

I GUESS IT MUST BE BECAUSE WE'RE SO CLOSE NOW.

AH, THE LOOK IN YOUR EYES HAS CHANGED.

YOU CAN COME CLOSER, IF YOU WANT.

I'VE MADE UP MY MIND.

FIVE.

I'VE NEVER EXPECTED YOU TO FOLLOW THE RULES WE SET DOWN.

BECAUSE YOU'RE A FOOL.

BUT YOU WILL.

TO BE CONTINUED...

T s u**g** u mi **O**h b **a**

Born in Tokyo, Tsugumi Ohba is the author of the hit series *Death Note* and *Bakuman*。.

Ta**k** e s**h** i O b a **t**a

Takeshi Obata was born in 1969 in Niigata, Japan, and first achieved international recognition as the artist of the wildly popular *Shonen Jump* title *Hikaru no Go*, which won the 2003 Tezuka Osamu Cultural Prize: Shinsei "New Hope" Award and the 2000 Shogakukan Manga Award. He went on to illustrate the smash hit *Death Note* as well as the hugely successful manga *Bakuman*。 and *All You Need Is Kill*.

PLATINVM END

VOLUME 7
SHONEN JUMP Manga Edition

°

STORY **T**sug**g**u mi **O**h b**a**
ART Ta**k**e s**h**i O b a**ta**

°

TRANSLATION Stephen Paul
TOUCH-UP ART & LETTERING James Gaubatz
DESIGN Shawn Carrico
EDITOR Alexis Kirsch

°

ORIGINAL COVER DESIGN Narumi Noriko

°

PLATINUM END © 2015 by Tsugumi Ohba, Takeshi Obata
All rights reserved.
First published in Japan in 2015 by SHUEISHA Inc., Tokyo.
English translation rights arranged by SHUEISHA Inc.

°

The stories, characters and incidents mentioned in this publication are entirely fictional.

No portion of this book may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means without written permission from the copyright holders.

°

Printed in the U.S.A.

Published by VIZ Media, LLC
P.O. Box 77010
San Francisco, CA 94107

°

10 9 8 7 6 5 4 3 2 1
First printing, December 2018

VIZ MEDIA
viz.com

SHONEN JUMP
shonenjump.com

ratings.viz.com RATED M MATURE

PARENTAL ADVISORY
PLATINUM END is rated M for Mature and is recommended for mature readers.
This volume contains suggestive themes.

8

PLATINUM END

STORY
TSUGUMI
OHBA

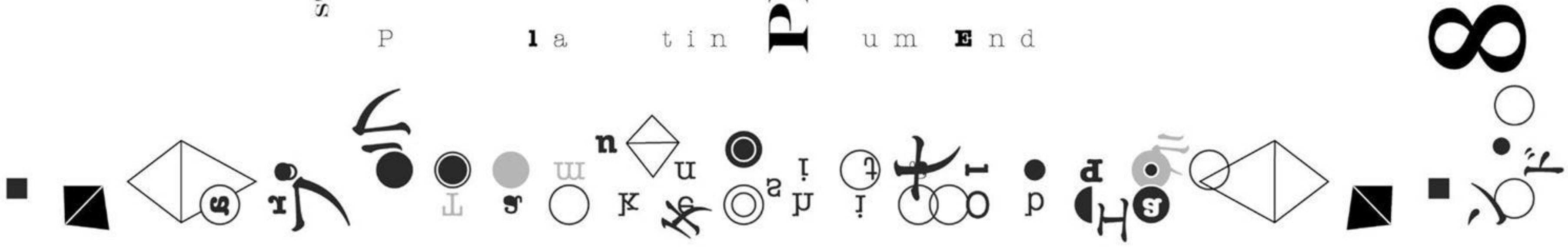
ART
TAKESHI
OBATA

PARENTAL ADVISORY
EXPLICIT
CONTENT

PLATINUM END

Takeshi Obata
ART

Tsugumi Ohba
STORY



CHARACTERS

Kanade Uryu

Grandson of the Joso Academy headmaster, son of the Joso Industries president. He assumes the form of the Metropoliman character and purges the other god candidates.

Meyza

The special-rank angel who chose Kanade. For unknown reasons, she was elevated from rankless to the top special rank.

Balta

The first-rank angel who chose Hajime. The Angel of Intuition.

Hajime Sokotani

Got plastic surgery after he became a god candidate. He idolizes Metropoliman and offers to be his servant.

Baret

The first-rank angel who chose Mukaido. Possesses great knowledge about the celestial world.

CHARACTERS

Mirai Kakehashi

First-year high school student. His parents and brother died in an accident when he was seven. After a painful life with his abusive relatives, he attempts to commit suicide and survives through Nasse's help.

Nasse

A special-rank angel who wants to bring happiness to Mirai's life. Bright and bubbly.

Nanato Mukaido

An apparel company employee who leaves work due to late-stage cancer. A family man with a wife and kid.

Revel

A second-rank angel who chose Saki as his god candidate.

Saki Hanakago

Mirai's old friend and fellow student. The object of his affections.

Story

DUEL

Mirai and Metropoliman engage in a one-on-one battle of arrows. They steadily approach one another.

THE LAST ONE

In his last moments, Hajime kills Fuyuko Kohinata. The strange masked boy escapes, leaving only Metropoliman behind.

HAPPINESS

Under the effects of Saki's red arrow, Hajime sacrifices himself to protect her from Fuyuko Kohinata's killer virus.

Story

"My time has come. I leave the seat of god to the next human.
To a younger, fresher power.

The next god shall be chosen from the 13 humans chosen by you 13 angels.When the chosen human is made the next god, your angelic duty is finished, and you may live beside that god in peace.

You have 999 days remaining..."

CONTENTS

#24 Absolute Confidence
P5

#25 One Life
P57

#26 Two Lights
P99

#27 At the Same Table
P135

#24 Absolute Confidence

SHOOT. IT'S YOUR TURN.

KAKE-
HASHI...

WHAT'S
WRONG?

I SUPPOSE EVEN *YOU* ARE SMART ENOUGH TO UNDERSTAND THAT IF YOU SHOOT, YOU LOSE.

...

WELL, YOU'RE CORRECT.

!

EVEN IF HE'S HIT WITH THE RED ARROW, IF THE WHITE WAS ALREADY UNLEASHED, IT WILL BE EFFECTIVE ON ITS TARGET.

THE INSTANT YOU FIRE YOUR RED ARROW, I'LL USE MY WHITE ONE.

AFTER RELEASING YOUR ARROW, YOU WON'T HAVE TIME TO PREPARE ANOTHER ONE TO DEFLECT MY WHITE.

THE ONLY WAY FOR YOU TO SURVIVE IS TO USE YOUR WINGS TO ESCAPE.

AND WE AGREED THAT USING YOUR WINGS IS AGAINST THE RULES!

YOU WOULDN'T WANT TO BREAK THE RULES THAT YOU YOURSELF PROPOSED, NOW WOULD YOU?

...

IT'S RED'S TURN TO USE HIS ARROW. IT'S NOT FAIR FOR YOU TO FIRE AT THE SAME TIME.

PLUS ...

BUT YOU'RE THE ONE... WHO'S BEEN A LYING CHEAT ALL ALONG...

THE RULE IS THAT ONE SIDE FIRES AND THE OTHER DODGES THE ARROW.

DEFLECTING ISN'T THE ONLY WAY TO DO THAT. IF YOU CAN FIRE YOUR ARROW TO NEGATE THE OTHER, THAT'S A VALID FORM OF DEFENSE. IT'S JUST AGAINST THE RULES FOR ME TO FIRE *FIRST*.

COME ON, KITTY-CAT. AT THIS POINT, I'M STARTING TO THINK YOU'RE DUMBER THAN AN ACTUAL CAT.

THEN AGAIN, I HAVE A HARD TIME IMAGINING THIS GUY STAYING PUT AND LETTING HIMSELF GET PIERCED BY AN ARROW.

RED, IF YOU FLEE, WE WIN. WHAT'S WRONG WITH THAT?

...

HE'S GOT A POINT...

DON'T MAKE ME REPEAT MYSELF... I'M NOT GOING TO CUT AND RUN.

HEY, WHY DON'T YOU GO STICK THE REST OF YOUR BODY IN YOUR COFFIN AND GIVE IT AN ETERNAL REST, PAL?

KAKEHASHI, WHAT ARE YOU PLANNING...?

NO. I'M NOT RUNNING, EITHER. THAT'S NEVER BEEN MY INTENTION.

SHOOT YOUR ARROW.

THEN LET'S GET THIS OVER WITH ALREADY.

...BUT IF YOU DO STAY AND FIGHT, IT'LL BE APPRE-CIATED.

IT DOESN'T SEEM LIKE YOU NOT TO RUN...

I'M NOT GOING TO CHEAT.

I SUPPOSE WE SHOULD HAVE PUT A TIME LIMIT ON SHOOTING, LIKE SPEED CHESS.

...

I ASSUME YOU'RE THINKING OF A WAY TO WIN WITHOUT USING YOUR WINGS. YOU'LL NEVER FIND AN ANSWER.

...

THAT'S NOT WHAT I'M THINKING.

WHAT I WAS THINKING ABOUT...

YEAH?

HMPH. WHAT, THEN?

...IS WHETHER THIS IS THE REAL METRO-POLIMAN I'M FIGHTING OR NOT.

WHAT?

OOOH.

?

WHY WOULD YOU WONDER THAT NOW?

...

WHEN I'VE GOT A WHITE ARROW IN MY HAND AND EVERYTHING!

...

RED, I'M 99 PERCENT CERTAIN THAT'S METRO-POLIMAN.

AND IF IT'S NOT 100 PERCENT ...

I KNOW THAT. BUT IT'S NOT 100 PERCENT.

WHAT IS THIS? IS HE STALLING FOR TIME...?

...

HE'S ALWAYS PRETENDING TO BE INDECISIVE. BUT EACH TIME HE KNOWS EXACTLY WHAT HE INTENDS TO DO...

NO...

...

THAT'S TRUE, BUT...

YOU CAN TAKE HIS MASK OFF AFTER YOU'VE HIT HIM.

YOU SAW HIS FACE. YOU'D RECOG-NIZE HIM.

FINE, I'LL SHOW YOU.

YOU REALLY ARE AN IDIOT AND A PAIN IN MY ASS.

FWP

WHA--?!

PSH

IS IT A DISPLAY OF CONFIDENCE? A DESIRE TO GET THIS OVER WITH? BUT THE BOLDNESS HE SHOWED...

HE DID IT HIMSELF...?

...

CHAK

SHMM

ARE YOU CONVINCED?

THANK YOU. THAT CLEARS EVERYTHING UP.

YES... YOU'RE THE METROPOLIMAN WE FOUGHT AT THE TOWER.

THIS IS A BORING VIDEO.

I WISH THEY'D HURRY UP AND GET ON WITH IT.

DANG, I THOUGHT WE'D LEARN POLI-MAN'S IDENTITY.

NO, THE CAMERA ANGLE WASN'T GREAT...

AWW!

DIO

DID YOU SEE THAT?!

HOLY COMBAT TO DECIDE WHO WILL BECOME THE SAVIOR OF OUR WORLD GONE MAD!!

SHVR

THIS IS A BATTLE TO DETER-MINE OUR GOD...

SHVR

N-NO...

WE *OUGHT* TO WATCH ...

THAT GUY'S CRAZY!!

WHOA, WATCH OUT!

DIO

F22

OH, GOD!!

SHOW US YOUR GODLY POWER!!

HURRY UP AND SAVE ME!!

I BELIEVE THAT SOMEONE IS INTERFERING TO PREVENT US FROM IDENTIFYING THE LOCATION AS WELL.

WE COULDN'T GET A GLIMPSE DUE TO THE CAMERA ANGLE.

WELL?

...

THE RED GUY?

YEAH, MAYBE THE RED GUY. HE'S FUNNY.

HERE I GO.

I WONDER WHO WILL WIN...

HMMM.

"HERE I GO"? WHAT IS THIS, A SUPER-HERO SHOW?

REALLY?

SHH...

BUT IF I GO TO STAB YOU WITHOUT SHOOTING IT, THAT'S PERFECTLY FAIR.

IT'S NOT FAIR IF I SAY "HERE I GO" AND THEN MOVE CLOSER TO SHOOT MY ARROW.

SHRK

WHAT?

IT'S NICE. IT MAKES EVERYTHING BOLD AND SIMPLE.

DOOM

VOOM

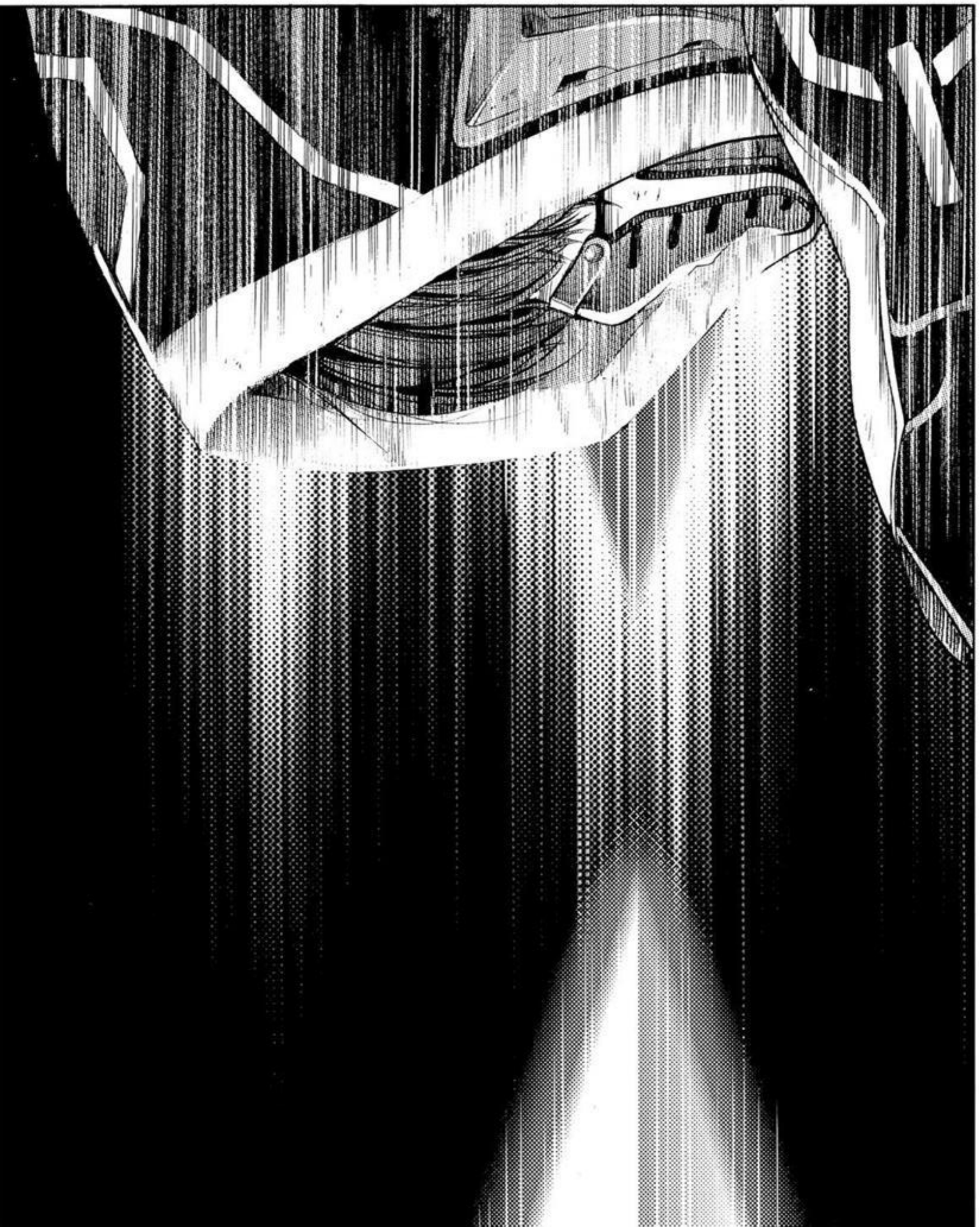
ARE YOU INSANE?! THAT JUST MAKES IT EASIER TO KILL YOU!!

A SUICIDE CHARGE AT THIS DISTANCE?

KAKEHASHI!

?!

WATCH CLOSELY.



KNOCK

!

HE RAN STRAIGHT INTO THE WHITE ARROW!!

HERE COMES THE NEXT ONE!!

SWING

IS IT LOCKED IN A STANDSTILL WITH THE NEXT WHITE ARROW HE'S TRYING TO PRODUCE...?

NO, THAT ALONE WOULDN'T ...

ECCC

IT'S NOT PIERCING HIM?

?!

KRRR

HE DOES HAVE A RED ARROW IN HIM ALREADY!!!

HE HAD THE CONFIDENCE THAT SINCE I WOULDN'T USE WHITE, THERE WAS NO WAY HE'D LOSE.

...AND HE FULLY WENT ALONG WITH MY PROPOSITION BECAUSE HE KNEW MY RED WOULDN'T WORK ON HIM.

HE DIDN'T BACK DOWN WHEN HE WAS OUTNUMBERED, OR FACING A ONE-ON-ONE SITUATION...

WHOSE ARROW IS THIS? NO, THAT'S NOT IMPORTANT NOW!

ZASH

WINGS!!

ZAP

!!

DAMN! I CAN'T ...
...?!

HE COVERED HIS FACE WITH HIS WINGS...

I

!

AND HE CAN'T SHOOT HIS ARROW IF HE CAN'T SEE HIS TARGET!

THE DEFLECTED WHITE ARROW IS COMING BACK!

KLAK

KLAK

DAMN! I CAN'T GRASP IT!!

SHUP

DAM-MIT!!

NO...

WINGS ARE VISIBLE TO GOD CANDIDATES, BUT THEY DO NOT INTERACT WITH ANYTHING IN THE HUMAN WORLD, SO THEY CANNOT BE GRABBED.

ONLY THE OWNER OF THE WINGS CAN AFFECT THEIR MOVEMENT.

YEAH, THAT'S A SMART MOVE.

THIS IS BAD...

MUKAIDO ALREADY SHOT RED WITH HIS ARROW.

RED MIGHT NOT KILL ME HIMSELF, BUT THERE'S NO GUARANTEE THAT HE WON'T STOP MUKAIDO FROM COMMITTING THE ACT...

BSHU

GRP

HRRG...

GR

RED!

ZSHUP

NNNG...

NOOOO!!

CHA-CHAK

THIS--!
STUPID--!
SUIT--!

BANK

SHUK

GAHK!

CRASH

SHUK

AAAAAH!!

AAAGH!!

LET GO... OF MY RIGHT HAND!

THUD

MEYZA!

SWITCH THE RING THAT PRODUCES MY WHITE ARROWS TO MY LEFT HAND!

GA

K

IF I CAN'T SEE HIM, I'LL STAB HIM DIRECTLY!

I WON'T LET YOU!

THE SHE-CAT?!

BSHAK

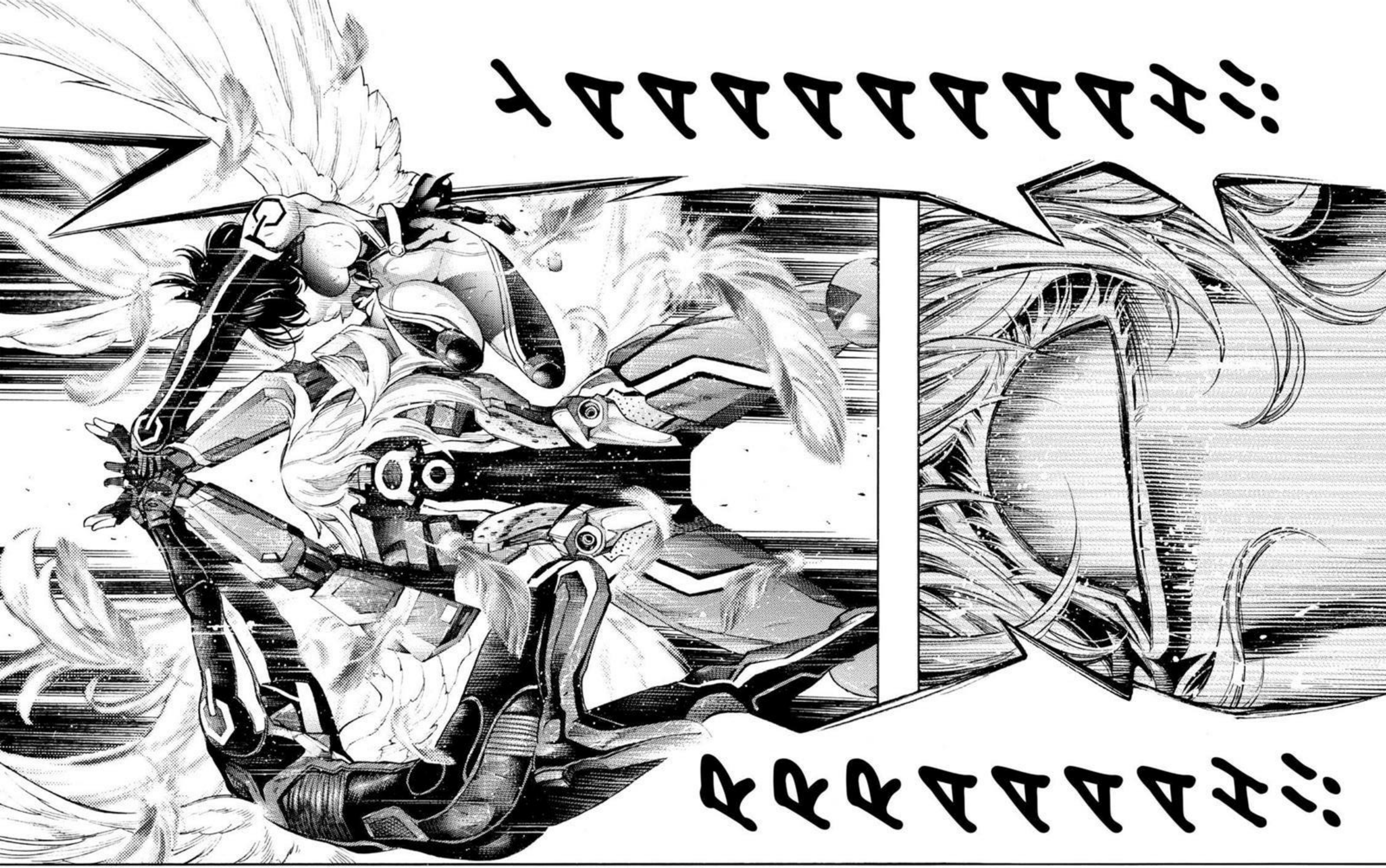
YAAAAH!!

YELLOW !!

KA

CLAKK

HOW DARE YOUUU



SFX

YEL-LOW! BRING OUT YOUR RING!

SFX

ドクドク…
ドクドク…
ドクドク…
ドクドク…
ドクドク…
ドクドク…

WE DID IT...

HUEE!

HUEE!

THANK YOU...

HUEE!

HUEE!

HUEE!

LEAVE THE REST TO ME...

#25 One Life

THAT SUICIDE ATTACK TO GRAB HIS HANDS... TO STOP HIS ARROWS... WAS ONLY POSSIBLE FROM SHORT RANGE LIKE THAT.

ZRM

ZRM

MAKE SURE... YOU TWO HOLD HIM STILL.

I'M GOING ...

...TO KILL HIM REAL QUICK...

HUFF!!

HUFF!!

THANK YOU... RED AND YELLOW.

HUFF!!

HUFF!!

ZOOM...

BRMM

HEY ...

STOP THIS ...

YOU WANT TO MAKE YOUR FAMILY SAD?!

YOU'RE GOING TO BECOME A MURDERER!

REMEMBER ALL THOSE THINGS YOU SAID?! YOU TOLD HIM HE NEEDED TO LIVE, AND THAT HE COULDN'T STAIN HIS HANDS WITH BLOOD!!

STOP THIS, RED!!

ZRRM...

HUFF!!

HUFF!!

...

RED, IF YOU WANT TO MAKE GREEN'S WISHES COME TRUE, I'LL...

I HAVE CANCER.

DO YOU WANT YOUR CHILDREN TO GROW UP WITH A MURDERER FOR A FATHER?

THIS IS A CRIME. YOU'LL BE ARRESTED IN NO TIME.

...I HAVE TO MAKE SURE THAT METRO-POLIMAN DOES NOT BECOME GOD.

AT THE VERY LEAST...

THE ONE WHO STOPS HIM WILL BE A HERO ONCE THE ENTIRE TRUTH IS LAID BARE.

I'M SORRY TO HAVE DRAGGED YOU INTO THIS.

CAN YOU PLAY ALONG?

AH!

AAAAAAAAH!!

...

KRRR

HEY! ARE YOU LISTENING TO ME?!

IT'S NOT WORKING ON HIM. HE'S MUKAIDO'S SLAVE BECAUSE OF THE RED ARROW...

HE'S GONNA KILL ME...

MY HAPPINESS IS KILLING HIM WITH MY OWN TWO HANDS.

FLICH

CH-CHIK

HUFF!!

GRUNK

HUFF!!

HUFF!!

HUFF!!

HUFF!!

FOOOM

DHO

DHO

17:24:57

MUR MUR

MUR MUR

...

NO WAY... THIS CAN'T BE REAL, RIGHT?

KANADE

...

...

K...

WILL THAT SEAL THE DEAL?

I ACCIDENTALLY KILLED MY SISTER, AND ALL I WANT IS TO SEE HER AGAIN!

I'M DOING THIS FOR *MY* FAMILY TOO!

HEAR ME OUT!

IT'S ALL FOR HER... FOR THE SAKE OF MY SISTER!

THAT ANGEL LED ME ON, SAYING I'D BE ABLE TO TALK TO HER AGAIN IF I BECAME GOD...

MY...MY SISTER...

HUFF !!

HUFF !!

...PUT HIM IN A CELL WITH HIS EYES COVERED?

ARE YOU SURE WE CAN'T JUST...

...

HUFF!!

HUFF!!

YOU DON'T NEED TO BE FOOLISH! DON'T COMMIT MURDER!

YES! YES! EXACTLY!

HUFF !!

HUFF !!

THIS IS GOODBYE, ISN'T IT...?

MR. MUKAIDO ...

HUFF !!

HUFF !!

I JUST NEED STRENGTH NOW...

THE STRENGTH TO PULL THE TRIGGER, RIGHT AT THE END...

HUFF !!

HUFF !!

STRENGTH ...

...WILL UNDERSTAND WHAT I DID.

THAT IT WAS FOR THE SAKE OF MY LOVED ONES...

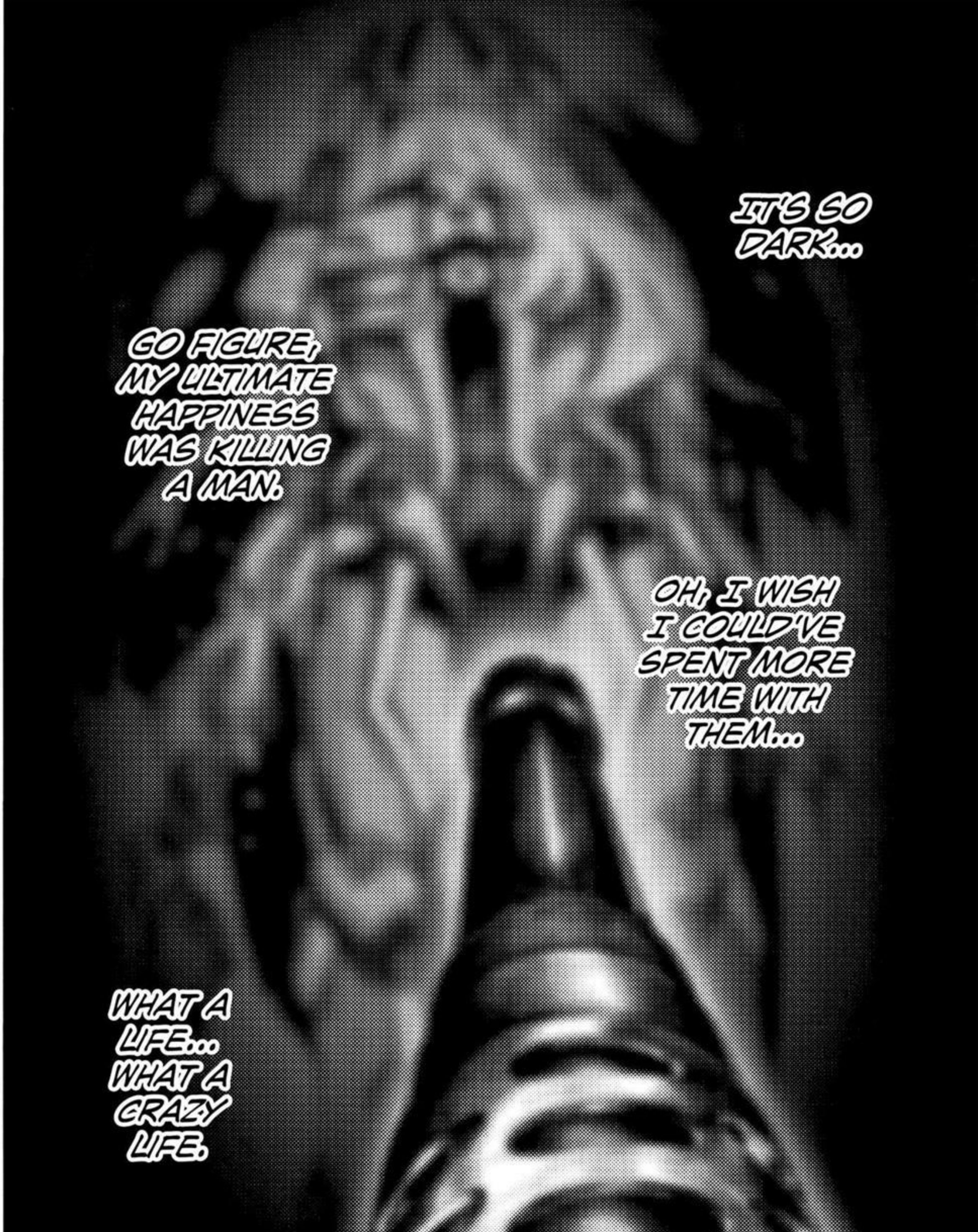
HALF OF THIS IS JUST EGO.

BUT ONE DAY, KAKEHASHI AND MY FAMILY...

YEAH, I KNOW...

THIS IS... MY KIND OF JUSTICE...

WATCH ME. WATCH THE PROOF THAT I LIVED...


IT'S SO DARK...
GO FIGURE, MY ULTIMATE HAPPINESS WAS KILLING A MAN.
OH, I WISH I COULD'VE SPENT MORE TIME WITH THEM...
WHAT A LIFE... WHAT A CRAZY LIFE.

PAPA'S OKAY... RIGHT...?

...

MAMA?

IT'S ALL RIGHT... PAPA'S A HERO.

STAY AWAY FROM THOSE!

NO, NANA-KA!

WHO
:
HUFF!!
HUFF!!
GOTTA ESCAPE ...
FWAP

ZHOOSH

DAMN YOU!!

LET ME... GO!!

I'M GOING TO DIE!

HOW LONG UNTIL IT HITS ME?!

BASED ON THE SOUND, HE'S FIRING FROM VERY CLOSE BY...

HUFF!!

HUFF!!

HUFF!!

HUFF!!

LET'S STRIKE A DEAL!

HEY! RED!

I DON'T WANT TO BE GOD! YOU CAN HAVE IT! JUST LET ME GO...

NO, WAIT, I'LL GIVE YOU MONEY! AS MUCH AS YOU WANT!

NAME YOUR PRICE! A BILLION YEN? TEN BILLION?!

...

AS MUCH AS YOU WANT!

I WILL GUARANTEE YOU A LIFE OF COMFORT AND HAPPINESS! WHAT DO YOU SAY?!

YOU'LL HAVE EVERYTHING YOU COULD EVER WANT!

YOU! PUSSYCAT! I'LL TAKE YOU IN AS MY WIFE!

W...

WELL ...?

...

!

EVERYTHING...

GRP

TINK

I HAVE EVERYTHING IN LIFE...

:: ドドドドドドド

ドドッ

ドドドドドド

KREK

GRCH

A

A

A

A

CROKK

RRRIP GURK

STOOOP!!

A

A

A

RE...

...A...

REA...

PCP

DHO

DHO

17:32:03

DHO

DM

AAAAAAAAH!!

WHOA!!

IS IT TERROR-ISM?!

THEY'RE PUTTING THAT MOSAIC ON THE WRONG PART OF THE PICTURE, THEN!

NO WAY, THAT'S HAP-PENING LIVE!

WAIT... THIS ISN'T REAL, RIGHT? THAT'S JUST FOOT-AGE!

FWUNK

PO!

LI!

MAN!

GOES!

WOO-HOO!

DOWWN!

YESSSS!

TOO BAD, SO SAD.

KANADE URYU... LOOKS LIKE *YOU* WERE THE DUNCE.

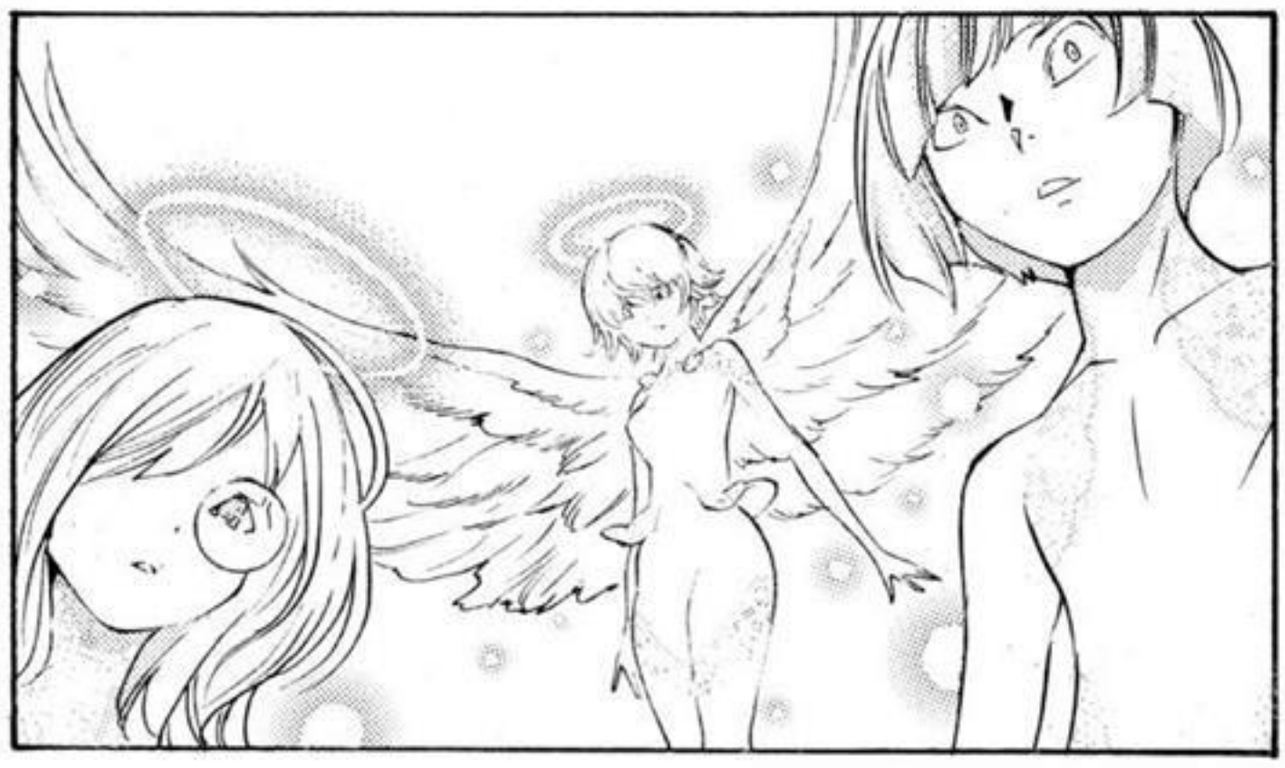
PLINK...

HOUSE

KSHUNK...

CRAK

KRASH



...

AND NOW... AT LAST...

BUT ...

... YEAH ...

IF WE HADN'T DONE *THIS*, MANY MORE LIVES WOULD HAVE BEEN LOST...

MIRAI IS ONE STEP CLOSER TO HAPPINESS.

THIS IS GOOD.

IT'S STILL ONE LIFE...

#26 Two Lights

PULL

FISH

ING

!

SHWM

THOSE RINGS... ARE MOVING TOWARD...

...THE GOD CANDIDATE WHO STABBED HIM WITH A RED ARROW...?

CLUNK

VOOM

MR. MUKAIDO ...

KWING

FWUP

AWW, THERE THEY GO.

ZMF

T...TO THE... HOSPITAL ...

FSHH

あの中から

SUCH A POWERFUL AND WEALTHY PERSON WITHIN THE HIERARCHY OF SOCIETY, AND YET EVEN HE FAILED.

HAJIME SOKOTANI HERE WAS AS POOR AS POOR GETS, AND HE WAS FAR FROM POWERLESS.

MONEY ONLY MAKES A DIFFERENCE IN HUMAN CONFLICTS. IT MEANS NOTHING WHEN IT COMES TO WINGS AND ARROWS.

I DON'T SEE IT THAT WAY. I MERELY FOLLOWED MY INSTINCTS THAT SAID, "THINGS WILL BE INTERESTING IF I THROW HAJIME IN THERE."

WHY DID YOU ATTEMPT TO STOP ME?

...

SHH...

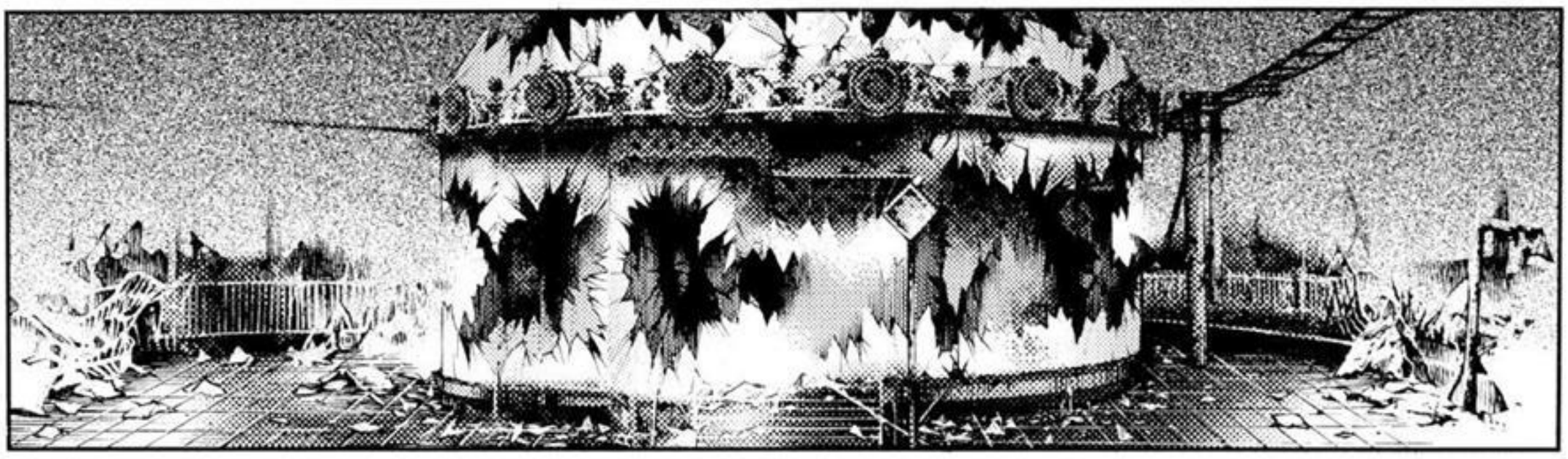
WELL, SO LONG.

I GOT THE ENTERTAIN-MENT I WAS LOOKING FOR.

...AND ONCE AGAIN...!

I AM A SPECIAL-RANK ANGEL...

...I MUST STOOP TO CARRYING A DEAD HUMAN BEING.



MUKAIDO

MR. MUKAIDO...
MR. MUKAIDO!

IS THERE ANYONE HERE?!

SOME-ONE!

BA

M

PLEASE! HE NEEDS HELP...

WHO ARE YOU...?

CÚ

SOME-BODY ...

THIS ISN'T A ROUND-THE-CLOCK FACILITY. YOU'LL NEED TO TRY SOMEWHERE ELSE.

HOW DID YOU GET IN HERE?

AN EMERGENCY PATIENT?

TING

AND... WHAT'S WITH THAT OUTFIT?

IS THIS SOME KIND OF JOKE?

SHMM

PLEASE, DOCTOR.

TWING

BEEP

BLOOD PRESSURE DROPPING, PATIENT IS UNRESPONSIVE.

I'M SEEING CYANOSIS!

PULSE AND CARDIO-PULMONARY SIGNALS ARE DROPPING FAST!

BEEP

MANDIBULAR MOVEMENT WITH HIS RESPIRATION ...

PULSE AT 50...

PRESSURE DOWN TO 25...

BEEP

CU

...

I THINK IT'S TIME ...

...TO INFORM THE FAMILY ...

BEEP

BEEP

IT'S TERMINAL CANCER... THERE WAS NOTHING WE COULD DO FOR HIM.

BEEP

I'LL BE HONEST-- I CAN'T BELIEVE THIS MAN IS ALIVE RIGHT NOW.

HIS BREATHING IS GOING TO GET WEAKER AND WEAKER FROM THIS POINT ON.

BEEP

I'M VERY SORRY... I'LL LET YOU SAY YOUR FINAL GOODBYES ...

BEEP

ZZZ
ZZZ

BEEP

BEEP

...

BEEP

BEEP

BEEP

BEEP

FSSHHH

A MAN WHO HAD GIVEN UP ON LIFE AND WAS SIMPLY WAITING CYNICALLY FOR DEATH.

NANATO MUKAIDO.

I'VE SEEN MANY PEOPLE WHO WERE GIVEN WINGS AND ARROWS...

I AM AMAZED.

...AND DIED WITH SUCH SATISFACTION WITH HIS LIFE.

...BUT I'VE NEVER SEEN ONE WHO SACRIFICED HIMSELF SO FULLY FOR HIS FAMILY...

KEEP THESE WINGS AND ARROWS OF NANATO MUKAIDO CLOSE TO YOUR HEART, ALONG WITH HIS SENTIMENTS AND WISHES.

IT IS THANKS TO YOU TWO.

SHING

SO THIS IS GOODBYE, BARET...

SHING...

IT WILL BE FINE.

YOU HAVE REVEL, AN ANGEL WITH MORE KNOWLEDGE THAN ME.

COME, NANATO MUKAIDO.

IT IS TIME TO MOVE ON.

BA-BUMP

FSHHH

BEEEEEEP

#27 At the Same Table

LET'S GO HOME NOW.

KAKEHASHI ...

YOU HAVEN'T SLEPT FOR DAYS...

I WONDER WHAT THEY'LL THINK...

HUH?

...

IF MRS. MUKAIDO AND NANAKA LEARN THAT HE KILLED A PERSON...

...AND THAT WE HELPED HIM DO IT...

I HOPE SO...

I THINK THAT IF ANYONE UNDERSTANDS HOW MR. MUKAIDO FELT, IT'S AYA.

SHE'LL UNDERSTAND THAT WE WERE HELPING HIS CAUSE.

AND IF I LEARNED THAT OTHERS WERE HELPING THEM...

BUT IF I LEARNED THAT A FAMILY MEMBER WAS PLANNING TO KILL SOMEONE, I'D STOP THEM.

WHAT MR. MUKAIDO DID SAVED THE LIVES OF PEOPLE ALL OVER THE WORLD.

BUT YOU'RE NOT WRONG EITHER...

YOUR INSTINCTS ARE CORRECT AND NOBLE...

YOU ALWAYS OVERCOME ANY OBSTACLE IN THE END...

YOU'RE KIND AND THOUGHT-FUL AND SYMPATHETIC TO EVERY-ONE...

IF EVERY OTHER PERSON IN THE WORLD CRITICIZED YOU, I WOULD STILL BE ON YOUR SIDE...

I'M ON YOUR SIDE, KAKE-HASHI...

IS THERE ANY WAY TO TURN OFF THE EFFECT OF THE RED ARROW IN SAKI?

YOU CAN WAIT 33 DAYS...

...OR SHE CAN DIE. THAT'S IT.

...

THEN I GUESS... WE'LL HAVE TO WAIT 33 DAYS...

...

THE RED ARROW HAS NOTHING TO DO WITH THIS.

...

IT'S NOT THAT--IT'S JUST THAT WITH A RED ARROW STUCK IN YOU, I CAN'T...

YOU DON'T WANT TO TALK ABOUT IT?

I LOVE YOU MORE THAN EVER NOW, KAKEHASHI.

...MY AFFECTION FOR YOU GREW MORE AND MORE.

AND AS WE FOUGHT AS A TEAM...

I'VE LOVED YOU SINCE BEFORE THE ARROW.

REALLY? *THAT'S* YOUR REACTION?

WHAT A JERK!

SAKI HAD ME CONTROLLED WITH A RED ARROW EARLIER, SO I WOULD KNOW.

THE NORMAL SAKI I KNOW WOULDN'T JUST COME OUT AND SAY "I LOVE YOU."

I STILL DON'T SEE THE PROBLEM. YOU ALWAYS LIKED SAKI, REMEMBER?

...

YOU SAY THINGS YOU WOULD NEVER EXPECT TO SAY...

IT'S LIKE YOU DON'T HAVE CONTROL OVER YOURSELF ANYMORE.

THE ARROW HAS A HUGE EFFECT ON YOUR WORDS AND ACTIONS.

I SAY THIS WITH FULL KNOWLEDGE OF HOW IT WORKS...

MR. MUKAIDO DIDN'T PIERCE ME WITH A RED ARROW, BUT I LOVED HIM TOO.

THEN... WHAT IF I SAID THIS INSTEAD?

IT'S WHAT THE RED ARROWS ARE FOR.

SAKI SAYS SHE'S ALWAYS BEEN IN LOVE WITH YOU. WHY CAN'T YOU ACCEPT THAT?

SEE?

I THINK THAT WHAT HE DID... THE WAY HE DID IT FOR HIS FAMILY... WAS TRULY JUST AND RIGHTEOUS.

DO YOU HATE HIM FOR IT, KAKEHASHI ...?

NO...

FOR THE VERY FIRST TIME...

...MIRAI HAS EXPRESSED AFFIRMATION FOR THE ACT OF KILLING.

MR. MUKAIDO IS A HERO...

SAKI...
I DIDN'T SAY ANYTHING EARLIER, BECAUSE I DIDN'T WANT MR. MUKAIDO TO NOTICE...

...

MR. MUKAIDO SOUGHT A PEACEFUL METHOD OF CHOOSING GOD...

HUH?

...BUT THE TRUTH IS, THERE WAS A RED ARROW IN METROPOLIMAN.

...

I DON'T KNOW WHO HAD SHOT HIM...

OR WHO HE *LET* SHOOT HIM...

BUT I CAN'T IMAGINE HIM LETTING ANYONE USE A RED ARROW ON HIM...

I DON'T KNOW THAT.

YOU MEAN METRO-POLIMAN HAD A PARTNER?

SO YOU THINK IT WASN'T HIS IDEA? THAT SOMEONE ELSE JUST PIERCED HIM FIRST?

I WOULD ASSUME IT WAS ANOTHER GOD CANDIDATE.

YES...

YES.

MEANING HIS WHITE ARROWS ALSO WENT TO SOME OTHER CANDIDATE?

...ALONG WITH THE RED ARROW.

AFTER HE DIED, THE RINGS FOR HIS ARROWS AND WINGS WENT SOMEWHERE ELSE...

WE'LL TRY TO PUT IT ALL TOGETHER ONCE WE'RE BACK HOME.

...

BUT WHO COULD IT BE...?

IT LOOKS LIKE REVEL'S GROUP NEVER IMAGINED THAT *WE* WOULD BE WORKING TOGETHER.

MY HUNCH SAYS THAT IN A PREVIOUS LIFE, WE WERE FRIENDS OR BROTHERS...

IT'S STRANGE, THE WAY WE GOT ALONG...

OH, WEIRD! YOU ANGELS TALK ABOUT PREVIOUS LIVES TOO...?

MAYBE EVEN LOVERS, IN FACT.

I ESPECIALLY LIKE THIS WHITE ARROW.

IT'S SO GLITTERY AND BEAUTIFUL.

I FIGURED I'D GET THE COMPLETE SET, INCLUDING THAT OTHER TEAM'S, BUT I GUESS THIS IS PLENTY FOR NOW.

...I WASN'T EXPECTING TO GET SO MANY WINGS AND ARROWS AT ONCE.

I GOTTA ADMIT...

THIS IS THANKS TO YOU, BALTA.

HEH!

YOU TOLD ME THE IDENTITY OF METROPOLIMAN, AFTER ALL.

...BUT HE PUT ON AS ENTERTAINING A SHOW AS I EXPECTED. I'M PRETTY SATISFIED.

I'LL ADMIT IT'S A SHAME THAT HAJIME SOKOTANI DIED...

HE SURE DIDN'T.

HA HA! YEAH, HAJIME SOKOTANI'S VERY EXISTENCE WAS ENTER-TAINING.

SO HE NEVER EVEN REALIZED THAT YOU WERE WORKING WITH PENEMA?

WELL, I SHOULD BE OFF TO THE CELESTIAL REALM...

SAY HELLO TO PENEMA FOR ME.

I WILL.

I FIGURED THAT KEEPING HIS INFORMATION LIMITED WOULD HELP HIM ACT IN THE WAY HE TRULY WANTED TO.

THAT BATTLE NEVER WOULD HAVE HAPPENED IF NOT FOR HIS CONTRIBUTION.

SO IF YOU DIE, YOU GET TO GO TO HEAVEN...

HMM ...

BEST OF LUCK.

BYE-BYE!

SIX DAYS EARLIER ...

JOSO ACADEMY

OH MAN... HOW OBSESSED WITH HER *AM* I?

PROBABLY WOULDN'T BE A GOOD IDEA TO VISIT DURING SUMMER VACATION, HUH?

IT'S THE LAST I'LL GET TO SEE OF HER FOR A WHILE.

THE GIRLS ARE ALREADY TALKING ABOUT WHAT A PLAYBOY YOU ARE, MINAMIKAWA.

I'M ACTUALLY SUPER FAITHFUL AND TRUE!

NO WAY! IT'S NOT TRUE!

REALLY?!

BING

A PER-FECT BULL'S-EYE, RIGHT DOWN THE MIDDLE!

WHOA! SHE GOT IT!

SHE'S SO CUTE!

THAT WAS SO AWE-SOME!

YIKES! I THINK I'M FALLING IN LOVE!!

THUD

KANADE ?

KWING

TEP

LET'S WALK HOME TOGETHER, SENPAI.

SURE.

...

SURE.

CAN WE HOLD HANDS?

HUH?

WOWWW!!

SO THIS IS METRO-POLIMAN'S BASE!

OOH!

THIS IS SO COOL!

IT'S LIKE A SECRET FORTRESS OR SOMETHING!

SWISH

WHAT'S THIS?

BSHINK

YOWZA.

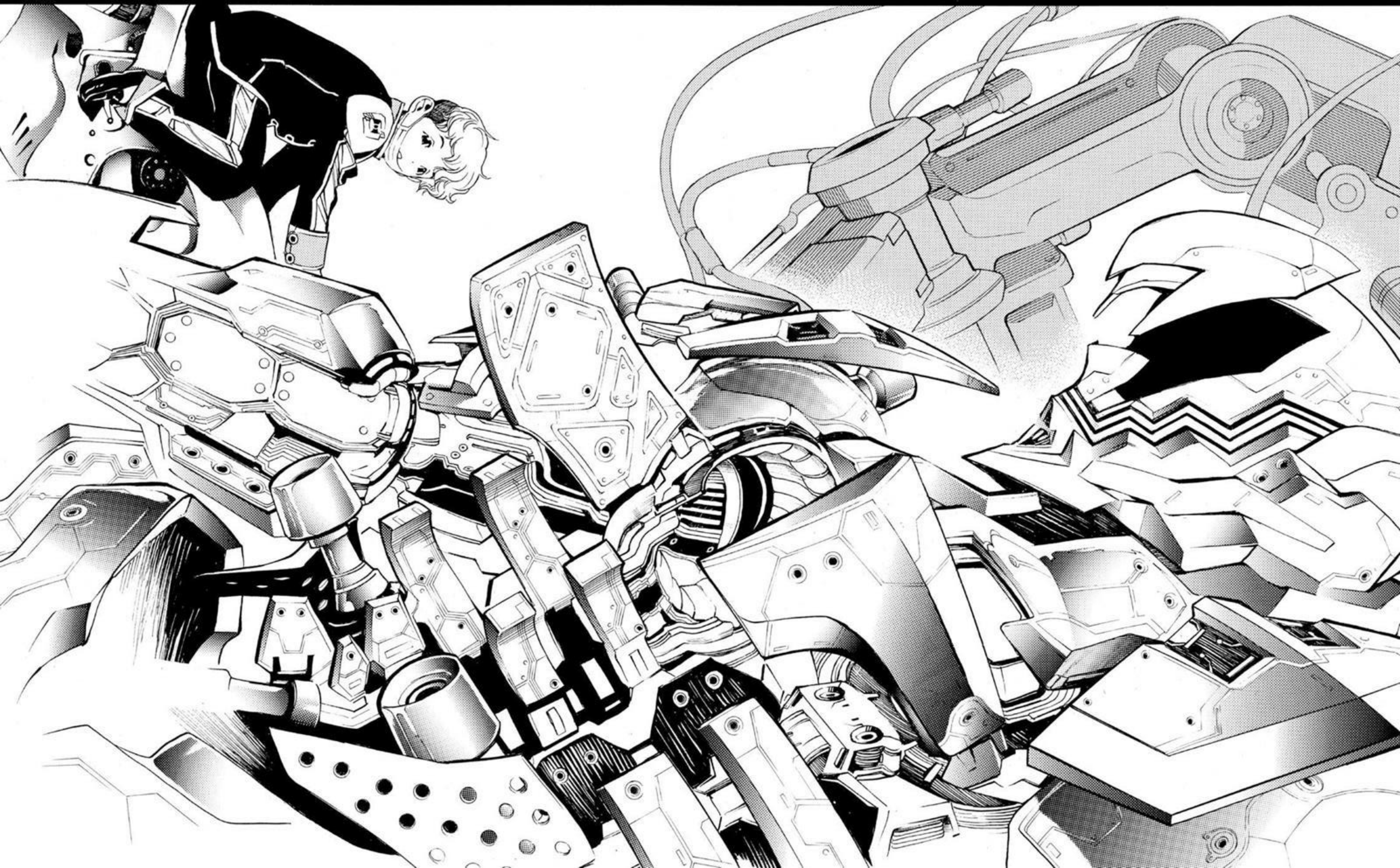
I WANNA TRY THAT ONE NEXT!

VROOM! VROOM!

OH, CAN I RIDE THIS?

THIS IS SO COOL! THIS IS *SUPER RAD*!!

PEOWW! DA-DA-DA-DAAA!



THAT'S THE REAL METRO-POLIMAN.

JUST LIKE TONY STARK! HA HA...

YOU UP-GRADED IT GOOD.

IT'S NOT THAT CHEAP COSTUME FROM A KIDS' TV SHOW ANYMORE.

ALSO ...

YEAH, SURE.

HEY... IF YOU DIE, CAN I HAVE THIS ROOM?

...GIMME THE WHITE ARROW HE'S GOT.

YOU CAN'T RUN, EVEN IF YOU'RE AT A DISADVAN-TAGE.

SO THE NEXT TIME YOU GET INTO A BIG FIGHT, YOU HAVE TO FINISH IT.

OF COURSE.

FOR YOUR SAKE.

I WILL NOT RUN.

I WILL EXHIBIT MY OVER-WHELMING SUPERIORITY ...

...AND KILL THE ENEMY.

BLRB

BLRB

WHERE'S KAKEHASHI, NASSE?

HE'S TALKING WITH REVEL NOW.

THAT LOOKS GOOD.

THERE.

DO YOU THINK HE LIKES CURRY?

OF COURSE HE DOES. ***NOBODY*** HATES CURRY.

ARE YOU REALLY HAVING THAT MUCH FUN COOKING FOR MIRAI?

YES.

I'LL ADMIT I'M NERVOUS THOUGH.

WHAT WILL I DO IF HE SAYS IT'S GROSS ...?

I MEAN, I LOVE HIM.

SO WHEN HE'S HAPPY, I'M HAPPY.

HMM...

...

Nasse Sp. Rank
Mirai Kakehashi
R 1 Wh 1 Wi 1

AND THERE'S NO CHANGE FOR ME.

Revel 1st Rank
Saki Hanakago
R 3 Wi 3

SAKI GOT MR. MUKAIDO AND HAJIME'S WINGS AND ARROWS, SO COMBINED WITH HER OWN, SHE'S GOT THREE OF EACH...

? Ogaro? Rank
R ? Wh ? Wi ?

? Yazeli 2nd Rank
R ↔ Wi

? Penema 1st Rank
R Wi

? Muni Sp. Rank
R Wh Wi

THAT LEAVES THESE FOUR TEAMS.

THE SAME AS THE NUMBER BETWEEN YOU AND SAKI... NO, MORE THAN THAT.

YEAH...

METROPOLIMAN'S FOUR WINGS, FOUR RED ARROWS, AND ONE WHITE ARROW ENDED UP SOMEWHERE AMONG THESE FOUR PAIRS.

Sachiel 5th Rank (R)1 (Wh)1 (Wi)1

Sahaquiel 1st Rank (R)3 (Wi)3

Ogaro ? Rank (R)?(Wh)?(Wi)?

Yazeli 2nd Rank (R)×(Wi)

Penemue 1st Rank (R) (Wi)

Ramiel 5th Rank (R) (Wh) (Wi)

? Rank

R? Wh?

AND IF THIS ONE'S A SPECIAL-RANK ANGEL...

Yazeli 2nd Rank

R? Wh? Wi?

R↔Wi

...THEN I JUST HAVE TO HOPE THAT WHOEVER WOUND UP WITH ALL THOSE WINGS AND ARROWS ISN'T JUST-LIKE METROPOLIMAN...

IF WE HAVE TO DEAL WITH TWO WHITE ARROWS...

WHAT WOULD MR. MUKAIDO DO...?

I MADE YOU SOME CURRY ...

KAKE-HASHI ...

MR. MUKAIDO ...

SHE'S MAKING HER MOVE ...

SHH...

KCHAK

CLINK

CLINK

ARE YOU AWAKE? GOOD MORNING!

I DON'T BLAME YOU-- THAT FIGHT WAS NEARLY THREE DAYS LONG...

YOU WERE ASLEEP FOR AN ENTIRE DAY.

WHERE ARE THE ANGELS?

I DON'T KNOW. MAYBE THEY'RE GIVING US SOME PRIVACY.

C'MON, LET'S EAT!

YOU MUST BE HUNGRY, RIGHT?

AT... THE TABLE ...?

YES, OF COURSE.

OOPS! WAS IT TOO HOT?!

SORRY! I LIKE MY CURRY SPICY!

...

...
SINCE I LOST MY FAMILY ...

...I'VE NEVER HAD A MEAL AT A TABLE WITH ANYONE ...

EVER SINCE THAT TIME...

ACTUALLY ...

...NO FOOD HAS EVER HAD ANY TASTE FOR ME...

BUT THIS CURRY...

I CAN TASTE IT...

IT'S GOT FLAVOR.

IT'S
REALLY
GOOD...

SSH...

50°

0°

30°

40°

60°

70°

80°

90°

THAT'S ALL SIX OF US.

SWOOSH...

NOW THAT THE NUMBER OF CANDIDATES HAS BEEN HALVED ...

...LET US HOLD THE TRADITIONAL MEETING.

TO BE CONTINUED...

T s ug u mi **O**h b **a**

Born in Tokyo, Tsugumi Ohba is the author of the hit series *Death Note* and *Bakuman*。.

Ta **k** e **s h** i O b a **t**a

Takeshi Obata was born in 1969 in Niigata, Japan, and first achieved international recognition as the artist of the wildly popular *Shonen Jump* title *Hikaru no Go*, which won the 2003 Tezuka Osamu Cultural Prize: Shinsei "New Hope" Award and the 2000 Shogakukan Manga Award. He went on to illustrate the smash hit *Death Note* as well as the hugely successful manga *Bakuman*。 and *All You Need Is Kill*.

PLATINVM END

VOLUME 8
SHONEN JUMP Manga Edition

°

STORY Tsugumi Ohba
ART Takeshi Obata

°

TRANSLATION Stephen Paul
TOUCH-UP ART & LETTERING James Gaubatz
DESIGN Shawn Carrico
EDITOR Alexis Kirsch

°

ORIGINAL COVER DESIGN Narumi Noriko

°

PLATINUM END © 2015 by Tsugumi Ohba, Takeshi Obata
All rights reserved.
First published in Japan in 2015 by SHUEISHA Inc., Tokyo.
English translation rights arranged by SHUEISHA Inc.

°

The stories, characters and incidents mentioned in this publication are entirely fictional.

No portion of this book may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means without written permission from the copyright holders.

°

Printed in the U.S.A.

Published by VIZ Media, LLC
P.O. Box 77010
San Francisco, CA 94107

°

10 9 8 7 6 5 4 3 2 1
First printing, April 2019

VIZ MEDIA
viz.com

SHONEN JUMP
shonenjump.com

ratings.viz.com RATED M MATURE
PARENTAL ADVISORY
PLATINUM END is rated M for Mature and is recommended for mature readers.
This volume contains suggestive themes.

9

PLATINUM END

STORY
TSUGUMI
OHBA

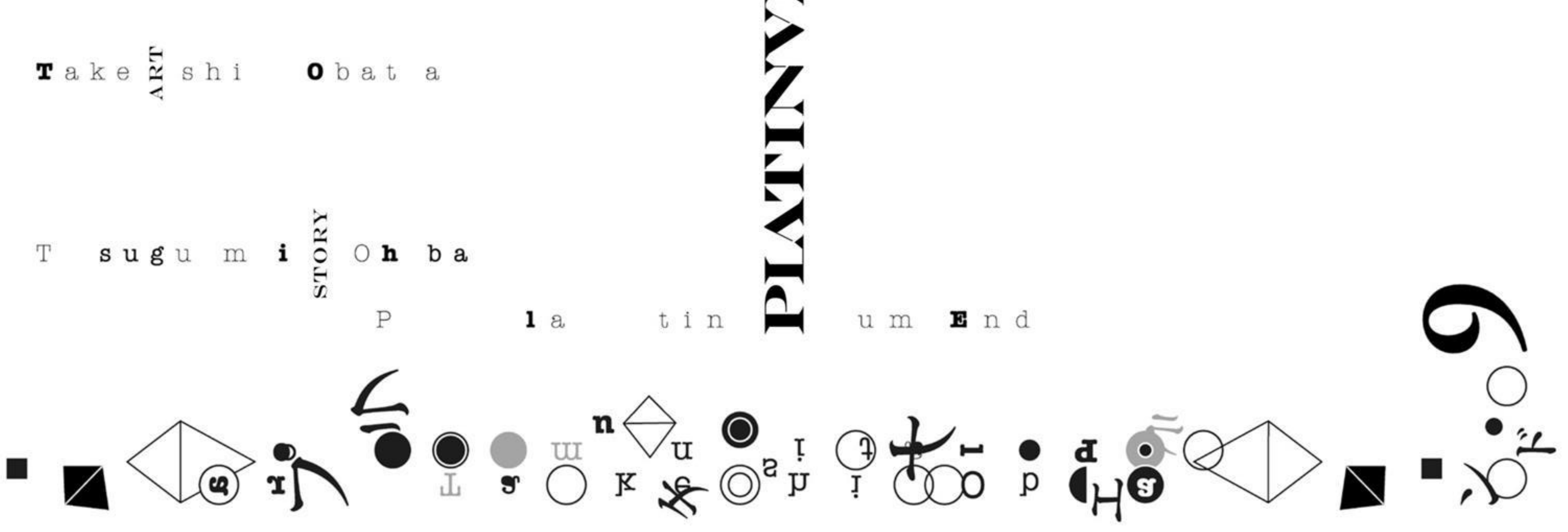
ART
TAKESHI
OBATA

PARENTAL ADVISORY
EXPLICIT
CONTENT

PLATINUM END

ART Takeshi Obata

STORY Tsugumi Ohba



CHARACTERS

Kanade Uryu

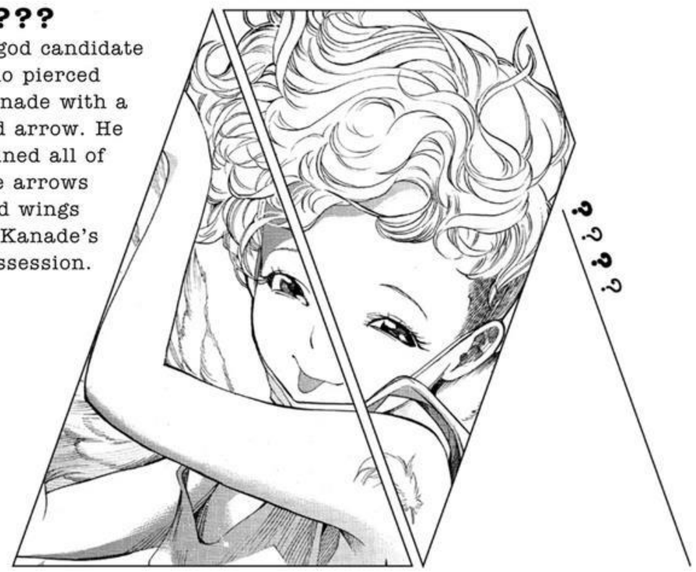
Grandson of the Joso Academy headmaster, son of the Joso Industries president. He assumes the form of the Metropoliman character and purges the other god candidates until Mirai's group puts an end to him.

Meyza

The special-rank angel who chose Kanade. For unknown reasons, she was elevated from rankless to the top special rank.

????

A god candidate who pierced Kanade with a red arrow. He gained all of the arrows and wings in Kanade's possession.



Baret

The first-rank angel who chose Mukaido. Possesses great knowledge about the celestial world.

Mirai Kakehashi

First-year high school student. His parents and brother died in an accident when he was seven. After a painful life with his abusive relatives, he attempts to commit suicide and survives through Nasse's help.

Nasse

A special-rank angel who wants to bring happiness to Mirai's life. Bright and bubbly.

Nanato Mukaido

An apparel company employee who left work due to late-stage cancer. A family man with a wife and kid. He passed away after his battle with Metropoliman.

Revel

Promoted to the first-rank Angel of Emotion.

Saki Hanakago

Mirai's old friend and fellow student. The object of his affections.

Story

AFTER PARTING

Sadness prevails at Mukaido's death, even though it brought the end of Metropoliman. Meanwhile, the other god candidates spring into action...

PROOF OF LIFE

Mukaido points a gun at Metropoliman. He pulls the trigger at the cost of his life—for the sake of family.

NARROWING DISTANCE

During a one-on-one duel with Metropoliman, Mirai catches him off guard. He and Saki capture Metropoliman.

Story

"My time has come. I leave the seat of god to the next human.
To a younger, fresher power.

The next god shall be chosen from the 13 humans chosen by you 13 angels.When the chosen human is made the next god, your angelic duty is finished, and you may live beside that god in peace.

You have 999 days remaining..."

CONTENTS

#28 Midair Confession
P5

#29 Diffused Power
P55

#30 World's Greatest Assassin
P107

#31 Updated List
P151

#28 Midair Confession

THAT'S ALL SIX OF US.

LET'S BEGIN THE MEETING.

"STARS" ...?

PERHAPS A BUILDING HUMANS USE TO VIEW THE STARS.

...BUT WHERE *ARE* WE?

SURE, I'M ALL FOR THAT...

IS THIS AN OCCASION TO PRY INTO EACH OTHERS' AFFAIRS?

SO WHAT ARE WE GOING TO TALK ABOUT?

WELL, THE CUSTOM IS TO HOLD THE MEETING AT THIS POINT...

...

NOW, NOW.

THINGS WON'T GO AS SMOOTHLY AS THEY HAVE BEEN FROM NOW ON.

THERE'S PLENTY OF MERIT IN TALKING IT OUT.

THAT'S YAZELI, THE ANGEL OF TRUTH... WHO CLAIMS TO BE SECOND RANK.

WHAT'S THAT SUP-POSED TO MEAN?

BUT IF THERE'S NOTHING FOR US TO TALK ABOUT, WE MIGHT AS WELL END IT QUICKLY.

PERHAPS WE WERE A BIT TOO FAST TO HALVE THE ORIGINAL TOTAL.

AT THE VERY LEAST, MEYZA'S PARTNER METROPOLIMAN WAS INTENT ON THAT.

...HAVE RUN THEIR COURSE.

WHAT I MEAN IS THAT THE CANDIDATES WHO WOULD TRY TO BECOME GOD BY KILLING ALL THE OTHERS...

ARE ANY OF OUR PARTNERS TRULY DEDICATED TO BECOMING GOD?

IT ONLY MAKES SENSE THAT HUMANS WOULD WISH TO ENJOY THE HUMAN WORLD.

AS I THOUGHT ...

ACHEM!

IN FACT, MY PARTNER IS LIVING IN THE LAP OF LUXURY.

I'M IN THE TROPICS! I SHOULD BE ABLE TO GO NAKED WITHOUT CATCHING A COLD...

UGH, WHY?

NOW I JUST HOPE THAT WHOEVER BECOMES GOD IS NICE AND DOESN'T CONFISCATE MY ARROWS.

I'M SURE GLAD THAT ONE JERK DIED, I HAVE TO SAY.

THEN I CAN LIVE OUT THE REST OF MY YEARS IN ABSOLUTE COMFORT WITH RED ARROW POWERS! ♪

MUST BE BECAUSE SOMEONE'S GETTING JEALOUS CHECKING OUT MY INSTAGRAM.

OH! I KNOW.

THE MOMENT THEY GET POWER, THEY TRY TO ABUSE IT.

HA HA! STUPID HUMANS.

SHOULDN'T WE BE TRYING TO PERSUADE THEM OTHER-WISE?

THERE ARE MANY HUMANS WHO PUT RED ARROWS TO THESE USES.

...TO KEEP OTHERS FROM FINDING OUT THAT SHE IS A GOD CANDIDATE...

I'VE BEEN WARNING HER NOT TO USE INSTAGRAM...

...NO GOD WILL BE DETER-MINED.

...IS BECAUSE UNLESS SOMETHING CHANGES NOW...

BUT THE REA-SON I BRING THIS UP...

FLASH

HEY, NO NEED TO BE PES-SIMISTIC, MAN.

MY PARTNER'S STILL BEING PROACTIVE.

...

AHH!

...I THINK IT'LL BE AN ENTER-TAINING GAME.

LET'S JUST SAY...

YOU THINK ONE OF THE SIX WILL BECOME GOD BY THEN?

WE HAVE OVER 800 DAYS OF TIME REMAINING...

THEN LET US PUT OUR HOPES ON THE PARTNER...

VERY WELL.

...OF PENEMA, ANGEL OF GAMES, AND OBSERVE.

THE NEXT DAY

SHIBUYA

OKAY, HERE WE GO...

SCOOCH TO THE RIGHT.

ARE WE IN THE FRAME?

CLICK

HUH?

...

IN... THE AIR...

HE'S FLOAT-ING.

...

ZOOM

AAAH!

USUTAYA

SOME-THING JUST FLEW BY!!

A MOVIE?

ARE THEY FILMING SOME-THING?

LIKE THE PEOPLE FLYING AT GRAND TOWER?

I DUNNO. IT LOOKS LIKE A KID...

YEAAAH!

LOOK AT ME, I'M A GOD CANDIDATE!!

AND SAKI'S HEAD-GEAR GOT BUSTED TOO...

THE BATTLE WITH METRO-POLIMAN REALLY DESTROYED THIS SUIT...

DID YOU WANT SOME LUNCH TOO, KAKEHASHI?

YOU LIKE SAND-WICHES, DON'T YOU?

HERE.

I MADE SANDWICHES TODAY.

EGG SAND-WICHES IN PARTIC-ULAR.

OF COURSE YOU DO.

DO I...?

...

DON'T YOU REMEMBER WHEN WE WENT ON THAT FIELD TRIP IN KINDERGARTEN? WE SAT NEXT TO EACH OTHER DURING LUNCH.

...

I SAID THE EGG SANDWICH YOU WERE EATING LOOKED DELICIOUS, AND YOU GAVE IT TO ME.

I WAS TAKING BITE AFTER BITE, BECAUSE IT WAS SO GOOD...

...AND THE NEXT THING I KNEW, I HAD EATEN ALL THE REST OF YOUR LUNCH!

ALL I HAD LEFT IN MINE WAS A SINGLE LITTLE ROLLED OMELET.

YOU ATE THAT AND THEN SAID YOU WERE FULL ALREADY.

I REMEMBER THE PART WHERE YOU ATE ALL OF MY LUNCH.

HOMM

YOU FINALLY SMILED.

NOW I'M REALIZING THAT I WAS THE ONE WHO LIKED EGG SAND-WICHES.
WAIT ...

I WAS HOPING WE COULD FIND A WAY TO SMILE FOR EACH OTHER LIKE THIS.
YOU'VE HAD THAT PENSIVE LOOK FOR SO LONG...

YEAH...

IT'S A GOD CANDI-DATE!!

MIRAI, SAKI, COME QUICK!

SPECIAL BROADCAST
WHAT'S HAPPENING RIGHT NOW?

LIVE
GOD CANDIDATE LIVE ON CAMERA!!

THAT'S THE CHILD WITH THE SMARTPHONE MR. MUKAIDO POINTED OUT AT JINBO STADIUM!

ADCAST

PENING

?

LIVE

GOD LIVE

WHICH MEANS HE'S A...

THAT'S THE BOY WHO WAS WITH METRO-POLIMAN ...

HE'S GOT WINGS AND A MASK.

OR WAS, I GUESS? NOW I'M A GOD CANDIDATE. OH, AND I'M NOT LYING ABOUT ANY OF THIS.

MY NAME IS SUSUMU YUITO.

I'M AN ORDINARY SIXTH GRADER.

WHOA!

FTHUP

LOOK AT THAT! HE'S FLYING!

HE JUST FLEW!

THE REASON I'M FILMING ON THE ROOFTOP IS SO THAT I CAN FLY AWAY LIKE THIS IF ANYTHING HAPPENS.

I WENT TO THE TV STATION BECAUSE I WANTED YOU ALL TO KNOW THE THINGS THAT I KNOW.

IS THAT WHY YOU WENT FLYING AROUND CALLING YOURSELF A "GOD CANDIDATE" THIS MORNING?

YOU'RE THE TALK OF THE ENTIRE ***WORLD*** ON SOCIAL MEDIA RIGHT NOW.

TELL US, SUSUMU... WHAT IS IT THAT YOU HAVE TO SHARE?

I DON'T ACTUALLY WANT TO *BE* GOD OR ANYTHING...

AS A MATTER OF FACT, I'M THE ONE WHO UPLOADED METROPOLIMAN GETTING BEAT.

ALL OF A SUDDEN ONE DAY, I WAS A GOD CANDIDATE.

THE FOOTAGE, YOU MEAN?

...

ACTU-ALLY...

IF HE GOT ALL OF THOSE RINGS *FROM* POLIMAN, HE'S THE BIGGEST DANGER OF THEM ALL AT THE MOMENT.

EVEN WITHOUT METROPOLIMAN AROUND, ISN'T IT DANGEROUS FOR HIM TO SHOW HIS FACE LIKE THAT?

OKOK-OFF
150m先
Cafe de Coro
ATTAVISION
WHAT'S HAPPENING RIGHT NOW?
GOD CANDIDATE LIVE ON CAMERA!!
ATTA
REALLY ?!
HE SAYS HE'S THE ONE WHO PUT UP THAT VIDEO.

THEN YOU CALL HIM AND TELL HIM HE SHOULDN'T BE LYING LIKE THAT.
ENOUGH OF THE JOKES, PLEASE.
MOM, YUITO'S ON TV SAYING THAT HE'S A GOD CANDIDATE.
IT'S TRUE.

WE'VE GOT CONFIR-MATION.

OKAY, I WILL.

GOOD. WE'LL SEND A SQUAD AT ONCE.

WE CAN REACH IT IN TEN MINUTES FROM OUR JURISDIC-TION.

THAT'S NO. 17 PRIMARY SCHOOL IN DISTRICT 12.

FIND THE BOY CALLING HIMSELF A GOD CANDIDATE AND CAPTURE HIM AT ONCE!

PLACE A MEDIA BLOCKADE.

HE'S GOING INTO ACTION...

HUH?

SUSUMU, CAN YOU EXPLAIN EXACTLY WHAT A GOD CANDIDATE IS FOR US?

HMMM...

ALL OF THESE TERMS ARE TRENDING RAPIDLY ON SOCIAL MEDIA ALONG WITH "GOD CANDIDATE"!

...AND *ARROWS.*

...AND *WINGS* ...

AND IN ADDITION ...

ANGELS AND *GOD...*

SORRY, I FORGOT TO TURN OFF MY PHONE.

BEEP

IT'S FROM IIDA.

OH!

BLINGK!

ATTA VISION
WHAT'S HAPPENING RIGHT NOW!
15分先
ATTA
DEBS

GOD SENT 13 ANGELS TO SELECT 13 CANDIDATES FROM TOKYO, THE CITY WITH THE HIGHEST POPULATION DENSITY IN THE WORLD.

THOSE ARE THE PEOPLE WHO ARE MORE LIKELY TO WANT TO CHANGE THE WORLD, SO IT'S BETTER FOR THEM TO BECOME GOD, APPARENTLY ...

I'M SORRY-- I KNOW I'M NOT EXPLAINING THIS VERY WELL.

ANYWAY, THE MAIN POINT IS THAT THEY PICKED 13 CANDIDATES, AND ONE OF THEM WILL BECOME GOD.

OH, AND APPARENTLY IT'S BECAUSE THE PEOPLE OF TOKYO ARE BLESSED, AND YET MANY OF THEM WANT TO KILL THEMSELVES...

LET'S SEE...

HERE'S WHAT A GOD CANDIDATE IS.

BASICALLY, THE CURRENT GOD SAID, "I WANT TO QUIT, SO CHOOSE THE NEXT GOD FOR ME"...

THAT'S ACCURATE. HE'S REALLY LAYING IT OUT CONCISELY FOR THEM.

SAME FOR THE WINGS AND ARROWS.

ALSO, ONLY THE CANDIDATES CAN SEE THE ANGELS...

...

FSHK

HE LOOKS LIKE THIS.

MY ANGEL'S NAME IS PENEMA.

BASED ON WHAT YOU SAID ...

...DOES THAT MEAN YOU WERE HAVING SUICIDAL THOUGHTS, SUSUMU?

OH... NO, I WASN'T LIKE THAT...

I WAS JUST A NORMAL KID IN FIFTH GRADE.

I WOULD HANG OUT WITH MY FRIENDS AT RECESS DURING SCHOOL.

BUT I GUESS THAT DOESN'T REALLY MATTER...

IT WAS THE SECOND-CLASS GROUP, THOUGH, THE ONES WITHOUT SMART-PHONES.

THE FIRST FEW GRADES, WE WOULD WALK HOME AND PLAY TOGETHER AND STUFF...

I GOT ALONG WITH EVERYONE, BUT I DIDN'T HAVE A BEST FRIEND.

...AND I WOULD WALK HOME BY MYSELF.

...BUT WHEN IT CAME TIME TO STUDY AND CRAM FOR MIDDLE SCHOOL ENTRANCE EXAMS, OTHER KIDS GOT BUSY...

OH, MY PARENTS ARE HARD WORKERS WHO PROVIDE A GOOD LIFE FOR ME, SO I'M GRATEFUL TO THEM AND EVERYTHING, OF COURSE.

BOTH MY PARENTS WORK, SO I WOULD BE ALONE UNTIL AROUND SEVEN O'CLOCK.

INSTANT RAMEN
TONKATSU FLAVOR
とんこつ風味

PLAYING VIDEO GAMES WASN'T THAT MUCH FUN ON MY OWN.

I TRIED READING MANGA, BUT THEY WERE ALL THE SAME AND NOT AS MUCH FUN AS PEOPLE SAID.

I ONLY WATCHED SO I COULD KEEP UP WITH MY FRIENDS AT SCHOOL.

MANZAI V

TV WAS STUPID.

THERE WAS ONLY SO MUCH I COULD DO ON MY OWN.

New Mathematics 5

ON THE OTHER HAND, I DIDN'T WANT TO STUDY FOR MY FUTURE AT ALL.

I DOUBTED I'D GET INTO A GOOD SCHOOL OR GET A GOOD JOB.

Salaryman

Scholar

Doctor

Youtuber

Soccer player

Politician

I DIDN'T HAVE A DREAM, A GOAL THAT I WANTED TO STRIVE TOWARD.

Cook

...BUT WHEN I GROW UP, I DON'T WANT TO HAVE TO WORK FOR MY KIDS.

WHEN I SAID I WAS GRATEFUL TO MY PARENTS EARLIER, I DID MEAN IT...

I KNEW I DIDN'T HAVE A BRIGHT FUTURE WAITING FOR ME.

I WAS ONLY IN FIFTH GRADE, AND EVEN I KNEW ALL POLITICIANS WERE STUPID.

I HAD ANXIETY INSTEAD...

NO, NOT ANXIETY.

I THINK ...

I WASN'T ANXIOUS. I ALWAYS ASSUMED I COULD GET BY IN THE WORLD.

...I WAS JUST LONELY.

...

ONE TIME THERE WAS AN ASSORTMENT OF THE SLEEPING PILLS MY PARENTS TAKE SITTING OUT ON THE TABLE.

AND AN ANGEL APPEARED.

HEY, SWALLOWING THOSE ISN'T GOING TO KILL YOU.

MY RED ARROWS CAN PIERCE UP TO 14 PEOPLE... AND ANYONE UNDER THEIR EFFECT WILL BE COMPLETELY IN LOVE WITH ME.

THAT WAY, THEY'LL ALWAYS WANT TO PLAY WITH ME...

UH...I SEE... AND THAT DRAWING IS OF THE ANGEL AND THE RED ARROWS?

HE SAID HE WAS PENEMA, ANGEL OF GAMES.

GAMES LIKE YU-GI-OH! GAMES.

I SAID I LIKED GAMES, AND HE GAVE ME RED ARROWS AND WINGS.

HIS DRAWING IS KINDA SCARY.

SPECIAL BROADCAST
WHAT'S HAPPENING RIGHT NOW?
GOD CANDIDATE LIVE ON CAMERA!!

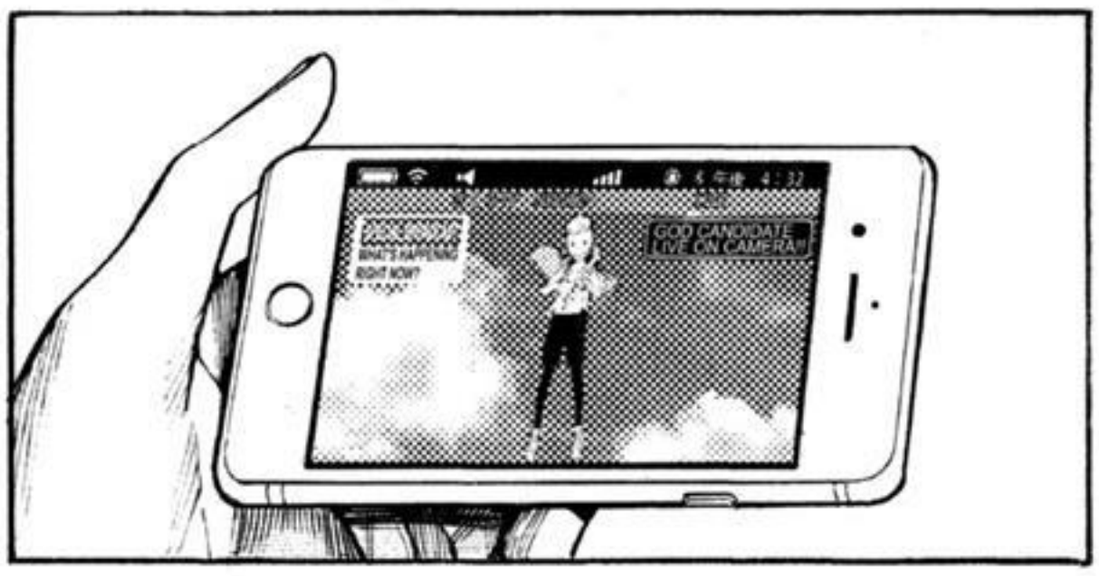
ARE YOU KIDDING?! DAMN, I WANT SOME OF THOSE ARROWS!

SO THE WINGS ARE HOW HE FLIES!

BUT HE'S *FLY-ING!*

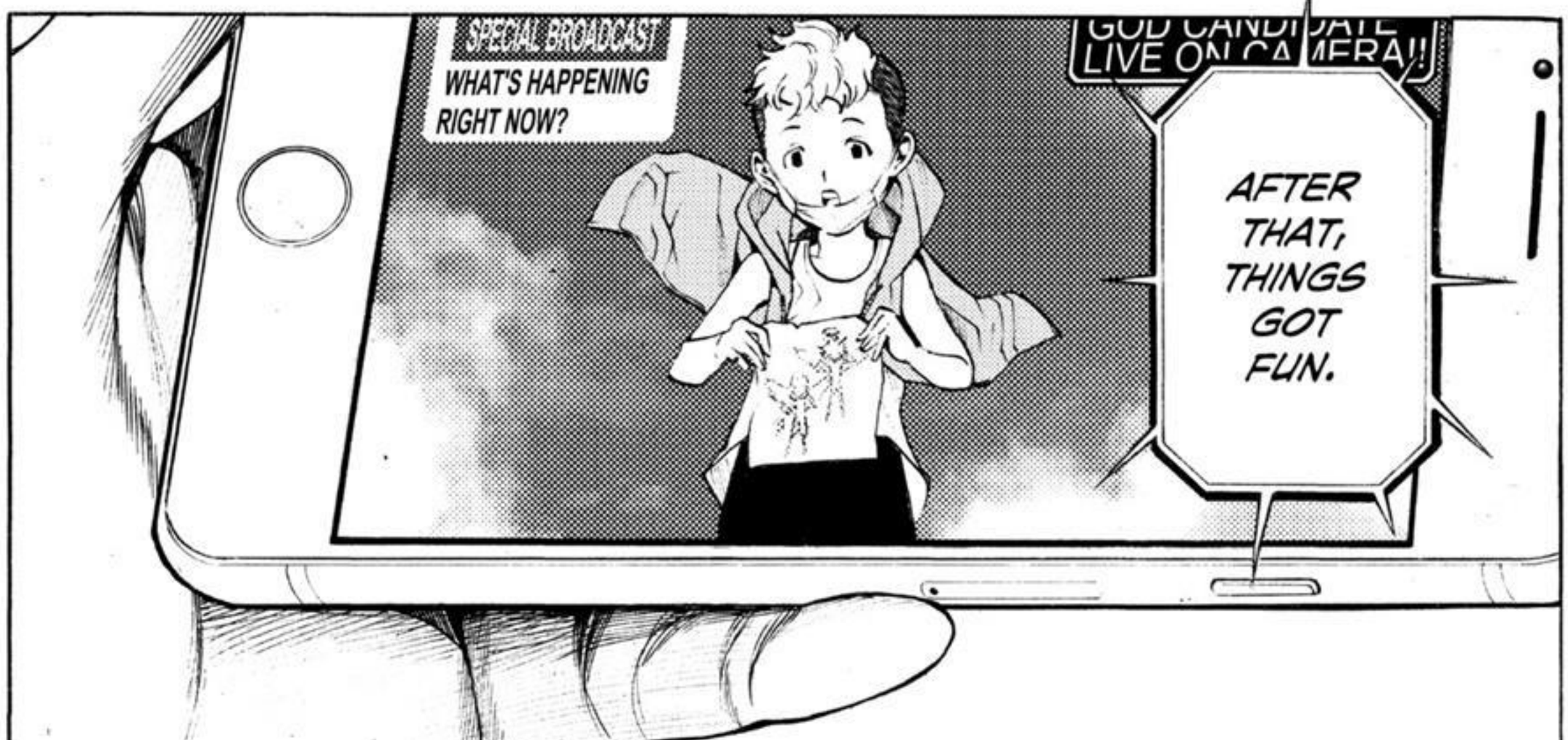
NAH, ALL THAT GOD STUFF IS B.S.

MUST BE NICE TO BE A GOD CANDI-DATE!!



...

MAYBE... THERE IS A GOD.



KWING

HERE, SUSUMU, USE MY PHONE.

FWIP

I USED MY WINGS AND ARROWS EVERY SINGLE DAY.

HE'S TOO FAST!

HUH ?!

?!

GOAL!

SHWAP

YOU SHOULD COME PLAY AT MY HOUSE!

THIS IS AMAZING, SUSUMU!

WILL YOU BE OUR CLASS REPZ?!

100 PT

NAME: Susumu Yuito

o find the answer.

ectangular box with a height of

BUT THEN...

LIVE

...METRO-POLIMAN SHOWED UP.

I HAVE ALREADY DEFEATED ONE, AND I SHALL NOT SKULK AND HIDE!

YOU REMAINING 11 MAY COME AFTER ME AT ANY TIME!!

THIS ALWAYS HAPPENS. SOMETHING ALWAYS COMES ALONG TO MESS THINGS UP.

NO WAY... THIS IS GONNA RUIN ALL THE FUN I'M HAVING.

HE'S GONNA "KILL" ME...

WHO DOES HE THINK HE IS...?

METRO-POLIMAN USED THEM TO KILL FOUR GOD CANDIDATES.

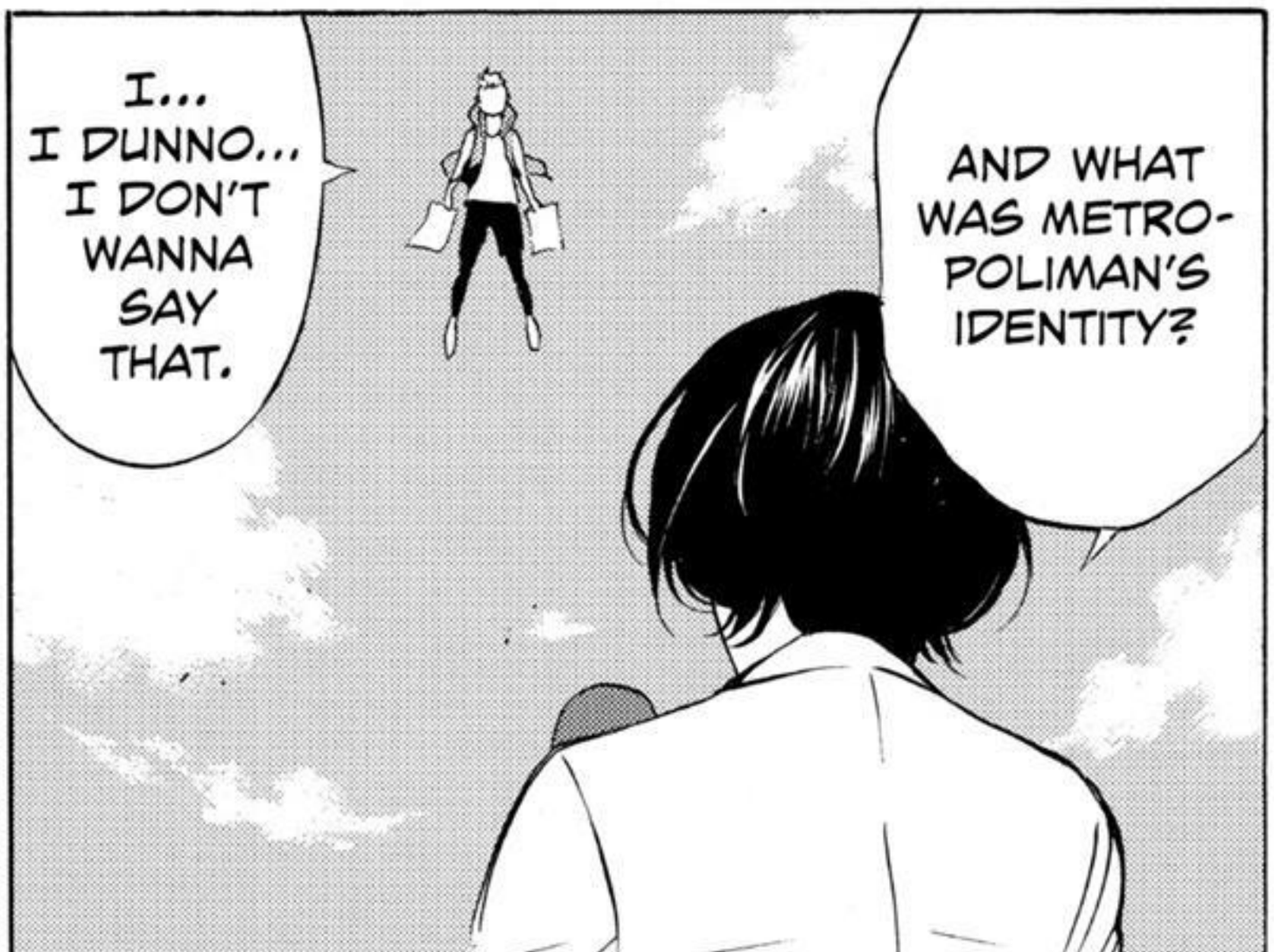
THERE ARE WHITE ARROWS. THEY CAN KILL PEOPLE.

神機補生出演!!

...AND HE HELPED ME USE A RED ARROW ON METRO-POLIMAN. IT WAS ACTUALLY PRETTY EASY.
BUT THEN ALONG CAME BALTA, THE ANGEL OF INTUITION...
KSHIF

WHAT'S WRONG WITH THAT? IT'S THE TRUTH.
HE'S GONE TOO FAR!
HE EVEN TOLD THEM ABOUT THE WHITE AR-ROWS ...

... AND THAT ...
ANYWAY, THAT LED TO METRO-POLIMAN AND RED HAVING THEIR BATTLE...


I... I DUNNO... I DON'T WANNA SAY THAT.
AND WHAT WAS METRO-POLIMAN'S IDENTITY?

...WAS AWESOME !!

A REAL FIGHT...

IT WASN'T SOME MOBILE GAME. IT WAS REAL...

IT WASN'T LIKE IN MANGA OR ON TV.

I'VE NEVER BEEN SO THRILLED BEFORE IN MY LIFE.

FOR THE VERY FIRST TIME IN MY LIFE I REALIZED THAT THIS MUST BE WHAT IT'S LIKE TO TRULY FEEL ALIVE.

I GOT GOOSE BUMPS FROM THE EXPERIENCE.

IT WAS LIKE, "WHOA"...

OH! UH...

MS. AKAI...

UM, NO...

IS... THAT WHAT YOU WANTED TO TELL US HERE TODAY, SUSUMU?

THERE ARE SIX CANDIDATES LEFT, INCLUDING ME.

LIKE I SAID EARLIER, THERE'S A SELECTION GOING ON RIGHT NOW TO DECIDE THE NEXT GOD OF THE WORLD.

...AND CHOOSE FOR THEM-SELVES...

MAYBE IT'S BEST IF THE PEOPLE OF THE WORLD GET TO KNOW THE CANDIDATES...

SO, UM...

I WAS THINKING...

SO WHAT I WANT TO SAY IS...

PEOPLE OF THE WORLD! PLEASE GO OUT AND LOOK FOR THE GOD CANDI-DATES!

AND THEN WE CAN DECIDE ON A GOD!!

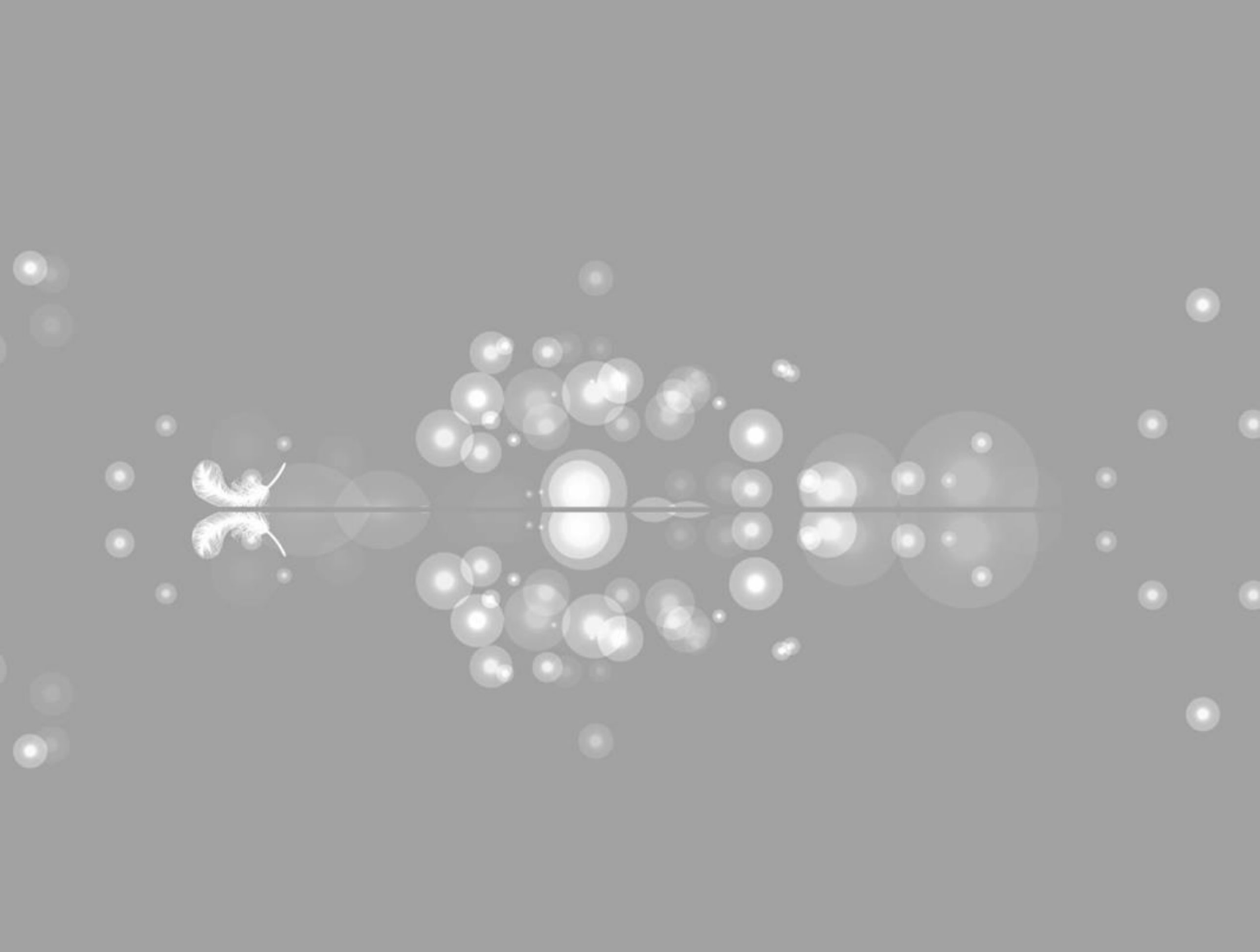
IS HE GOING TO USE THE WORLD'S POPULATION TO MOBILIZE AND FIND US?

THE KIND OF CRAZY IDEA ONLY A KID COULD COME UP WITH...

SQUISH

MY PICK ...

...IS FOR THIS RED WARRIOR TO BE GOD.



LISTEN UP, EVERYONE. I, SUSUMU YUITO...

#29 Diffused Power

...

RECOMMEND RED FOR THE POSITION OF GOD.

HEY, IS THAT GUY FLYING THERE--?

YEAH, HE'S THE SIXTH GRADER FROM CLASS 3.

IT'S ON TV RIGHT NOW.

SA-KURA TV!

HE SAYS THERE ARE SIX CANDIDATES, AND ONE OF THEM IS GOING TO BE GOD.

YES! AL-MIGHTY GOD!

NORTH RACE

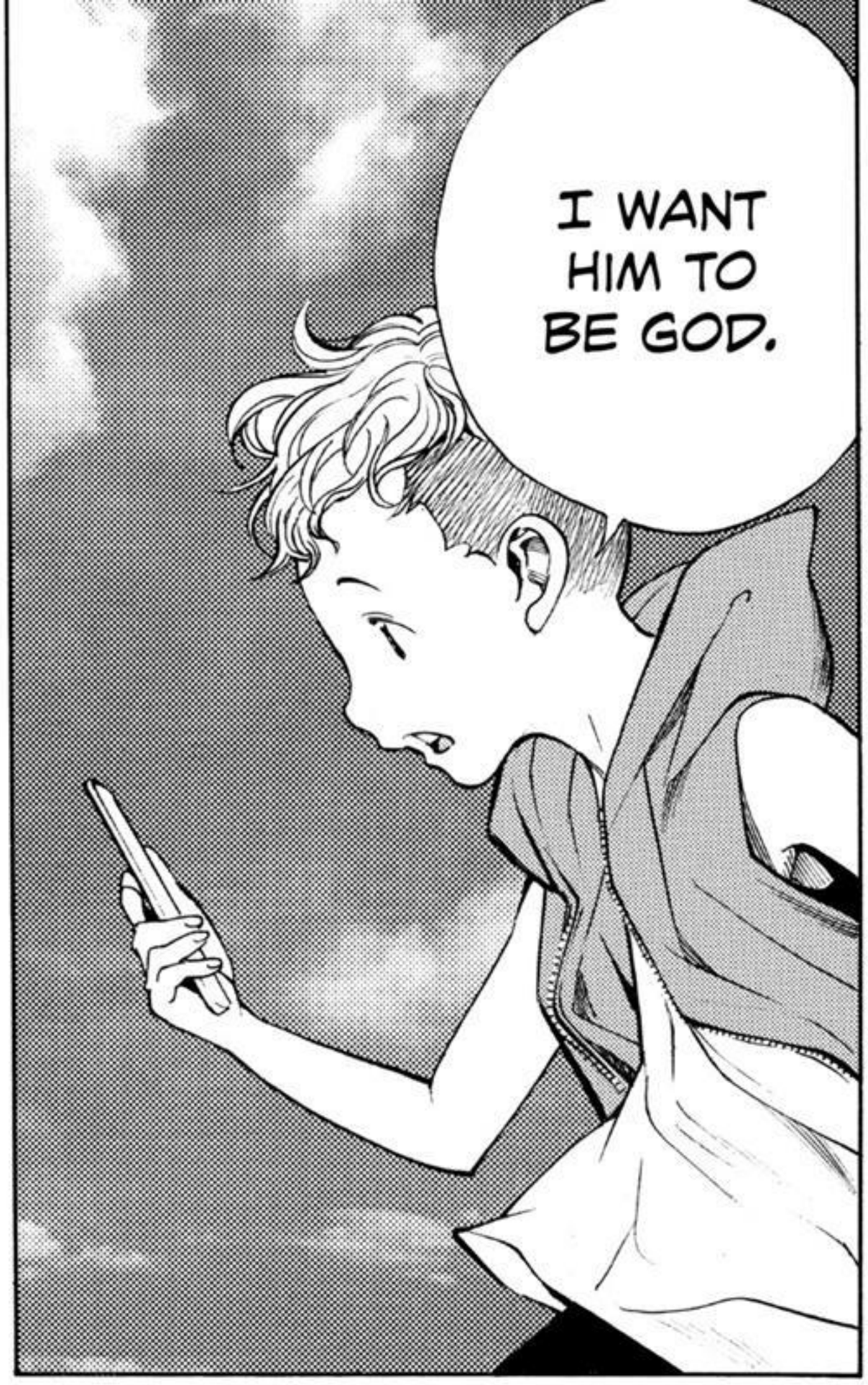
I THINK HE'S TOTALLY WORTHY OF BEING GOD!

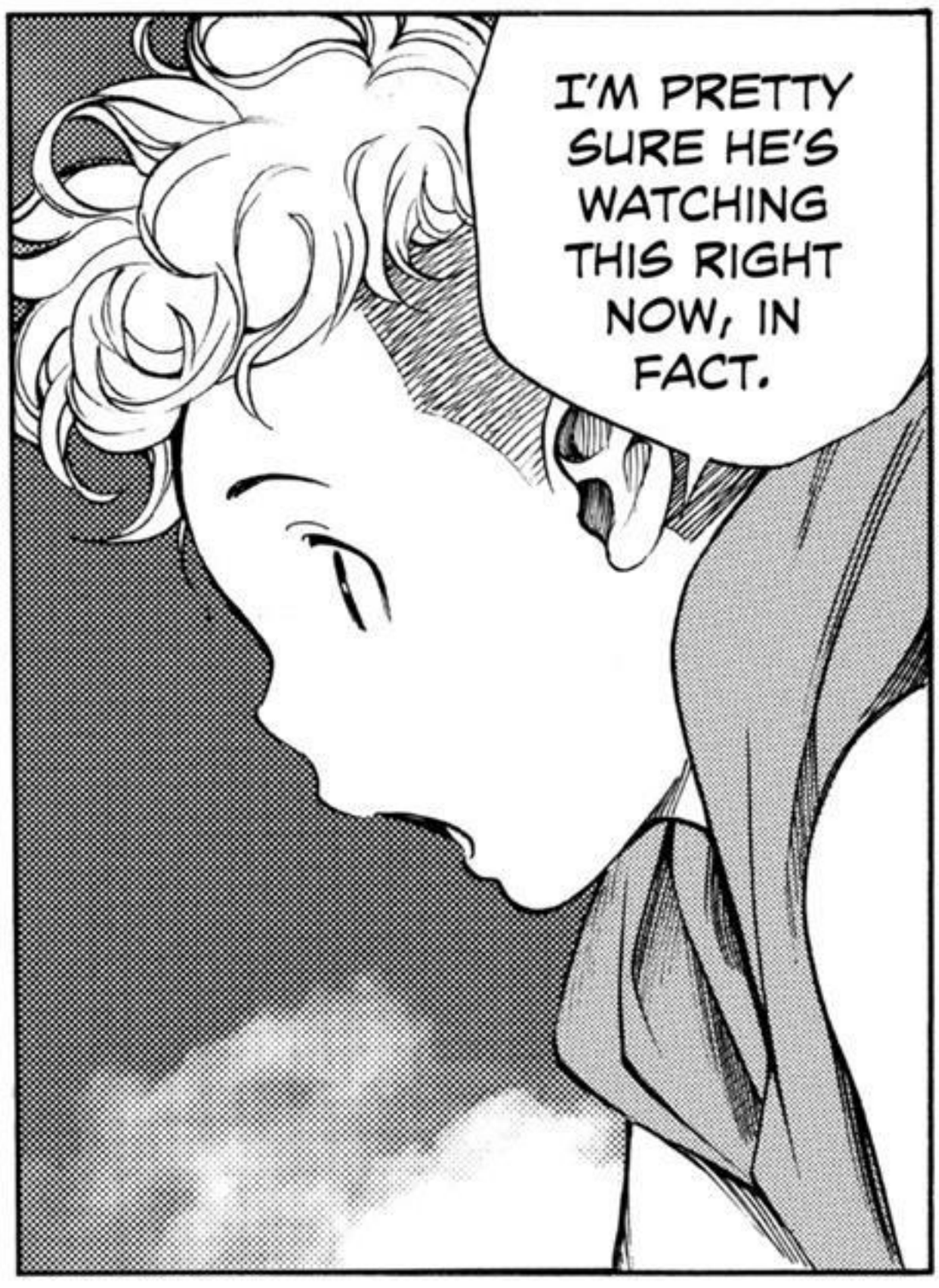
I SAW HIM RISK HIS LIFE TO SAVE MILLIONS OF OTHER PEOPLE!

RED'S SO GENTLE HE WOULDN'T KILL A FLY, BUT HE ALSO HAS THE BRAVERY AND RIGHTEOUSNESS TO STAND UP TO METROPOLIMAN.

...

RED IS *MY* HERO.


I WANT HIM TO BE GOD.


I'M PRETTY SURE HE'S WATCHING THIS RIGHT NOW, IN FACT.

I THINK IT WOULD BE BEST OF ALL IF RED SIMPLY SAID, "I WILL BE GOD."

HA HA!

...WE COULD ALSO HAVE THE OTHER GOD CANDIDATES COME TOGETHER TO TALK IT OUT.

OH, BUT EVEN IF HE DOESN'T STEP FOR-WARD ...

THIS IS CRAZY...

...

WELL, HIS IDEA IS CHILDISH ...

...BUT I KINDA LIKE IT.

I MEAN... USUALLY WHEN THEY SAY "COME SHOW UP" IT'S A TRAP.

SWISH!

BUT SINCE I'VE GOT YOUR ATTENTION, I WANT EVERYONE TO SEARCH FOR THE CANDIDATES TOGETHER.

BROADCAST

HAPPENING

OW?

LIVE

GOD LIVE

I WANT TO END THIS AND DETERMINE WHO GOD WILL BE.

OTHER-WISE...

...IT'LL BE VERY HARD FOR US TO SETTLE DOWN AND LIVE OUR LIVES...

SPECIAL BROADCAST
WHAT'S HAPPENING RIGHT NOW?
GOD CANDIDATE LIVE ON CAMERA!!
PM
HEE HEE! ♪
NICE ONE, SUSUMU. I'M ALL FOR IT!
IF HE'S THAT GREAT OF A GUY, THEN I THINK RED OUGHT TO BE GOD. FOR MY SAKE, OF COURSE.
YOU SUPPORT THE RED WARRIOR TOO...?
HE'S A HERO, RIGHT? HEROES ARE ALWAYS SOFT ON BEAUTIFUL WOMEN.
...
I'M NOT CERTAIN IT WILL GO THAT WELL...

...UNTIL ALL OF THIS IS SETTLED...

BUT I DO KNOW WHAT HE'S SAYING ABOUT NOT BEING ABLE TO REST EASY...

IF PEOPLE FIND OUT YOU'RE A CANDIDATE, YOU MIGHT BE SUBJECT TO THEIR DISCRIMINATORY VIEWS.

OH, I KNOW.

THAT'S WHY I'M BEING CAREFUL NOT TO BLOW MY COVER.

AWESOME! YEAH, GOD COULD DO THAT! GOD CAN DO ANYTHING.

ALL THEY HAVE TO DO IS CHANGE THINGS TO MAKE IT LIKE THIS PROCESS AND THE GOD CANDIDATES NEVER EXISTED.

THAT WILL DEPEND ON THE GOD.

DO YOU THINK THAT EVEN AFTER GOD IS DETERMINED, THE PEOPLE WHO WERE CANDIDATES WILL STILL GET SPECIAL TREATMENT?

BUT FOR NOW...

THE CANDIDATE HUNT IS JUST BEGINNING.

WELL... IT SEEMS LIKE HE REALLY WANTS *YOU* TO BE GOD...

NATURALLY, THE APPROVAL OF ALL IS A REQUISITE...

IF ALL THE OTHER REMAINING GOD CANDIDATES RECOMMEND KAKEHASHI, DOES THAT MAKE IT OFFICIAL?

...BUT IT'S ALSO ESSENTIAL THAT THE CANDIDATE HIMSELF HAS THE WILL AND DESIRE TO BECOME GOD.

OF COURSE, ANY STATEMENTS MADE UNDER THE SWAY OF A RED ARROW DON'T COUNT...

WHAT?!

IT WORKS THAT WAY?

...

BUT IF YOU THREATEN SOMEONE WITH A WHITE ARROW AND DEMAND THEY BECOME GOD OR DIE, AND THEY SAY, "FINE, I'LL BE GOD," THAT WORKS TOO.

NASSE...

HMM?

WHAT? WHAT DID I SAY?

...

...BUT HE DIDN'T EXPLAIN IT ALL.

YOU KNOW... IT SEEMS LIKE HE TOLD EVERYONE EVERY-THING...

HUH?

HE DIDN'T REVEAL THAT *HE* HAS WHITE ARROWS...

ECIAL BROADCAST

HAT'S HAPPENING GHT NOW?

LIVE

KRRK

CLASS 1-3

CLEAR THE WAY.

MOVE IT.

THAT INCLUDES YOUR CELL PHONES.

TURN OFF THOSE CAMERAS.

POLICE. STOP THIS BROADCAST AT ONCE.

ARE YOU KID-DING?

WHAT?! THE COPS?!

ZKSTV

HUH? WHAT?!

WE CAN'T SHUT THIS DOWN NOW!

NO, THAT'S FINE. LET THEM GO.

THEY'RE CHARG-ING IN?!

!

AKAI!

KEEP HIM THERE AND DON'T LET HIM CATCH ON.

THEY'RE GONNA TRY TO CATCH THE KID.

HUH ...?

THE COPS ARE COMING UP.

WE'LL GET SOME REALLY GOOD FOOTAGE FROM THIS.

UH...

SUSUMU!

SO, UM...

UM...

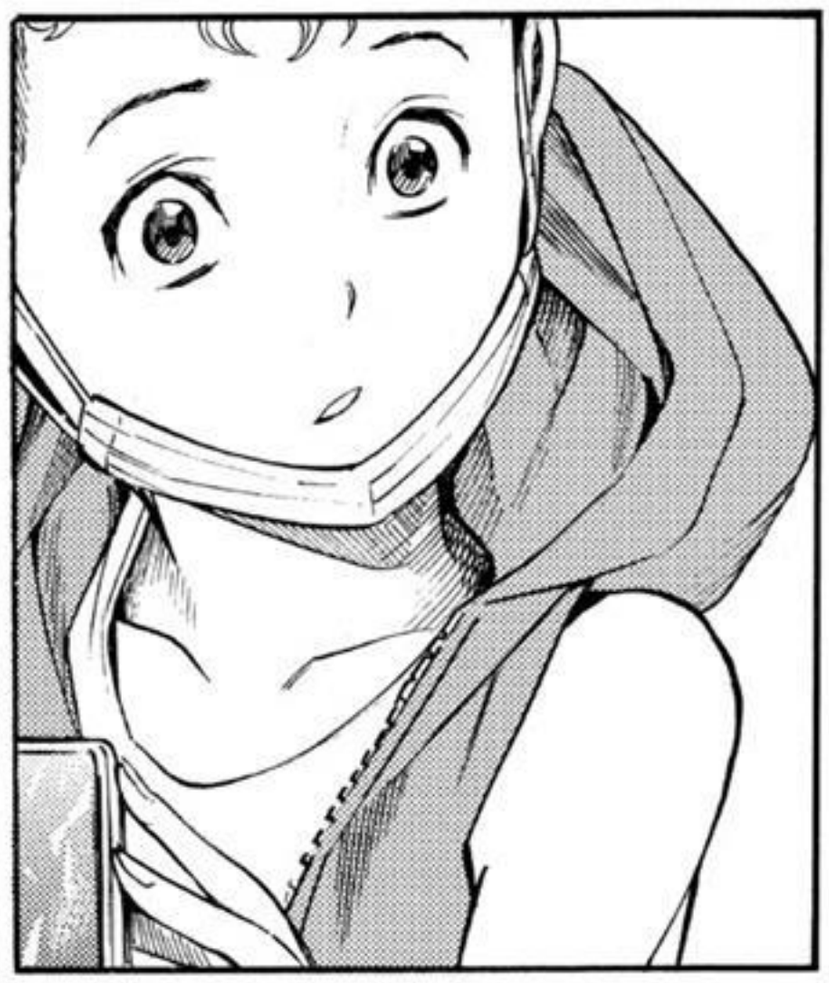
SUSUMU ...

CAN YOU... TELL ME...

ZSH...

...

DAY 4



BUT ON TRASHY SAKURA TV, IT'LL JUST SEEM FAKE.

I SHOULD'VE PICKED NHK, THE CLASSY PUBLIC STATION.

OH WELL, TOO LATE NOW.

I COULD USE MY RED ARROWS ON THE POLICE, WHICH MIGHT BE THE BEST OPTION FOR THE TV PROGRAM...

BUT I THOUGHT, AFTER I SAID EVERYONE SHOULD LOOK FOR GOD CANDIDATES ...

...THAT THEY'D GO FOR ***OTHERS***, NOT COME STRAIGHT AFTER ME. YOU GOT IT BACKWARD!

AWW... I'M DISAPPOINTED.

THERE ARE ALWAYS STUPID ADULTS EVERYWHERE WHO GET IN MY WAY.

YOU BETTER STAND AT THE FOREFRONT AND LOOK FOR THE OTHER CANDIDATES, THEN.

OKAY...

HE DISAP-PEARED!

?!

PFFT

WELL, EVERYONE KNOWS ABOUT THE GOD CANDIDATES NOW.

...

WHAT'S GOING TO HAPPEN TO US?

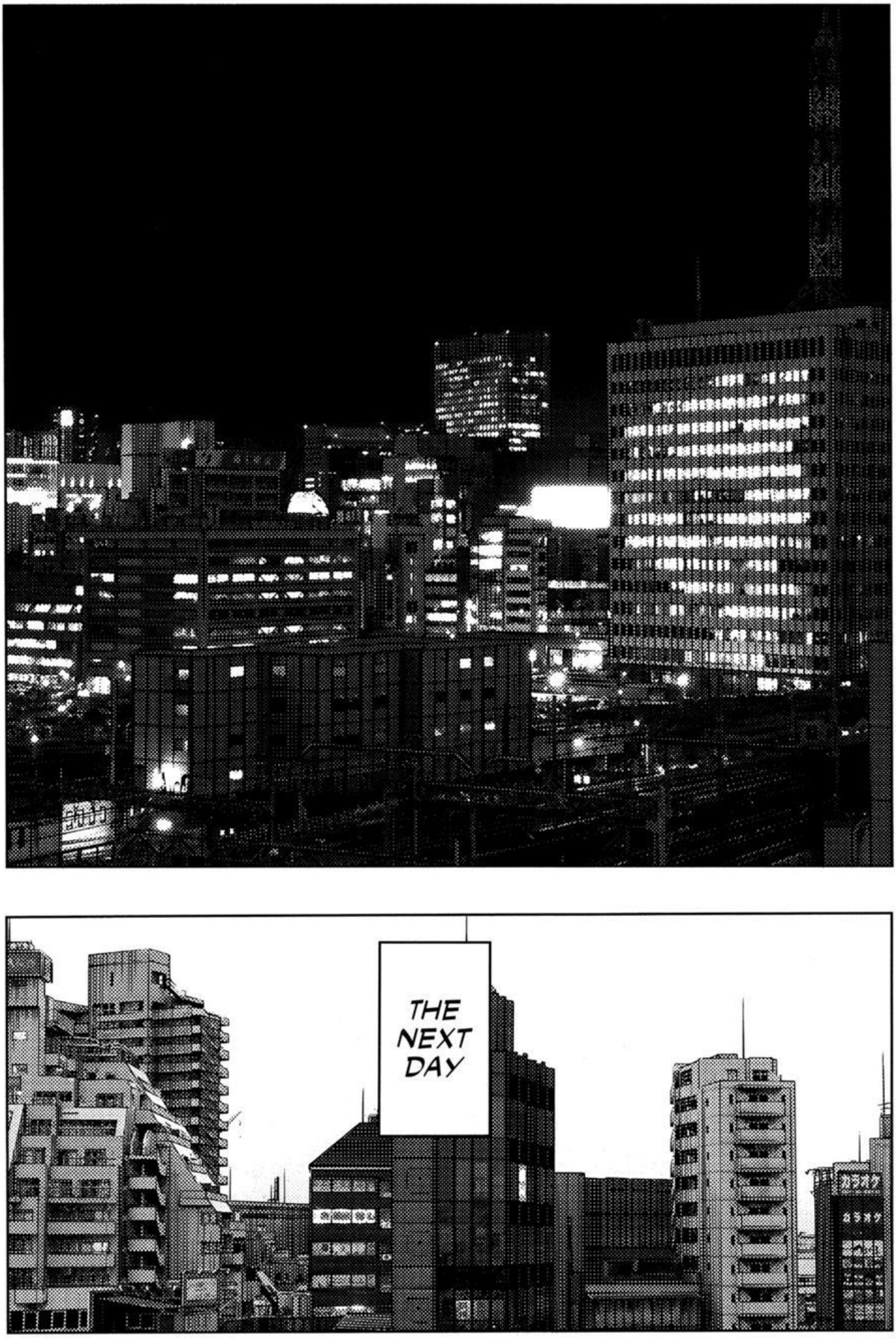
IN THE BLINK OF AN EYE, SUSUMU THE GOD CANDIDATE JUST VANISHED...

SPECIAL BROADCAST

WHAT'S HAPPENING RIGHT NOW?

CANDIDA ON CAME

IT JUST HAPPENED IN A FLASH.


THE NEXT DAY
カラオケ
カラオケ

HE STOPPED LYING TOO... HE USED TO BE A BIG LIAR...

ALL OF A SUDDEN, HE WAS GOOD AT SOCCER.

THEN HE GOT A 100 ON THE LATEST TEST, AND HIS GRADES GOT BETTER.

HE USED TO BE REALLY QUIET!

HE... HE HASN'T BEEN HOME.

WE PUT OUT A MISSING PERSON REPORT...

MRS. YUITO, WOULD YOU TALK WITH US ABOUT YOUR SON SUSUMU?

I THINK SOMEONE'S BEEN FILLING HIS HEAD WITH TERRIBLE LIES.

PLEASE, PLEASE HELP HIM.

CLICK

WELL, FOR STARTERS, YOU CAN'T SIMPLY BELIEVE IN THIS GOD HE'S TALKING ABOUT.

BUT THERE ARE PEOPLE OUT THERE WITH THESE SUPERHUMAN ABILITIES-- RED ARROWS AND WHITE ARROWS...

BUT WE DON'T ACTUALLY *SEE* THEM.

AT THE MOMENT, WE CAN BE CERTAIN OF THE EXISTENCE OF TEN OF THESE "GOD CANDIDATES," AS SUSUMU YUITO CALLED THEM.

METRO-POLIMAN... THE RED, GREEN AND YELLOW WARRIORS... MIMIMI YAMADA...

...AND THE THREE PEOPLE WHO FLOATED INTO THE AIR AT JINBO STADIUM BEFORE METRO-POLIMAN KILLED THEM.

A VERY LOW-LEVEL, FORGETTABLE COMEDIAN WHO SUDDENLY HAD RELATIONSHIPS WITH FIVE BEAUTIFUL WOMEN AT ONCE.

CONSIDER TONMA RODRIGUEZ.

LIKE THE THREE PEOPLE AT THE BALLPARK, HE DIED SUDDENLY OF CAUSES UNKNOWN.

ALL FIVE OF THEM, WHEN ASKED, SAID THEY DID NOT KNOW AT ALL WHAT IT WAS THEY ACTUALLY LIKED ABOUT HIM.

DO YOU BELIEVE THESE PEOPLE WITH SPECIAL POWERS?

TRICKERY OF SOME K

9 %

BELIEVE IN GOD 13%

SPECIAL SUPERPOWERS 78%

ANOTHER 13 PERCENT SAID THEY BELIEVE IN THE EXISTENCE OF GOD.

SEVENTY-EIGHT PERCENT OF OUR POLL RESPON-DENTS SAY THESE ARE PEOPLE WITH SPECIAL POWERS.

I SEE. WELL, THAT CERTAINLY DOES ALL ADD UP.

WHITE

SO HE USED RED ARROWS TO MAKE THE GIRLS LOVE HIM, AND A WHITE ARROW KILLED HIM.

RED

RED

RED

I DON'T THINK WE CAN CATEGORIZE THIS AS JUST IMAGINATION.

RELIGIOUS ADVOCATE
AMEOSHI HAKUDO

HE'S LYING. IT'S JUST SOMETHING THIS BOY IMAGINED FOR HIMSELF.

OF COURSE. OBVIOUSLY GOD DOESN'T EXIST, AND THE IDEA OF HUMAN BEINGS GETTING CHOSEN FOR SOME HIGHER CALLING IS JUST BALDER-DASH.

RYU MIKAWA

I DO NOT THINK IT WOULD BE WISE TO SPEAK SLANDEROUSLY OF THE GODS.

PEOPLE BELIEVE IN A WIDE VARIETY OF RELIGIONS.

NEWS UPDATE

OH! IT LOOKS LIKE WE'VE GOT BREAKING NEWS.

...

NEWS

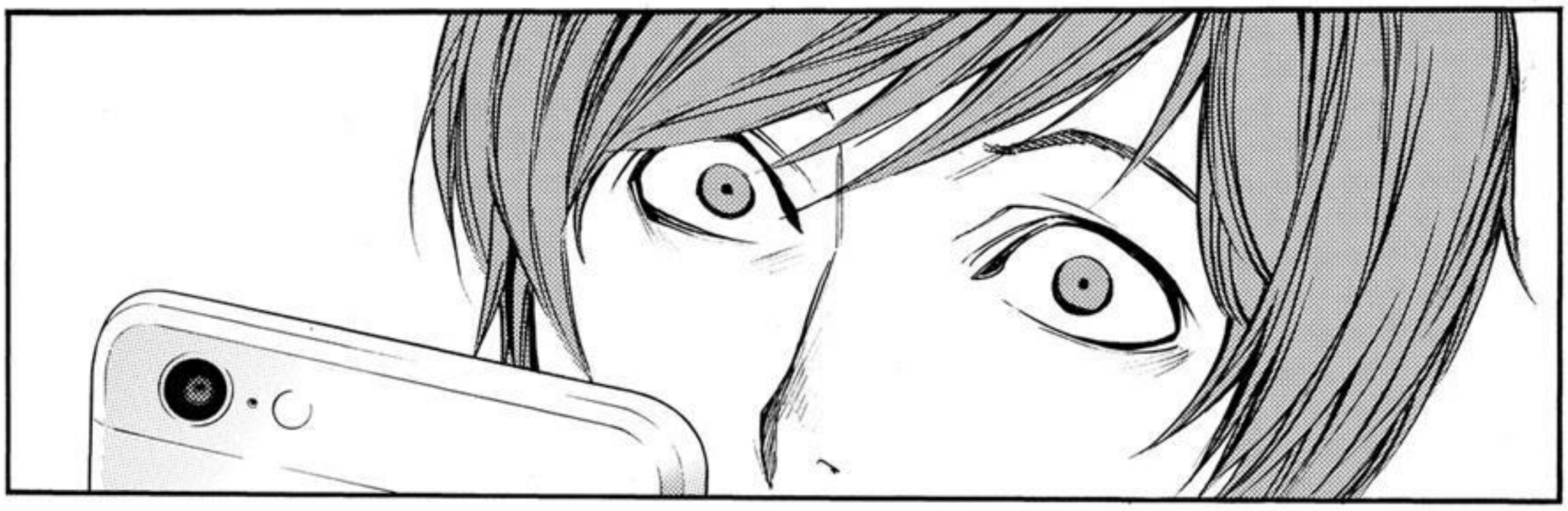
POLICE DETERMINE ***METROPOLIMAN*** WAS A HIGH SCHOOL STUDENT, 16, LIVING IN TOKYO

1150 684 2366

TODAY'S TOP NEWS

<FINANCE> BEHIND THE MARKET'S RISE: INTERVIEW W/ OUR FINANCE CHIEF

RMINE ***METROPOLIMAN*** WAS A
L STUDENT, 16, LIVING IN TOKY(
1150 684



I HATE IT.

EVERYTHING'S ALL ABOUT THESE GOD CANDIDATES THESE DAYS, IN THE STREETS AND ON TV.

AND THE GOD CANDIDATES ARE MY MESSENGERS.

SMILES OF GOD

FOR I AM GOD.

I DID SO IN ORDER TO **SAVE** THIS EARTHLY REALM.

SUSUMU YUITO IS A GOD CANDIDATE THAT I RELEASED UNTO THE WORLD.

SMILES OF GO

IT IS ALL TO SAVE THE EARTH.

#GOD-CAN-DIDATE?!

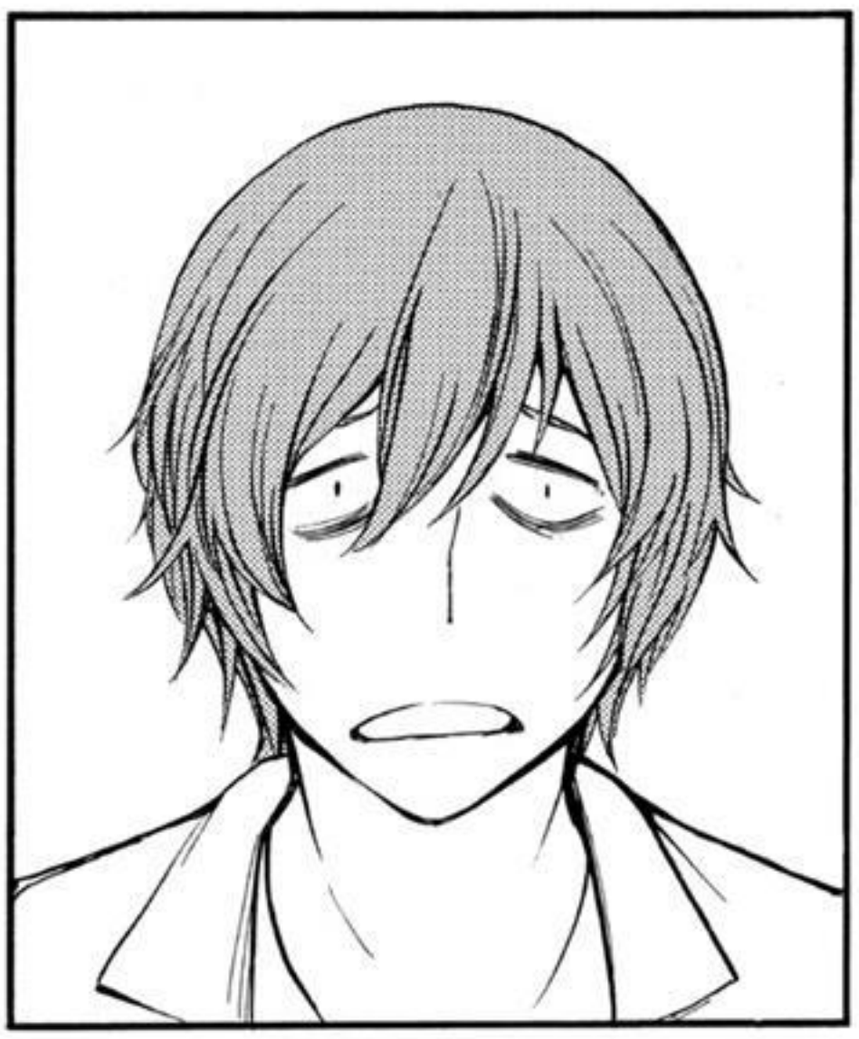
YOU DON'T KNOW ABOUT THE GOD CANDIDATE HASHTAG?

WHA--!

THEY'RE EVEN SAYING *YOU'RE* A GOD CANDIDATE, SENPAI.

SLEEP IN ERRYDAY @NEBSUKUCHAN - 1M

JOSO ACADEMY 1ST YEAR MIZUKIYO MINAMIKAWA. HE WAS A TOTAL LOSER BUT THEN HE GOT A HOT GF OUT OF NOWHERE. HE HAS TO BE A GOD CANDIDATE WITH RED ARROWS.
#GODCANDIDATE



BETTER BE CAREFUL THEY DON'T CATCH YOU.

SEE THAT?

L-
LET'S
GO...

THUNK

IS THIS BECAUSE KANADE AND I WERE GOOD FRIENDS?

WAS THAT GUY WATCHING ME?

WAS HE FROM THE GOVERN-MENT OR SOMETHING?

WHAT'S THE MATTER ...?

?

THERE WERE RUMORS THAT HE MUST BE THE SON IN THE FAMILY THAT RUNS A PARTICULAR INDUSTRIAL MEGACOR-PORATION.

WE ASSUMED THAT HIS FLIGHT AND ABILITY TO KILL WERE A RESULT OF THE WEAPONS THAT THE COMPANY WAS DEVELOPING...

...BUT NOW IT SEEMS MORE LIKELY THAT HE WAS A GOD CANDIDATE.

AS ARE SOME SPECIALIZED RESEARCH ORGANI-ZATIONS.

AND AS A MATTER OF FACT, WE *DO* HAVE REPORTS THAT AT LEAST ONE COUNTRY IS ATTEMPTING TO FIND A CANDIDATE FOR THEIR OWN PURPOSES.

IT WOULD CERTAINLY MAKE ASSASSI-NATION A MUCH CLEANER PROCESS.

I'M SURE WE KNOW OF SOME COUNTRIES WHO WOULD LOVE TO HAVE SOMEONE LIKE THAT.

SAME FOR THE RED WARRIOR AND THE OTHER GOD CANDIDATES. UNFORTUNATELY, OUR ATTEMPT ON THE BOY THREE DAYS AGO FAILED.

I'LL ADMIT THAT AFTER WHAT HAPPENED AT JINBO STADIUM AND GRAND TOWER, WE WERE WORKING ON A PLAN TO TAKE OUT METROPOLIMAN.

GOD CANDIDATES. WHO WOULD'VE THOUGHT SUCH A THING COULD BE REAL?

UN-BELIEV-ABLE...

...BUT NUKES AREN'T A DETERRENT ANYMORE. THEY'RE JUST TOO DESTRUCTIVE TO EVER BE PRACTICAL.

NATIONS WORLDWIDE KEEP NUCLEAR BOMBS AND MISSILES FOR A VARIETY OF DEFENSIVE PURPOSES...

WHAT DO YOU THINK, MR. PRIME MINISTER?

...THEN I THINK THEY MIGHT BE ABLE TO TAKE THE PLACE OF NUCLEAR WEAPONS AS THE ULTIMATE DETERRENCE.

BUT IF THESE GOD CANDIDATES ARE THE REAL THING...

NO... THANKS FOR THE FOOD THOUGH.

YOU AREN'T GOING TO EAT ANY MORE?

MMM, THAT WAS GOOD.

I'LL WASH THE DISHES.

CLINK

I WAS HOPING THAT I COULD JUST LIVE LIKE THIS FOREVER WITH YOU...

I GUESS THE IDEA OF BEING ABLE TO LIVE IN PEACE AND QUIET DIDN'T LAST LONG.

...

EVEN FOREIGN COUNTRIES ARE ON THE SEARCH...

THEY'RE SAYING THE POLICE ARE TRYING TO TRACK US DOWN.

THE ENTIRE WORLD IS IN A STATE OF CONFUSION OVER THE GOD CANDIDATES.

YOU SHOULD SEE THE INTERNET.

PEOPLE SAY WE MIGHT BE MURDERED OR TURNED INTO KILLING WEAPONS...

LET'S RUN.

LET'S JUST RUN AWAY.

WE'LL GO FAR AWAY, SOMEPLACE WHERE NOBODY CAN FIND US, AND LIVE TOGETHER THERE.

I'M TIRED OF FIGHTING ...

I JUST WANT TO LIVE WITH YOU IN PEACE.

BEING WITH YOU IS THE GREATEST HAPPINESS I CAN HAVE.

WE CAN'T GIVE IN TO PEOPLE WHO TALK ABOUT MURDER OR KILLING WEAPONS AS THOUGH THAT'S AN ACCEPTABLE THING TO SAY.

WE CAN'T RUN AWAY.

SAKI...

THE LAST FEW DAYS, I'VE BEEN THINKING ...

...

WHAT WOULD MR. MUKAIDO DO IN THIS SITUATION?

I'M NOT REALLY SURE OF ANYTHING YET... BUT I GET THE FEELING THAT REAL HAPPINESS CAN BE FOUND IN THAT DIRECTION.

HE WOULDN'T RUN.

SO I WON'T EITHER. I'LL STAND UP AND LIVE MY LIFE.

AND WITH THE FLOOD OF CANDIDATE INFO OUT NOW, IT'LL ACTUALLY BE EASIER FOR US TO SLIP BY UNNOTICED.

THEY WON'T KNOW IT'S US JUST FROM THE FOOT-AGE.

IT'LL BE FINE ...

...

WE'LL BLEND IN BETTER THAT WAY.

WHEN SECOND SEMESTER STARTS, LET'S JUST GO TO SCHOOL.

YEAH ...

I'LL DO AS YOU SAY.

AND BY THEN, THE POWER OF THAT ARROW WILL HAVE WORN OFF.

THE WHERE-ABOUTS OF THE BOY WHO CALLED HIMSELF A GOD CANDIDATE ARE STILL UNKNOWN...

SEPTEM-
BER 1

IT SUCKS, RIGHT? IF ANYONE LIKES YOU, YOU'RE A GOD CANDIDATE.

SO YOU'VE GOT RED ARROWS, HUH?

FINALLY, FINALLY, THE CHICKS DIG ME.

HA HA HA!

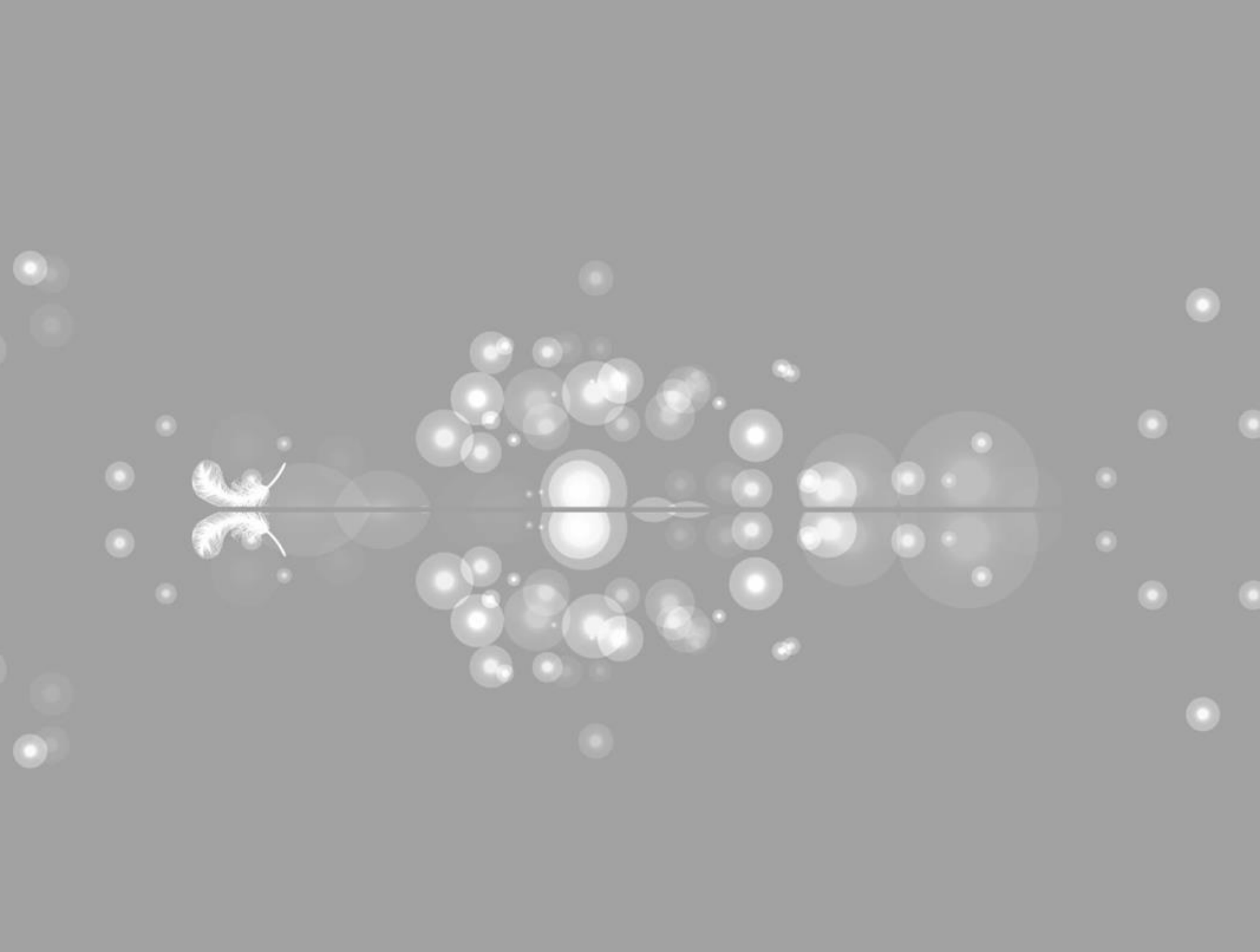
IT'S JUST SCHOOL...

IT'S OKAY...

VMM

MIRAI KAKEHASHI?

I'M GOING TO NEED YOU TO GET INTO THE CAR RIGHT NOW.



#30 World's Greatest Assassin

POLICE...!

POLICE

警視庁

SHMM

KW ING

THE BRASS HAS DECIDED TO APPREHEND ALL GOD CANDI-DATES.

BUT I'M NOT DOING THAT.

!

ARRESTING YOU IS THE WRONG IDEA.

IS THAT A RED ARROW?

TAK

TAK

IS IT RED? OR WHITE?

...

THE KIND THAT MAKES YOU FALL IN LOVE? OR THE KIND THAT MAKES YOU DIE?

IF YOU REMOVE YOUR ARROW, WILL THE AFFECTION IT BESTOWS DISAPPEAR TOO?!

IS THERE SOMEONE ELSE YOU'VE--

WHAT DO YOU MEAN, YOU WON'T ARREST ME...?

...

...MAKING CONTACT WITH SAKI HANAKAGO.

I HAVE ONE SUBORDINATE WITH ME...

AT THE SHRINE UP THERE...

FLAP

FLAP

...

SHE JUST RUSHED ME... AND...

THIS POLICE AGENT, SHE...

SAKI!

DID YOU GET PIERCED?!

SLUMP

YUMIKI!

...

WHO DO YOU LOVE MOST OF ALL RIGHT NOW?

IN PUBLIC AND IN PRIVATE, WE HAVE ABSOLUTE RESPECT AND TRUST FOR ONE ANOTHER.

YUMIKI IS BOTH A VERY FAITHFUL SUBORDINATE OF MINE... AND THE WOMAN WHO PROMISED HER FUTURE TO ME.

INCRED-IBLE...

I'M SORRY.

...

SAKI HANAKAGO IS THE ONE I LOVE NOW...

SO YOU BELIEVE SUSUMU'S STATE-MENTS?

OF COURSE I DO.

SHE'LL BE BACK TO NORMAL IN A MONTH...

IT'S ALL RIGHT ...

...

THAT'S NOT A PROBLEM... IT'S JUST LIKE SUSUMU YUITO SAID.

THE PUBLIC MIGHT LAUGH OFF THE IDEA OF GOD AS NONSENSE, BUT THAT'S ONLY BECAUSE THE GOVERNMENT HASN'T ISSUED ANY OFFICIAL STATEMENTS.

MURDERS WERE COMMITTED AT ALL THREE, SO NATURALLY WE WERE INVESTIGATING THE FACTS.

THE STADIUM, THE TOWER, THE ABANDONED AMUSEMENT PARK.

YOU ARE IN THEIR CROSSHAIRS.

OTHER COUNTRIES ARE ALREADY MAKING THEIR MOVE.

THE GOVERNMENT'S ALREADY TOLD THE POLICE DEPARTMENT TO CAPTURE ANY GOD CANDIDATES AS SOON AS WE FIND THEM.

SPIES AND AGENTS FROM NATIONS AROUND THE WORLD ARE FLOODING INTO JAPAN.

THEN WHAT ARE YOU...?

...

WE WANT TO HELP YOU...

HELP...?

IF WE WERE GOING TO CAPTURE YOU, WE'D DO IT WITH A TEAM WHILE YOU'RE SLEEPING.

FSSHH...

THAT'S RIGHT...

BUT IT'S ONLY A MATTER OF TIME UNTIL YOU'RE DISCOV-ERED.

THEY DON'T REALIZE THAT YOU'RE GOD CANDI-DATES YET.

ZSH

THIS PLACE IS TOO VISIBLE.

WILL YOU COME WITH US?

WE ARE ORDINARY HUMAN BEINGS. BESIDES...

I UNDER-STAND YOUR SENSE OF CAUTION, BUT THERE'S NO REASON TO BE AFRAID OF US.

YIP!

YIP!

YOU'VE GOT YUMIKI ON YOUR SIDE WITH THE RED ARROW.

THAT MAKES IT THREE-ON-ONE...

AND NOT ONLY DO YOU HAVE YOUR ARROWS POINTED AT ME, YOU CAN ALSO FLY AWAY AT ANY MOMENT TO ESCAPE.

VOOM

GOOD.

YES.

YOU TURNED OFF YOUR PHONE?

NO ONE ASIDE FROM THE TWO OF US KNOWS.

YUMIKI WAS ABLE TO CONFIRM THAT YOU TWO ARE THE RED AND YELLOW WARRIORS.

MY NAME IS HOSHI. I'M INVESTIGATING GOD CANDIDATES ON ORDERS FROM ABOVE.

...BUT WE HAVE A DIFFERENT TEAM WORKING ON HIM.

SUSUMU YUITO HASN'T APPEARED SINCE HIS INTERVIEW...

WE WANT YOUR STRENGTH.

WE'RE DEALING WITH PEOPLE POSSESSING POWERS BEYOND OUR OPERATIONAL UNDER-STANDING.

INVESTI-GATION OF OTHER CANDIDATES HASN'T GOTTEN ANYWHERE.

STRENGTH?

...

WHAT ARE YOU PLANNING TO DO WITH US?

WE COULD USE THE WINGS AND ARROW POWERS TOO. GODS, ANGELS... I WANT ALL THE INFORMATION YOU CAN GIVE ME.

YOU CAN SEE THE ANGELS THAT IDENTIFY GOD CANDIDATES. WE NEED YOUR HELP WITH THAT.

TO HELP US FIND THE OTHER CANDIDATES BEFORE THE OTHER TEAMS DO.

...

...ARE YOU GOING TO DO SOMETHING FOR THE SAKE OF THE REMAINING CANDIDATES?

AND IF WE HELP YOU...

!

ESPECIALLY YOU, MIRAI KAKEHASHI.

I WILL REPEAT MYSELF: PEOPLE ARE OUT TO GET YOU.

RED IS THE ONLY PERSON CONFIRMED TO HAVE A WHITE ARROW AT THE MOMENT.

THERE ARE MANY, MANY PEOPLE AROUND THE WORLD WHO DESIRE YOUR ABILITY TO BE A WEAPON OF SLAUGHTER.

WITH WINGS, RED ARROWS AND WHITE ARROWS, WHAT KIND OF ASSASSINATION *CAN'T* YOU PULL OFF?

I'M SURE YOU'RE AWARE THAT MANY WORLD LEADERS REGULARLY HAVE INCONVENIENT PEOPLE ELIMINATED.

YOU COULD BE THE WORLD'S GREATEST ASSASSIN. A HIT MAN.

HOWEVER, THE STRUGGLE OVER YOUR CONTROL MIGHT CAUSE A WAR ON ITS OWN.

YOU WOULD BE MUCH MORE USEFUL AND VERSATILE THAN ANY NUCLEAR WEAPON.

THAT IS WHAT YOU REPRESENT NOW.

...THERE ARE PLENTY OF COUNTRIES THAT WOULDN'T THINK TWICE ABOUT BRAINWASHING YOU, DESTROYING YOUR PERSONALITY AND TURNING YOU INTO A WEAPON OF SLAUGHTER.

GIVEN THE BALANCE OF POWER IN THE WORLD TODAY...

IF YOU GET CAUGHT, THERE'S NO SAYING WHAT MIGHT BE DONE TO YOU.

THEREFORE, THE RED WARRIOR AND HIS WHITE ARROWS IS CONSIDERED A TOP-PRIORITY TARGET.

PERHAPS EVEN *THIS* COUNTRY, THOUGH I DON'T WANT TO CONSIDER IT...

KAKE-HASHI?

WHAT'S THE MATTER?

A WEAPON... OF SLAUGHTER...

BA-BUMP

GR

RMM

GRM

...!

GRP...

HUH!

HUH!

I'LL *NEVER* BE THAT...

I WON'T BE LIKE THAT...

…

!

1km 出口 C22 EXIT
点灯
トンネル Tunnel 800m
FM AM ラジオ
ヴィィィ
ヴィィィ…

MERA CONTROL
SECURITY
CAMERA 1
OFF
SECU
CLICK

THEY'LL EVENTUALLY FIND YOU AT YOUR CURRENT RESIDENCE.

YOU'LL BE SAFER IF YOU STAY HERE.

BUT ISN'T THIS YOUR HOME...?

IF ANYTHING, I'D *PREFER* TO HAVE YOU AROUND.

YUMIKI IS HEAD OVER HEELS FOR YOU RIGHT NOW.

...

BZZZZ...

BUT... I'D RATHER STAY HERE. I WANT TO BE WITH SAKI...

THE DEPUTY DIRECTOR'S CALLING. FOR BOTH OF US...

IF THAT'S WHAT YOU WANT, I'LL DO IT.

PLEASE, MISS YUMIKI, YOU SHOULD GO.

...

MORE OF THE RED ARROW'S POWER AT WORK?

THESE ONES WON'T LEAK YOUR HISTORY OR LOCATIONAL DATA.

DESTROY YOUR OLD CELL PHONES AND USE THESE INSTEAD.

THERE ARE SECURITY CAMERAS SET UP. AVOID GOING OUT.

I DOUBT WE'LL BE BACK BEFORE LATE TONIGHT.

KCHAK

YEAH...

ARE YOU FEELING ALL RIGHT?

SIGH

世界史 I
世界史 II
世界史 III
世界史 IV
世界史 V
近世の黎明
変革の道程
古代の環境
日本文化史
日本史 文献
天下一統

AS IN, CAN WE TRUST THEM OR NOT?

YEAH.

WHAT DO YOU THINK OF THEM, SAKI?

BUT IF THEY REALLY WANTED TO ARREST US, THEY WOULD HAVE DONE IT A DIFFERENT WAY...

I DON'T KNOW...

IT'S ALMOST LIKE HE OFFERED HER UP TO ENSURE THAT WE TRUSTED THEM.

I AGREE...

ALSO... THAT HOSHI GUY DIDN'T PANIC AT ALL WHEN YOU HIT YUMIKI WITH THE RED ARROW.

...BUT I CAN FEEL THE HAPPINESS THEY'VE BUILT IN THIS HOME.

THEY SCARED ME AT FIRST...

YEAH...

HE'S NOT LYING TO YOU.

BESIDES, WE WANT INFORMATION TOO...

ME?

WHAT DO YOU THINK, NASSE?

THEY KNOW HOW DANGEROUS THIS COULD BE.

SO WHY ARE THEY BETRAYING THEIR OWN ORDERS TO HELP US LIKE THIS...?

警視庁

WE WERE EXPECTING TO IDENTIFY THEM BY ANALYZING THE FOOTAGE. WELL?

GIVE ME AN UPDATE ON THE INVESTIGATION INTO THE RED AND YELLOW WARRIOR GOD CANDIDATES.

警視庁

YUMIKI IS THE EXPERT. I'LL LET HER SPEAK...

IT'S MOST LIKELY THE LATEST TECHNOLOGY FROM THE JOSO GROUP. WE'RE PUTTING EVERY RESOURCE POSSIBLE TOWARD SOLVING IT.

THE VIDEO IN QUESTION IS CODED TO INTERFERE WITH CURRENT FACIAL-DETECTION SYSTEMS AND PREVENT IDENTIFICATION OF THE PEOPLE WITHIN IT.

I SEE. WELL, HURRY ON WITH IT.

...

IF THEY'RE NOT IN THE SYSTEM FOR PRIORS, THE TASK MIGHT TAKE EVEN LONGER.

WHAT?

I DON'T THINK THERE'S ANY NEED FOR SUCH EXTREME CAUTION...

IF ANY-THING, I WOULD EXPECT THAT MOST NATIONS ARE HOPING THAT HE'LL CLING TO THE POSITION FOR AS LONG AS POSSIBLE, WOULDN'T YOU?

HOSHI, WHAT ARE YOU...?

NOBODY IS GUNNING FOR THE PRIME MINISTER OF THIS COUNTRY.

KWING

PARDON US.

I WILL KEEP YOU UPDATED ON ANY DEVELOP-MENTS, SIR.

WATCH YOUR-SELF, HOSHI ...

YUMIKI.

YES?

I CANNOT ALLOW SAKI TO COME TO HARM.

THAT WAS AN IMPRESSIVE EXCUSE YOU CAME UP WITH BACK THERE.

IT'S VERY IMPRESSIVE, INDEED.

THE ABILITY TO KILL PEOPLE FREELY CAN ONLY BE A THREAT TO THE WORLD.

IT'S A POWER THAT SHOULDN'T EXIST.

NO ONE OUGHT TO HAVE IT.

BZZZ

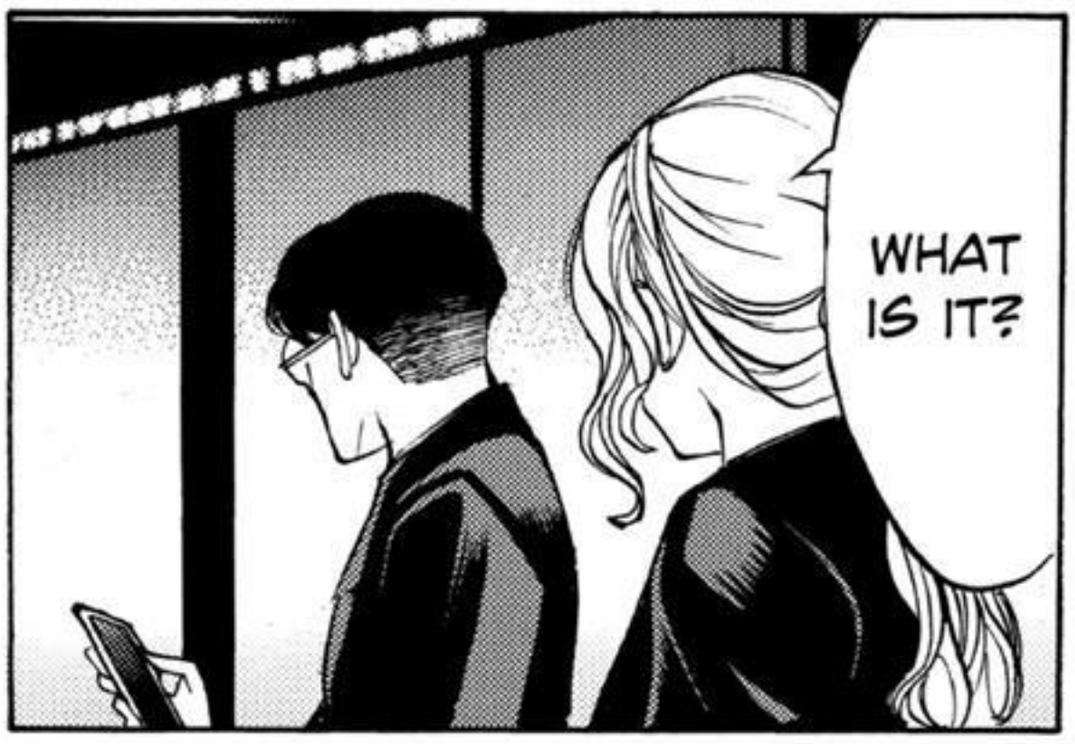
...SHE'S LIKE A DIFFERENT PERSON ALTOGETHER. I'VE NEVER SEEN YUMIKI LIKE THIS!

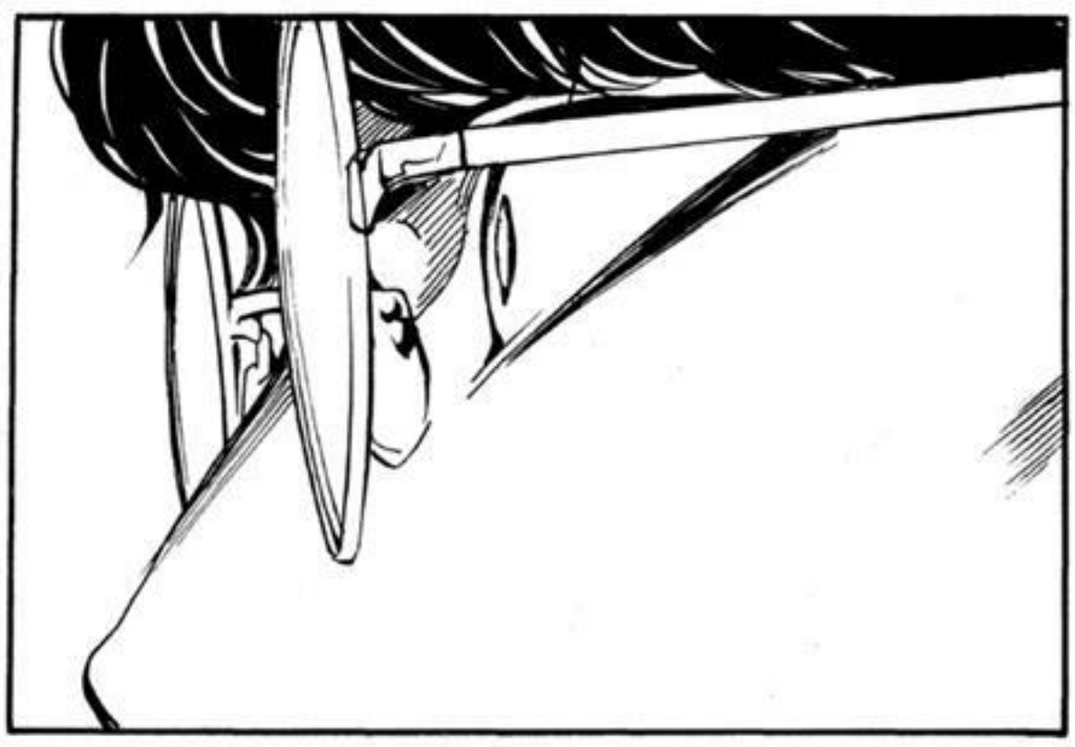
WHEN THE TOPIC TURNS TO SAKI HANAKAGO...

THE POWER OF THE RED ARROW...

NO WONDER THE MIGHTY DESIRE IT...

HOSHI SPEAKING.


WHAT IS IT?



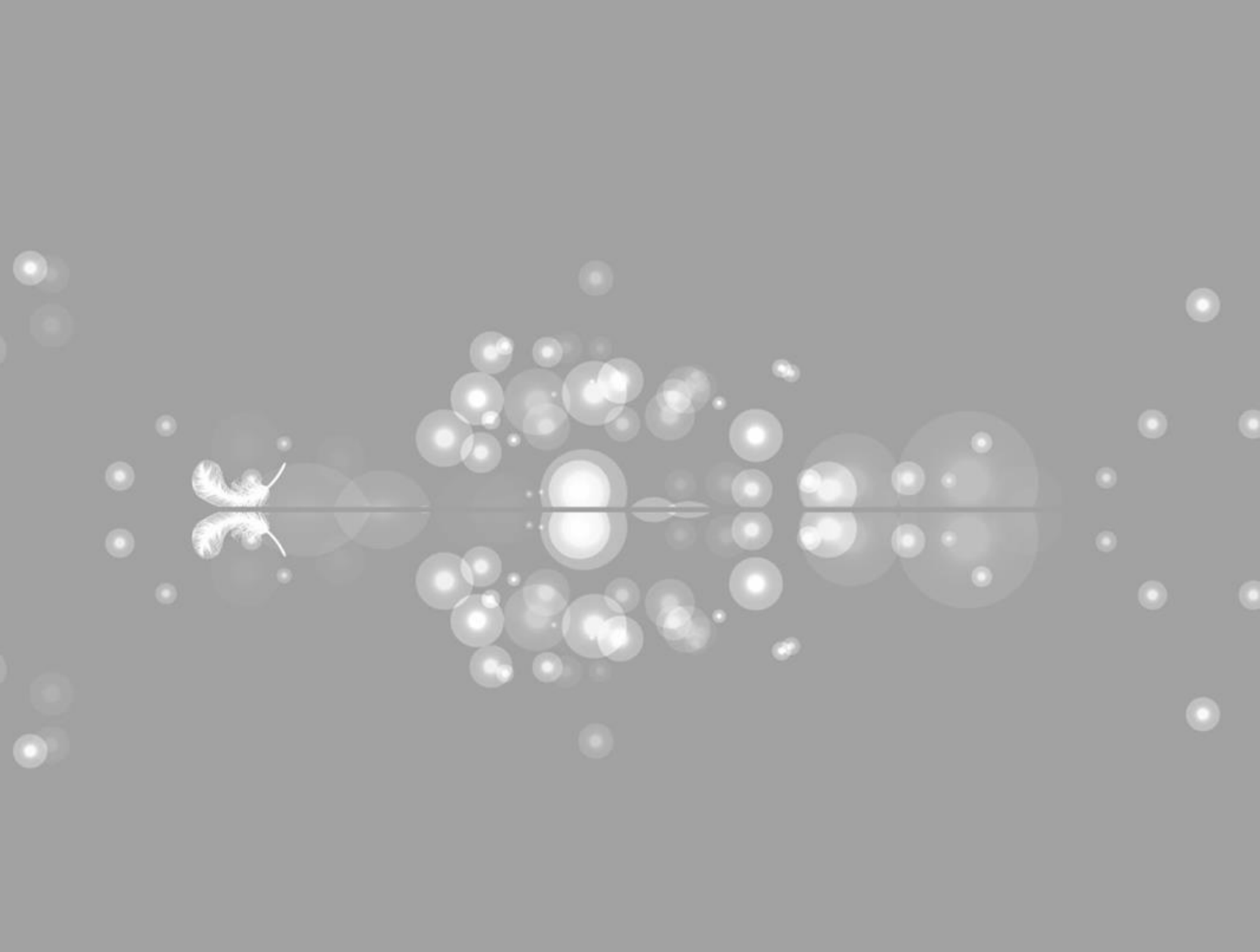
THEY'VE CAUGHT A GOD CANDIDATE.

CLICK

CLICK

SHE FREELY *ADMITS* THAT SHE'S A GOD CANDIDATE.

YURI TEMARI, FEMALE, AGE 23, UNEMPLOYED. HISTORY OF MULTIPLE SUICIDE ATTEMPTS.



#31 Updated List

WE'LL TELL YOU EVERYTHING WE KNOW.

WE'D LIKE TO HELP YOU.

!

AS A MATTER OF FACT, WE'VE JUST APPREHENDED ONE OF THE GOD CANDIDATES.

WELL, I APPRECIATE THAT VERY MUCH.

IS IT TRUE THAT PEOPLE WHO WISH TO DIE ARE THE ONES CHOSEN TO BE GOD CANDIDATES?

YURI TEMARI, AGE 23, UNEMPLOYED, TWO KNOWN SUICIDE ATTEMPTS...

I SEE. THEM TOO...

...

SORRY FOR ASKING.

EVERYONE THINKS ABOUT DYING AT SOME POINT OR ANOTHER IN THEIR LIFE.

AND YET THE REALITY IS THAT WE HAVE MANY SUICIDES IN THIS COUNTRY. I CAN'T ACTUALLY BRING MYSELF TO BLAME PEOPLE FOR MAKING THAT DECISION.

AS A POLICEMAN, MY OFFICIAL POSITION IS TO DISAVOW THE CONCEPT OF SUICIDE.

ESPECIALLY WHEN WE'RE YOUNG ...

...I DON'T EVER THINK IT'S A GOOD THING TO END YOUR OWN LIFE, NO MATTER THE REASON ...

I KNOW THIS ISN'T MY PLACE TO SAY, BUT...

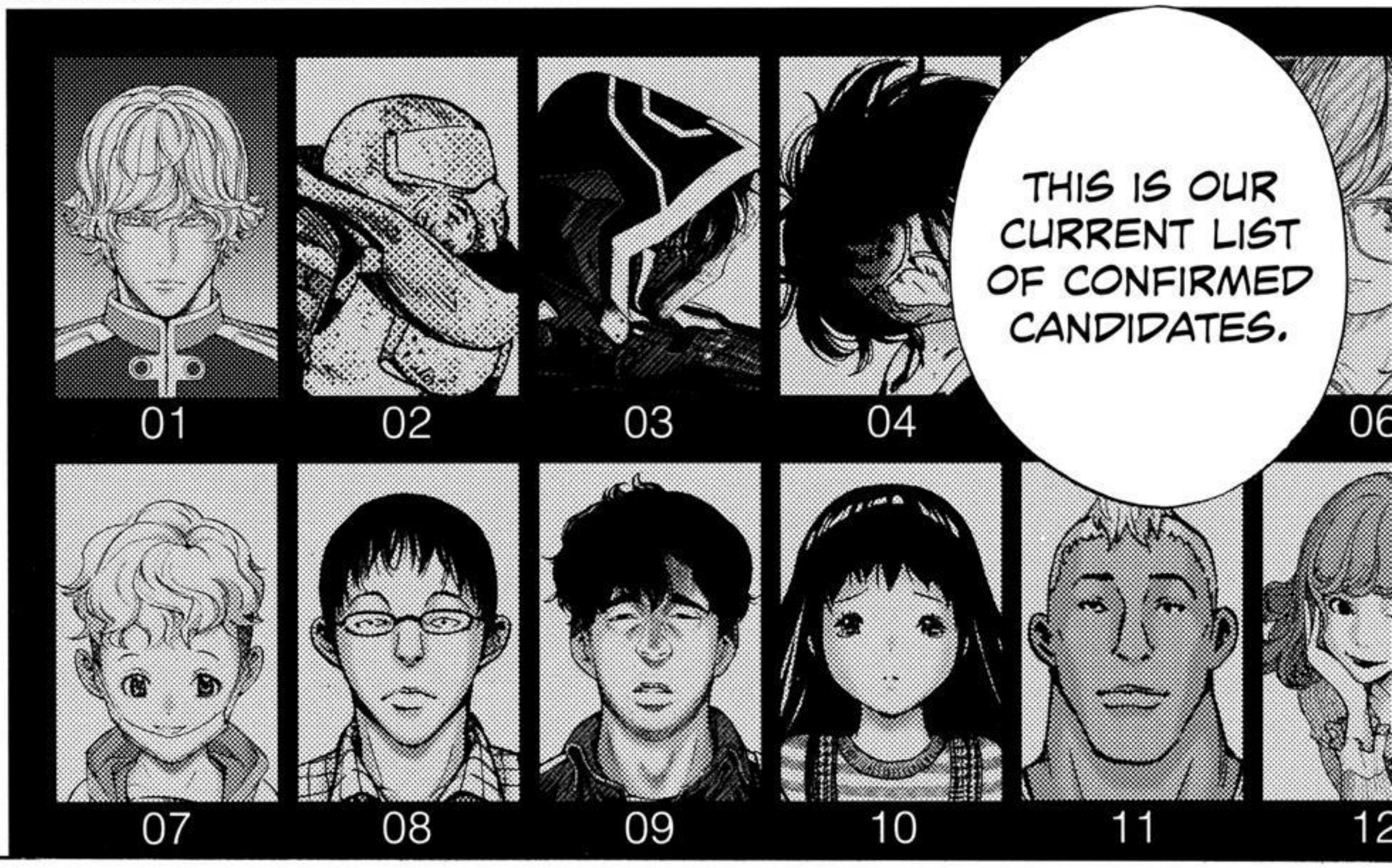
UMM...

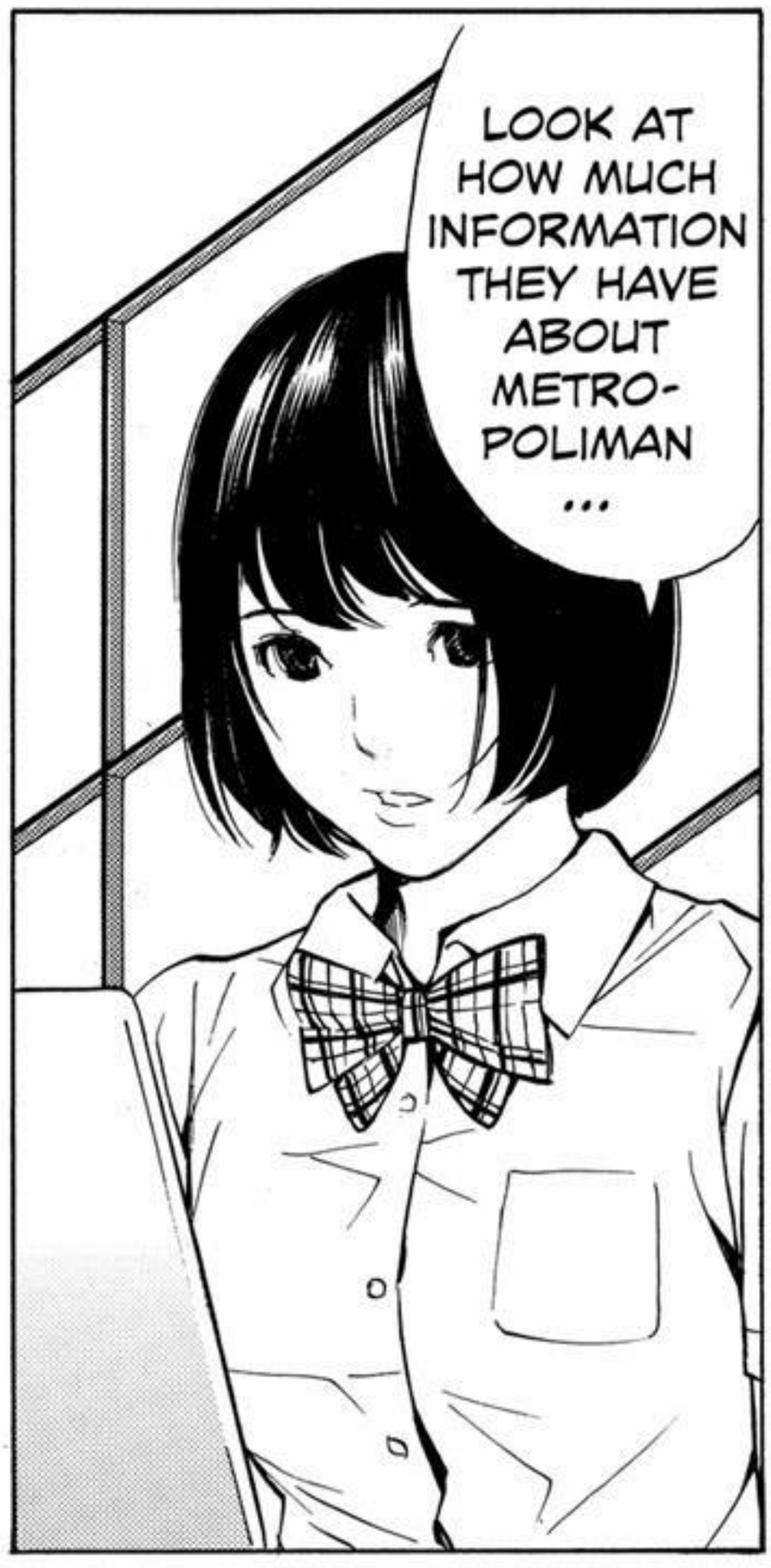
YES. I AGREE...

...

UNTIL THEN, FEEL FREE TO LOOK OVER OUR CASE FILES.

YUMIKI WILL RETURN SOON, AND THEN WE CAN LISTEN TO WHAT YOU HAVE TO SAY.


THIS IS OUR CURRENT LIST OF CONFIRMED CANDIDATES.
01
02
03
04
06
07
08
09
10
11
12


LOOK AT HOW MUCH INFORMATION THEY HAVE ABOUT METRO-POLIMAN ...

01
CLICK
u, Kar
Birth
20
Gender
M
Birthplace
Japa
Height
182
Blood type
B+
Occupation
Stud
Notes
Registered addr
may not match a
place of residen
Student of Joso
Private Academy
The person behi
public figure of
Metropoliman.
Constructed his
costume and dec
himself Metropo
before his death.

THAT'S BASED SOLELY ON RUMORS WITHOUT ANY ANNOUNCE-MENT...

THE JOSO GROUP'S STOCK IS CURRENTLY IN FREE FALL.

SON OF THE URYU FAMILY, THE OWNERS AND MANAGERS OF JOSO INDUSTRIAL.

AGE 16, STUDENT AT JOSO ACADEMY HIGH SCHOOL.

SHE'S NOT?

...MIMI YAMADA ISN'T A GOD CANDIDATE.

MR. HOSHI...

Birthplace	■■■■
Height	■■■.■ cm
Blood type	■
Occupation	■■■■■

Notes

CLICK

SO THIS IS THE PERSON YOU MENTIONED BEING APPREHENDED...

YES. SHE POPPED UP IMMEDIATELY AFTER SUSUMU YUITO'S PUBLIC STATEMENTS.

12

CLICK

Temari,

Birthdate	1995/
Gender	F
Birthplace	Japan
Height	168cm
Blood type	B+
Occupation	Unemployed

Notes

Worked for a major advertising agency after graduating college. After leaving that company, attempted suicide twice. Whereabouts currently unknown.

THEN SHE ATTEMPTED SUICIDE TWICE.

POST-GRADUATION, SHE STARTED WORKING AT A MAJOR ADVERTISING FIRM.

SHE SHOWED UP A LOT IN THE #GODCANDIDATE HASHTAG, ALTHOUGH MOST OF THOSE PEOPLE WERE PROBABLY JUST TROLLING HER.

BUT IT TURNED OUT THEY WERE RIGHT.

STARTING THIS APRIL, SHE BEGAN CULTIVATING A MAJOR FOLLOWING ONLINE WITH HER CELEBRITY-STYLED POSTS.

WHAAAAT?!

YOU'RE TAKING AWAY MY PHONE?!

YOU CAN'T DO THAT TO ME! THIS PLACE IS ***PERFECT*** FOR INSTAGRAM!

YOUR PHONE WILL BE RETURNED WHEN YOUR PROTECTION HAS BEEN LIFTED.

IT'S NECESSARY. AND YOU CANNOT LEAVE UNLESS ESCORTED BY OFFICERS.

GRRR...

THUMP

THE POLICE ARE PROTECTING YOU. JUST PUT UP WITH IT FOR NOW.

IT WAS *YOUR* IDEA FOR ME TO ACCEPT THEIR PROTECTION, YAZELI!

I SIMPLY THOUGHT THAT IF YOU'RE GOING TO BE CAUGHT, YOU MIGHT AS WELL DO IT ON YOUR OWN TERMS.

SOCIETY'S FERVOR FOR FINDING GOD CANDIDATES IS MUCH MORE INTENSE THAN I IMAGINED IT TO BE.

I KNOW, I KNOW. AND I DON'T HAVE WINGS I CAN USE TO GET AWAY.

Since you're second rank.

IT'S BETTER THAN BEING PELTED WITH STONES.

LET'S ENJOY THE LUXURY HERE WHILE WE WAIT FOR THE OTHER GOD CANDIDATES TO SHOW UP. ♡

OH WELL.

星
HOSHI

...

THE MORE I HEAR, THE MORE COMPLEX IT GETS.

AND THE MORE OF THOSE FACTS THAT COME TO LIGHT, THE LIKELIER HE'LL BE MADE A TARGET.

THIS MIRAI KAKEHASHI COULD TURN INTO A BEING FAR MORE DANGEROUS THAN I REALIZED.

WHITE ARROWS THAT CAN KILL ANY NUMBER OF PEOPLE...

WINGS THAT ARE PRACTICALLY INSTANT TELEPORTATION...

...HE HAS NOT PIERCED A SINGLE PERSON WITH HIS WHITE ARROW.

AND YET...

EVEN WITH HIS BACK AGAINST THE WALL IN THE FIGHT AGAINST METROPOLIMAN, HE MAINTAINED HIS BASIC RESPECT FOR HUMAN LIFE...

ooo

THIS YOUNG MAN HAS A FUTURE. HE MUST NOT BE TURNED INTO A WEAPON.

...LIKE MIMI YAMADA, YUMIKI CAN BE GIVEN WINGS AND ARROWS, SINCE SHE'S UNDER THE EFFECTS OF A RED ARROW AT THE MOMENT.

SO THAT WOULD MEAN THAT...

I SEE... SO THAT'S HOW THIS ALL WORKS.

IF YOU CAN ONLY PASS ALONG THESE ITEMS FOR THE 33 DAYS THAT THE RED ARROW IS EFFECTIVE, WE MIGHT AS WELL USE THE TIME PRODUCTIVELY.

WHAT ABOUT WINGS?

BUT I DON'T THINK WE SHOULD JUST HAND OVER RED ARROWS...

I WANT TO SEE ANGELS.

AND MOST IMPORTANTLY, IF RECEIVING WINGS MEANS THE ANGELS BECOME VISIBLE...

ALL RIGHT, THEN.

RIGHT.

...

SHE WON'T BE ABLE TO DEFY YOUR WISHES, SAKI.

AND IT'LL MAKE THE INVESTI-GATION EASIER.

CLINK...

KWI

NG

SHING...

SHWAA

I'M NASSE.

YOU CAN JUST CALL US ANGELS, THANKS.

I CAN SEE... TWO ANGELIC THINGS.

AND THIS IS REVEL.

SWISH...

THEY'RE CALLING THEMSELVES NASSE... AND REVEL.

GONK

I'M FLYING.

I...

AN-GELS, HUH?

I WISH I COULD SEE THEM...

THIS IS... INCREDIBLE...

SO ONLY FOR THOSE TWO OCCASIONS WOULD I BE ABLE TO USE WINGS AND RED ARROWS.

BUT SAKI AND MIRAI CAN ONLY USE A RED ARROW ON AN INDIVIDUAL ONE TIME EACH.

MAY I ASK THE ANGELS ONE THING?

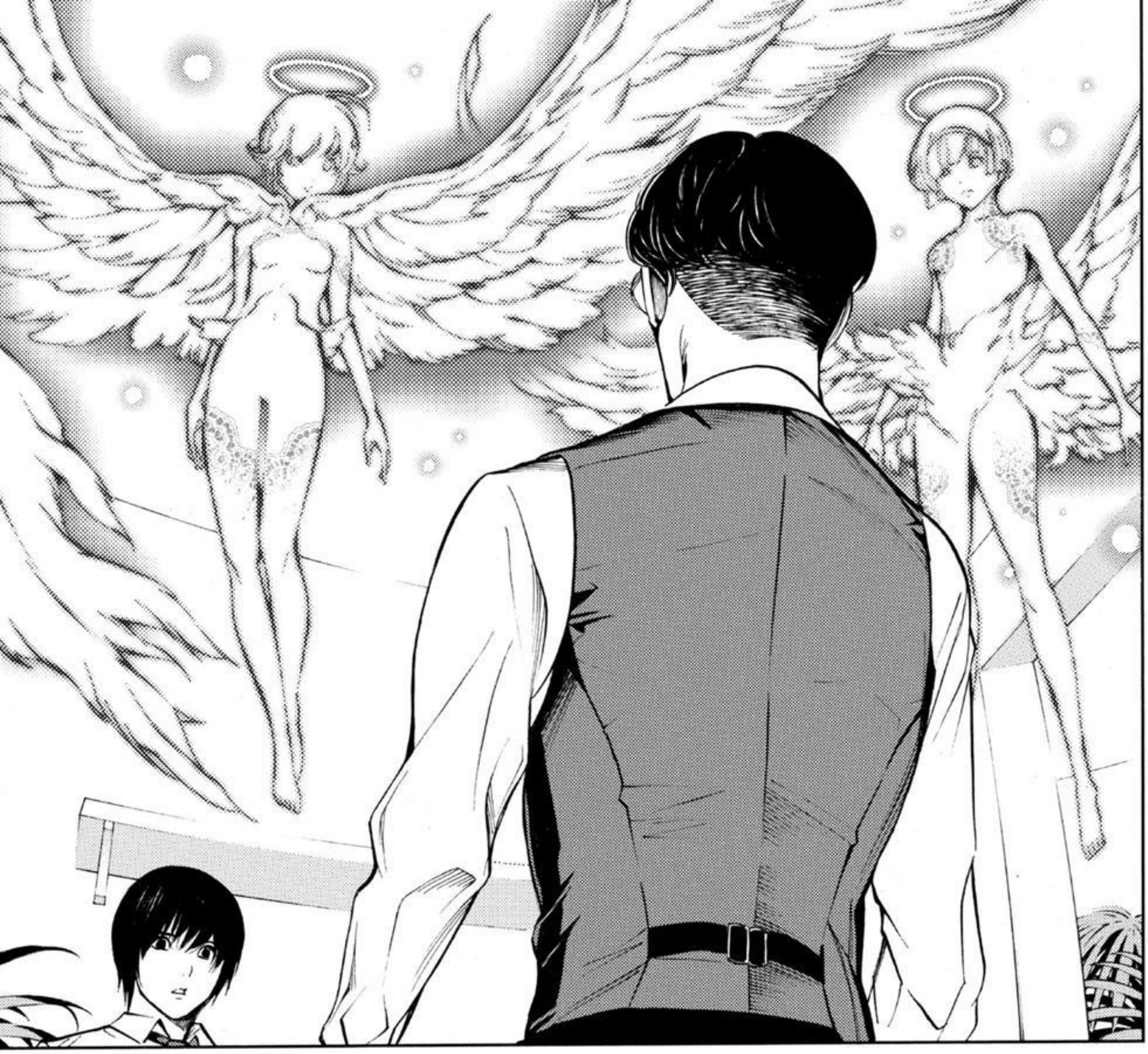
...

IT'S BETTER THAT WE USE THEM EFFECTIVELY, AND WHEN MOST NEEDED.

HE SAYS YOU CAN GO AHEAD.

GO AHEAD.

WHAT EXACTLY *ARE* YOU?



I CANNOT SAY WHAT WE ARE YET. ANGELS ARE ANGELS.

I SEE... PARDON ME. THAT WAS A FOOLISH THING TO ASK.

...

HE SAYS THAT ANGELS ARE ANGELS.

WE'LL START OUR SEARCH FOR GOD CANDIDATES IN THE MORNING.

I WANT YOU TWO TO OBSERVE ANYONE ON THE SUSPECT LIST YOU FIND SUSPICIOUS.

WE'LL CONTINUE SIFTING THROUGH THE DATA AND UPDATING THE LIST AS WE FIND GOOD INFORMATION.

SAKI, CAN YOU IDENTIFY F319'S CURRENT LOCATION?

DISTRICT 16...

LET'S GO.

シャキ

NO SIGN OF ANGELS IN DISTRICT 3.

WE'RE GOING TO NEED RED ARROWS AFTER ALL.

TWIT

データ1　データ2

Murak

Birthdate
Gender
Birthplace
Height
Blood type
Occupation

Notes
In America--
a short period--
number of--

060

Oyoji, Daisuke

Birthdate
Gender
Birthplace
Height
Blood type
Occupation
Notes

061

Shitani, Naoyuki

Birthdate
Gender
Birthplace
Height

Mitsuno, Kazuma

Birthdate	Birthdate
Gender	M
Birthplace	Japan
Height	183 cm
Blood type	A+
Occupation	Former C

Notes
Calls hims

IT IS NO LONGER WITHIN THE POWER OF MANKIND TO SOLVE THESE PROBLEMS.

THE WORLD IS CURRENTLY IN A STATE OF UNPRECEDENTED CHAOS.

WAR, FAMINE, OVERPOPU-LATION, TERRORISM, ABNORMAL WEATHER EVENTS...

YOU ARE IN THE PRESENCE OF A REAL GOD CANDIDATE.

THOSE OF YOU HERE ARE VERY FORTUNATE.

THE TIME HAS COME. THE WORLD NEEDS A NEW GOD.

BUT HAVE NO FEAR.

SAYING, "YOU WILL BE GOD"...

I HEARD THE ANGEL'S VOICE.

I HAVE ENCOUN-TERED AN ANGEL AT LAST.

ON THE DAY I BECOME GOD, ALL THE PEOPLE OF THE EARTH WILL FIND TRUE HAPPINESS...

THE
3rd
GOD
CANDIDATE
GATHERING

WHUMP

VRRR

ZM

MF

!

GRK...

YOU WANNA DIE, KIDZ!

CLICK

SKREE

SHHH

YEP.

HE'S NOT ONE, EITHER.

WHAT IS IT?

MR. HOSHI.

THREE DAYS LATER

THAT'S A VERY STANDARD ACCUSATION, BUT THE FACT THAT HE WAS CLASSMATES WITH KANADE URYU IS INTERESTING.

THE ONE PEOPLE TWEETED ABOUT, CLAIMING HE MUST BE A GOD CANDIDATE BECAUSE HE SUDDENLY GOT A CUTE GIRLFRIEND?

データ1 データ2

I'M LOOKING AT THIS LIST OF PEOPLE RUMORED ONLINE TO BE GOD CANDIDATES.

THIS BOY NAMED MIZUKIYO MINAMI-KAWA...

...AND THINGS OF THAT NATURE.

SO OUR PRIME SUSPECTS ARE PEOPLE WHO SUDDENLY GOT VERY RICH AND POPULAR OUT OF NOWHERE, ATHLETES IN SPEED-BASED SPORTS WHO ACHIEVED DRAMATIC SUCCESS...

BEFORE, IT WAS ONLY THE THREE OF US SEARCHING, BUT THINGS ARE VERY DIFFERENT NOW.

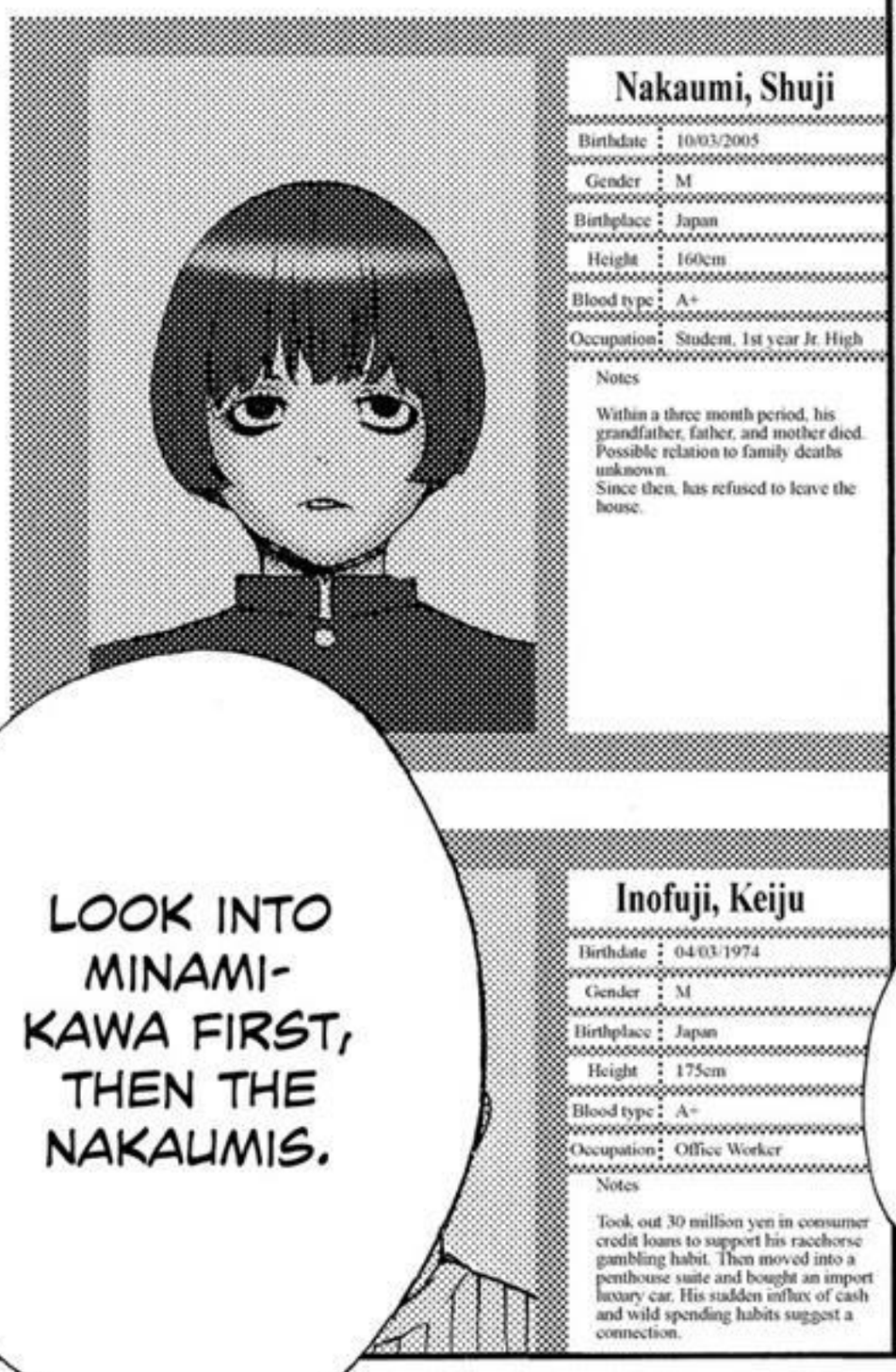
THAT'S WHAT MR. MUKAIDO SAID.

183

THAT'S A WHOLE LOT OF PEOPLE TO BE DYING IN JUST THREE MONTHS...

THESE ONES TOO.

184



Nakaumi, Shuji

Birthdate	10/03/2005
Gender	M
Birthplace	Japan
Height	160cm
Blood type	A+
Occupation	Student, 1st year Jr. High

Notes

Within a three month period, his grandfather, father, and mother died. Possible relation to family deaths unknown.
Since then, has refused to leave the house.

Inofuji, Keiju

Birthdate	04/03/1974
Gender	M
Birthplace	Japan
Height	175cm
Blood type	A+
Occupation	Office Worker

Notes

Took out 30 million yen in consumer credit loans to support his racehorse gambling habit. Then moved into a penthouse suite and bought an import luxury car. His sudden influx of cash and wild spending habits suggest a connection.

LOOK INTO MINAMI-KAWA FIRST, THEN THE NAKAUMIS.

IN THE LAST THREE MONTHS, THEIR PARENTS, GRANDFATHER AND THREE FRIENDS HAVE ALL DIED.

THE JUNIOR HIGH NAKAUMI BROTHERS...

THREE OF THEM?

YOU SURE YOU DON'T WANT ME TO TAKE YOU HOME?

THANKS FOR WALKING ME HERE AGAIN.

NO. I'M TOO EMBAR-RASSED.

WELL, I'D BE HAPPY TO INTRO-DUCE MYSELF.

I JUST DON'T WANT MY MOM SEEING US AND STUFF.

WELL, SEE YOU LATER.

I JUST DON'T WANT HER KNOWING I HAVE A BOY-FRIEND...

NOT BECAUSE I'M EMBAR-RASSED OF *YOU*...

OH! NO, NOT LIKE THAT!

WHY EMBAR-RASSED...?

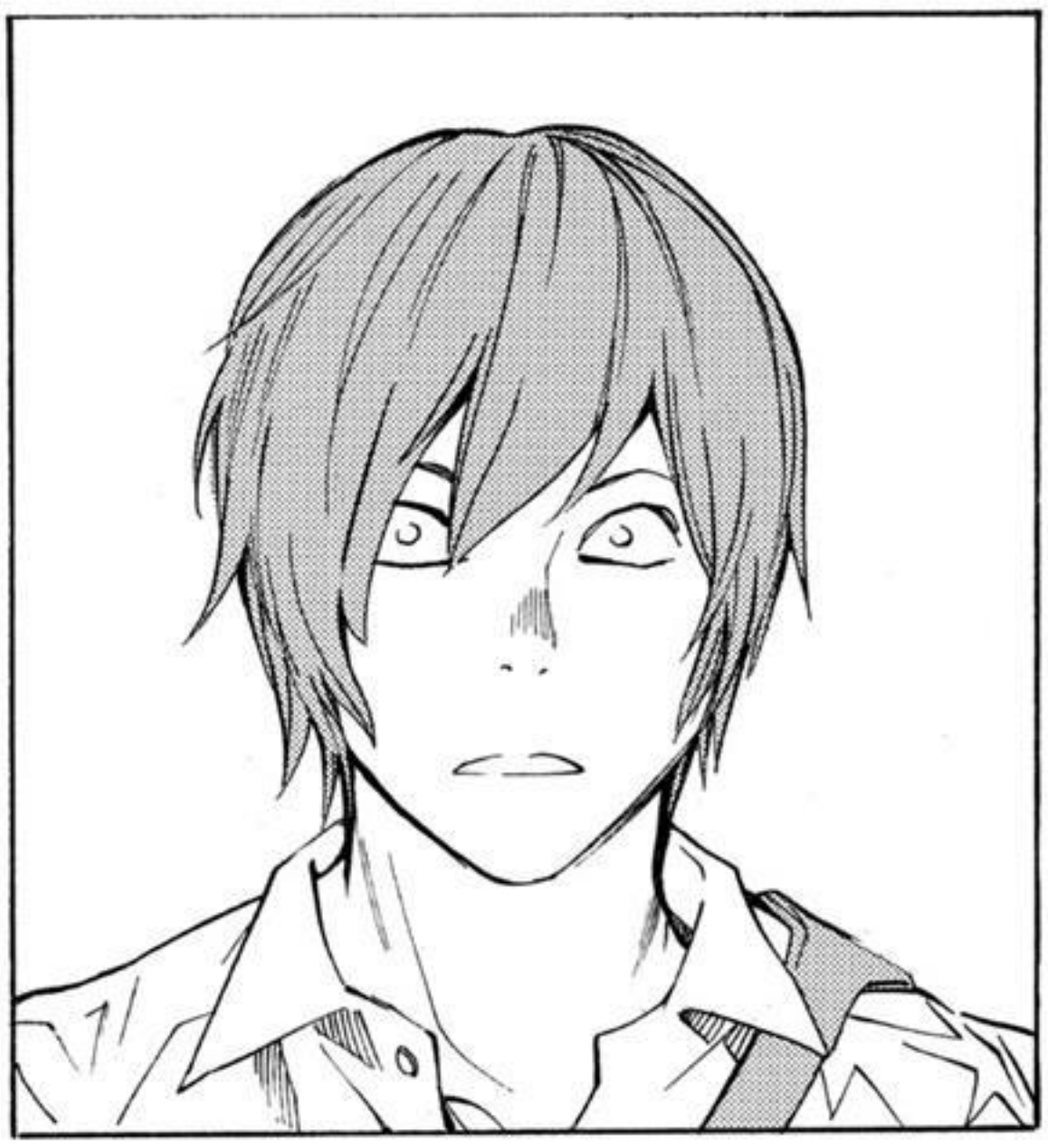
YES! YES! YES!

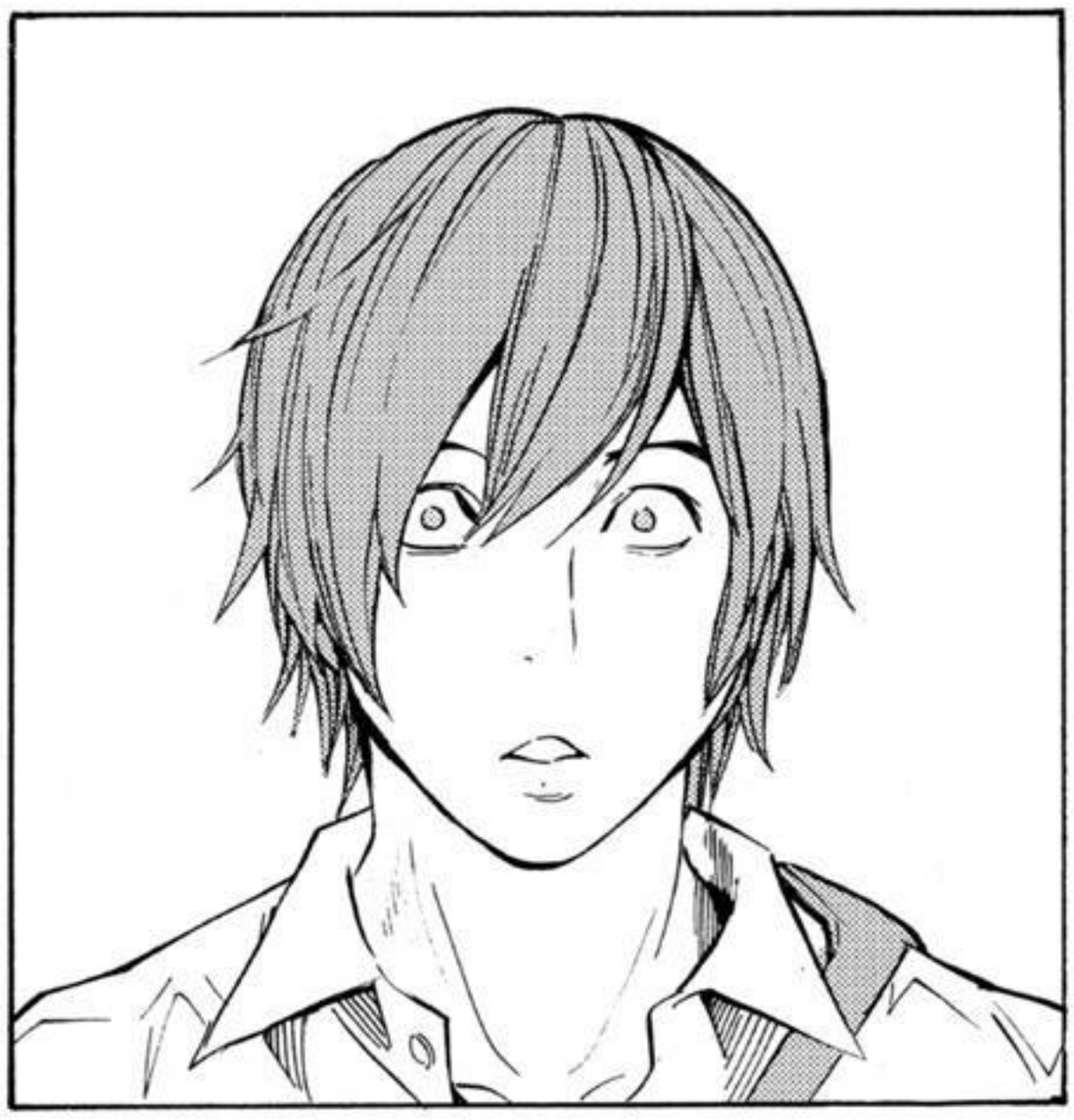
WHOAAA!

SHE CALLED ME HER BOY-FRIEND...

BOY-FRIEND...

YE--





I WON'T TELL ANY-ONE!!

I WON'T DO ANY-THING!

DON'T KILL ME!!

N... NO...

SO YOU'RE SECOND RANK.

ZNSH

AAAAH!!

BECAUSE I DON'T HAVE WINGS!!

WHY AREN'T YOU RUNNING?

SO HE DOES KNOW WHO METRO-POLIMAN WAS...

!

AND NOW *YOU* ...

W-WHAT'S GOING ON HERE?! FIRST KANADE, THEN SUSUMU YUITO...

IS HE A CANDI-DATE?

HE CAN SEE THE WHITE ARROW!

I'M NO-BODY ...

S-SURE, I'M SECOND RANK... THIRD RANK, EVEN!

I KNOW.

KWエ

USE THE RED.

SHAK

IF YOU SAY I AM...

YOU'RE A GOD CANDIDATE.

UH-HUH.

NOW WE'RE PARTNERS FOR 33 DAYS...

YES. PARTNERS.

NEXT IS THE NAKAUMIS.

THEY'RE NOT FAR AWAY.

YES, NOT FAR AWAY.

AND THEN MOM FELT SO BAD ABOUT WHAT SHE DID THAT SHE COMMITTED SUICIDE.

YES... MOM RAN OFF WITH A YOUNGER MAN, AND DAD COMMITTED SUICIDE.

GRANDPA DIED IN THE HOSPITAL... BUT THAT WAS SUICIDE TOO, WASN'T IT?

YOU'RE SURE ABOUT THIS?

中海

NAKAUMI

AND MY OWN LITTLE BROTHER IS A GOD CANDIDATE WHO MADE ALL OF THEM KILL THEMSELVES...

BUT ALL I'M DOING IS MAKING THEIR WISHES COME TRUE. YOU CAN'T FORCE SOMEONE WHO DOESN'T WANT TO DIE TO COMMIT SUICIDE.

THAT'S RIGHT.

HITTING A SUICIDAL PERSON WITH A RED ARROW AND TELLING THEM TO DIE WILL MAKE THEM KILL THEMSELVES.

WHEN I SAW PEOPLE GLOATING OVER THE RUMORS OF OUR HORRIBLE MISFORTUNE, I DIDN'T WANT TO GO ON ANY LONGER.

I DON'T WANT TO LIVE ANYMORE, EITHER.

YOU SURE? IF YOU DON'T ***TRULY*** WANT DEATH, YOU MIGHT FAIL THE ATTEMPT AND SUFFER EVEN WORSE.

I'M SURE... I WANT TO DIE...

KWIT

ALL RIGHT, THEN... GOOD-BYE, BIG BROTHER.

If angel tools are returned before a god is determined, the person who returned them shall die.

Angel tools from deceased god candidates can also be given to other human beings.

When a god is determined, the angel tools of the other candidates are forfeited.

Non-candidate human beings cannot see angel tools.

Angel wings can fly faster than the human eye can follow.

The tools an angel can give to a person depend on the angel's rank.
Special rank: Wings, red arrows, white arrows
First rank: Wings, red arrows
Second rank: Wings or red arrows

God candidates are chosen from among people who have lost their reason or will to live.

God is determined from among thirteen human beings selected by thirteen angels. The process shall take no more than 999 days.

The angel tools of deceased god candidates can be claimed and used by other candidates.

Angels shall not use their own arrows and wings to directly affect God candidates.

If the pierced person dies, that red arrow will be returned to its owner.

When a person is under the effect of a red arrow, they cannot be pierced by other red arrows.

Any person pierced by a white arrow will die without fail.

When a red arrow is used on another person possessing red arrows, they may be ordered to use those red arrows on the original shooter. In this case, the effect of the second arrow overrides the first.

Even a person under the effects of a red arrow may be unable to perform certain actions if lacking an adequate reason or intent to do them.

The speed of the wings is not affected by any amount of weight the user can carry unassisted. However, they cannot lift more than one extra person.

Wings can fly faster than arrows.

Arrows cannot be fired while utilizing faster-than-sight wing flight.

Angel arrows can strike any target with perfect accuracy, but only if the shooter can see the target.

Any person pierced by a red arrow will fall in love with the user for 33 days before the effect wears off.
The effect will only work on a specific person once.

Red arrows can pierce up to fourteen people at one time.

T s ug u mi **O**h b **a**

Born in Tokyo, Tsugumi Ohba is the author of the hit series *Death Note* and *Bakuman*。.

Ta **k** e **s h** i O b a **t**a

Takeshi Obata was born in 1969 in Niigata, Japan, and first achieved international recognition as the artist of the wildly popular *Shonen Jump* title *Hikaru no Go*, which won the 2003 Tezuka Osamu Cultural Prize: Shinsei "New Hope" Award and the 2000 Shogakukan Manga Award. He went on to illustrate the smash hit *Death Note* as well as the hugely successful manga *Bakuman*。 and *All You Need Is Kill*.

PLATINVM END

VOLUME 9
SHONEN JUMP Manga Edition

°

STORY Tsugumi Ohba
ART Takeshi Obata

°

TRANSLATION Stephen Paul
TOUCH-UP ART & LETTERING James Gaubatz
DESIGN Shawn Carrico
EDITOR Alexis Kirsch

°

ORIGINAL COVER DESIGN Narumi Noriko

°

PLATINUM END © 2015 by Tsugumi Ohba, Takeshi Obata
All rights reserved.
First published in Japan in 2015 by SHUEISHA Inc., Tokyo.
English translation rights arranged by SHUEISHA Inc.

°

The stories, characters and incidents mentioned in this publication are entirely fictional.

No portion of this book may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means without written permission from the copyright holders.

°

Printed in the U.S.A.

Published by VIZ Media, LLC
P.O. Box 77010
San Francisco, CA 94107

°

10 9 8 7 6 5 4 3 2 1
First printing, July 2019

10

PLATINUM END

STORY
TSUGUMI OHBA

ART
TAKESHI OBATA

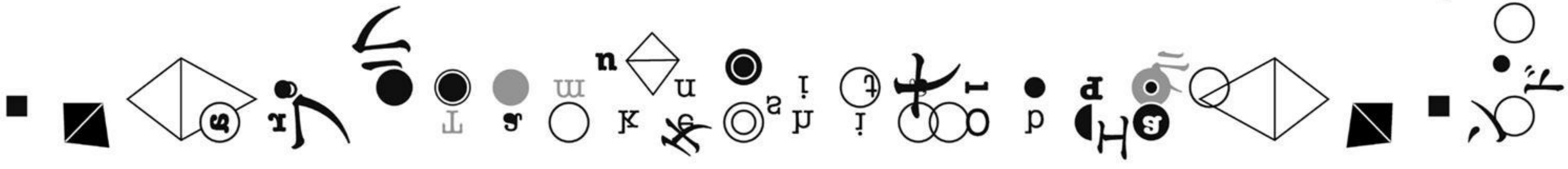
PARENTAL ADVISORY
EXPLICIT CONTENT

PLATINUM END

Takeshi Obata
ART

Tsugumi Ohba
STORY

Platinum End

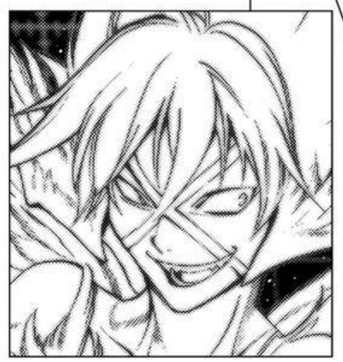


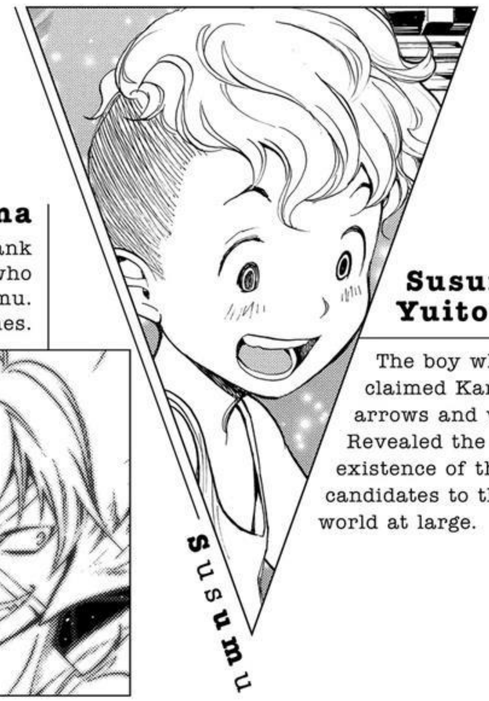
Shuji Nakaumi

A boy, thought to be another god candidate.

Penema

The first-rank angel who chose Susumu. Angel of Games.





Susumu Yuito

The boy who claimed Kanade's arrows and wings. Revealed the existence of the god candidates to the world at large.

Yumiki

Hoshi's subordinate and fiancée.

Hoshi

A police agent secretly working with Yumiki and Mirai's group, unbeknownst to the government.

Yazeli

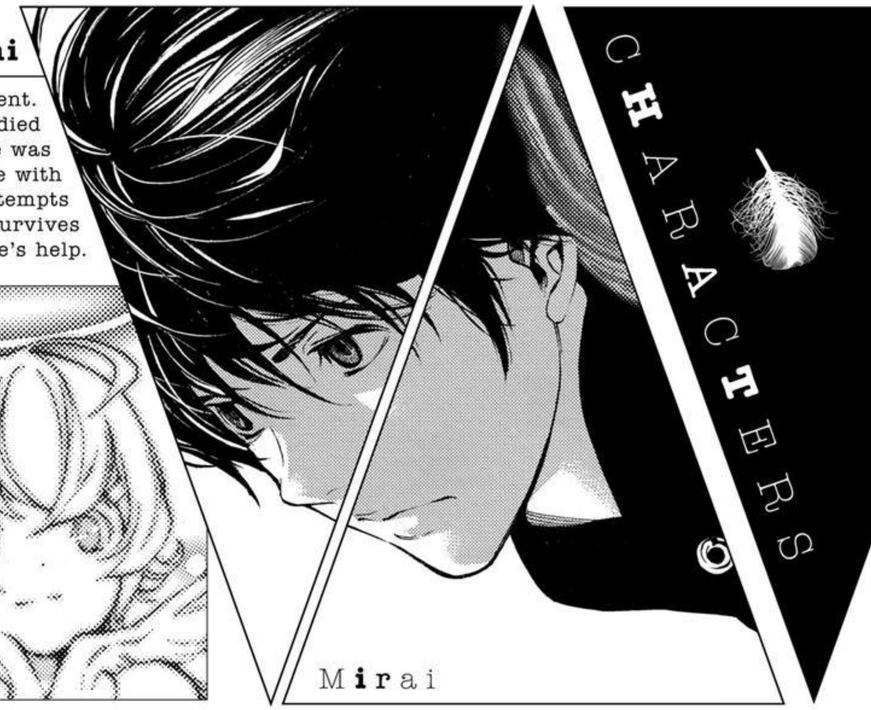
The second-rank angel who chose Yuri. The Angel of Truth.

Mirai Kakehashi

First-year high school student. His parents and brother died in an accident when he was seven. After a painful life with his abusive relatives, he attempts to commit suicide and survives through Nasse's help.

Nasse

A special-rank angel who wants to bring happiness to Mirai's life. Bright and bubbly.



Yuri Temari

Free spirit who enjoys social media, and has no real interest in being god. Attempted suicide twice.

Revel

Promoted to the first-rank Angel of Emotion.

Saki Hanakago

Mirai's old friend and fellow student. The object of his affections.

Story

COOPERATORS

Hoshi and Yumiki make contact with Mirai and Saki without telling their superiors or the government, and begin the search for other candidates.

Mirai and Saki try to live a normal life without revealing their secret identities. But Agent Hoshi finds them out of the blue...

AN ENCROACHING THREAT

HUNTING CANDIDATES

The world plunges into chaos when Susumu Yuito talks about the god candidates on live TV. A worldwide hunt for candidates begins.

Story

"My time has come. I leave the seat of god to the next human.
To a younger, fresher power.

The next god shall be chosen from the 13 humans chosen by you 13 angels.When the chosen human is made the next god, your angelic duty is finished, and you may live beside that god in peace.

You have 999 days remaining..."

CONTENTS

#32 A Boy's Hope
P5

#33 The Other Five
P55

#34 False Appearance
P95

#35 The Power of Numbers
P135

#36 Last Supper
P175

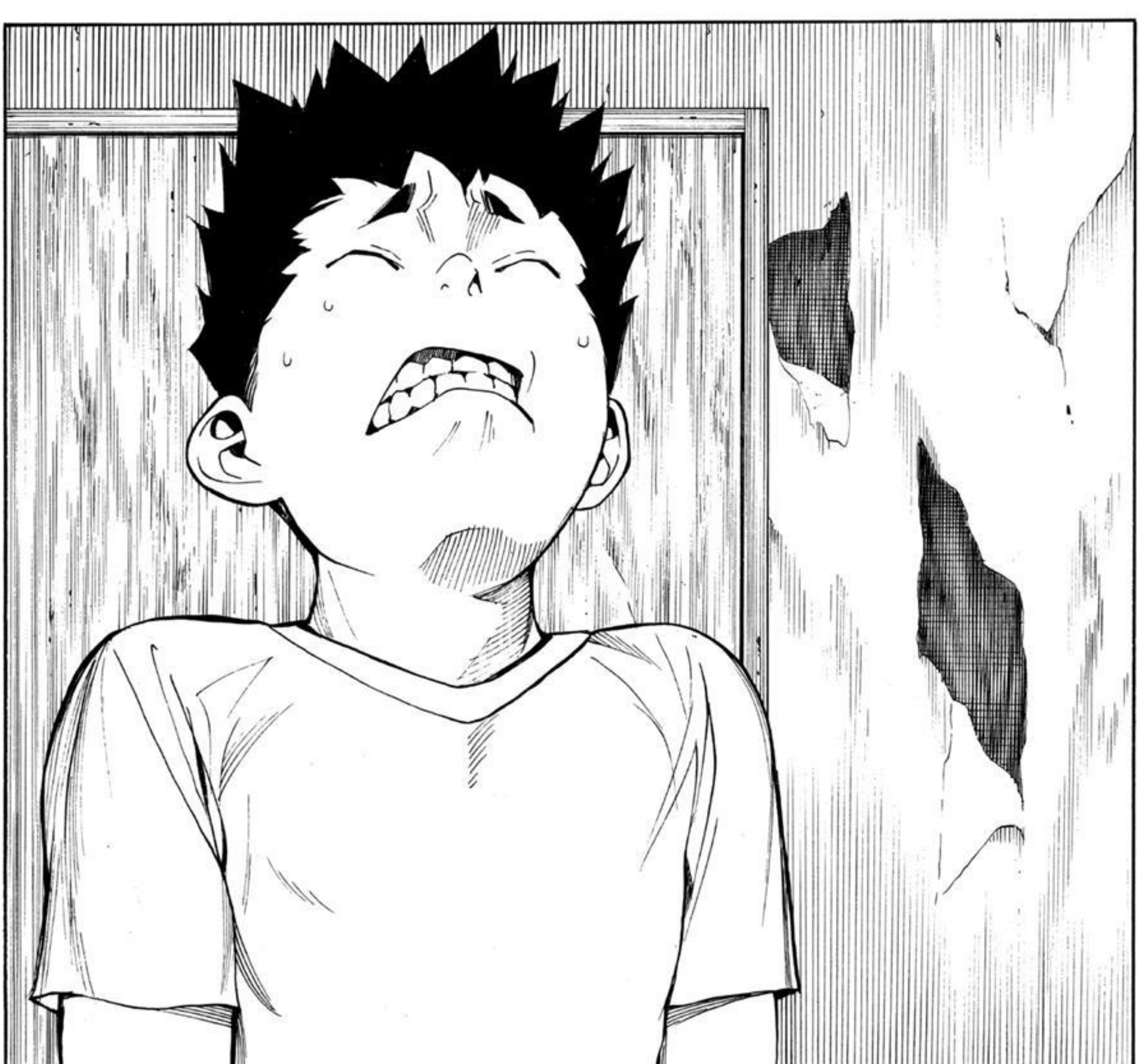
LET'S HURRY.

THAT LEAVES JUST ONE SPECIAL-RANK ANGEL... THE NAKAUMIS' HOUSE IS NEARBY.

...

SO IF MINAMIKAWA'S ANGEL IS SECOND RANK...

#32 A Boy's Hope



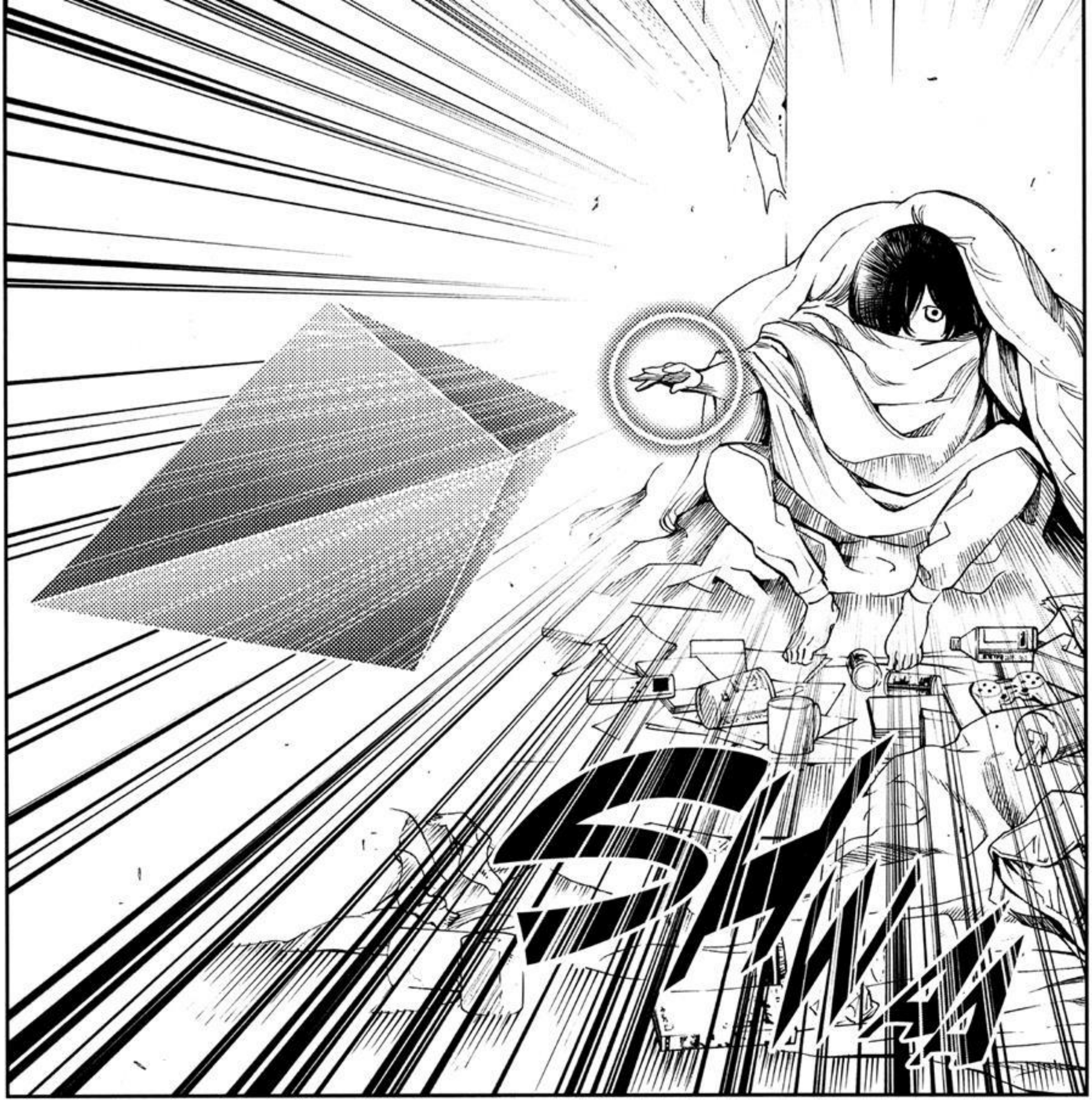
I'M SURE... I WANT TO DIE...

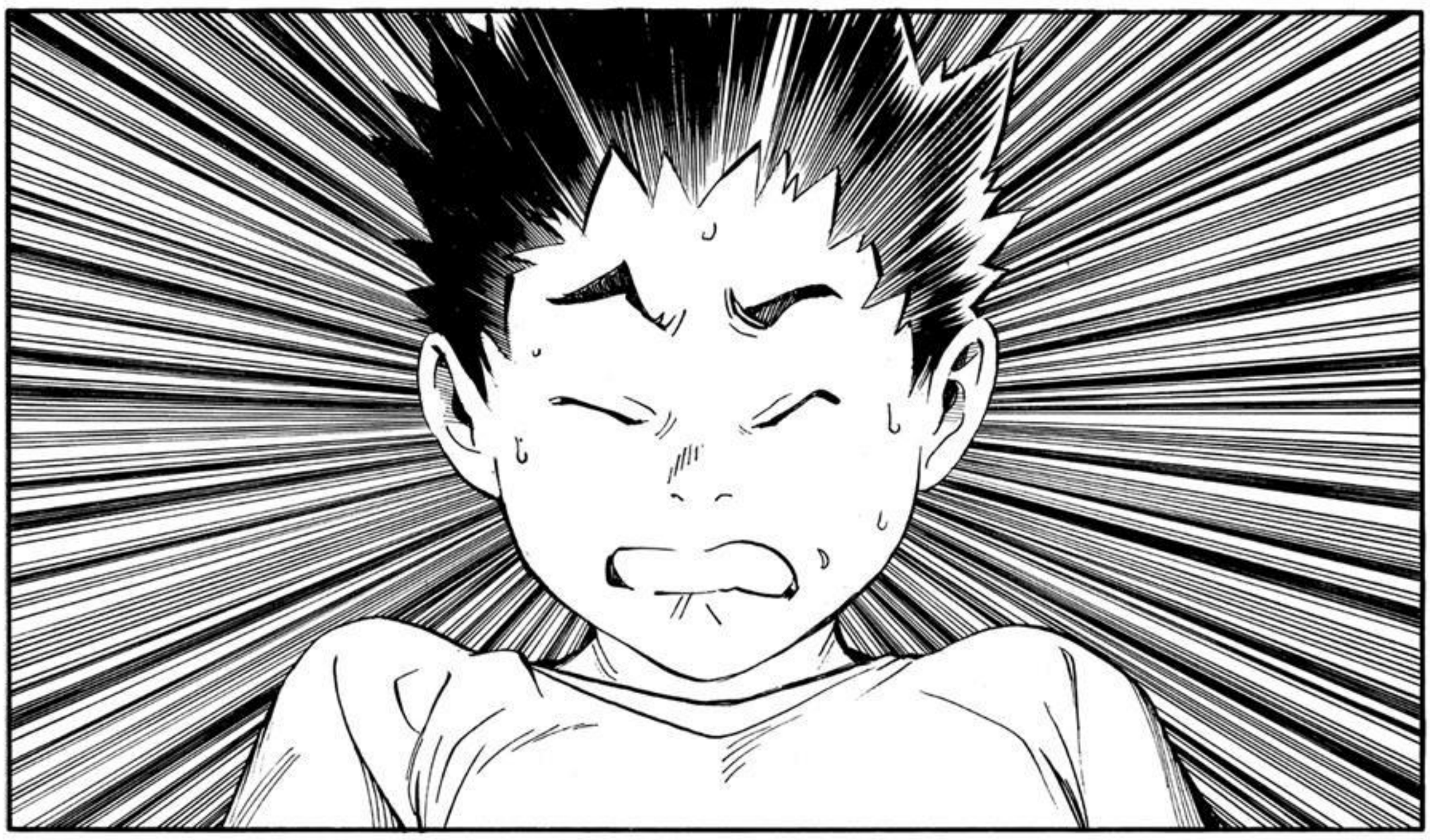
YOU SURE?

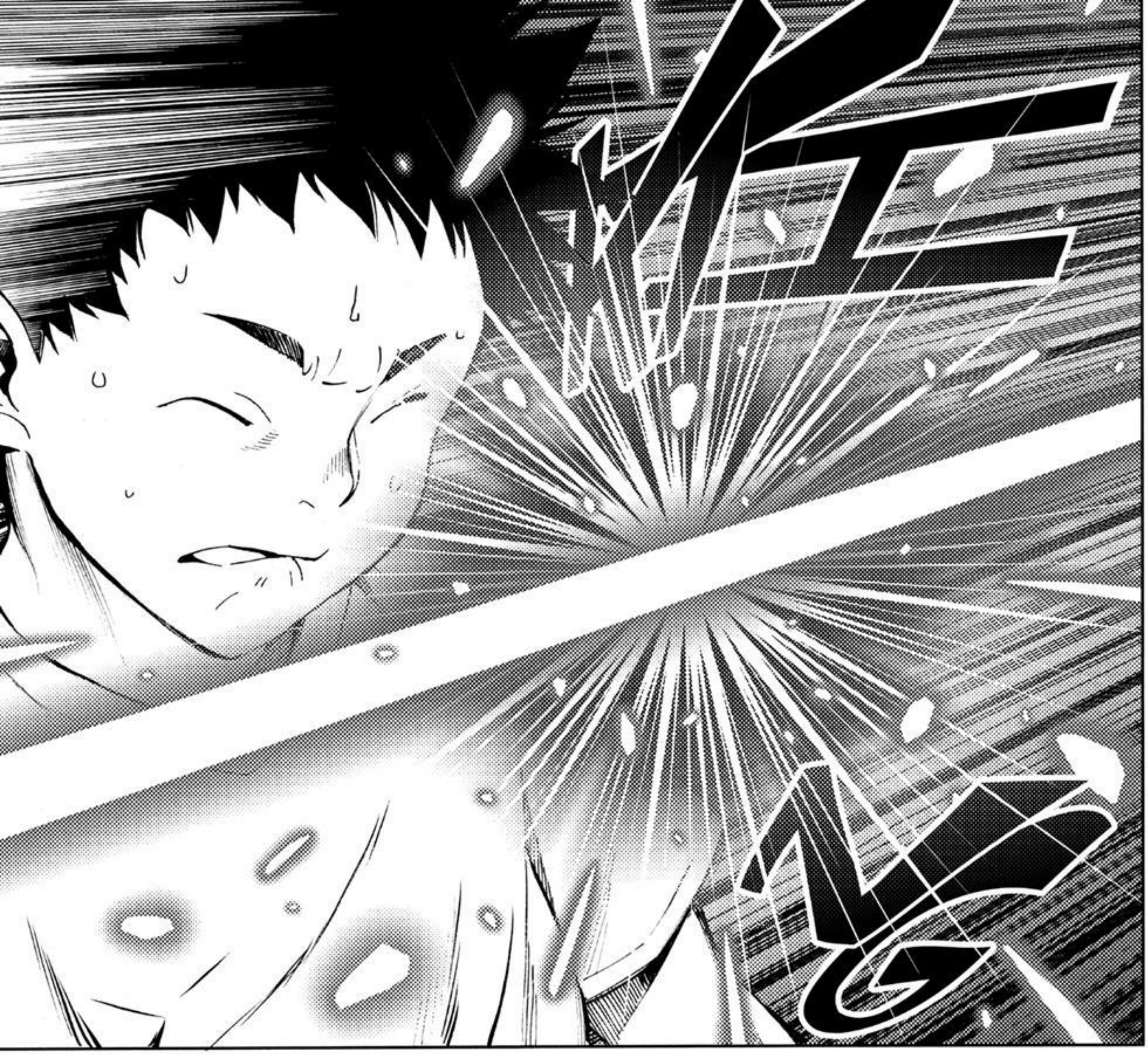
IF YOU DON'T *TRULY* WANT DEATH, YOU MIGHT FAIL THE ATTEMPT AND SUFFER EVEN WORSE.

GOOD-BYE, BIG BROTHER.

ALL RIGHT, THEN.






ドゴ

！

WHO'S THERE?

SHWIP

SHMM

A GOD CANDIDATE?

THE ANGEL OF DARKNESS ...

HUH? IT'S OGARO ...

SHE'S NOT SPECIAL RANK?

THE ONLY ANGEL WHO SHOWS NO INTEREST IN BEING SPECIAL RANK, AND KNOWS OF THE SECRET SIDE OF THE CELESTIAL REALM.

HUH?

WHAT ABOUT YOUR ANGEL, MINAMIKAWA?!

...

ER... WELL...

YOU SAID YOURS WAS SECOND RANK.

MUNI, THE SPECIAL-RANK ANGEL.

THAT DOESN'T MAKE SENSE. THE ONLY ONE LEFT IS...

!

WHERE'S YOUR ANGEL?

I'M NOT A GOD CANDI-DATE!

I'M SO SORRY ...

...

I...

I ONLY SAID THAT BECAUSE I WAS AFRAID YOU WERE GOING TO KILL ME...

...

OH, GEEZ!

...

JUST WHEN I THOUGHT WE'D FINALLY FIGURED OUT THE LAST OF THE CANDIDATES...

I KNOW WHO METROPOLIMAN WAS! MAYBE THERE'S SOME WAY I CAN HELP YOU...

B-B-BUT...

AAAAH! I'M SORRY, I'M SORRY!

JUST DON'T KILL ME THE WAY YOU KILLED METRO-POLIMAN!

UH, I MEAN... I P-PROMISE, I'LL HELP...

...

...THAT SUSUMU YUITO HIT METRO-POLIMAN WITH HIS RED ARROW THING...

I ALSO WITNESSED THE MOMENT ...

METROPOLIMAN...

I WAS FINALLY JUST ABOUT TO DIE AND EVERYTHING!

WHY WOULD YOU JUST BARGE INTO OUR HOUSE LIKE THIS...?

WHAT'S WITH YOU PEOPLE?

BUT YOU'RE NOT HIDING YOUR FACES TODAY.

YOU'RE RED AND YELLOW, AREN'T YOU?

WAIT A MINUTE, BIG BROTHER.

...

PERFECT TIMING.

YOU CAN KILL ME WHEN-EVER YOU WANT.

OR RED, IF YOU PREFER.

USE WHITE ARROWS. FOR ME AND MY BROTHER...

THESE RED ARROWS ARE ENTERTAINING, AREN'T THEY?

IN A WAY, THEY'RE ARROWS THAT MAKE THEIR DESIRES COME TRUE...

USE THEM ON A PERSON WHO WANTS TO DIE, AND THEY'LL COMMIT SUICIDE RIGHT ON YOUR COMMAND.

ARROWS OF HOPE.

IT ALL DEPENDS HOW MUCH THAT PERSON REALLY WISHES FOR DEATH...

THE PROBLEM IS, THEY DON'T WORK EQUALLY ON EVERY PERSON WHO CLAIMS THEY WANT TO DIE.

SO I TESTED THE RED ARROW ON HIM, AND SAID...

HE HAD TO USE A RESPIRATOR. EVERY SINGLE DAY, HE TALKED ABOUT HOW MUCH PAIN HE WAS IN...

TAKE OUR GRANDPA, FOR INSTANCE...

HE REMOVED THE RESPIRATOR ON HIS OWN, AND DIED PEACEFULLY.

YOU CAN DIE NOW.

DEATH WITH DIGNITY... EUTHANASIA... IT WAS A GOOD THING THAT I DID FOR HIM.

DAD COULDN'T GO TO WORK. HE JUST STAYED AT HOME, STARING AT HIS MUG OF TEA ON THE TABLE, EVERY SINGLE DAY.

BUT WHEN MOM, WHO WORKED AT THE SAME CITY OFFICE, HAD AN AFFAIR WITH A YOUNGER MAN WORKING PART-TIME THERE, SHE LEFT US AND GOT A DIVORCE.

DAD NEVER SAID ONE WORD ABOUT WANTING TO DIE.

WHY DON'T YOU DIE?

I GOT TIRED OF IT. I HIT HIM WITH A RED ARROW, AND SAID...

HIS WISH HAD BEEN GRANTED.

THE NEXT DAY, HIS BODY WAS FOUND IN THE RIVER.

I'LL DO IT NICE AND QUIET, WITHOUT CAUSING ANY TROUBLE FOR ANYONE.

HEY, GOOD IDEA.

HOW CAN YOU TELL? DID YOU TRY THAT ONE TOO?

AND YOU ALSO USED A RED ARROW ON YOUR MOM?

...

...IF I USE IT ON PEOPLE WHO CAUSED ME TERRIBLE GRIEF, AND TELL THEM TO DIE, THEY ALSO COMMIT SUICIDE.
THE OTHER ENTERTAINING THING ABOUT THIS ARROW IS...

MY MOTHER DIED WHILE APOLOGIZING FOR ABANDONING HER FAMILY.

NOW HE'S LIVING WITH SOME OTHER LADY.

...BUT HE ONLY APOLOGIZED. HE DIDN'T DIE.

HER LOVER SAID "I WANTED TO DIE WITH HER," SO I STABBED HIM TOO...

BUT I DON'T HAVE ANYTHING AGAINST THAT MAN. I DON'T CARE WHAT HAPPENS TO HIM EITHER.

THEIR SHALLOW, SELFISH NATURE COMES OUT IN THAT MOMENT.

THE MORE SOMEONE GOES ON AND ON ABOUT WANTING TO DIE, THE MORE LIKELY THEY CRY WHEN YOU USE THE ARROW, AND SAY, "I WAS LYING, I JUST WANTED SOMEONE TO PAY ATTENTION TO ME."

I DECIDED TO HELP GIVE THEM AN EXTRA BOOST.

THANKS TO THAT, I LEARNED HOW TO TELL THE PEOPLE WHO REALLY WANT TO DIE FROM THE REST.

THAT'S THE WRONG WAY TO USE IT.

THERE ARE MANY, MANY PEOPLE WHO WANT TO DIE, BUT DON'T HAVE THE COURAGE TO GO THROUGH WITH IT. THEY LIVE LIVES OF TERRIBLE SUFFERING AND MISERY.

IS IT? THE NUMBER ONE CAUSE OF DEATH FOR JAPANESE BETWEEN 15 AND 39 YEARS OLD IS SUICIDE. THOSE WERE THE ONES BRAVE ENOUGH TO DIE.

BUT I QUICKLY REALIZED I WAS WRONG ABOUT THAT.

I ACTUALLY TOOK MY WINGS AND ARROWS AS SYMBOLS OF HOPE AT FIRST.

IF I'D GIVEN MY WINGS AND ARROWS TO MY MOTHER, SHE WOULD HAVE FLOWN TO SOME YOUNGER, MORE ATTRACTIVE MAN, USED THE RED ARROW ON HIM, AND THEN KEPT REPEATING THE PROCESS.

I REALIZED THAT THE ONLY THING PROPPING UP ONE'S HOPES IN LIFE...

...IS SIMPLY THE UGLY DESIRES AND GREED OF THE LIVING.

YES.

ISN'T THAT RIGHT, OGARO?

MY ANGEL DIDN'T SAY I WAS WRONG.

...

WINGS AND ARROWS FULFILLING HUMAN DESIRE? SOUNDS LIKE THE ANGEL OF DARKNESS, ALL RIGHT.

SURE DOES.

IT'S A CRIME TO HELP PEOPLE COMMIT SUICIDE.

HUH?

SO RATHER THAN USING THEM TO FULFILL MY OWN DESIRES, I'M USING THEM TO HELP THOSE WHO WISH TO DIE.

WHAT, YOU DIDN'T KNOW THAT?

IT IS?

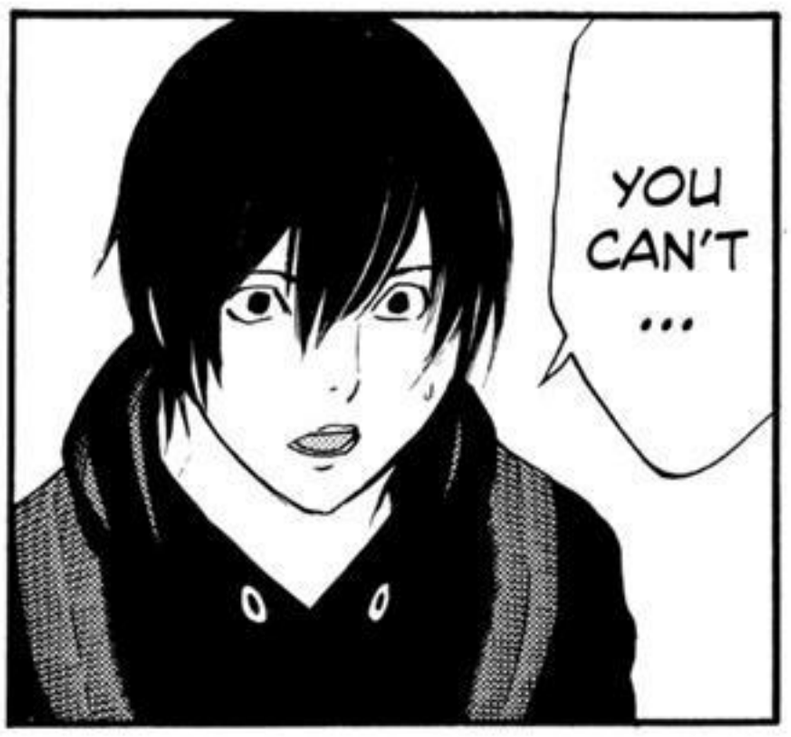
OKAY... I'M DONE, THEN.

I THINK I'VE HELPED ENOUGH PEOPLE ALREADY.

* BAG SAYS TOMATO CHIPS

...

BUT I'M GOING TO HELP MY BROTHER COMMIT SUICIDE FIRST, THEN I'LL DO IT MYSELF, AND THAT'LL BE IT.



HERE GOES, BIG BROTHER.

NO! STOP THIS!

...

EXPLAIN WHY WE CAN'T COMMIT SUICIDE THEN.

OKAY...

PEOPLE LIKE YOU, WHO IRRESPONSIBLY TRY TO STOP SUICIDES, ARE THE ONES I HATE MOST OF ALL.

LOTS OF PEOPLE TRY TO STOP SUICIDE FROM HAPPENING, BUT I'VE NEVER HEARD A COMPELLING REASON WHY IT'S BETTER NOT TO GO THROUGH WITH IT.

IT'S *YOUR* OWN LIFE, RIGHT?

...THEN IT'S UP TO PERSONAL DISCRE-TION.

BUT IF THERE'S NO LAW AGAINST ACTUALLY COMMITTING IT YOURSELF...

I UNDER-STAND THAT IT'S AGAINST THE LAW TO ASSIST SOMEONE IN COMMITTING SUICIDE.

SUICIDE IS THE MOST HUMAN WAY TO DIE. ONLY HUMANS ARE CAPABLE OF IT.

IT'S THE MOST ***MISERABLE*** WAY TO DIE, THAT ONLY HUMANS ARE CAPABLE OF.

SURE, THAT MIGHT BE TRUE.

MY YARD-STICK ...?

ONLY ACCORDING TO YOUR YARDSTICK.

MISER-ABLE?

I DON'T WANT PEOPLE TO DIE IN MISERY. I WANT THEM TO LIVE, AND LEAD A HAPPY LIFE.

THAT'S WHY I STOP THEM.

BESIDES, WHAT YOU CALL MISERABLE, I CALL PROUD.

THAT'S YOUR PERSONAL HOPE...

YOU HAVEN'T EXPLAINED AT ALL WHY I SHOULDN'T COMMIT SUICIDE. GIVE ME A GOOD, SOUND, LOGICAL REASON.

TWING

WAIT...

...

IT'S NOT ABOUT ANY OF THOSE!

WAIT, WAIT, WAIT... ENOUGH ABOUT LAWS AND YARD-STICKS AND LOGIC!

THAT SHOULD BE A PERFECTLY GOOD REASON NOT TO DO IT.

IF YOU DIE, THERE ARE PEOPLE WHO WILL GRIEVE FOR YOU.

...

THAT'S THE MOST TIRESOME REASON OF THEM ALL. THAT YOU'LL BE "DISRESPECTING YOUR PARENTS."

YOU HAVE FRIENDS, DON'T YOU?

NO ONE'S GOING TO MOURN ME.

LOOK AT MY OLDER BROTHER. MY PARENTS ARE GONE.

...

I'M NOT ON GOOD TERMS WITH A SINGLE KID AT SCHOOL.

I DON'T.

...BUT I GUARANTEE THAT THERE'S SOMEONE WHO THINKS FONDLY OF YOU, AND WHO CARES ABOUT YOU.

YOU MIGHT THINK THAT YOU DON'T HAVE ANY FRIENDS ...

I HAD A FEELING YOU'D SAY THAT.

THAT WAS KANADE URYU.

...

THAT WAS THE GUY WHO WAS METRO-POLIMAN.

...BUT I KNOW THE TRUTH. I KNOW HE'S NO LONGER ALIVE.

THEY'RE SAYING KANADE WENT TO STUDY IN ENGLAND FOR SECOND SEMESTER...

...BUT HE LOOKED DOWN ON EVERYONE, AND HAD NO GIRLFRIENDS OR GUY FRIENDS.

HE WAS VERY POPULAR WITH THE GIRLS...

EVEN I THOUGHT HE WAS KIND OF A CREEP.

I DON'T BELIEVE KANADE ACTUALLY THOUGHT OF ME AS A FRIEND.

BUT WHEN I SAID THAT I WANTED TO CHECK OUT A GIRL IN A LOWER YEAR, HE ACTUALLY JOINED ME, MANY TIMES, WITHOUT COMPLAINING.

BUT ONCE KANADE WAS DEAD...

I THOUGHT THAT IF METROPOLIMAN DIED, SOME PEOPLE MIGHT CELEBRATE, BUT NO ONE WAS GOING TO MOURN HIM.

I CRIED MY EYES OUT.

...I WAS SUPER-DUPER TORN UP ABOUT IT.

EVEN NOW, I DON'T THINK OF HIM AS A FRIEND...

BUT HE WAS NICE TO ME. HE TALKED TO ME.

EVEN THOUGH, THINKING BACK ON IT NOW, HE HAD TO REALIZE I KNEW WHAT HE WAS...

MAYBE KANADE BELIEVED THAT I WOULD NEVER BETRAY HIM.

IT WAS THANKS TO KANADE THAT I'M GOING OUT WITH SAYURI.

IF YOU FALL IN LOVE, YOU WON'T WANT TO DIE ANYMORE!!

HEY, YEAH!

WHAT I'M TRYING TO SAY IS...

NO, SORRY. I DIDN'T MEAN THAT.

IF I'M BEING HONEST...

PLUS...

ESPECIALLY IF IT'S A SUICIDE.

FOR EVERY HUMAN BEING, THERE'S ALWAYS SOMEONE ELSE WHO WILL MOURN THEIR DEATH.

IT'S A HUGE PAIN IN THE ASS.

A PAIN ...

IN THE ASS. YEAH, I SAID IT.

!

THAT'S NOT WHAT I MEAN.

ISN'T IT THE POLICE AND MEDICS' JOB TO CLEAN UP DEAD BODIES?

...

WHEN A STUDENT IN YOUR CLASS COMMITS SUICIDE AND ISN'T AROUND ANYMORE, IT'S IMPOSSIBLE NOT TO BE AFFECTED BY IT.

THAT'S A PAIN IN THE ASS. IT'S A LOT TO DEAL WITH.

...

SOME PEOPLE BLAME THEMSELVES FOR NO GOOD REASON, FOR NOT BEING ABLE TO STOP IT.

YOU DON'T FEEL AT EASE. IT'S UNSETTLING.

EVEN IF YOU'RE NOT SAD, THINGS ARE GLOOMY. YOU THINK ABOUT STUFF.

MAYBE SOME OF THEM EVEN FEEL GUILTY, WONDERING IF THEY WERE SOME PART OF THE CAUSE.

SO EVEN THOSE WHO HAVE NOTHING TO DO WITH IT FEEL THE MENTAL SCARS OF THE ACT.

YOU'RE PRETTY GOOD AT THIS.

...

WOW...

I ACTUALLY STARTED TO SEE YOUR SIDE OF IT, FOR A MOMENT...

ALTHOUGH I THINK THOSE WHO COMMIT SUICIDE ARE UNDER SO MUCH NEGATIVE PRESSURE THAT THEY DON'T HAVE THE ROOM TO THINK ABOUT THOSE WHO GRIEVE OR THE TROUBLE IT CAUSES...

HUH? REALLY?

IT'S NOT GOOD TO CAUSE TROUBLE FOR OTHER PEOPLE.

THAT MUCH, I AGREE ON.

I DEFINITELY DON'T WANT TO BE A BURDEN ...

FWUP...

WHA...?

RUSTLE

Gundeg

ガンダ

BIG BROTHER, YOU'VE GOT TO FIND A WAY TO DIE ON YOUR OWN, WITH AS LITTLE TROUBLE FOR OTHERS AS POSSIBLE.

ALL RIGHT. I WON'T HELP MY BROTHER COMMIT SUICIDE.

RIP

IT MIGHT TAKE ME A LITTLE TIME, BUT ONCE I FIGURE OUT HOW NOT TO BE A BURDEN ON ANYONE ELSE, THEN I'LL KILL MYSELF.

CHOMP

THAT'S WHAT I'VE DECIDED. YOU CAN LEAVE NOW.

CHOMP

CHOMP

WE OUGHT TO ALLOW EUTHA-NASIA.

CHOMP

I REALLY THINK WE OUGHT TO CREATE A SYSTEM FOR DYING WITH DIGNITY THAT EVERYONE CAN ACCEPT.

...

IT DOESN'T MATTER WHO THE NEXT GOD IS.

IN ORDER TO DECIDE THE NEXT GOD, AGREEMENT AMONG OTHER CANDIDATES MUST BE UNANIMOUS.

CHOMP

CHOMP

WE'D LIKE FOR YOU TO STAY WITH US...

YEAH. OR YOU CAN KILL YOURSELF, THEN IT WON'T MATTER ANYMORE.

YOU MIGHT NOT CARE, BUT IF WE DO NOT KNOW WHERE TO FIND YOU, WE CAN'T GAIN THAT CONSEN-SUS.

NO.

I'M SURE I'LL BE DEAD BY THEN.

IT'S NOT GOING TO BE DECIDED THAT QUICKLY, IS IT?

THE GOD CANDIDATES ARE ALL UNDER THE THREAT OF FOREIGN COUNTRIES, EVEN THE GOVERNMENT OF JAPAN.

WE'RE IN A RACE AGAINST TIME.

WE WANT TO FIND THE LAST ONE BEFORE NATIONS CAN USE OR KILL ANY GOD CANDIDATES FOR THEIR OWN BENEFIT...

...SO THAT WE CAN SETTLE THE MATTER THROUGH DIALOGUE.

THERE'S ONE MORE CANDIDATE WE DON'T KNOW ABOUT YET.

...

IN THE ASS, YES.

A PAIN ...

I DUNNO, SURE SOUNDS TO ME LIKE IF YOU DON'T STICK AROUND, YOU'RE BEING A BIG PAIN IN THE ASS TO THE OTHER GOD CANDIDATES.

IN THAT CASE...

SIGH

YEAH.

WOW.

...

ALL RIGHT.

BUT ONLY IF I'M JUST HANGING AROUND WITH YOU...

DEAL?

IF YOU DECIDE ON A NEW GOD WHILE I'M ALIVE, I'LL AGREE WITH YOU.

I'LL STAY WITH YOU, BUT I WON'T STOP MYSELF FROM TRYING TO DIE.

WELL, THAT'S GOOD.

...

HE'S STOPPED ATTEMPTING SUICIDE FOR NOW, AND MAYBE HE'LL RECONSIDER HIS CHOICES WHILE HE'S WITH US.

I CAN'T HELP IT, BIG BROTHER.

SHUJI...

I DON'T LIKE BEING A PAIN IN THE ASS...

WELCOME TO OUR HOME.

...BUT AT LEAST IT MEANS WE'RE DOWN TO ONE LEFT.

IT SOUNDS LIKE WE'VE STILL GOT SOME ISSUES TO SOLVE...

WE'VE GOT COOKIES. DO YOU LIKE COOKIES?

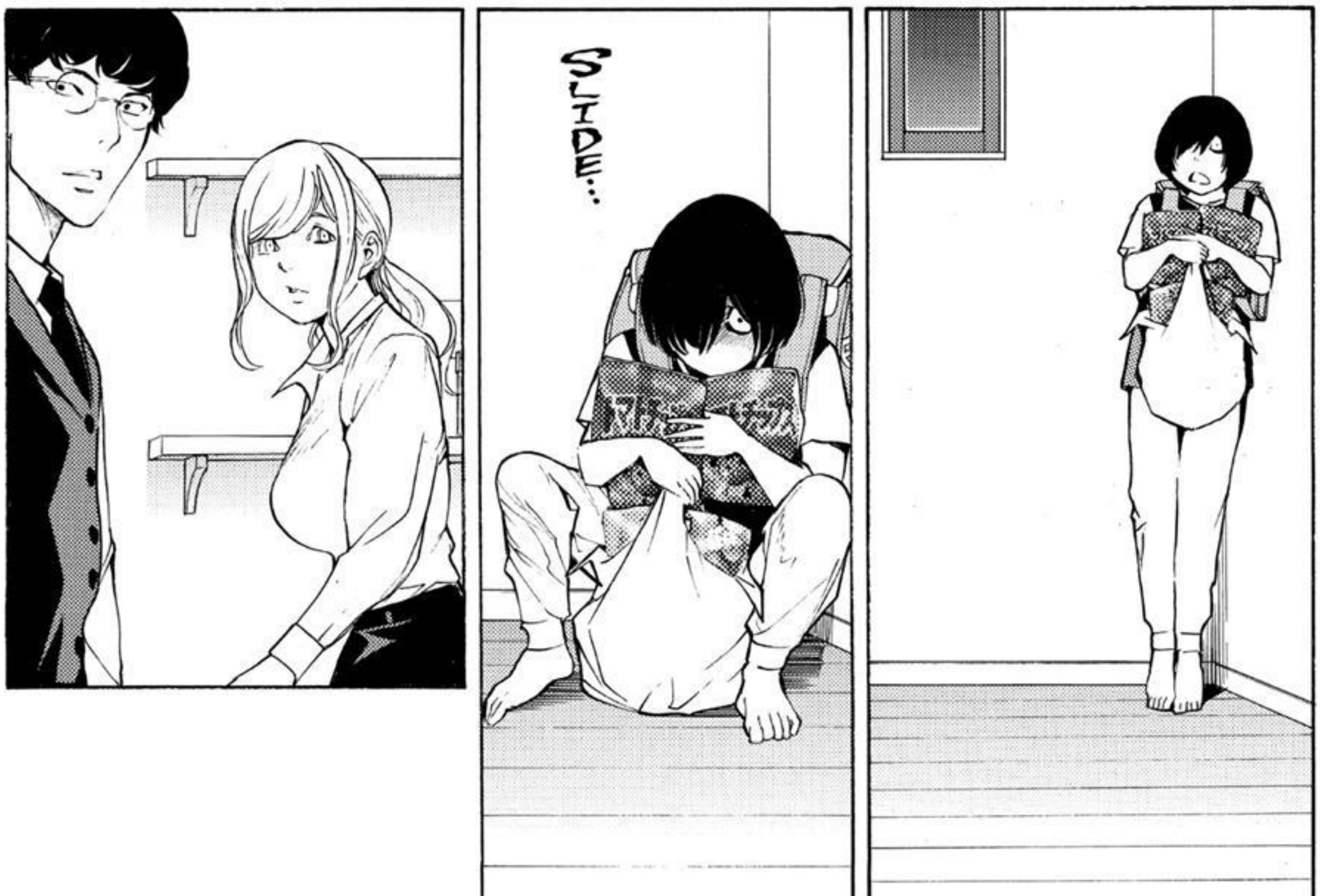
OR TEA?

WOULD YOU LIKE SOME JUICE?

PLEASE, SIT DOWN. MAKE YOURSELVES COMFORT-ABLE.

Gumdeo
マチガ

STOMP
STOMP


SLIDE...

RUB

MIRAI KAKEHASHI. SPECIAL-RANK ANGEL, NASSE.

#33 The Other Five

SHUJI NAKAUMI. FIRST-RANK ANGEL, OGARO.

SAKI HANAKAGO. FIRST-RANK ANGEL, REVEL.

#33 The Other Five

I TRUST THIS IS ACCURATE? I CAN'T SEE THE ANGELS.

YES.

EACH OF THEIR ANGELS IS CLEARLY VISIBLE TO ME.

...

YOU CAN'T SEE 'EM EITHER, HUH?

NOD

THEN THERE'S SUSUMU YUITO AND HIS FIRST-RANK ANGEL, PENEMA.

HE HASN'T BEEN SEEN SINCE HE CALLED UPON THE WORLD TO HELP CHOOSE OUR NEW GOD...

CLICK

Data 2

Yuito

Birthda

Gender

Birthpla

Height

Blood t

Occupa

Notes

Tokyo

reveale

televisi

Angel

First rank, Penema

BEE-
BEEP

BEEP

CHIKK

CHA

BOOM

SHWP

BANG!

IT'S NO FUN PRETENDING TO BE METRO-POLIMAN ANYMORE.

MAN, THIS IS BORING ...

CLANK

KRSH

PLIP

THREE LEFT TO GO.

AND WE'RE NOT FINDING THE OTHER CANDIDATES EITHER.

THIS KIND OF THING HAPPENS IN GAMES ALL THE TIME.

IT'S JUST THE CALM BEFORE THE STORM.

PEOPLE ARE STILL ARGUING ABOUT WHETHER TO EVEN BELIEVE THAT GOD AND THE CANDIDATES ARE REAL.

THERE'S YURI TEMARI AND HER SECOND-RANK ANGEL, YAZELI. THE POLICE HAVE CUSTODY OF HER.

Data 2

AND LASTLY...

CLICK

ngel d rank, Yazeli

I SWEAR, I'M DYING RIGHT NOW!

OH, MR. GUARD! I'M DYING! IF I DON'T AT LEAST GET MY PHONE TO CHECK MY MENTIONS, IT'S GONNA KILL ME!

UGH, THIS IS THE *WORST*!

I NEVER KNEW HOW STRESSFUL IT WOULD BE WITHOUT MY SMART-PHONE!

MAJOR FOMO...

THAT'S RIGHT.

THAT LEAVES JUST ONE UNIDENTIFIED GOD CANDIDATE.

AND THEIR ANGEL WOULD BE MUNI, IF I UNDER-STAND CORRECTLY.

Angel | First rank, Penema

Angel | Second rank, Yazeli

NO IMAGE

Angel | Special rank, Muni

UMM...

WHAT IS IT?

...

I'VE BEEN THINKING THAT I SHOULD TRANSFER SCHOOLS AND THEN COMMIT SUICIDE.

IT'S NOT GOING TO BE TOO MUCH OF A BURDEN AS LONG AS EVERYONE HERE KNOWS FOR SURE I'M DEAD, RIGHT?

WAIT... YOU MEAN...?

C'MON, YOU KNOW THAT'S OFF-LIMITS.

NO! YOU CAN'T DO THAT!

I DON'T REMEMBER AGREEING TO BE ANYONE'S PARTNER...

WHAT I MEAN IS, YOU'RE ALL GOD CANDIDATES, AND NOW THAT YOU KNOW EACH OTHER, IT'LL FEEL BAD KNOWING ANOTHER ONE OF YOU IS DEAD.

WE'RE FRIENDS NOW. WE'RE PARTNERS!

THEN WHAT IF YOU BECOME GOD, AND YOU MAKE IT SO THAT SUICIDE IS CONSIDERED A WON-DERFUL THING?

NASSE, THIS ISN'T HELPING.

THAT'S RIGHT. NOBODY'S GOING TO FEEL *GOOD* ABOUT THAT.

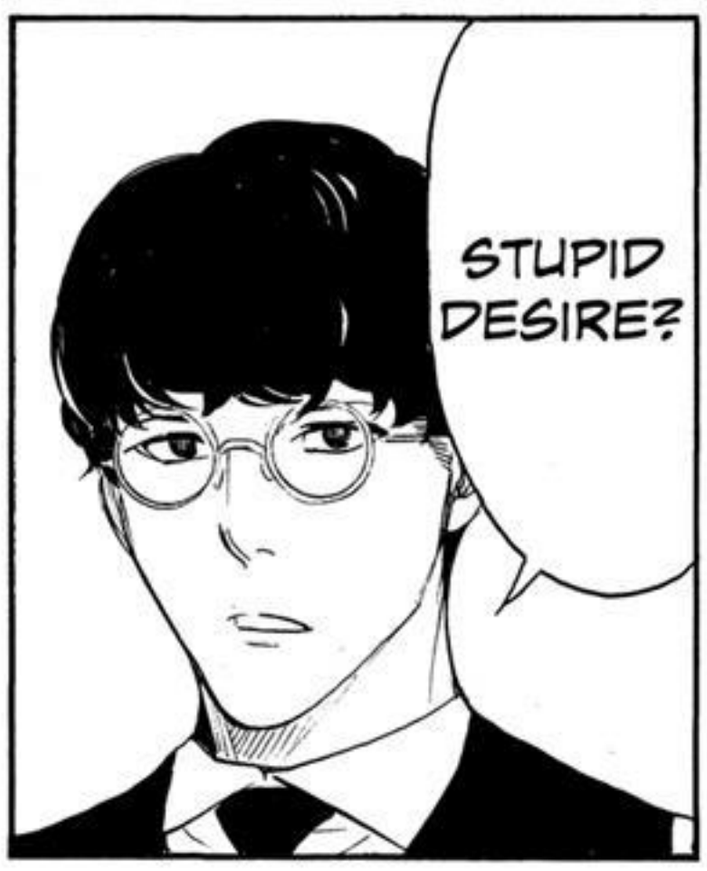
YOU'RE BEING TOO NEGATIVE ABOUT SUICIDE AGAIN... IT SHOULD HAVE A MORE POSITIVE IMAGE. IT CAN BE THE WISEST CHOICE FOR SOME PEOPLE...

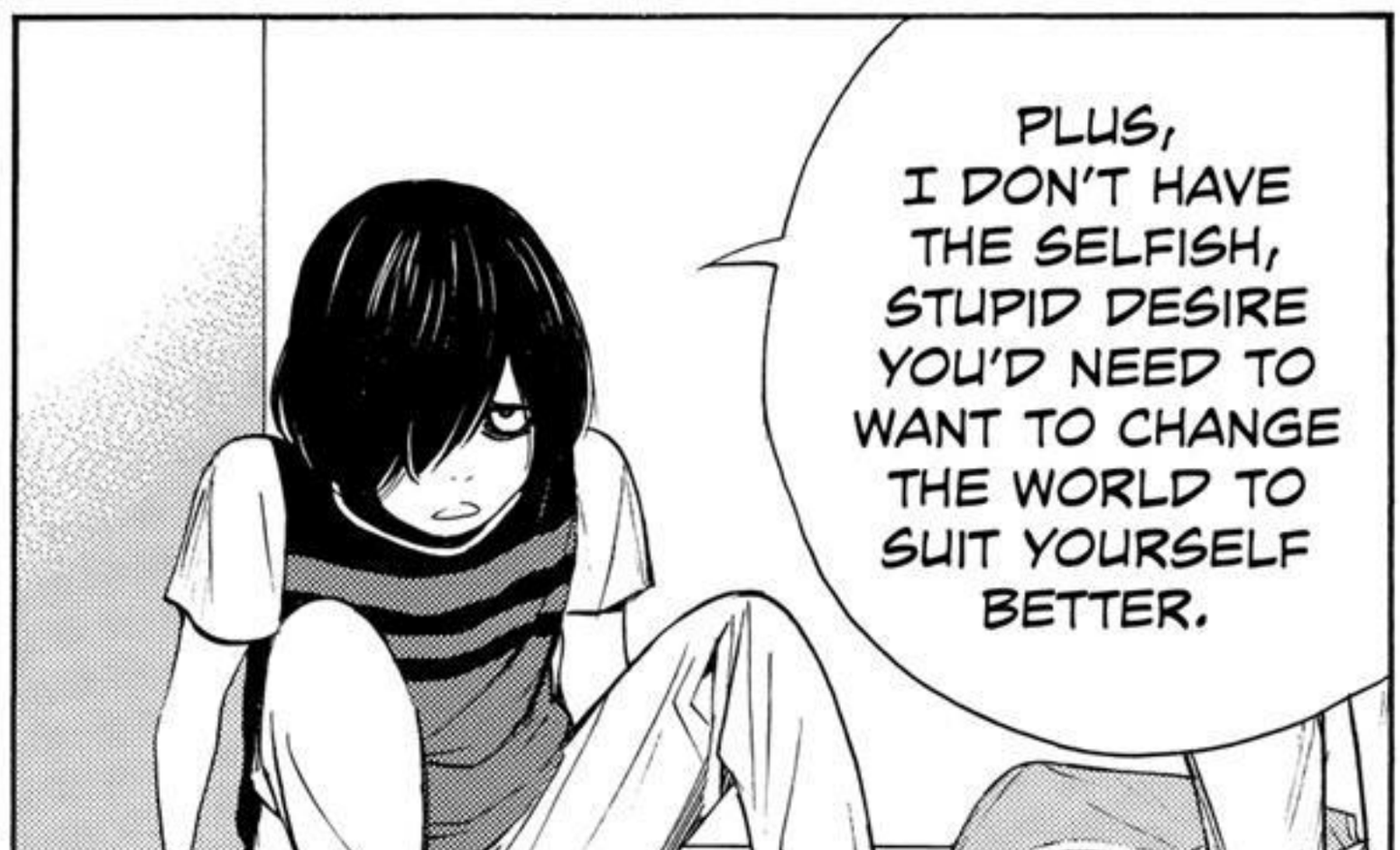
THERE YOU GO.

HUH ...?
THAT'S A GOOD SUGGES-TION.

SHE SAID HE SHOULD BECOME GOD AND MAKE SUICIDE A GOOD THING.
WHAT DID NASSE SAY?

IF I'M GOD, THEN I WON'T BE ABLE TO DIE ANYMORE.
I'M NOT GOING TO FALL FOR IT.


STUPID DESIRE?


PLUS, I DON'T HAVE THE SELFISH, STUPID DESIRE YOU'D NEED TO WANT TO CHANGE THE WORLD TO SUIT YOURSELF BETTER.

THERE ISN'T A SINGLE PERSON ALIVE WHO WAS BORN OF THEIR OWN WILL.

I WAS BORN OUT OF THAT CORRUPT DESIRE.

NO DIFFERENT FROM THE SELFISH, CORRUPTED GREED OF MY PARENTS.

UGLY, FOOLISH DESIRE...

IT'S THE DESIRE OF THE PARENTS TO HAVE CHILDREN...

PERHAPS EVEN JUST THE BY-PRODUCT OF LUST AND PLEASURE.

IT'S THE SAME WAY WE EAT OUR FAVORITE FOOD AND THEN POOP IT OUT.

IT'S VERY EASY FOR US TO THROW THINGS AWAY.

MY MOTHER SOUGHT THE BODIES OF YOUNGER MEN, AND ABANDONED HER FAMILY.

DON'T TALK LIKE THAT.

...

HA HA HA!

YOU CAN'T STOP ME.

HUMAN BEINGS ARE FILTHY AND LUSTFUL. THEY SAY THEY LOVE EACH OTHER, BUT ALL THEY DO IS HAVE SEX.

IT'S GROSS.

...

IN THE END, ALL WE ARE IS BUNDLES OF ID, CARRYING OUT OUR BASEST URGES...

WE WANT TO BE HAPPY.

WE WANT TO BE AROUND THOSE WE LOVE.

WE WANT TO EAT WHAT TASTES GOOD.

THESE ARE VERY POSITIVE DESIRES THAT WE NEED TO HAVE.

THEY BECOME OUR HOPE... OUR REASON TO LIVE.

YOU MIGHT SAY THAT WE LIVE BECAUSE WE HAVE DESIRES.

OF COURSE, I UNDER-STAND YOUR FEELINGS TOWARD YOUR MOTHER AS WELL.

I SUPPOSE THAT THE DESIRES THAT MAKE OTHERS UNCOM-FORTABLE OUGHT TO BE SUP-PRESSED.

...

BUT YOUR DESIRE NOT TO BE A BURDEN TO OTHERS IS A LAUDABLE ONE THAT MORE PEOPLE OUGHT TO SHARE.

IF YOU DID NOT HAVE THAT DESIRE, YOU WOULDN'T BE HERE. YOU HAVE WINGS, AFTER ALL.

YOU COULD USE RED ARROWS ON EVERYONE AND FORCE THEM TO ACKNOWLEDGE THAT SUICIDE IS GOOD.

BUT FOR NOW, AT LEAST UNTIL THIS GOD IS DETERMINED-- OR AS LONG AS THIS CHAOTIC SITUATION LASTS-- I WOULD LIKE YOUR HELP.

HUH?

HOW COME?

IT SOUNDS LIKE BS WHEN-EVER *YOU* SAY IT.

SHUJI...

HEY, MAYBE IN THE NEXT WORLD, YOU MIGHT HAVE A BETTER TIME!

LET'S STICK TOGETHER AND DO STUFF TO MAKE THE WORLD BETTER.

YEAH!

I DON'T THINK THERE'S ANY NEED FOR YOU TO RUSH INTO THIS IDEA.

NOT RIGHT AWAY, AT LEAST.

STOMP

STOMP

STOMP

SHU...

SHAA

HRNK

SHUK
SHUK
SHUK
SHUK
SPLASH
SHUK
SHUK
SHUK
SHUK
SPLASH
SHUK
SHUK
ALL RIGHT ...
KWIK
SHUK
SHUK
SHUK
FSSHH...

IT WORKED!
COOL.
WE CAN DO THIS TOGETHER.
THANK YOU.
RUB
RUB

NOW, AS FOR HOW TO SEARCH FOR THE LAST REMAINING PERSON...

ALL RIGHT.

I'D LIKE TO ASK YOU THREE CANDIDATES SOMETHING.

ASSUMING EACH OF YOU WERE ACTING ALONE, IF THE OTHER FIVE APPEARED AND SAID, "LET'S TALK THIS OUT," WOULD YOU GO ALONG WITH IT?

OKAY.

ME TOO...

IF I UNDERSTOOD THAT THE OTHER FIVE WERE SEEKING A PEACEFUL RESOLUTION TO THE GOD DECISION, YES...

THEN LET'S TRY THIS.

GOOD.

WELL... IF THEY WERE MAKING THAT BIG OF A DEAL ABOUT IT, I SUPPOSE I'D BE A BOTHER IF I WAS THE ONLY HOLDOUT.

FIRST, RED WILL HEAD OUT AND TELL SUSUMU YUITO THAT HE WANTS A DIRECT CONVERSATION.

ME...?

AND THE POLICE DID TRY TO ARREST HIM AT ONE POINT. HE MIGHT NOT AGREE TO COME FORTH.

BUT FOR ONE THING, WE KNOW HE HAS WHITE ARROWS.

HOW WELL CAN WE TRUST HIM...?

NO, SUSUMU WILL SHOW UP.

THEY TELL YOU THAT HE'S ENJOYING THIS SELECTION PROCESS.

THE SAME WAY THAT A CHILD GETS EXCITED ABOUT A GAME.

HIS EYES ARE THE OPPOSITE OF MINE. THEY'RE SO BRIGHT AND FULL OF LIFE...

WHY DO YOU THINK SO?

HE SAID THAT WATCHING ME AND METROPOLIMAN FIGHT WAS THE FIRST TIME HE FELT LIKE HE WAS TRULY ALIVE.

THAT REMINDS ME...

HIS DESIRE FOR GOD TO BE CHOSEN QUICKLY IS AN HONEST ONE.

THERE ARE ALWAYS 20 GUARDS FRONT AND BACK WITHIN A RADIUS OF 200 METERS. THAT'S TWICE THE NUMBER OF RED ARROWS WE HAVE AVAILABLE.

HOW MANY GUARDS DO THEY HAVE WATCHING HER?

IF YOU CAN MAKE CONTACT WITH SUSUMU YUITO, NEXT WE WILL CAPTURE TEMARI FROM THE GOVERN-MENT.

RIGHT.

SHE AGREES THAT RED SHOULD BE GOD, SO I BELIEVE SHE WILL ASSIST US.

TWENTY GUARDS...

IF WE COULD ACTUALLY GET HER TO COOPERATE ...

BUT EVEN IF WE GET THEM ON OUR SIDE, THAT'S STILL ONLY FIVE OUT OF SIX.

GOOD...

YOU ALL SAID THAT YOU WOULD SHOW UP IF THE OTHER FIVE CALLED FOR YOU.

WHICH IS WHY THE FIVE OF YOU WILL HAVE TO CALL FOR THE LAST ONE TO APPEAR.

...

INTERESTING. IF THE OTHER FIVE ARE TOGETHER, THAT SHOULD GET MUNI TO ACT...

COFFEE

TAP

NO CUR-RENT CLUES.

SUSUMU YUITO, MISSING SINCE THE LIVE APPEARANCE ON TV IN AUGUST...

I REALIZED THAT THIS MUST BE WHAT IT'S LIKE TO TRULY FEEL ALIVE FOR THE VERY FIRST TIME IN YOUR LIFE...

A REAL, ACTUAL BATTLE...

00:49:35

MayBook Pro

I HAD A HARD TIME BELIEVING ANY OF IT...

ALL THIS GOD AND CANDIDATE STUFF...

AND IT'S BECAUSE THE GOVERN-MENT TAKES IT SERIOUSLY ...

ABOUT HALF OF THE PUBLIC BELIEVES IN THE STORY.

自殺者数の年次推移

AND THE DARK RUMORS OF OTHER NATIONS MOBILIZING TO GO AFTER THE CANDIDATES...

BUT THIS INFORMATION ABOUT THE CANDIDATES SHOWING UP IN THE CAPITAL OF JAPAN, WHICH HAS SUCH A HIGH SUICIDE RATE...

18-20
16-18
14-16

HUH?!

GOD CANDI-DATES!!

OH! LOOK OUT THERE!

...

L-
LET
ME
SEE!

IS IT
SUSU-
MU?

GOD
CANDI-
DATE?

東京喰種
TOKYO GHOUL
8F
7F
獅獅亭
居酒家
5F

ANOTHER BATTLE?

WHY ARE THEY HERE?

WHY ELSE WOULD THEY BE UP THERE?

IT'S RED...

AND YELLOW!

ARE THEY GONNA HAVE ANOTHER DEATH MATCH?

OH CRAP!

WE HAVE APPEARED HERE...

...FOR THE SAKE OF A DIALOGUE.

YEAH. IT'LL WORK.

ONCE THE NEWS OF US GETS OUT ON SOCIAL MEDIA...

AS GOD CANDIDATES, WHAT WE OUGHT TO DO TO HELP EASE THIS UNREST AND CONFUSION IS TO LEAD A DISCUSSION.

WE DO NOT SEEK CONFLICT.

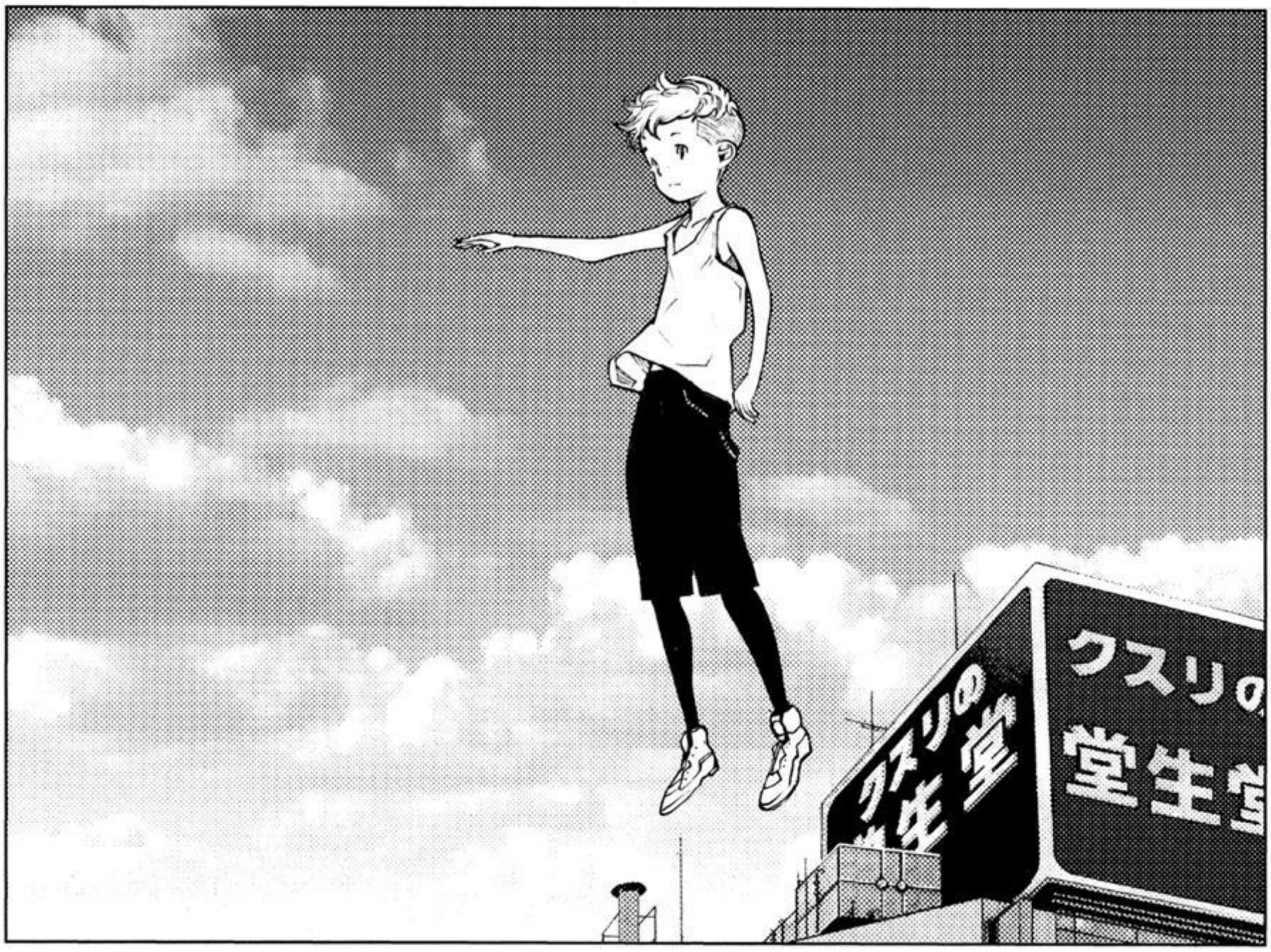
TO ENSURE THAT OUR DECISIONS DO NOT LEAD TO SADNESS AND SUFFERING.

TO ENSURE THAT *NO ONE* IS UNHAPPY.

クスリの 堂生堂

THERE'S ANOTHER ONE!

OH!


クスリの
堂生堂

T'S COFFEE

THAT WAS QUICK!

HEY, THAT'S THAT ONE KID.

IT'S SUSUMU!

BUT...

I REALLY LIKE WHAT YOU JUST SAID.

AT LAST, WE MEET.

I'VE BEEN WAITING FOR YOU, RED.

HOW DO I KNOW IT'S REALLY YOU...?

HE'S THE STRONGEST GOD CANDIDATE NOW.

BE CAREFUL.

DON'T MOVE, YELLOW.

HE'S GOT ARROWS AT THE READY.

!

REALLY?

YOU CAN EVEN COME CLOSER TO DO IT.

YOU WANT TO TEST ME AND MAKE SURE? SHOOT ME.

SHAK

ING

THIS IS SO COOL!!

WOW...

FROM THAT CLOSE... YOU *ARE* THE REAL THING!

SWISH

CAN I DO IT AGAIN?

I WANNA SEE THAT ONE MORE TIME! PLEA-AASE?

SHH

YEAH, YEAH, SURE!

WELL... IF YOU BELIEVE ME NOW, WE'D LIKE TO TALK SOMEWHERE PRIVATE.

...

THANK GOOD-NESS.

IT DIDN'T TURN INTO A HORRIBLE BATTLE ...

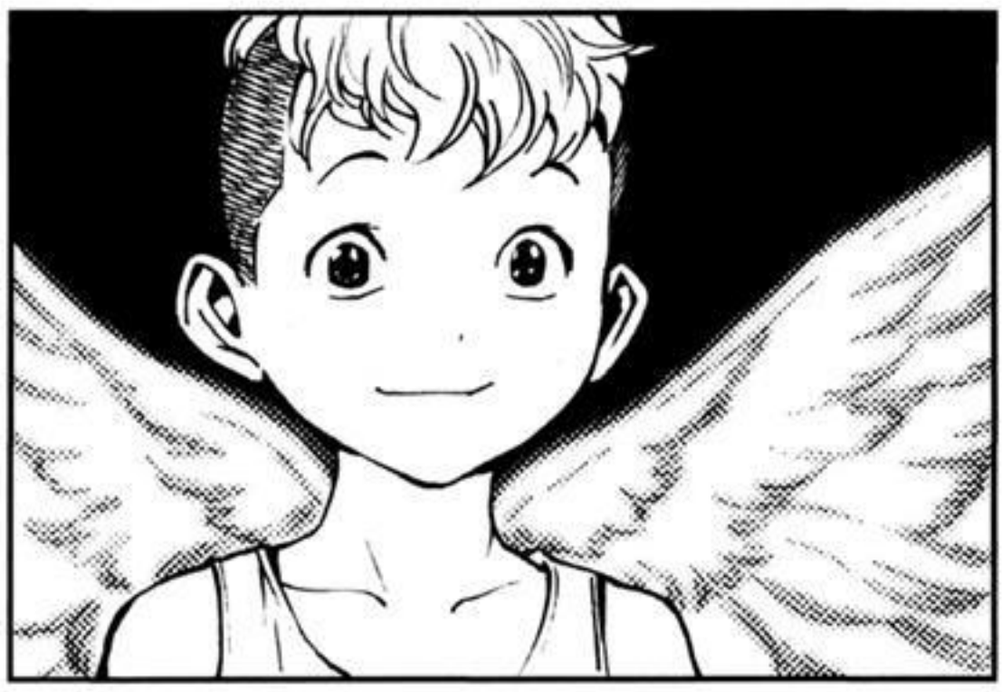
OH! THEY DISAP-PEARED AGAIN.

IS IT OVER AL-READY?

I CAN'T BELIEVE YOU SHOWED ME YOUR FACE. I FEEL SO HONORED!

OHHH, SO THAT'S WHAT YOU LOOK LIKE.

#34 False Appearance



!

THEN WE'LL HELP YOU.

SO THAT WE, OR THE PEOPLE OF THE WORLD, CAN DECIDE THE NEXT GOD THROUGH DIALOGUE.

I'M NOT SAYING WE SHOULD BE ACTING TOGETHER AT ALL TIMES.

WE COULD JUST CALL ON EACH OTHER FOR HELP WHENEVER NEEDED.

THIS IS GREAT. JUST GREAT!

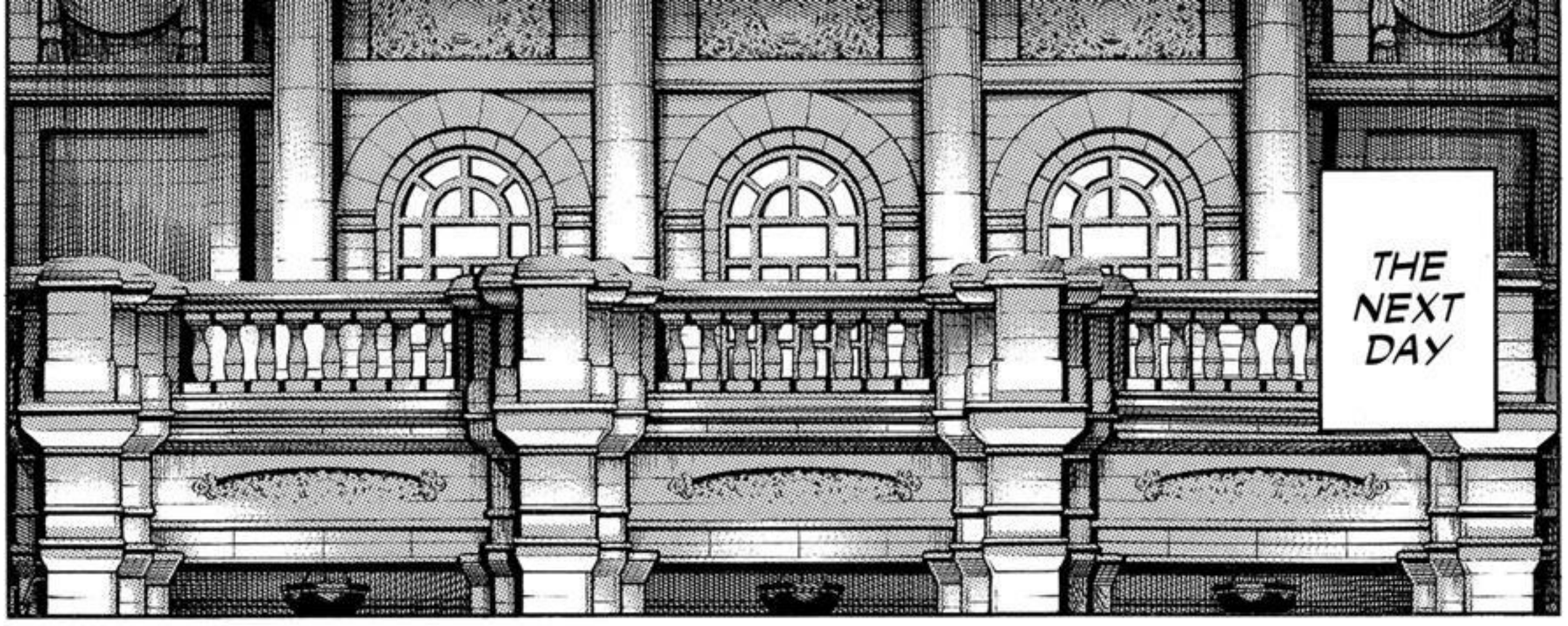
WOW, IT'S REALLY GOING LIKE I WAS HOPING IT WOULD GO.

!

TAKE THIS.

IT WILL CONNECT YOU JUST TO US.

WOW, THANKS!


THE NEXT DAY

BE DISCREET. DON'T LET THEM THINK YOU'RE TALKING TO US.

21:11:41

HMM?

BETWEEN YOU AND ME, ALL THIS GOD AND ANGELS BUSINESS? I JUST CAN'T KEEP UP WITH IT ANYMORE.

I SWEAR ...

PROBABLY TALKING TO HER ANGEL AGAIN OR SOMETHING.

AHH...

SHE JUST DID SOME-THING STRANGE ...

WHAT IS IT?

MEET UP WITH THE CANDIDATES FOR ALL OF THESE ANGELS...?

SUSUMU WILL BE THERE, RED WILL BE THERE...

THEN THE FIVE CANDIDATES WILL PUT OUT A CALL FOR THE REMAINING ONE, AND IF THEY RESPOND, WE'LL DECIDE ON GOD.

YEAH. I LIKE IT.

BUT HOW DO I GET OUT OF HERE...

...WHEN I COULD BARELY HANDLE EVEN THE SIMPLEST TASKS AT WORK...?

WELL, IF YOU CAN GET THAT FAR, WE CAN GET YOU WINGS.

HUH?

OH MY GOD, I WANT THEM!!

"I WANT THEM"...?

WHAT IS IT?

OH... SHE'S JUST TALKING TO HERSELF, LIKE USUAL, BUT...

TURN THE MIC ON.

YES, SIR.

HUH...? OH, JUST SWEETS FROM HEAVEN.

WHAT DO YOU WANT, TEMARI...?

21:37:09

...

SHE MUST BE TALKING TO YAZELI AGAIN...

SWEETS FROM HEAVEN...?

...

WE TELL HER THE ROUTE AND A RENDEZVOUS POINT.

IN ORDER TO FREE TEMARI, WE HAVE THE ANGELS MAKE CONTACT FIRST...

EVEN IF WE GET TEMARI ON BOARD WITH THE PLAN...

...THE PROBLEM IS THE SECURITY. WE'LL NEED TO USE RED ARROWS...

!

21:41:50

THUD

WHAT IS IT THIS TIME? WHAT HAP-PENED?

ANSWER ME.

TEMARI ...?

IS SHE REALLY...?

...

HOSHI SPEAKING.

YES, SIR.

SOME-THING'S UP WITH TEMARI.

TANAKA, YOSHINAGA, KIMURA, YOU ARE CLEARED TO ENTER THE ROOM. BE CAUTIOUS.

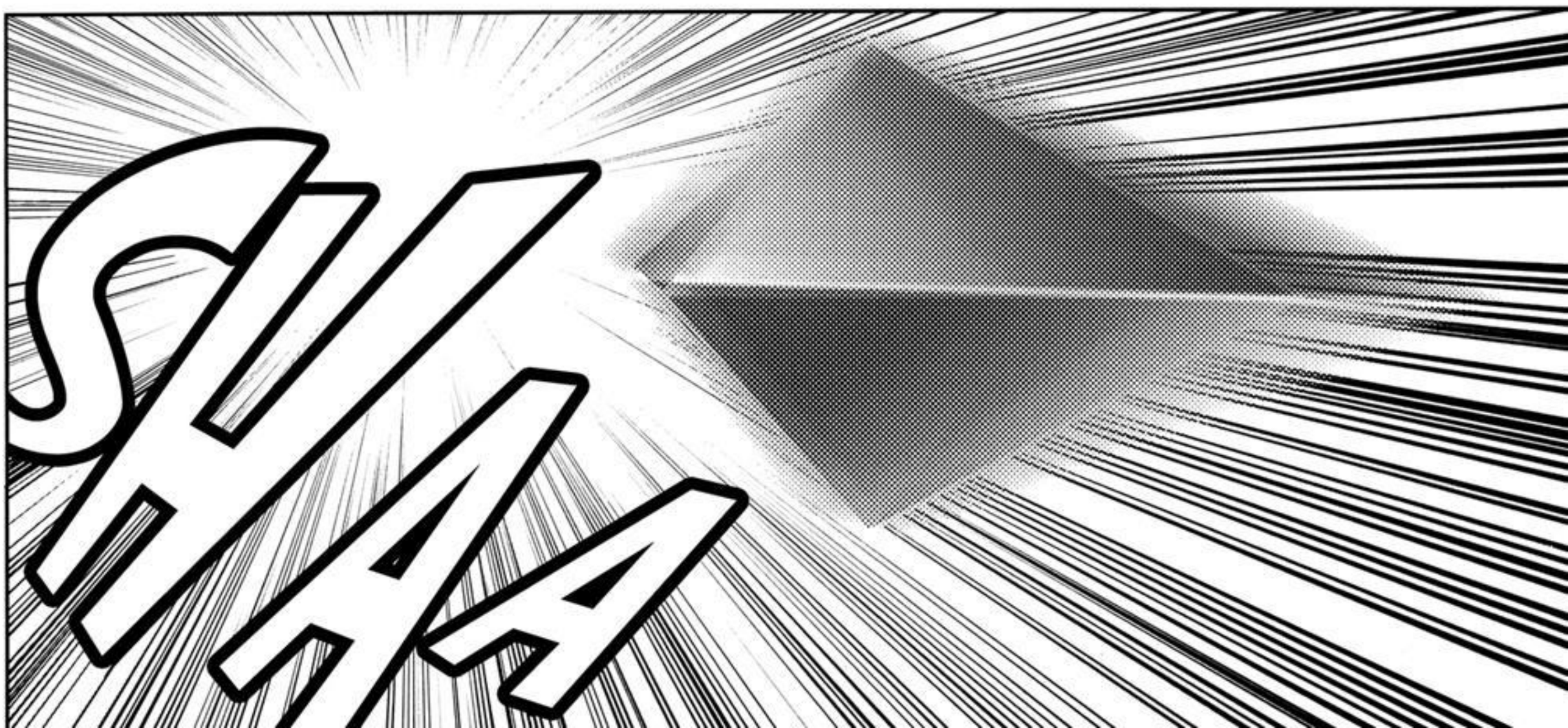
SHE *DOES* HAVE TWO RECORDED SUICIDE ATTEMPTS IN THE PAST...

CLIK

TALK TO US.

WHAT'S THE MATTER, TEMARI?

！

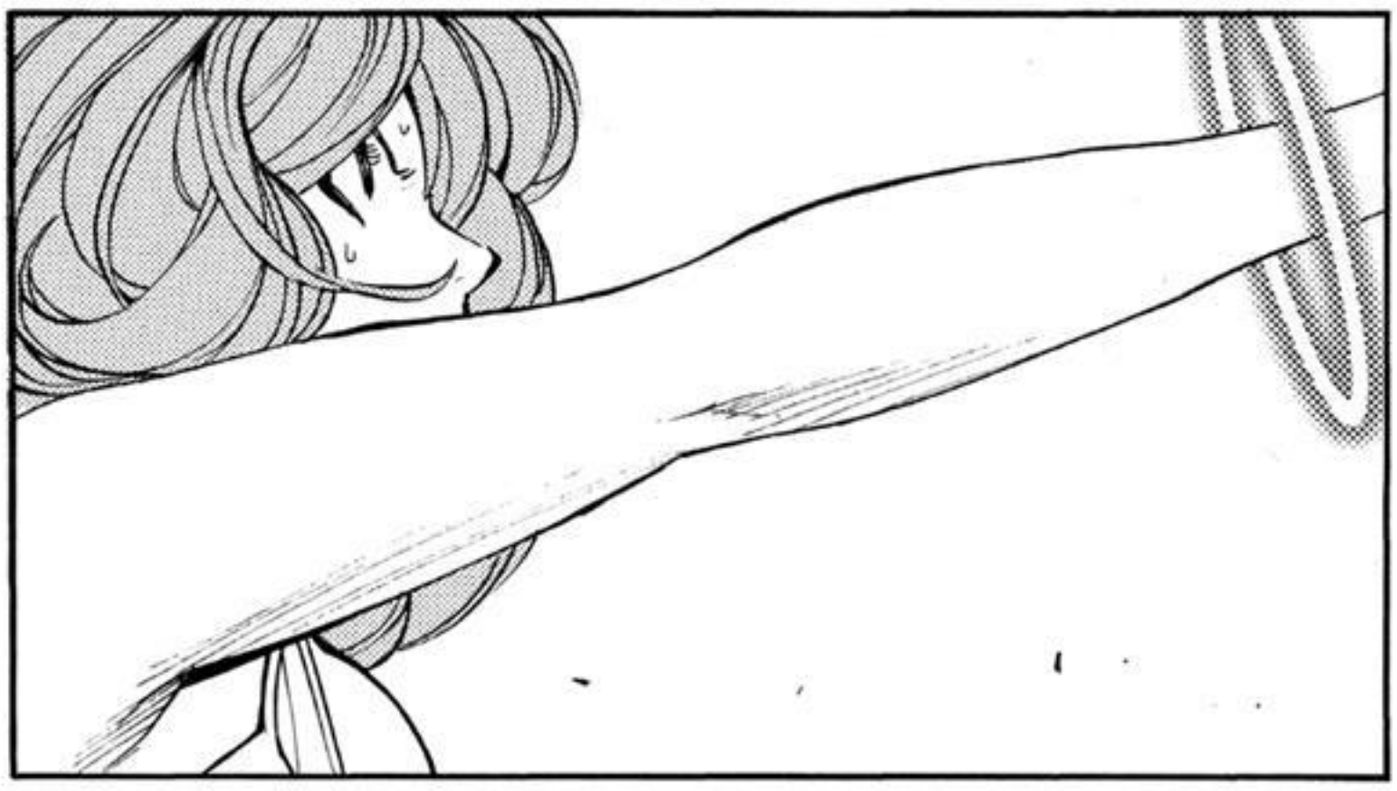

SHAA

SHIM

SLUMP

HAUGH...

SHIK



TWINGE

SWA
GK

SHWA

HEY.
HEY.
WOBBL

THAT WAS, LIKE, SERIOUSLY CLOSE...
VERY SMART. HE TRIED TO COVER MY EYES...

SH
WI
M

I'M SO BORED OF THIS STUPID PLACE.

HELP ME GET OUT OF HERE.

...MISS YURI. ♡

OF COURSE...

CHIEF...

IS SHE TRYING TO STAGE A BREAK-OUT?!

KIMU-RA!

TANAKA! YOSHI-NAGA!

WHAT HAPPENED? DID THEY GET HIT BY ARROWS?

BUT WHY *NOW*...?

IT'S ALL RIGHT. NONE OF THE DOORS CAN BE OPENED FROM THE INSIDE.

THE WINDOWS ARE REIN-FORCED GLASS.

ONLY THE TWO IN CHARGE CAN UNDO THE SECURITY SYSTEM AT THE FRONT DOOR. I WANT ALL OF YOU TO CROWD THAT DOOR NOW.

HUPHUP

TEK TEK

HUP

WUH-
OH...

HOW MANY GUARDS *ARE* THERE?

WE CAN'T GET OUT THIS WAY!

AWW!

THREE AT THE POINT YOU WERE TAKEN IN BY THE POLICE.

TWO TO MAKE THEM BELIEVE YOU WERE A GOD CANDIDATE.

AND THREE MORE YOU USED JUST NOW. THAT LEAVES SIX TO GO...

HOW MANY RED ARROWS CAN I USE?

THIS WAY, MISS YURI...

I DON'T HAVE ENOUGH FOR ALL OF THEM...

WELL, DAMN...

TEK TEK

DON'T MOVE!

HUP

TEK

TEK

...

THEY'VE GOT THEIR GUNS OUT. I DON'T THINK THEY'LL ACTUALLY SHOOT, BUT STAY PUT FOR NOW.

TEK

CLICK

TEMARI AND TANAKA ARE ENTERING THE 2-E GUEST BEDROOM.

BAM

BAM

WHAT'S HE DOING ...?!

ZZSH...

HE TOOK OUT THE ROOM CAMERA ...

BAM

BAM

SWITCH TO EXTERIOR CAMERA.

WHAT ARE THEY DOING?

BAM!

GUN-SHOTS?

22:14:35

BAM!

BAM!

BAM!

BAM!

BAM!

PLEASE, TANAKA...

BAM!

BAM!

HAM

OW ...

CRAK

PLNK

KSHAK

GH

TEK TEK

...

22:15:40

THEY DESTROYED THE ENTIRE FRAME OF THE WEST-FACING WINDOW!

ZSHH

WHAT ABOUT TANAKA, YOSHINAGA AND KIMURA?

GO AFTER HER. SHE'S HEADING INTO THE WOODS TO THE WEST.

HUP HUP

TEMARI IS THE TOP PRIORITY! JUST GET HER BACK!

THOSE THREE WILL BE BACK TO NORMAL AFTER 33 DAYS.

FOCUS ON TEMARI FOR NOW.

BEEP

CLICK

H THROUGH K, FROM THE NORTH!

TEAMS B THROUGH G, FROM THE SOUTH!

KIMURA! DON'T LET THEM GET MISS YURI!

I KNOW.

TURN ALL THESE MONITORS TO THE WESTERN WOODS CAMERA FEEDS.

ZSH

ZSH

HEE!

HEE!

SHH..

FLANK HER AND CUT HER OFF!

THERE SHE IS!

ZSH

ZSH

THUMP

OOF!

HEF!

HEF!

SHE'S DOWN!

NOW STAY STILL!

WE'VE GOT TEMARI !!

STOP!

SHE'LL STAB YOU WITH HER AR-ROWS!

HOLD DOWN HER RIGHT HAND! COVER HER EYES!

TA...

TANAKA!!

DAMN! THEY TRICKED US!

I... I BELIEVE TEMARI... MIGHT HAVE JUST ESCAPED THROUGH THE FRONT DOOR.

A DIS-GUISE?!

WELL DONE, TANAKA.

THEY COMPLETELY FOOLED US...

HUH.

HUH.

I GUESS THIS IS A PRETTY GOOD TIME TO HAVE A WIG AROUND.

HUH!

HUH!

RUSTLE

RUSTLE

LUCKY ME.

!

SU-
SUMU
...?

YEP.

!

KSHUF

AND YELLOW, SAKI HANAKAGO.

THIS IS RED, MIRAI KAKEHASHI.

RED?

...

SHING...

AS WE PROMISED, HERE ARE YOUR WINGS.

YOU'RE A LOT CUTER THAN I EXPECTED.

SHING

SWISH...

FWUH

THIS IS AMAZING!!

I FEEL LIKE I'M A REAL ANGEL NOW! ♡

LET'S GET GOING, BEFORE THEY CATCH UP.

HUH? YOU'RE NOT COMING WITH US?

WELL, I'LL TAKE MY LEAVE NOW.

BUT I CAN MEET UP WITH YOU WHEN-EVER YOU WANT.

...AND NOT EVERYONE COMPLETELY TRUSTS ME YET--LIKE RED, FOR EXAMPLE.

I'VE GOT WHITE ARROWS ...

WE'RE GETTING DOWN TO IT.

THAT MAKES FIVE...

#35 The Power of Numbers

TEP

TEP

TEP

UGH, THIS IS SO LAME...

DON'T THEY HAVE ANYTHING THAT DOESN'T MAKE ME LOOK LIKE SOMEONE'S MOM?

HELLO.

OH.

THE SITUATION IN THE WORLD AT LARGE IS DETERIORATING. WE NEED TO MAKE HASTE.

NOW WE HAVE FIVE.

I THINK IT BEHOOVES US TO CHOOSE WHICH OF THESE FIVE OUGHT TO BE GOD.

Susumu Yuit

TUNK

YEAH! GIVE US BACK OUR MONEY!

YOU CALL YOUR-SELF GOD? YOU CAN'T EVEN FLY!

THEY ARE EVIL! WICKED INVADERS OF THE EARTH!

IT IS THOSE SOCIETY CALLS THE "GOD CANDIDATES" WHO ARE THE REAL FRAUDS.

YOU'RE NOT EVEN USING RED ARROWS TO MAKE US LIKE YOU! YOUR OWN FOLLOWERS ARE TURNING THEIR BACKS ON YOU, YOU *FRAUD!*

A I E E E !!

SHUT UP! YOU SOUND LIKE A KID WATCHING TOO MANY TV SHOWS!

...AND NOW A GROUP OF FORMER FOLLOWERS IS SUING THE CHURCH FOR DAMAGES...

IT'S BEEN TEN DAYS SINCE THE MYSTERIOUS DEATH OF HIROAKI SATO-- BETTER KNOWN AS TARAEI HINOKAKU, THE REPRESENTATIVE OF THE FRINGE KINDEME CHURCH...

HAH! LIKE THAT LITTLE BOY COULD BE GOD...

HUH? WHY WOULDN'T I?

WHAT? YOU BELIEVE IN THAT, RURI?

IT'S HARD ONCE THE *REAL* GOD CANDIDATES HAVE SHOWN UP...

ANOTHER RELIGION GONE BUST?

I DUNNO, SUSUMU YUITO'S IDENTITY SEEMS TO BE PRETTY MUCH NAILED DOWN.

YOU DON'T THINK THE CANDIDATES ARE THE CHILDREN OF GOD?

FIRST OF ALL, THERE'S NO GOD. AND IF THERE WAS, HE WOULDN'T START AS HUMAN.

YEAH, WHO WANTS TO BE LIKE THOSE CRAZIES WHO ARE *ACTUALLY* FIGHTING OVER THIS?

C'MON, FORGET THIS STUPID TOPIC...

MESSIAH? HOW SO?

ARE YOU KIDDING ME?

LET'S ENTRUST OUR FUTURE TO THEM!

Make Red Our God!

Give Us a New God!

Long Live God!!

We Need

GOD

MAKE RED OUR GOD!

Protec Human Rights

God Candidates Will Save the World!

SUSUMU IS THE MESSIAH!

KILLING FOLKS WITH ARROWS AND SUCH. IT AIN'T WHOLE-SOME!

EVERY TIME THEY SHOW UP, PEOPLE DIE!

NEXT IN THE NEWS...

MY FAMILY SUFFERED FROM THE COLLAPSE OF GRAND TOWER!

THEY'RE A PACK OF CRAZED CRIMINALS!

THEY WRECK THE CITY! THEY CREATE SNUFF VIDEOS!

SCREW YOUR GOD!!

Protect the God Candidates!

Make Red Our God!

THE TOPIC OF THE GOD CANDIDATES IS SURE TO ARISE AT THE UPCOMING UNITED NATIONS GENERAL ASSEMBLY...

PRIME MINISTER YABE EXPRESSED A DESIRE FOR MEETINGS WITH CHINESE AND RUSSIAN LEADERS IN THE NEXT WEEK, FOLLOWING THE AMERICAN SUMMIT.

KTUNK

American Special Forces deployed
Reasons unknown
Any connection to god candidates denied

WHAT'S THIS?

WHAT?!

KTUNK

YOU HEAR THAT? MISSILES!

...PROMPTING CONCERNS THAT MISSILES MIGHT BE EMPLOYED...

STV SAKURA NEWS

American Special Forces deployed
Reasons unknown
Any connection to god candidates denied

STV Check us out on your TV!

YIKES!

SOUNDS LIKE FIGURING OUT WHO SHOULD BE GOD IS A TOUGH NUT TO CRACK.

REPORTS ABOUND ON SOCIAL MEDIA OF PEOPLE TRAPPED IN BATHROOM STALLS AND GYM STORAGE ROOMS, BECAUSE "GOD CANDIDATES SHOULD BE KEPT LOCKED UP"...

ISSUES OF "CANDIDATE BULLYING" ARE BECOMING AN ISSUE EVERYWHERE IN SCHOOLS AND WORKPLACES.

THERE'S ONLY ONE THING TO DO WITH CREEPS LIKE YOU, AND THAT'S LOCK 'EM UP!

HEY, WE JUST CAUGHT A GOD CANDIDATE!

HA HA HA!

Time, Slow, Video, Photo, Panorama

00:03:46

YES, EXACTLY. MIRAI'S VERY EXISTENCE IS PRACTICALLY GODLIKE AT THIS POINT.

SUSUMU YUITO ALREADY CAME OUT AND BOLDLY STATED SUPPORT FOR KAKEHASHI.

...

I BELIEVE YOU CONCURRED WITH THAT, YURI.

GOD-TIER...

GODLY TREAT-MENT.

HE'S GOD-DING IT UP.

HIS EXISTENCE IS GODLIKE ...

I'M SICK OF IT ALL.

...

I GUESS.

YOU'RE... A CANDIDATE TOO, RIGHT?

THE CARE-LESSNESS OF IT ALL MAKES ME WANT TO VANISH FOREVER.

EVERYTHING IN THE WORLD IS GOD THIS, GOD THAT.

SEVENTH.

...

EIGHTH GRADE?

IT JUST DOESN'T REALLY CLICK FOR ME.

BUT WHAT EVEN *IS* GOD?

WELL, I GET WHAT YOU WANT TO SAY. EVERYONE GOES ON ABOUT GOD...

I WANTED TO ASK ABOUT THAT.

OH YEAH, OGARO.

I WANNA KNOW MORE ABOUT GOD.

WE DON'T KNOW MUCH, OTHER THAN JUST "GOD."

YEAH, THAT'S TRUE...

I WONDER IF IT'S DIFFERENT FROM THE IMAGE MOST OF US HAVE...

AND ANYTHING TO DO WITH GOD BELONGS IN THE LATTER...

ACTUALLY, THERE ARE THINGS WE ARE AND AREN'T ALLOWED TO SAY TO CANDIDATES...

...

I CAN'T BE GOD WITHOUT KNOWING ANYTHING ABOUT IT.

THAT'S KIND OF MESSED UP.

WHAT'S UP WITH THAT?

THEN I SHALL TELL WHAT I AM ABLE.

JUST TELL ME ALREADY.

I DON'T CARE WHAT RANK MY ANGEL IS.

WAIT.

SAY TOO MUCH, AND YOU'LL BE DEMOTED TO SECOND RANK.

IF THE FIVE OF THEM ACT TOGETHER, WE DON'T WANT YOUR PARTNER LOSING OUT ON WINGS.

...

SINCE YOU ARE ALL SO CURIOUS ...

VERY WELL.

FIRST, THE GOD-CHOOSING PROCESS CAN BE ERASED.

ALSO, IT IS POSSIBLE TO LEAVE THE FORMER GOD CANDIDATES WITH THE WINGS AND ARROWS THEY WERE GIVEN.

...

YEAH, BABY!

YESSS, I CAN LIVE THE EASY LIFE!

REALLY?

WHOA!

AND GOD, OF COURSE ...

...CAN USE THE WHITE AND RED ARROWS WITHOUT ANY LIMITATION WHATSOEVER.

...

IN OTHER WORDS ...

...OR CHOOSE TO END IT ALTOGETHER.

GOD HAS THE POWER TO CONTROL HUMANITY AT WILL...

...
HUMANITY
...

END
...

WHAT IS IT, YUMIKI?

WHAT IS THE ANGEL SAYING?

OH NO...

NOTHING ABOUT THAT IS GOOD FOR HUMANITY.

...

...ARE MERELY SUB-CELESTIAL CREA-TURES.

HUMAN BEINGS...

WHAT ARE THEY TALKING ABOUT...?

WAIT, HANG ON.

IT'S ALL IN HOW YOU THINK OF IT.

EXACTLY. GOD CAN KILL THE PEOPLE HE DOESN'T LIKE WITH WHITE ARROWS AND CORRECT THE OTHERS WITH RED, AFTER ALL.

A GOD WHO WILL LEAD HUMANITY IN A BETTER DIRECTION.

THIS IS ***WHY*** WE CHOOSE A HUMAN WHO IS FIT TO BE GOD.

...

ONE OF THE SIX REMAINING *WILL* BECOME GOD.

AND GOD WILL LEAVE THE EARTH AND PRESIDE OVER HUMANITY FROM THE CELESTIAL REALM WITH THE ANGELS.

SO WE CAN'T STAY DOWN HERE ON EARTH?

WHAT HAPPENS TO OUR PHYSICAL FORM?

YOU WILL CREATE YOUR IDEAL WORLD FROM HEAVEN.

AND THE PEOPLE WILL WORSHIP YOU AS THEIR GOD.

NUH-UH! THIS IS NOT HAPPENING!

NO WAY...

AND IF I MIGHT BE SO BOLD...

WHAT'S THE POINT OF MAKING A PERFECT WORLD IF YOU CAN'T LIVE IN IT?!

I WANT TO ENJOY LIVING IN THE LAP OF LUXURY DOWN *HERE!*

WHAT DOES THIS MEAN, MIRAI?

I CANNOT THINK OF A WORLD WITHOUT HER.

I WILL NOT ALLOW SAKI TO BE MADE GOD.

I CHOSE TO CLING TO LIFE...

...SO THAT I COULD MAKE THIS WORLD A HAPPY PLACE.

I DON'T WANT A WORLD WHERE YOU BECOME GOD AND DISAPPEAR FOREVER, EITHER.

KAKE-HASHI...

...

ME TOO ...

YES.

I THINK SUSUMU FEELS THE SAME WAY.

Susumu Yuito

SHOULD I JUST BE GOD INSTEAD?

IN THAT CASE...

!

SHUJI ...

...

I CAN MAKE THE WORLD THAT WAY FOR YOU.

YOU'D WANT TO KEEP LIVING IF YOU KNEW YOU COULD BE HAPPY, RIGHT, BIG BROTHER?

I DON'T HAVE ANY LINGERING ATTACHMENT TO THE WORLD.

GONK

GONK

GONK

GONK

BUT THE PROBLEM IS THAT THE OTHER CANDIDATES AREN'T GOING TO AGREE TO MAKE ME GOD.

I WON'T BE ABLE TO HELP MYSELF FROM MAKING IT A WORLD WHERE THOSE WHO TRULY WANT TO DIE CAN DO IT. I'LL WANT TO HELP THEM MAKE IT HAPPEN.

...BUT I GET FEELING THAT WAY.

WHATEVER. I DON'T THINK YOU SHOULD DO IT UNLESS YOU HAVE A REALLY GOOD REASON...

SEVENTH.

OKAY, EIGHTH GRADER...

THAT'S ALL YOU CARE ABOUT?

SO IF YOU DO BECOME GOD, DON'T TAKE MY RED ARROWS AWAY.

YOU CAN'T LEAVE THE ARROWS OR HELP PEOPLE KILL THEM-SELVES.

YOU CAN'T.

GONK

NONE OF THAT MATTERS.

CHEAT-ING?

I DON'T GET WHAT YOU MEAN.

BECAUSE IT'S CHEATING TO USE THE WINGS AND ARROWS.

HUH? WHY NOT?

BY SAVING MY LIFE, SHE CONVINCED ME TO KEEP LIVING AND FIND MY OWN HAPPINESS.

WHEN NASSE GAVE ME WINGS AND ARROWS, I ALSO RECEIVED THE HOPE I NEEDED TO KEEP GOING ON.

...

IF THE GOD QUESTION IS SETTLED AND I DON'T TRY TO FIND THAT HAPPINESS ON MY OWN, THEN WHAT WAS THE POINT OF THOSE POWERS?

TO ME, THOSE TOOLS WERE THAT HOPE, THE THINGS THAT SAVED ME FROM MY BAD SITUATION.

AND I DON'T HAVE CONFI-DENCE...

I HAVEN'T RECOV-ERED...

YEAH. THERE ARE STILL PEOPLE WHO CAN'T SURVIVE WITHOUT THE POWER OF THE ARROWS.

THAT'S JUST BECAUSE YOU RECOVERED AND FOUND CONFIDENCE IN YOURSELF AGAIN.

GONK

HOW ABOUT THIS, THEN? I'LL TAKE THEM AWAY FROM THE CANDIDATES WHO SAY THEY DON'T NEED THEM ANYMORE...

IF I FEEL THAT ANYONE HAS MISUSED THEM, I WILL TAKE THEM AWAY AND USE RED ARROWS TO CORRECT THEIR BEHAVIOR.

...AND LEAVE THEM WITH THE ONES WHO SAY THEY NEED THEM.

...I'LL SIMPLY CHANGE THE WORLD SO THAT THOSE WHO KILL THEMSELVES ARE PRAISED FOR IT.

REGARDING SUICIDE...

...

HELPING THEM WOULD BE GIVING THEM A REASON TO LIVE, GIVING THEM JOY, GIVING THEM HOPE.

THAT'S NOT WHAT I MEAN. ALLOWING PEOPLE WHO WANT TO DIE TO DO IT ISN'T HELPING THEM.

IF YOU'RE GOING TO BE THAT PICKY ABOUT IT...

UGH ...

...

YEAH! THAT'S A BEAUTIFUL THING YOU JUST SAID.

!

...THEN MAYBE *YOU* SHOULD JUST BE GOD AFTER ALL.

Bolt Sank 4G
編集
Susumu Yuito
UMM...
Yuito
SHOULDN'T YOU BE MAKING UP YOUR MINDS SO WE CAN GET TO THE NEXT STAGE ALREADY?
AND YOU DON'T SEEM TO BE TALKING ON EACH OTHER'S LEVEL. JUST LIKE I EXPECTED ...
YES, SUSUMU?
HE'S RIGHT.
TIME IS OF THE ESSENCE.
...
WELL, I'VE BEEN LISTENING TO YOU TALK...

WE'VE GOT FIVE GOD CANDIDATES, INCLUDING ME.

AT THIS POINT, SHOULD WE JUST DO A MAJORITY VOTE?

WHOEVER GETS THE MOST VOTES SHOULD LEAD. I MEAN, WE LIVE IN A DEMOCRACY, RIGHT?

SO DO I...

I AGREE.

I AGREE.

WE DECIDE IT BY MAJORITY RULE, NO MATTER THE RESULT. CAN WE ALL AGREE TO THAT?

Susumu Yuito

IN THAT CASE ...

I AGREE TO COMPLY.

ALL RIGHT.

...

EVERYONE WHO AGREES THAT NAKAUMI SHOULD BE GOD OUT OF THE FIVE OF US, SPEAK UP-- INCLUDING YOU, NAKAUMI.

Susumu Yuito

...

ME.

I'M SWITCHING FROM RED TO HIM.

ME!

NAKAUMI WILL CONSIDER THE FEELINGS OF THOSE WHO ARE IN A WEAK PLACE. I THINK WE CAN TRUST HIM.

SAKI...

ME.

...

I'LL FOLLOW THAT DECISION TOO.

THEN IT'S SETTLED.

Susumu Yuito

IT SEEMS WE'VE REACHED A VERDICT.

I MUST SAY, I DID NOT THINK YOUR DEBATE WAS A BAD ONE.

NOW IF THE FIVE OF YOU EMERGE, AND THE LAST CANDIDATE APPEARS AND AGREES THAT NAKAUMI IS ACCEPTABLE...

...

NAKAUMI WILL BECOME GOD.

HUH?

IT WON'T BE THAT SIMPLE.

IS THIS WHAT YOU WANTED, OGARO?

WHAT'S WRONG?

WHAT DO YOU MEAN?

OGARO SAYS IT WON'T BE THAT SIMPLE...

THE ANGEL OF DESTRUCTION.

THE REMAINING ANGEL IS MUNI, SPECIAL RANK.

...OF DESTRUC-TION...

THE ANGEL ...

A CERTAIN HARBINGER OF RUIN.

THE FINAL ANGEL IS MUNI, SPECIAL RANK. THE ANGEL OF DESTRUCTION.

#36 Last Supper

THE ANGEL OF DESTRUCTION...

WHAT'S GOING ON?

HUH? WHAT'S WRONG, EVERY-BODY?

MUNI, THE LAST ANGEL REMAINING, IS THE ANGEL OF DESTRUC-TION...

D... DESTRUC-TION...?!

ACCORDING TO OGARO, ONCE A GOD IS DETERMINED, HE OR SHE CAN WIPE OUT ALL OF HUMANITY...

WIPE OUT HUMANITY ...?

NO WAY, THAT CAN'T ...

B- BUT...

THERE AREN'T ANY PEOPLE WHO ACTUALLY WANT... ...TO ***EXTER-MINATE*** HUMAN-ITY!

BUT...

...WHAT IF THE ANGEL OF DESTRUCTION CHOSE A GOD CANDIDATE WHO WOULD HOLD THOSE KINDS OF IDEAS?

...

UH, YEAH, THERE ARE.

THERE ARE PLENTY OF IMMATURE WEIRDOS WHO SAY, "IF YOU THINK ABOUT THE EARTH AS A WHOLE, IT'D BE HEALTHIER WITHOUT HUMANITY, SO IF I WERE GOD, I'D WIPE US OUT."

THIS SEEMS LIKE OVER-THINKING IT, JUST BECAUSE MUNI IS THE ANGEL OF DESTRUCTION...

MUNI WILL CERTAINLY CHOOSE A HUMAN THAT FITS THE THEME OF DESTRUCTION. THE ONLY QUESTION IS WHAT SORT OF DESTRUCTION IT WILL BE.

MUNI IS EXCEPTIONAL AMONG ALL THE ANGELS.

ARE YOU SAYING WE'RE GONNA GET KILLED ANYWAY?

HANG ON, I DON'T GET IT.

...

WHUP

NO!!

DON'T GO! STAY AND HELP ME!

KILLED?!

I AGREE.

C'MON, MIRAI...

NO... NO MATTER WHO THE LAST CANDIDATE IS, WE OUGHT TO REACH OUT AND ATTEMPT TO HAVE A DIALOGUE.

EVERYONE ON OUR SIDE HAS WINGS, AND TWO HAVE WHITE ARROWS.

I AGREE.

IF ANYTHING, AN ANGEL OF DESTRUCTION JUST GETS ME CURIOUS AND EXCITED.

I THINK WE SHOULD GO FOR IT WITHOUT ANY FEAR.

...

SUSU-MU...

GOD'S POWER, AND THAT MUNI IS THE ANGEL OF DESTRUCTION.

OGARO JUST TOLD US ABOUT TWO THINGS AND DIDN'T GET DEMOTED TO SECOND RANK FOR IT...

WHAT DOESN'T?

THIS DOESN'T MAKE SENSE.

YOU'RE RIGHT. I DIDN'T KNOW EITHER OF THOSE THINGS.

REMEMBER WHAT WE SAID AT THE START?

THERE ARE THINGS AN ANGEL CAN'T TELL A GOD CANDIDATE.

HUH? WHAT'S THAT SUPPOSED TO MEAN?

AM I WRONG?

THAT PROBABLY MEANS SHE HASN'T ACTUALLY TOUCHED UPON THE CORE OF THE TRUTH...

OGARO IS THE ANGEL OF DARKNESS WHO KNOWS THE SECRETS OF THE CELESTIAL WORLD.

I STILL MIGHT BE DEMOTED TO SECOND RANK. I BELIEVE I SAID EXACTLY AS MUCH AS I AM ALLOWED.

IF YOU WANT ME TO SPEAK ANY FURTHER ABOUT WHAT I KNOW, THEN AS YAZELI SAYS, IT WILL REACH THE CORE OF THE MATTER.

...

...

I WOULD CERTAINLY LIKE TO HEAR MORE.

I CANNOT DO THAT.

IF I DO, I WILL BE SENT PAST SECOND RANK TO UNRANKED, AND REMOVED FROM MY POST IN THE PROCESS TO SELECT A NEW GOD.

IN THAT INSTANT, SHUJI NAKAUMI WILL CEASE TO LIVE.

AND I WISH TO MAKE THE PARTNER I CHOSE INTO GOD.

THEN THIS IS A PRETTY GOOD SITUATION FOR YOU, OGARO.

...

FSH

TOKYO UNIVER-SITY

OH! PROFESSOR YONEDA!

FSHT

FSH

FSH

YES, I WAS MOVED BY IT.

YOUR SPECIAL LECTURE AT HARVARD WAS IN-CREDIBLE.

FSHT

FSHT

SO? PSH.

LET'S JUST GO.

IGNORED AGAIN.

WHY DOES NO ONE SEE WHAT NONSENSE I WAS SPEAKING?

I WAS THE YOUNGEST TO WIN THE NOBEL PRIZE IN PHYSICS AND LITERATURE, SO THEY ASSUME THAT WHAT I SAID ***MUST*** HAVE BEEN BRILLIANT.

THE ANSWER IS SIMPLE.

CLICK

Professor Emeritus Yoneda Laboratory One

WHUD

THUNK

WHAT HAS PUT THAT PENSIVE LOOK ON YOUR FACE THIS TIME?

YOUR NEXT LECTURE?

IT IS A WASTE OF TIME... EVEN YOUR MIND CANNOT SOLVE THEM.

OR IT IS ABOUT THE WHITE AND RED ARROWS AGAIN?

TONIGHT'S DINNER?

MEAT OR FISH.

NO.

NOT WHEN MY UNIVERSE COULD COLLAPSE AT ANY MOMENT.

NO OTHER TOPIC IS WORTH TRULY SERIOUS CONSIDERATION.

WHEN THE WORLD IS COMING TO AN END, THE HUMAN MIND TURNS TO ITS LAST SUPPER.

Steak Cut
Sirloin Steak
3700円
185g

BL-UB
BL-UB

FZSHH

KOHHH

FWUM

SHAK

FLOOM

BLB BLB

GAK

GAK

GAK

NWA...

MUNI,
YOU CHOSE
ME KNOWING
THAT I WOULD
EXPOSE YOU
ANGELS AND
THE WORKINGS
OF YOUR GOD-
CHOOSING
MECHANISM.

FSHAA-

YOU SAW THE DESPAIR TOWARD HUMANITY THAT I CHRONICLED CONSTANTLY IN MY WRITINGS... AND TOOK ADVANTAGE OF MY SUICIDAL DESIRES.

I WANTED TO GIVE YOU THE HOPE TO LIVE...

IF I TELL YOU, I WILL BE DEMOTED, AND CAN NO LONGER FULFILL MY PURPOSE.

BUT IF YOU ASK ME QUESTIONS, I AM ALLOWED TO GIVE YOU YES/NO ANSWERS.

NWA...

IN THAT INSTANCE, YOUR INTERPRE-TATION WAS INCORRECT.

FSHK

PLAT

MY DESPAIR TOWARD HUMANITY, PARADOXICALLY, REPRESENTS A *HOPE* FOR HUMANITY.

BUT IN FACT, I HAVE NO RIGHT TO SPEAK OF *EITHER* "GODS" OR "ANGELS."

I'M AN ANGEL...

PARDON ME.

IN ANY CASE, IT'S QUITE THE PESTILENCE I'M NOW STUCK WITH.

POW

NWA...

KWIK

KWIK

IN FACT, YOU ARE SIGNIFICANTLY SHARPER THAN A HUMAN BEING.

KWIK

STRICTLY SPEAKING, MANKIND CANNOT PROVE SUCH THINGS.

AND THE EXISTENCE OF THESE UNREAL BEINGS FUNDAMENTALLY CONTRADICTS SOME OF MY THESES.

WHAT DO YOU MEAN?

SNIF

SNIF

BUT IT'S NOT CLEAR YET WHETHER YOUR DESIRE WILL COME TO BE OR NOT.

NOT AS LONG AS THE OTHER TWO UNKNOWN CANDIDATES CAN POSSIBLY BE GREATER THAN ME OR KANADE URYU.

TUP

TUP

NO.

CRIK

...

SO YOU WOULD HAVE ACCEPTED KANADE URYU AS GOD?

SWISH...

JUST AN INDIVIDUAL'S GHOULISH CURIOSITY.

NO...

IT IS A SCHOLAR'S INQUIRY INTO A WORLD GONE MAD.

WELL, EVERY-BODY...

SHMM

...

SHN

SHM

READY.

IF WE ARE FORCED TO CHANGE LOCATIONS, I WILL TRANSMIT A TO E AS WE DECIDED EARLIER.

CAN'T BELIEVE I'M GOING IN THIS MOM OUTFIT...

THIS SERIOUSLY SUCKS.

SHM

...

I WANT YOU TO PERFORM YOUR DUTIES AS A POLICE OFFICER, MISS YUMIKI.

YOU GAVE ME WINGS AND RED ARROWS. I SHOULD GO WITH YOU.

BUT...

SAKI...

EVEN IF WE CAN TRUST OUR OWN COUNTRY'S SPECIAL FORCES, WE CAN'T SAY THE SAME OF OTHER NATIONS.

WE HAVE EVERYONE WHO'S IN POTENTIAL DANGER-- THE FAMILIES OF EVERY-BODY HERE, INCLUDING MINAMIKAWA-- MOVED TO A SAFE LOCATION RIGHT NOW.

SHE'S RIGHT, YUMIKI. LEAVE IT UP TO THESE FIVE.

WE DON'T WANT A REPEAT OF THE MUKAIDO FAMILY.

WE SHOULD PREPARE FOR POSSIBLE EVENTUALITIES.

YES, SIR!

YOU GUYS SHOULD FOLLOW MR. HOSHI'S ORDERS ...

...

GOOD LUCK OUT THERE, MIRAI...

SO THIS MIGHT BE FAREWELL.

AH, YES... IF *ANYONE* BECOMES GOD, NOT JUST NAKAUMI, I SUPPOSE I COULD BE FORGETTING ALL ABOUT THE CHOOSING GAME AND THE CANDIDATES.

MR. HOSHI, MS. YUMIKI, THANK YOU FOR EVERY-THING.

YES...

RED

SAKI...

HOW WOULD I KNOW?

ARE THOSE TWO HOOKING UP?

LET'S GO.

TO BE CONTINUED...

T s u**g** u mi **O**h b **a**

°

Born in Tokyo, Tsugumi Ohba is the author of the hit series *Death Note* and *Bakuman。*.

°

°

°

°

°

Ta**k** e s**h** i O b a **t**a

°

Takeshi Obata was born in 1969 in Niigata, Japan, and first achieved international recognition as the artist of the wildly popular *Shonen Jump* title *Hikaru no Go*, which won the 2003 Tezuka Osamu Cultural Prize: Shinsei "New Hope" Award and the 2000 Shogakukan Manga Award. He went on to illustrate the smash hit *Death Note* as well as the hugely successful manga *Bakuman。* and *All You Need Is Kill*.

PLATINVM END

VOLUME 10
SHONEN JUMP Manga Edition

°

STORY Tsugumi Ohba
ART Takeshi Obata

°

TRANSLATION Stephen Paul
TOUCH-UP ART & LETTERING James Gaubatz
DESIGN Shawn Carrico
EDITOR Alexis Kirsch

°

ORIGINAL COVER DESIGN Narumi Noriko

°

PLATINUM END © 2015 by Tsugumi Ohba, Takeshi Obata
All rights reserved.
First published in Japan in 2015 by SHUEISHA Inc., Tokyo.
English translation rights arranged by SHUEISHA Inc.

°

The stories, characters and incidents mentioned in this publication are entirely fictional.

No portion of this book may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means without written permission from the copyright holders.

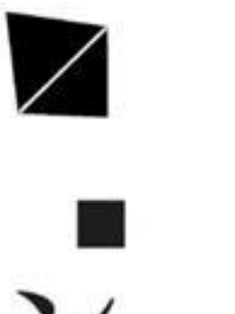
°

Printed in the U.S.A.

Published by VIZ Media, LLC
P.O. Box 77010
San Francisco, CA 94107

°

10 9 8 7 6 5 4 3 2 1
First printing, December 2019



PARENTAL ADVISORY
PLATINUM END is rated M for Mature and is recommended for mature readers. This volume contains suggestive themes.

The creators of

DEATH NOTE

return in this **d**a**r**k st**o**ry with an **a**ng**e**lic t**w**is**t**!

Thanks to Susumu's TV announcement, the whole world now knows about the existence of the god candidates. Mirai and his friends find themselves being targeted by all kinds of government agencies. Their safety hinges on the ability to locate the remaining hidden candidates and put an end to the process. But the mysterious final god candidate might have their own dark plans...

$9.99 USA $12.99 CAN £6.99 UK

viz.com shonenjump.com

VIZ MEDIA

SHONEN JUMP

RATED M MATURE

ISBN: 978-1-9747-1054-6

50999

9 781974 710546

11

PLATINUM END

STORY
TSUGUMI
OHBA

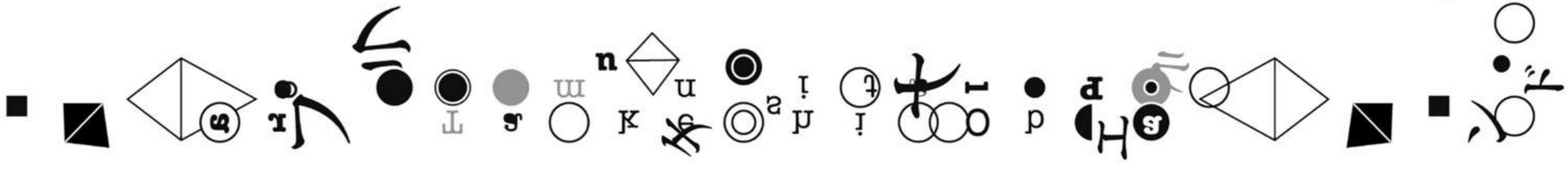
ART
TAKESHI
OBATA

PARENTAL ADVISORY
EXPLICIT
CONTENT

PLATINUM END

Takeshi Obata
ART

Tsugumi Ohba
STORY

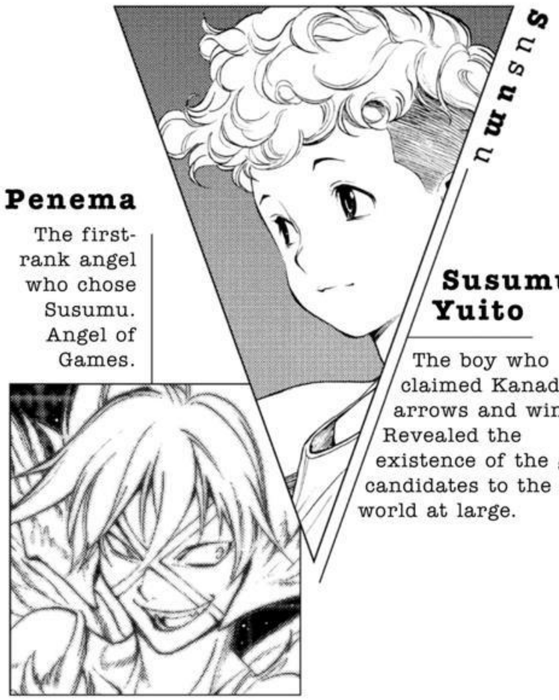


Ogaro

The first-rank angel who chose Shuji. Angel of Darkness.

Shuji Nakaumi

A boy who believes in euthanasia and spoke of his own wish to commit suicide. Hates causing trouble for others.

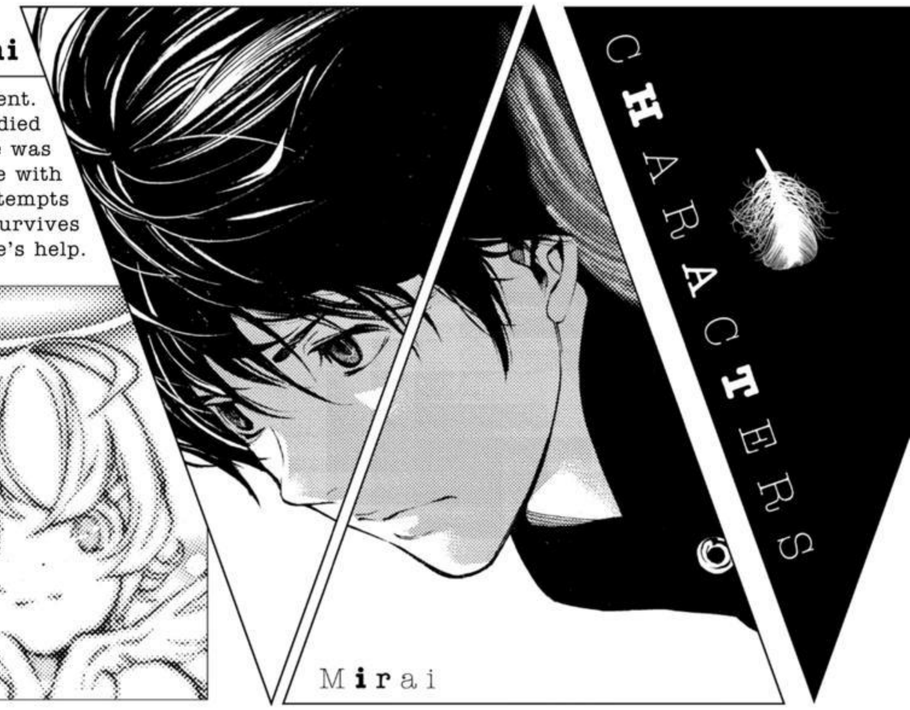


Penema

The first-rank angel who chose Susumu. Angel of Games.

Susumu Yuito

The boy who claimed Kanade's arrows and wings. Revealed the existence of the god candidates to the world at large.

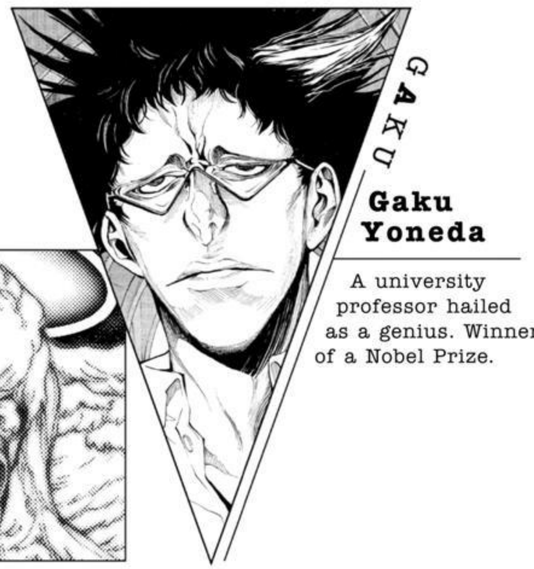


Mirai Kakehashi

First-year high school student. His parents and brother died in an accident when he was seven. After a painful life with his abusive relatives, he attempts to commit suicide and survives through Nasse's help.

Nasse

A special-rank angel who wants to bring happiness to Mirai's life. Bright and bubbly.



Muni

The special-rank angel who chose Yoneda. Angel of Destruction.

Gaku Yoneda

A university professor hailed as a genius. Winner of a Nobel Prize.

Yazeli

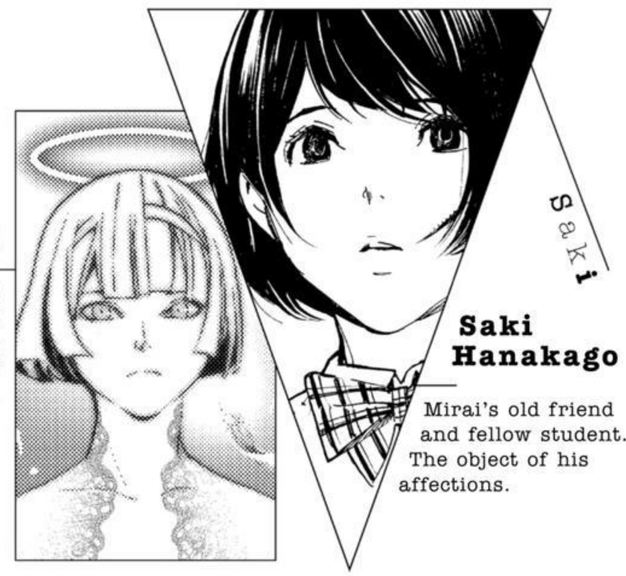
The second-rank angel who chose Yuri. Angel of Truth.

Yuri Temari

Free spirit who enjoys social media, and has no real interest in being god. Attempted suicide twice.

Revel

Promoted to the first-rank Angel of Emotion.



Saki Hanakago

Mirai's old friend and fellow student. The object of his affections.

Story

ONE WHO WOULD BE GOD

The five candidates conclude that Shuji would be best as god. They make a public appeal to the last remaining candidate.

A DESPERATE ESCAPE

With Shuji and Susumu on board, Mirai next makes contact with Yuri, who is under government protection. With Hoshi's help, they assist her escape.

A QUESTION OF DEATH

Mirai finds the god candidate Shuji and convinces him to join them, rather than choose death. They make contact with Susumu and suggest cooperation.

Story

"My time has come. I leave the seat of god to the next human.
To a younger, fresher power.

The next god shall be chosen from the 13 humans chosen by you 13 angels.When the chosen human is made the next god, your angelic duty is finished, and you may live beside that god in peace.

You have 999 days remaining..."

CONTENTS

#37 Conditions for Contact P5

#38 Youthful Speeches P47

#39 The Future of Humanity P89

#40 In the Crosshairs P124

#41 Society's Response P167

#37 Conditions for Contact

YOU STARTING TO GET SCARED ABOUT BEING GOD?

HEY, KID, YOU DON'T LOOK SO GOOD. WHAT'S UP?

NOTHING ...

...

D... DEFINITELY NOT.

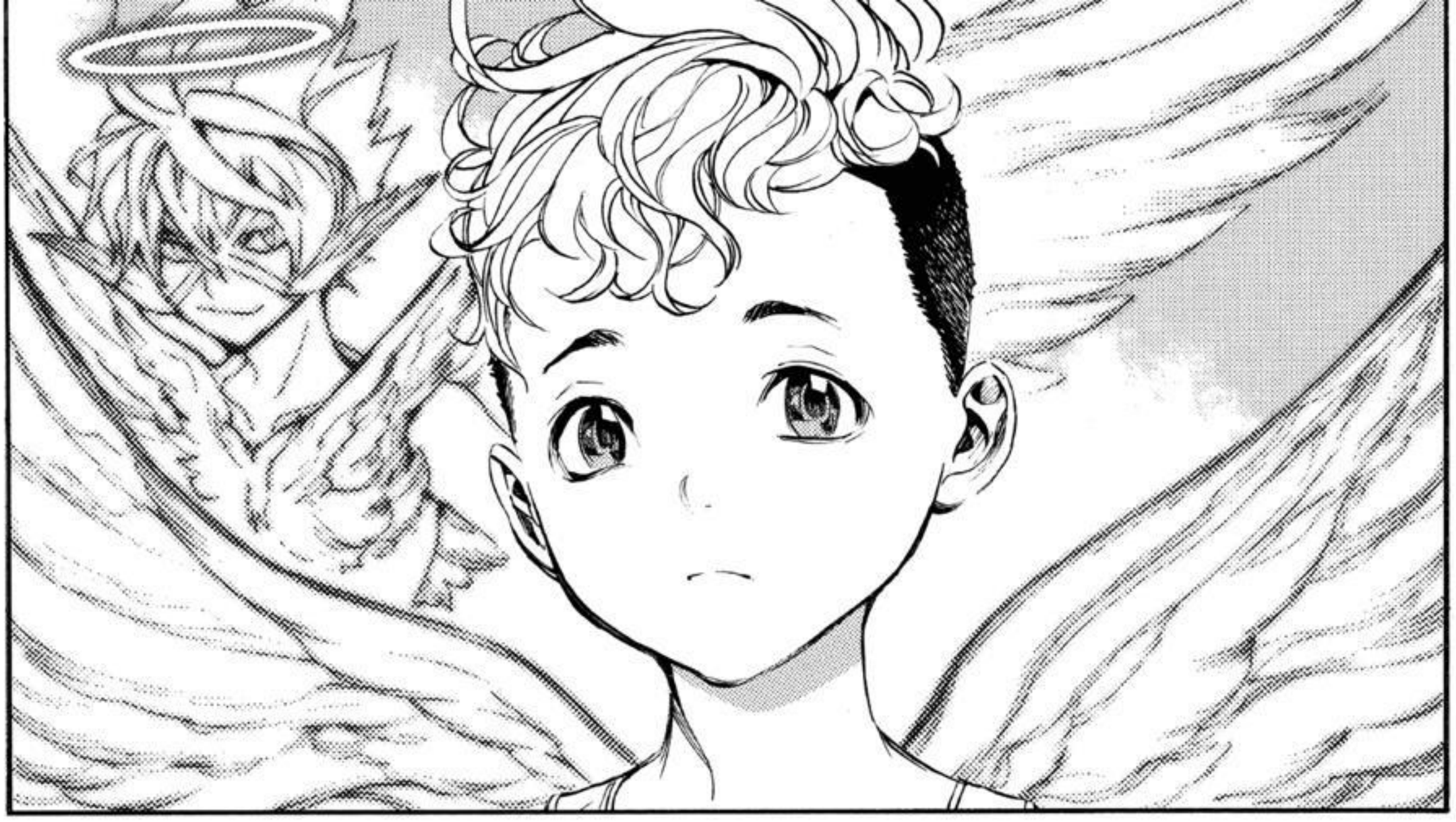
YURAKU-CHO DISTRICT

SHM

朝日新聞

LOOK, IT'S SUSUMU.

A GOD CANDIDATE!



朝日新聞

AW, SU-SUMU'S SO CUTE.

RED'S SHOWN HIMSELF AGAIN.

THERE'S MORE OF THEM!

FIVE NOW?

KNOCK IT OFF! YOU'RE ALL WORTH-LESS!

IT'S *THEIR* FAULT THAT THE WORLD IS GOING CRAZY NOW.

AND I'M SICK OF SEEING THOSE AWFUL VIDEOS.

STOP WRECK-ING OUR CITY.

PLEASE DON'T DO THIS HERE.

HERE IT COMES!

WELL, THAT'S NOT VERY NICE.

...

朝日新聞
SONY SOUND

SO THAT'S MUNI...

...

WHERE'S YOUR PARTNER?

DOCTOR, WE'VE GOT THE DATA ON THE NEW HYPOTHETICAL YONEDA CELLS.

PROFESSOR EMERITUS YONEDA

Laboratory One

下書き
送信済み
アーカイブ
ゴミ箱
迷惑メール
フォルダ
保存メール
Deleted Message
削除したメッセージ
新規フォルダ

tagatame1979

YOUR RESTLESS LEG IS WORSE THAN USUAL, DOCTOR.

RATTLE

RATTLE

RATTLE

RATTLE

RATTLE

RATTLE

YES.

I WONDER HOW THEY FLY AROUND? DO YOU SUPPOSE IT'S JUST CG?

tige_tjjc

LIVE NOW

9,518

HUH?

gomipon
God candidates again?

oresummer
Is this all they do? How many times has it been?

gakubull87
Hmm? rub rub
more god can

usouso800
Bored of this
already seen

marichanpi
God candies

Write comment

OH, YOU'RE INTERESTED IN THE WHOLE GOD CANDIDATE THING TOO, DOCTOR?

IT'S WINGS. THAT'S JUST HOW IT IS.

BUT... YOU'RE JOKING, RIGHT?

...

THEY HAVE WINGS, OBVIOUSLY.

ALL TOGETHER NOW.

pe2ingloss
Whoa, five of them? Crazy.

stocmeetn6
So many god candidates! A rare sight

thingzu
Five! I wanna see!! Where is this?
(・口・;) TELL ME PLEEZY

eden**boluten
HOLY CRAP!!! WHAT THE HECK!! THERE ARE FIVE!

min679981

WE'VE GOT A GOD CANDIDATE SIGHTING.

FIVE OF THEM IN THE YURAKUCHO DISTRICT OF TOKYO.

CENTRAL INTELLIGENCE

UNITED STATES OF AME

THERE'S NO TELLING WHAT POWERS THEY MIGHT POSSESS WITH FIVE IN ONE PLACE.

COORDINATE WITH THE TACTICAL TEAM AND MAKE A QUICK INTERCEPTION. DON'T LET ANOTHER COUNTRY BEAT US TO THE PUNCH.

WE TRY ANYTHING IN OPEN AIR, AND THEY'LL JUST ESCAPE.

BUT ON LAND... NO...

NO, WAIT...

BETTER AN ASSASSINATION THAN TO HAND THEM OVER TO AN ENEMY...

A CERTAIN NATIONAL HEAD-QUARTERS

SUPREME LEADER, SURELY YOU DON'T MEAN TO ATTACK...

ATTACK ...?

YOU MEAN SHOOT MISSILES AT THEM, LIKE SOME FOOLISH JAPANESE ARE CONVINCED I WILL?

THEY'D JUST FLY AWAY AT THE SPEED OF LIGHT, LEAVING THE CIVILIANS TO DIE. IT WOULD TRIGGER A THIRD WORLD WAR.

SUCH A THING WOULD CAUSE US TO BE JUDGED HARSHLY BY GOD, DEAR LEADER.

THAT WOULD SUGGEST YOU BELIEVE GOD EXISTS AND HATES WAR, BUT PRETENDED NOT TO SEE THE LAST TWO.

N-NO, SIR...

GOD?

IT IS NEITHER GOD NOR THE PRESIDENT OF THE UNITED STATES WHO CONTROLS THE WORLD.

IT IS YOU, SUPREME LEADER.

...TO KNOW THE THOUGHTS OF EACH OF YOU FIVE.
MY PARTNER DESIRES...

ANY DECISION TO MAKE CONTACT WILL BE DEPENDENT ON YOUR ANSWERS.

WHAT DO YOU MEAN, EACH OF OUR THOUGHTS?

WHO DOES THIS PERSON THINK THEY ARE, TALKING DOWN TO US LIKE THAT?

YOU WILL HAVE FIVE MINUTES EACH...

...TO DESCRIBE WHAT YOU WOULD DO AS GOD...

AND WE'D APPRECIATE IT IF YOU'D AGREE WITH US.

SORRY, BUT THE FIVE OF US HAVE ALREADY DECIDED WHICH OF US WE WANT TO BE GOD.

WHAT WE WOULD DO AS GOD...

THE NEGOTIA-TION HAS BROKEN DOWN.

NWA... A SHAME.

I'M HERE LIVE AT THE SCENE IN YURAKUCHO.

WE CAN IDENTIFY THEM AS RED, YELLOW, SUSUMU YUITO, A WOMAN AROUND AGE 20 AND A BOY OF MIDDLE SCHOOL AGE.

FIVE GOD CANDIDATES APPEARED IN THE SKY OVER A MAJOR INTERSECTION HERE, EARLY THIS MORNING.

...BUT THERE'S NO WAY TO PICK UP ANY SOUND FROM THEIR VOICES.

THEY'RE ALL FACING THE SAME DIRECTION AND APPEAR TO BE IN A CONVERSATION WITH AN UNKNOWN PARTY...

PERHAPS THIS MEANS THAT THEY HAVE REACHED THAT STEP NOW.

SUSUMU YUITO AND THE RED WARRIOR WERE HEARD CALLING FOR A DIALOGUE EARLIER.

WAIT.

GOOD-BYE.

I SAID THAT I WILL HEAR YOUR THOUGHTS, AND THEY WILL BE WEIGHED TO DETERMINE IF YOU ARE WORTH SPEAKING WITH.

MY PARTNER IS A HUMAN FAR MORE IMPORTANT THAN ANY OF YOU.

IF THE FIVE OF US EACH TELL YOU WHAT WE WANT TO DO AS GOD, WILL YOU ACCEPT OUR REQUEST TO TALK?

...

THEY *ARE* BELIT-TLING US! WHAT CREEPS.

I DID NOT SAY THAT.

ASK MY PARTNER'S THOUGHTS IN PERSON.

NWA...

I DO NOT NEED TO EXPLAIN THAT TO YOU.

WHAT DO YOU PLAN TO DO...? WHAT IS YOUR GOD CANDIDATE'S GOAL?

MUNI, ANGEL OF DESTRUCTION...

UMM...

...

LIKE A BIG PRESENTATION!

IF ANYTHING, IT SOUNDS FUN...

THERE'S NOTHING WRONG WITH TALKING IT OUT.

WHAT'S THE BIG PROBLEM WITH IT?

THUPPA

susumu ...

THUPPA THUPPA THUPPA

THUPPA

THUPPA

THUPPA

THUPPA

THUPPA THUPPA

NO WAY! THIS IS CRAZY!!

WHA...?

HELICOP-TERS!

THUP PA THUPA THUPA

THUP PA

THUP PA

THUP PA

WE DID NOT COME HERE TO ATTACK YOU.

THUP PA

ATTEN-TION, GOD CANDIDATES. PLEASE HEAR ME OUT.

THUP PA

THERE ARE WHAT APPEAR TO BE SDF HELICOP-TERS HERE, SPEAKING TO THE GOD CANDIDATES!

GLAD I'M NOT ANYWHERE NEAR *THERE.*

BUT THOSE ARE CLEARLY ATTACK HELIS.

SHIBUYA

THEY'RE STRESSING THAT THIS IS NOT AN ATTACK.

FIVE GOD CANDIDATES IN YURAKUCHO

WHAT? CHOPPERS ?!

EEEK!

LET'S MOVE !!

THIS IS BAD, MAN!

WHAT THE HELL ARE THEY THINKING?!

ARE THEY GOING TO START FIRING IN THE MIDDLE OF THE CITY?!

OOOF!

STAY CALM AND ...

PLEASE REMAIN CALM, EVERY-ONE!

THE ARRIVAL OF THE GOD CANDIDATES AND THE SDF HAS SPARKED A PANIC!!

THINGS ARE GETTING CHAOTIC IN YURAKUCHO AS THE ONLOOKERS FLEE THE SCENE!

WHAT IS THIS? A THREAT?

...

THUP PA

THUP PA

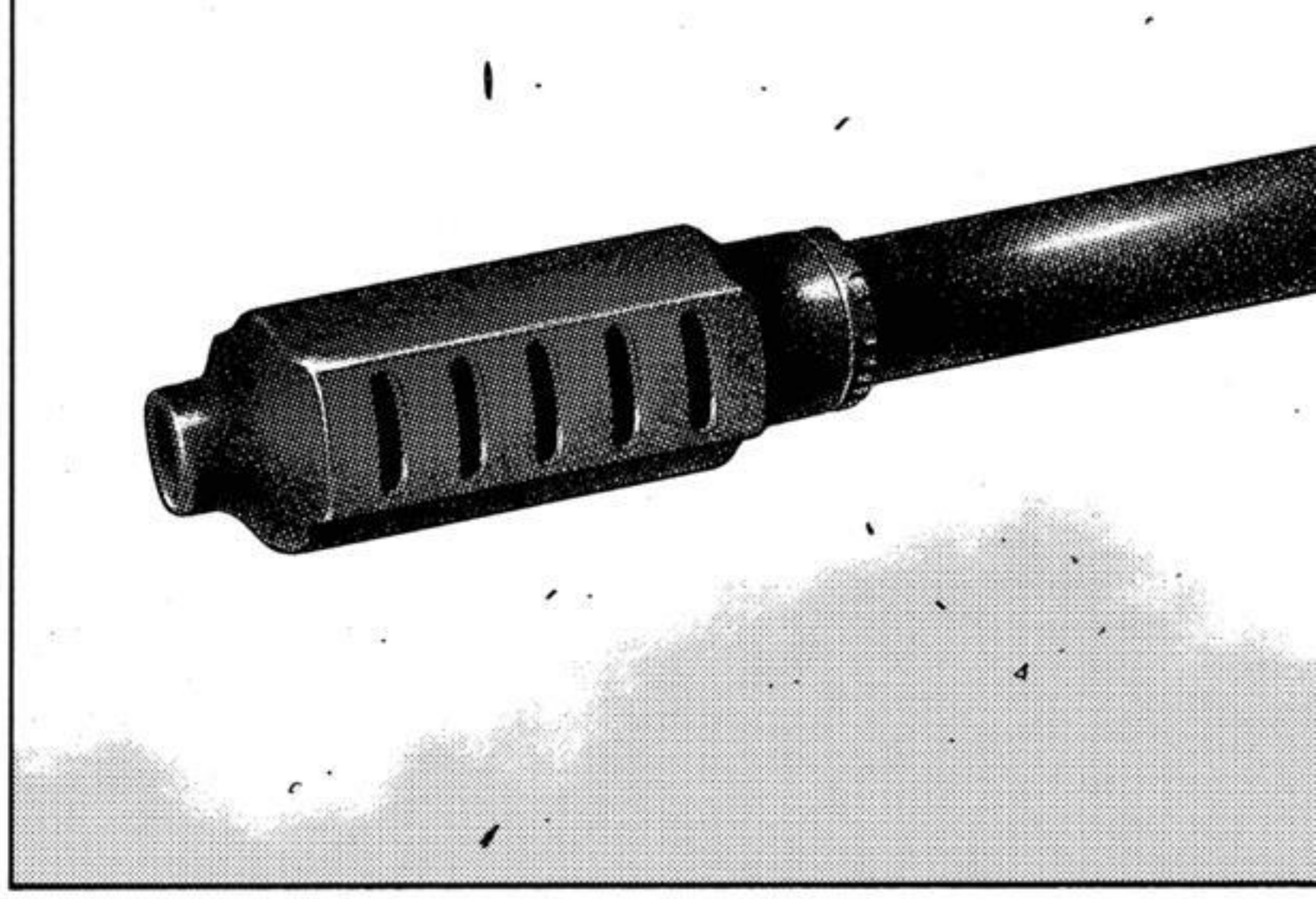
THUP

...

THIRTY MM GUN IS AT THE READY. TARGET DEAD AHEAD.

AT THE READY.

AT THE READY.



WHAT'S GOING ON HERE? THIS WASN'T PART OF THE PLAN!

...
I SUPPOSE IT MEANS THAT THE SDF AND POLICE DEPARTMENT HAVE DIFFERENT IDEAS.

KWING

LOOK HOW CLOSE THE HELICOP-TERS ARE!

WHOA, THAT'S SO COOL!!

NO, SUSUMU!

I'M GOING TO USE A RED ARROW ON THE PILOT!

SHWIP

OH.

GOOD IDEA ...

IT'S BETTER IF WE JUST GO SOME-WHERE ELSE.

THERE'S NO NEED FOR THAT.

SL

LET'S HEAD TO POINT C, EVERYONE...

TARGETS ARE GONE!

...

THEY VAN-ISHED.

WE'RE SAVED ...

THUPPA

THUPPA

THUPPA

...

I CANNOT ANSWER THE PHONE AT THE MOMENT ...

RATTLE RATTLE

TAP

Prime Minister

WHAT IS THE GOVERNMENT DOING...?

WHO ARE YOU CALLING?

THE PRIME MINISTER.

IT'S ME, YONEDA. I NEED TO TALK TO YOU AT ONCE.

RATTLE RATTLE

THE PRIME MINISTER...?

WHICH OTHER PRIME MINISTER WOULD YOU PREFER? THONGSING? ARDERN? NETANYAHU?

MEANING... PRIME MINISTER YABE?!

PRIME MINISTER?

DING! DING!

OH... I GUESS WINNING THE PEOPLE'S HONOR AWARD GIVES YOU THAT SORT OF PRIVILEGE...

WOW!

I WAS JUST CALLING YOU ABOUT THEM, AS A MATTER OF FACT.

PROFESSOR YONEDA, I'M AT A GOD CANDIDATE STRATEGY MEETING AT THE MOMENT...

THUMP

PARDON ME. I'VE GOT TO TAKE THIS.

...

I MADE THE DECISION TO APPREHEND THEM FOR THE SAKE OF PUBLIC SAFETY.

BUT ...

I WISH YOU WOULD STOP DOING THINGS THAT PREVENT THE GOD CANDIDATES FROM DOING WHAT THEY WANT TO DO.

THE HELI-COPTERS WERE ONLY TO CAPTURE THEM, NOT TO ATTACK...

...

DON'T TELL ME YOU BELIEVE THIS STUFF ABOUT SELECTING A NEW GOD, PROFESSOR.

...

NWA...

THEY MOVED POSITIONS, THAT'S ALL.

SLAM

IT IS A TRUE SELECTION OF A NEW GOD, PRIME MINISTER.

AND YOU EXPECT ME TO BELIEVE YOU, BASED ON NOTHING MORE THAN THAT...?

...

THE FACT THAT THEY WEREN'T HIDING THEIR FACES WAS A SIGN THAT THEY DO NOT INTEND TO CAUSE HARM TO ANYONE.

THEY DO NOT POSE A THREAT TO THE PEOPLE OF THE NATION ANYMORE.

RATTLE

RATTLE

RATTLE

WHAT A LAMENTABLE STATE OF AFFAIRS.

FAKES? SUPER BEINGS MADE OF ENERGY? THOSE WHO CANNOT UNDERSTAND DON'T EVEN BOTHER TO USE THEIR BRAINS. NO ONE RECOGNIZES THEM FOR WHAT THEY ARE.

RATTLE

RATTLE

RATTLE

THE PEOPLE OF JAPAN... THE PEOPLE OF THE ENTIRE *WORLD* STILL MISUNDERSTAND THE GOD CANDIDATES.

THUD

THUD

...THAT RATHER THAN ATTACKING THEM, WE OUGHT TO BE *PROTECTING* THE CANDIDATES.

BUT I CAN PROVE TO YOU, WITHIN 24 HOURS...

RATTLE

RATTLE

RATTLE

...OR MY NAME'S NOT GAKU YONEDA.

RATTLE

I'LL PROVE IT TO YOU WITHIN 24 HOURS...

RATTLE

#38 Youthful Speeches

WELL, I'M TELLING YOU THAT WE SHOULDN'T BE ATTACKING THE GOD CANDIDATES... WE SHOULD BE **PROTECTING** THEM.

WHEN I PUBLISHED MY PAPER ON YONEDA CELLS, NOT A SINGLE PERSON IN THE WORLD BELIEVED ME AT THAT POINT EITHER.

RATTLE

RATTLE RATTLE

RATTLE

...

DAIBA, MINATO WARD

HURRY IT UP, NEWS TEAM!

THEY WERE JUST IN YURAKU-CHO...

WHAT?! THE GOD CANDIDATES ARE UP ABOVE US?!

EVERY-ONE WILL BE IN A DIFFERENT PLACE?

AS WE DECIDED, WE'LL MAKE OUR APPEALS AT POINTS B, C, D, E AND F, OVER THE VARIOUS TV STATIONS.

I KNOW.

IT'S BETTER TO SPREAD OUT THAN TO BE CONGREGATED IN ONE PLACE. JUST BE WARY OF YOUR SURROUNDINGS.

I'LL BE HERE IN DAIBA, AND THE REST OF YOU WILL GO TO THE OTHERS...

I GET IT.

OKAY.

THAT WILL MAKE IT EASIER FOR US TO SPEAK OUR MINDS WITHOUT WORRYING ABOUT THE OTHERS TOO.

SHMM

SHMM

OH.

THEY VANISHED AGAIN.

NO, LOOK. THERE'S ONE LEFT.

ROP-
PONGI,
MINATO
WARD

tv ashai

SHIO-
DOME,
MINATO
WARD

JINNAN, SHIBUYA WARD

AKA-SAKA, MINATO WARD

AT ONE O'CLOCK ...

12:41

00:19:38

MS. YUMIKI?

!

VMMM ...

IT FEELS LIKE SUCH A LONG TIME FROM NOW.

PRIME MINISTER YABE HAS ORDERED THE SDF TO STOP ATTEMPTING CAPTURE OF THE GOD CANDIDATES AND TO WITHDRAW.

I UNDER-STAND. THANK YOU.

OOOH ...

WHY SO SUDDEN...?

SHWRRR

SHU-RR

1:00
00:00:0

WHOOO

?

?

SPECIAL LIVE FEED
GOD CANDIDATES APPEAR

79%

IS GOD GOING TO BE CHOSEN AT LAST?!

ON AIR

BREAKING NEWS LIVE

FIVE GOD CANDIDATES ARE CURRENTLY HOVERING OVER FIVE DIFFERENT TV NETWORK BUILDINGS AND WILL TELL YOU WHAT THEY'D DO IF THEY WERE MADE GOD.

EVERYONE, I WANT YOU TO LISTEN TO ME.

THE FINAL CANDIDATE CLAIMS THEY WILL NOT SHOW UP UNLESS WE DO THIS.

WHAT THEY'LL DO...

...IF THEY BECOME GOD...?

hottsank

ekuwey

LIVE NOW

10,586

THAT'S HANA-KAGO FROM OUR CLASS!

NO WAY!!

tn

so that's what Yell

ooks like underne

daapd

wonder who that

nal candidate is, th

fgbrscp

glad they seem to be

normal-looking than I expected~

コメントする

paixujnbt

LIVE NOW

ARE YOU SERI-OUS?

ISN'T THAT KAKE-HASHI?!

kwrjfmn

What they'll do when they become god...?

ottxeaebf

Like a political manifesto or something?

コメントする

NO WAY!

YOU WERE FRIENDS WITH HER, MAIKO.

DID YOU KNOW ABOUT THIS?

THEY'RE GOD CANDI-DATES?!

I **KNEW** SOME-THING WAS UP!

REMEMBER, THOSE TWO ONLY SHOWED UP FOR A SINGLE DAY OF THE SECOND TERM.

TWO PEOPLE FROM OUR OWN CLASS!

...

...PROFES-SOR...

SOMETHING FUNNY IS GOING ON OUT THERE...

RATTLE RATTLE

THEY SAY THEY ARE EACH PREPARED TO SPEAK ABOUT WHAT THEY, INDIVIDUALLY, WILL DO IF THEY BECOME GOD.

SPECIAL LIVE REPORT: GOD CANDIDATE BULLFT

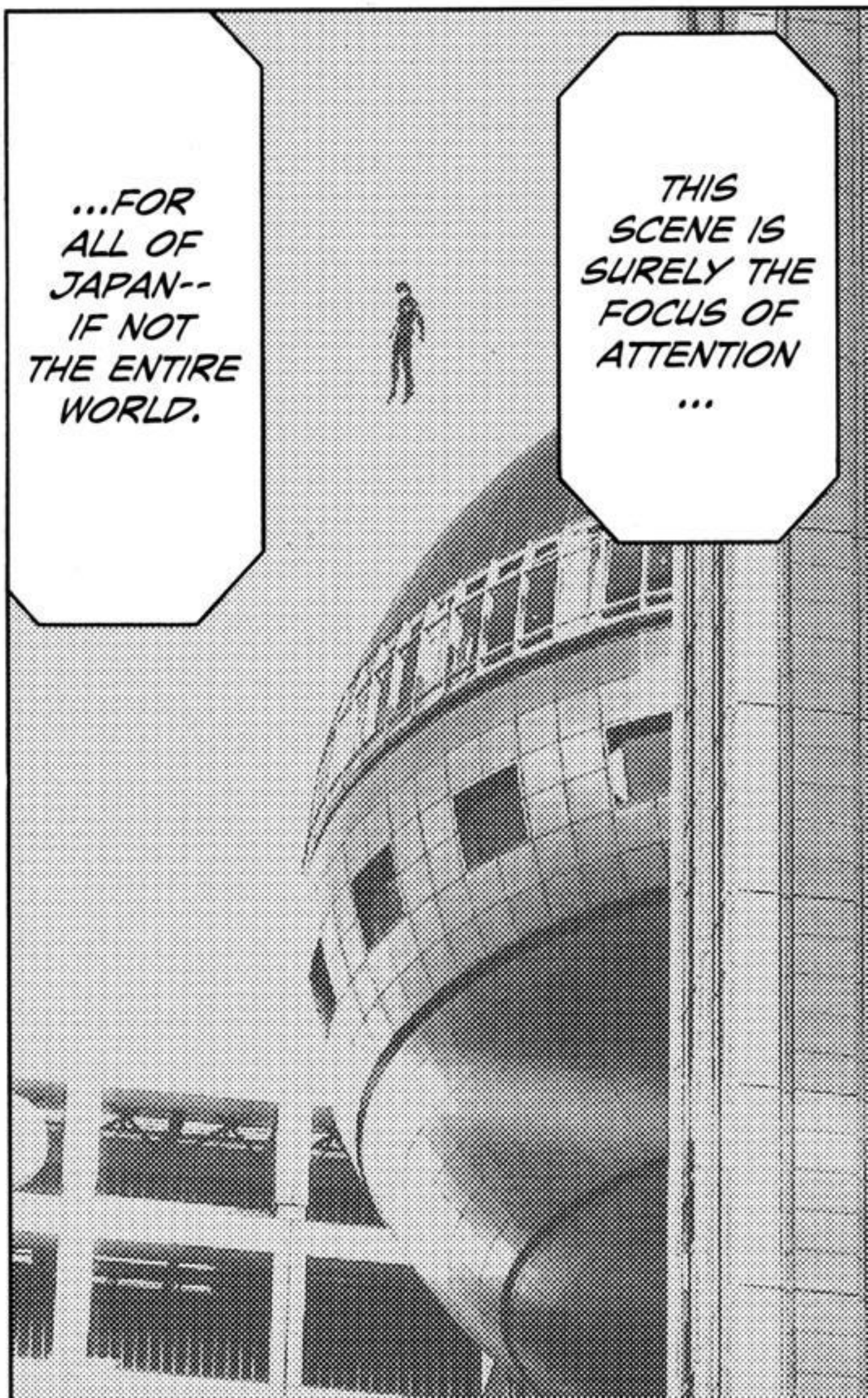
FIRST, THE FIVE CANDIDATES VANISHED FROM YURAKUCHO. THEN THEY APPEARED ABOVE THE MAJOR TV NETWORK HEADQUARTERS TO DELIVER SPEECHES.

LIVE

GOD CANDIDATES GATHER: WILL WE HAVE A NEW GOD?!

...FOR ALL OF JAPAN-- IF NOT THE ENTIRE WORLD.

THIS SCENE IS SURELY THE FOCUS OF ATTENTION ...



SPECIAL LIVE FEED
GOD CANDIDATES APPEAR

IF I BECOME GOD...

UMM ...

IS GOD GOING TO BE CHOSEN

SHWIR R

ARE WE GOOD TO GO YET?

IAL LIVE FEED
ANDIDATES APPEAR

I'M GOING TO MAKE IT POSSIBLE FOR PEOPLE WHO WANT TO DIE TO DO SO EASILY AND PAINLESSLY, WHENEVER THEY WANT, AND FOR THEIR CHOICE TO BE RESPECTED AND PRAISED.

OD GOING TO BE CHOSEN

HUH?

PRAISED ...?

...

SPECIAL LIVE FEED
CHOSEN AT LAST?!

IS GOD GOING TO BE CHOSEN AT LAST?!

MRS. YAMA-SHITA ...

THAT BOY'S GOT A GOOD HEAD ON HIS SHOULDERS.

IT'S BETTER THAN BEING A BURDEN ON OTHERS.

IF I COULD DIE PAINLESSLY, I WOULD DO IT IN A HEARTBEAT.

I AGREE WITH HIM.

DO YOU REALLY THINK ANYONE'S GOING TO BE AROUND TO TAKE CARE OF YOU IN OUR RAPIDLY AGING SOCIETY?

...

...

A WORLD WHERE YOU CAN JUST TAKE IT EASY AND ENJOY YOUR LIFE!

MY IDEAL WORLD IS ONE WHERE PEOPLE DON'T HAVE TO WORK.

I MEAN, WE'RE NOT THAT FAR OFF, ANYWAY.

LET THE A.I. AND THE ROBOTS DO THE WORK.

IN OTHER WORDS, HOW CAN WE BE RICH...?

THEN THE PROBLEM BECOMES, HOW WILL WE GET MONEY?

I DON'T KNOW THE ANSWER, SO I WANT SOMEONE WHO CAN MAKE THAT HAPPEN TO BECOME GOD INSTEAD.

HA HA HA...

SHE DOESN'T KNOW? DOES SHE EVEN WANNA BE GOD?

YEAH, BABY!

A WORLD WHERE YOU DON'T HAFTA WORK? SOUNDS LIKE A DREAM...

SHWIRR

DON'T ANY OF THESE GOD CANDIDATES HAVE MORE SERIOUS IDEAS?

IS THAT THE EXTENT OF HER PITCH?!

I WAS THINKING...

...I WANT A WORLD WHERE YOU CAN PLAY WITH YOUR FRIENDS...

I'M HOPING FOR A PLACE WITHOUT CRAM SCHOOL OR SMARTPHONES.

I HATE ALL THESE PEOPLE SHOWING OFF ON SOCIAL MEDIA.

AND IF YOU SLIP UP AND SAY THE WRONG THING, YOU BECOME A TARGET FOR THE ONLINE MOB.

WHO NEEDS A SMART-PHONE? JUST GIVE ME CALLS AND TEXTS.

AGREED.

IT JUST DEPENDS ON HOW YOU USE IT. THIS STUFF IS INDISPENSABLE FOR HUMANITY NOW.

IT'S AN UGLY WORLD OUT THERE.

THINK OF ALL THOSE CELEBRITIES WHO GOT FLAMED SO BADLY THEIR CAREERS BASICALLY ENDED.

...

IF THE WORLD TURNED OUT THAT WAY, EVERYONE WOULD BE STUPIDER. YOU WOULDN'T BE ABLE TO LOOK ANYTHING UP.

I DON'T WANT TO LOSE SOME-THING THIS USEFUL.

RATTLE

RATTLE

RATTLE

THE QUESTION IS...

View History Bookmarks Sharing Window Help

SPECIAL LIVE FEED
GOD CANDIDATES APPEAR

/ 12:53

00 / 25:01

再生 (K)

THEY EACH REFLECT A FACET OF MODERN LIFE...

...BUT THEY'RE SO SHALLOW.

IS GOD GOING TO BE CHOSEN A

...WHAT IS THE DIRECTION THAT HUMANITY IS ABOUT TO TAKE?

...AT THIS POINT, I DON'T REALLY CARE ABOUT THAT AFTER ALL.

BUT...

I THINK THAT BEING A GOD CANDIDATE IS SUCH A THRILLING EXPERIENCE...

I THINK THAT IF EVERYONE COULD FEEL THIS KIND OF VITALITY, THE WORLD WOULD BE A MORE FUN PLACE TO LIVE.

EVERY SINGLE DAY, I FEEL ALIVE AND FULFILLED.

SO I THINK...

...IT WOULD BE GREAT IF I COULD MAKE A WORLD WHERE EVERYONE HAS WHITE ARROWS.

WH...

HUH ?!

WHITE ARROWS ...?!

...

WHAT'S WITH THAT KID?!

I CAN'T BELIEVE HE SAID THAT...

AND NOW PEOPLE AROUND THE WORLD ARE REACTING TO SUSUMU YUITO'S STATEMENT!

WELL, YOU HEARD HIS STATE-MENT LIVE...

That's messed up, Susumu!

986 ★1056

@inzus7kbe

He's just a kid

Doesn't know the sanctity of life

1210 ★1359

@nnmz24hw

It'll turn into a bloodbath

155 ★184

@6fnfxg2gjdi

No! That sounds scary

Top Tweets

All T

@7d5b4jfni

White arrows...?!

235 ★3

@fsaifas

The ones that kill people

196 ★1

@6fnfxg2gjdi

He's talking about THOSE a

910 ★8

@baay-nedggl

I'm all about killing

782 673

@rirulol

The world I've been waiting for

106 173

@odetdencok

I want white arrows!!!!!

265 365

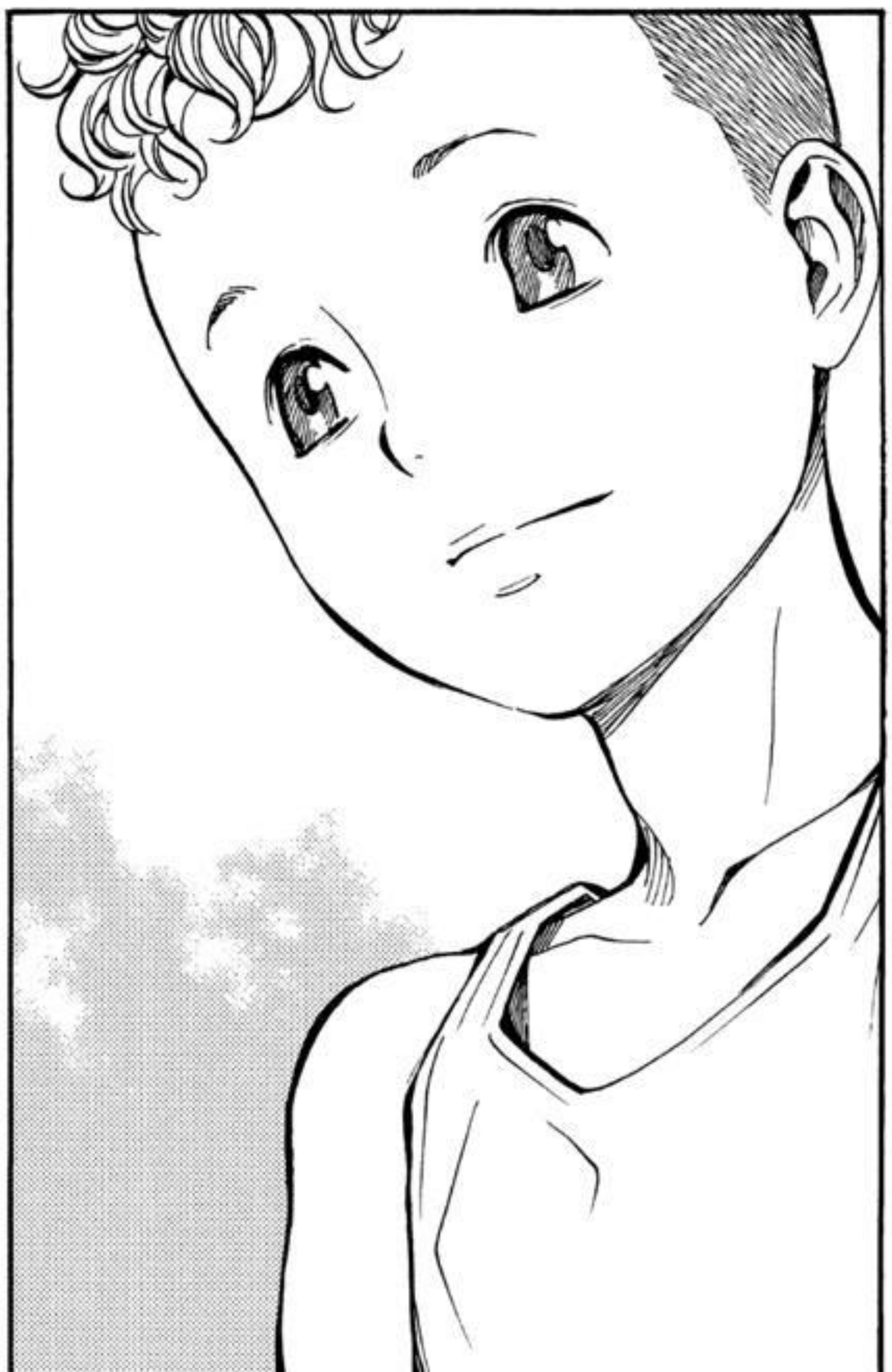
@kakoricco

Hey, America has guns

It's not really any different

4613 3048

@ninnin84695_18



...IF I SUDDENLY BECAME A GOD... BUT I NEVER FOUND MY ANSWER...

...I'VE BEEN CONSTANTLY THINKING ABOUT WHAT I WOULD DO...

AFTER ALL OF THIS STARTED HAPPENING OUT OF NOWHERE...

ALL I CAN SAY IS...

SHWIR R R

WHRRR

...IS ONE OF SMILES, WHERE EVERYONE IS FULL OF WARMTH AND GENTLENESS.

THE WORLD THAT I HOPE FOR...

ONLY RED IS LEFT...

HIS ANGEL WAS SPECIAL RANK, IF I RECALL.

I WONDER WHAT RED'S GOING TO SAY...

IS HE OKAY...?

KAKE-HASHI'S THE LAST ONE...

...BE-
COME
GOD...

IF
I...

THEN...

I WILL DO NOTHING.

HUH?

...

!

BACK TO POINT A, EVERY-ONE.

THE GOD CANDIDATES HAVE JUST RETURNED TO THEIR PREVIOUS LOCATION IN YURAKUCHO.

PLEASE COME AND JOIN THE DISCUSSION.

THE FIVE OF US HAVE SPOKEN NOW.

KTUNK

YOU YOUNG PEOPLE ARE EARNEST TO A FRIGHTENING DEGREE. I WOULD HATE TO BETRAY THAT HONESTY.

YES, I SEE.

'E REPORT: GOD CANDIDATE BULLE

IER: WILL WE HAVE

THE QUESTION IS WHETHER I CAN PERSUADE THEM OR NOT...

OVER TO YURAKU-CHO.

NWA...

SHAK

LET US GO NOW, MUNI.

WHERE ARE YOU GOING?

PROFES-SOR YONEDA?

HUH?

AH

#39 The Future of Humanity

UNIQLO
MENS

...IS THE FINAL GOD CANDIDATE...

SO THIS MAN...

OH!

?

PROFES-SOR YONEDA ...?

P...

I... I'VE READ ALL YOUR BOOKS, PROFES-SOR!

REALLY WHO?

WHOA... IT'S REALLY HIM!

HUH?

REALLY?

?

ONE SECOND.

...

HAVE YOU TESTED THAT?

LIGHT TRAVELS AROUND THE EARTH SEVEN AND A HALF TIMES IN A SINGLE SECOND.

CITIZEN

Solar power
8RDD96

30 LAP·SPLIT MEMORY

LIGHT

...

HOW MANY LAPS DO YOU THINK I MANAGED?

I TESTED IT. I WANTED TO SEE HOW MANY TIMES I COULD TRAVEL AROUND THE PLANET IN A SINGLE SECOND.

CITIZEZ

MODE

START·STOP

30 LAP·SPLIT MEMORY

TRY FOR YOURSELF. YOU'LL SEE HOW INFINITE A SINGLE SECOND CAN BE.

CLIK

SHR RR

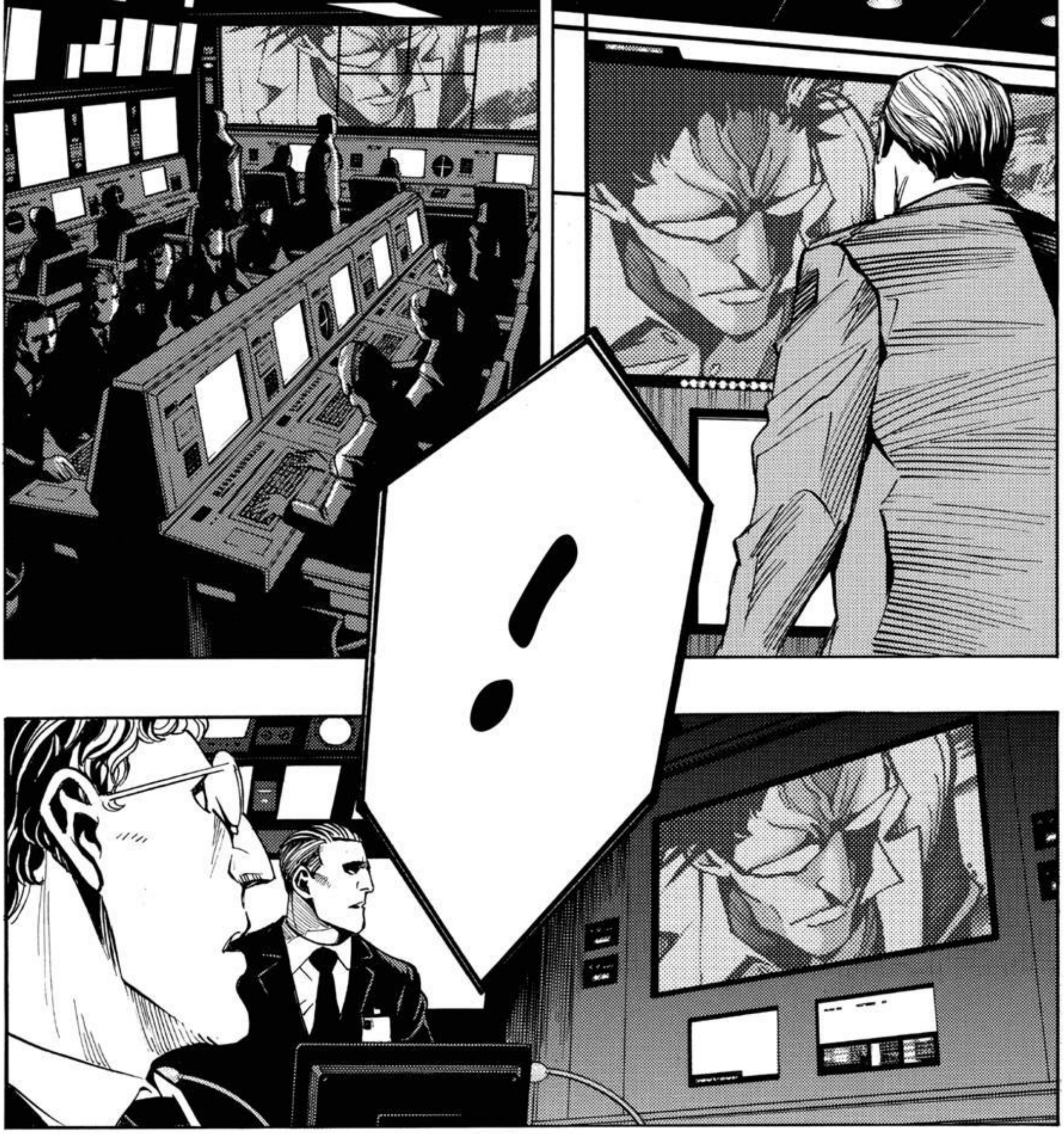
SPECIAL LIVE FEED
GOD CANDIDATES APPEAR
IS GOD GOING TO BE CHOSEN AT LAST?!
ON AIR
EMERGENCY LIVE FEED
IS THAT PROFESSOR YONEDA?
HUH?
YOU'RE RIGHT!
WHAT?! PROFES-SOR YONEDA?!
IS HE A GOD CANDI-DATE?
...
IT'S TRUE ...
THAT IS NONE OTHER THAN DR. YONEDA!
DR. YONEDA HAS APPEARED ON THE SCENE AS A GOD CANDI-DATE!
THIS IS THE FAMOUS DR. GAKU YONEDA WE'RE TALKING ABOUT!!
...HIS SUBJECTS OF STUDY AND INTEREST ARE WIDE-RANGING, AND HE IS SAID TO HAVE ONE OF THE GREATEST MINDS IN THE WORLD!
WINNER OF THE NOBEL PRIZE AND THE PEOPLE'S HONOR AWARD...

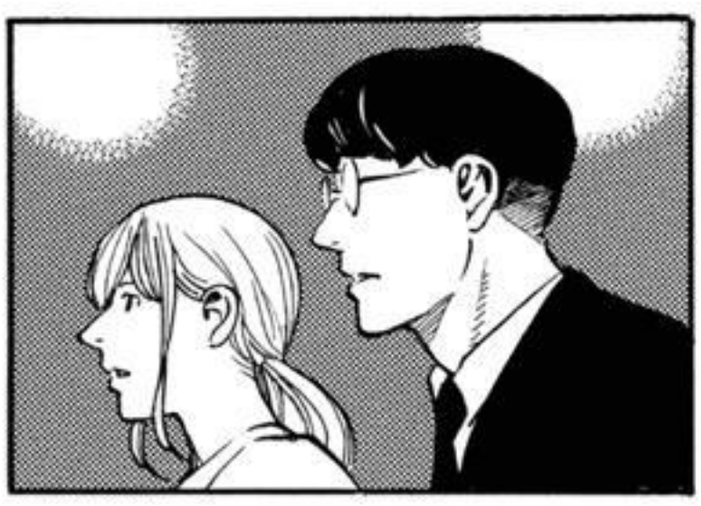
AND I CAN STATE TO THE PUBLIC THAT THIS PROCESS OF CHOOSING A NEW GOD IS ABSOLUTELY REAL, AND NOT A HOAX OF ANY KIND.

I AM GAKU YONEDA.

I, TOO, AM A CANDIDATE.

INDEED.





I SUPPOSE THIS WAS THE "PROOF" HE MENTIONED.
THE PROFESSOR HIMSELF IS A CANDIDATE!

YONEDA...

HOLY CRAP !!

SIX GOOD CANDIDATES APPEAR IN YURAKUCHO

STACBUCKS COFFEE

TSUTAYA

PROFESSOR!!

A CANDIDATE!

IT'S PROFESSOR YONEDA!

THAT'S DR. YONEDA!!

...

AAAAAAA

SO THE FIVE OF YOU AREN'T GOING TO SURROUND ME LIKE THE DRONES?

AHA.

WE'RE HOPING TO SETTLE THE GOD MATTER THROUGH DISCUSSION.

AFTER ALL, HUMANITY IS CAPABLE OF THAT SKILL.

THROUGH TALK. THAT WOULD BE IDEAL.

I GOT WHAT SHE WAS GOING FOR, BUT THERE WAS NO "THERE" THERE.

I STILL THINK IT SHOULD BE YELLOW.

YONEDA, THE ONE GOD!

YEAH, EXACTLY!

WHAT ARE THEY TALKING ABOUT? JUST MAKE **HIM** GOD!

TSUYAYA

YEAH! I MEAN, HE'S WORLD-FAMOUS YONEDA, A NATIONAL TREASURE!

IF THE PROFESSOR THINKS A DIALOGUE IS THE BEST OPTION, THEN I'M SURE HE'S RIGHT.

BLACK

RUN

...

WHAT I'M ABOUT TO SAY IS MERELY MY THEORY. IT IS UP TO YOU TO DECIDE IF I AM RIGHT, AND IF THIS IS WORTH DOING OR NOT.

THEN LET'S GO SOMEWHERE WE CAN RELAX FIRST.

THAT WON'T BE NECESSARY. I WANT THE PEOPLE OF THE WORLD TO UNDERSTAND WHAT IS HAPPENING RIGHT NOW.

THEY'RE HAVING A DISCUSSION RIGHT HERE AND NOW.

GOD IS BEING DECIDED AS WE SPEAK.

ARE WE ABOUT TO SEE HISTORY BEING MADE?

METRO-POLIMAN, AT LEAST, SEEMED TO HAVE IT RIGHT.

FIRST OF ALL, YOU ARE MISUNDER-STANDING SOMETHING CRUCIAL. YOU MIGHT EVEN SAY YOU'VE BEEN MISLED.

...

METRO-POLIMAN DID NOT BELIEVE IN THE EXISTENCE OF GOD.

WHAT DO YOU MEAN?

MISLED? HOW?

BESIDES, HOW CAN YOU EVEN BELIEVE IN SOMETHING AS UNREALISTIC AS GOD?

?

YOU SAY THERE'S NO SUCH THING AS GOD?

THERE IS, BUT ONE WHO'S BEEN **BROUGHT ABOUT.**

A FALSE GOD, ONE NOTHING LIKE THE DEITY YOU IMAGINE...

I HAVE, LIKE, NO IDEA WHAT YOU'RE TALKING ABOUT.

HMM ...

RED... YOU SAID THAT IF YOU BECAME GOD, YOU WOULD DO NOTHING. WHY?

...

THAT'S CORRECT ...

IF ONE OF US BECAME GOD AND AFFECTED HUMAN LIFE AND DEATH FROM HEAVEN, HE WOULD BE NOTHING MORE THAN AN INVISIBLE TYRANT.

HUMAN BEINGS SHOULD LIVE ON THEIR OWN POWER.

HEY, WOULD YOU MIND DUMBING IT DOWN FOR US?

...

THERE IS NO NEED FOR SUCH A GOD.

THEN I ASK THE FIVE OF YOU... NO, ALL OF HUMANITY.

YOU WANT IT SIMPLER ...?

WHICH CAME FIRST, MAN OR GOD?

...

BUT I THOUGHT GOD MADE MAN... HUH?

NO, WAIT ...

I MEAN, THINKING PRACTICALLY, IT'S MAN, RIGHT?

THAT'S JUST A MYTH THAT PEOPLE MADE UP.

WOULDN'T IT BE GOD? FIRST THERE WAS GOD, THEN ADAM AND EVE, RIGHT?

THE EARTH WAS BORN 4.6 BILLION YEARS AGO.

THE UNIVERSE CAME INTO BEING 13.8 BILLION YEARS AGO.

...

A FEW MILLION YEARS AGO, HUMANITY WAS BORN.

THE PLANET DEVELOPED WATER, WHICH LED TO MICROORGANISMS THAT EVOLVED INTO FISH, AMPHIBIANS AND REPTILES.

THE CONCEPT OF GODS DEVELOPED AS WE NEEDED SOMEONE TO LISTEN TO THOSE PRAYERS.

WE HUNTED...

...RAISED CROPS...

...AND BEGAN TO PRAY TO THE HEAVENS FOR MORE FOOD TO FEED OURSELVES.

...

THAT WOULD MEAN GOD CREATED THE UNIVERSE. SO WHERE WAS GOD BEFORE THE UNIVERSE EXISTED? THAT IDEALIZED VIEW IS CENTURIES BEHIND MODERN DEBATE.

EVERY-THING...?

WAIT, ISN'T IT THE OTHER WAY AROUND? DIDN'T GOD CREATE EVERY-THING?

I DON'T KNOW ABOUT THAT...

BUT THERE **IS** A GOD RIGHT NOW, ISN'T THERE?

IF YOU CLAIM THAT MANKIND CREATED GOD, THEN THAT'S THE END OF THE DISCUSSION.

NATURAL DISASTERS ARE THE ANGER OF THE GODS. BUMPER CROPS ARE THE BLESSING OF THE GODS.

WE CREATED A VARIETY OF RELIGIONS AND MYTHOLOGIES.

THIS WAS AN INEVITABLE, NECESSARY AND UNDERSTANDABLE STEP FOR HUMANITY TO TAKE.

MORALS, COMMANDMENTS, GRATITUDE... ALL OF THESE TEACHINGS HAVE SERVED TO ADVANCE HUMAN CIVILIZATION, YOU COULD SAY.

THE CONCEPT OF GOD IS THE IDEAL TARGET FOR THE ACT OF WORSHIP.

THIS IS NOT MY THEORY PER SE, BUT A SIMPLE, COMMONLY SHARED UNDERSTANDING OF HUMAN HISTORY. DOES THAT MAKE SENSE?

I UNDERSTAND WHAT YOU'VE SAID.

YEAH, PRETTY MUCH.

YOU SAID WE WERE BEING "MISLED." EXPLAIN THAT PART.

THERE ARE MORE PEOPLE THAN EVER NOW WHO DO NOT BELIEVE IN THE EXISTENCE OF GODS OR A SINGLE GOD. CONSIDER THE WAY THAT MOST OF YOU ADMITTED GOD WAS A HUMAN CREATION.

WE HAVE PUT SATELLITES AND SPACE STATIONS INTO ORBIT. HOW CAN ONE BELIEVE IN THE EXISTENCE OF HEAVEN AND GOD? NO ASTRONAUT HAS RETURNED WITH STORIES ABOUT PASSING THROUGH THE HEAVENLY KINGDOM ON THE WAY TO OUTER SPACE.

THIS IS ONLY NATURAL. WITH THE RAPID PACE OF SCIENCE AND MEDICINE, WE REGULARLY PERFORM SURGERIES AND GENETIC MANIPU-LATION, THINGS THAT WERE ONCE HELD TO BE HERESY AGAINST GOD.

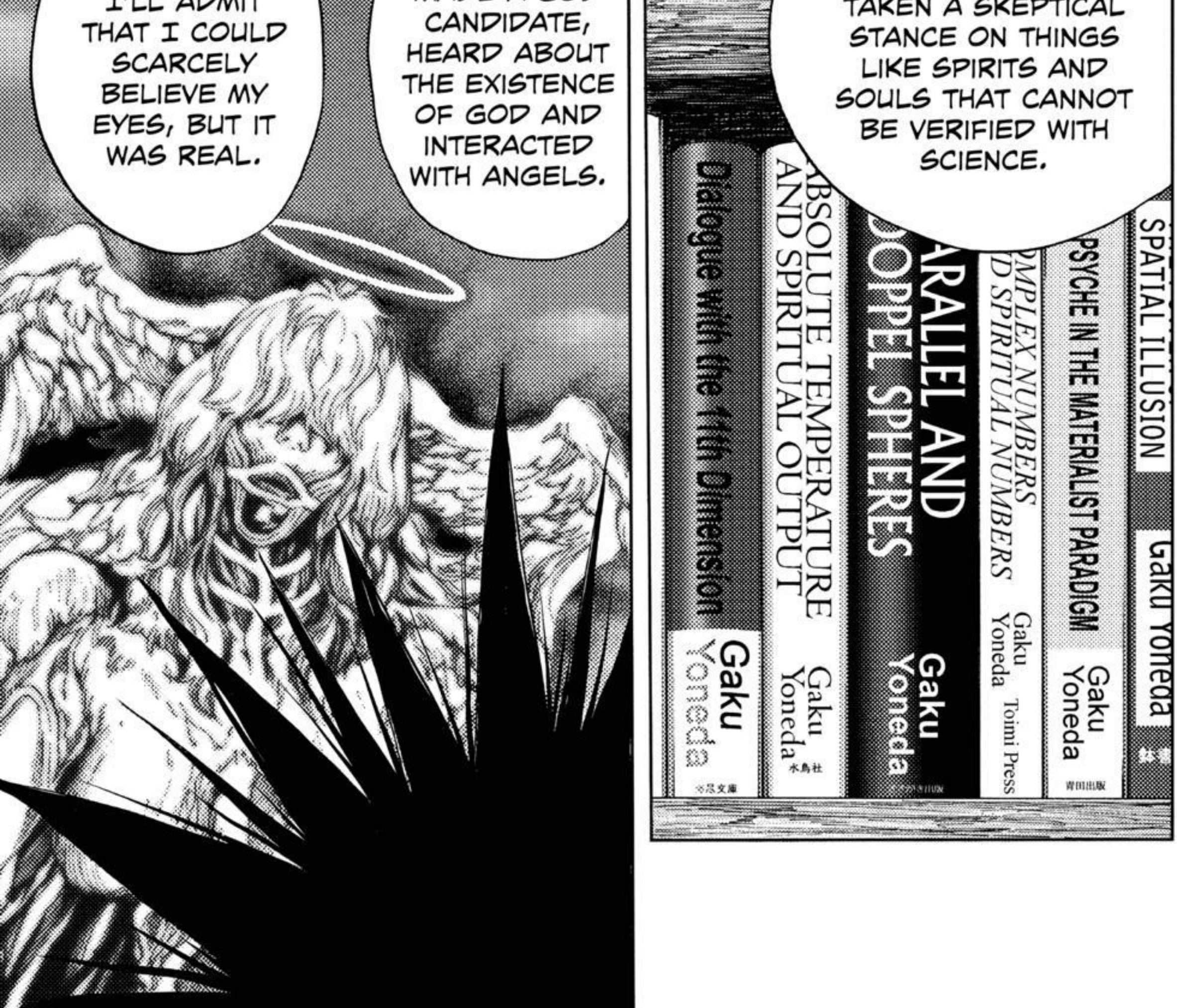
THERE'S NOTHING MORE GALLING TO HEAR THAN THAT, IF YOU **ARE** A PERSON OF FAITH.

NORMALLY, I WOULDN'T THINK IT APPROPRIATE TO ANNOUNCE TO THE ENTIRE WORLD THAT GOD DOES NOT EXIST.

AT FIRST, I'LL ADMIT THAT I COULD SCARCELY BELIEVE MY EYES, BUT IT WAS REAL.

BUT THEN I WAS MADE A GOD CANDIDATE, HEARD ABOUT THE EXISTENCE OF GOD AND INTERACTED WITH ANGELS.

IN MY OWN WRITINGS, I HAVE TAKEN A SKEPTICAL STANCE ON THINGS LIKE SPIRITS AND SOULS THAT CANNOT BE VERIFIED WITH SCIENCE.



...THAT I MUST ADMIT THERE IS AN INVISIBLE SOURCE OF ENERGY THAT EXUDES FROM EVERY HUMAN BEING.

MEANING ...

SHM

CLEARLY, THERE EXISTS A TYPE OF ENERGY CREATED SOLELY BY THE HUMAN IMAGINATION.

ANGELS AND GODS EXIST--THIS IS SIMPLY TRUE. WE ARE FLYING WITH WINGS AND SHOOTING ARROWS-- THIS IS SIMPLY TRUE.

LIKE RADIO WAVES, FOR EXAMPLE.

INVISIBLE ENERGY? LIKE...

SEE, WE SCIENTISTS ARE CAPABLE OF EXPLAINING THIS HUMAN-CREATED ENERGY IN THEORETICAL TERMS ONLY... BUT EVENTUALLY IT WILL BE PROVEN IN A HARDER SENSE.

YOU USE YOUR SMARTPHONES TO TALK TO PEOPLE, WATCH VIDEOS AND SO ON. IT IS A COMMONLY ACCEPTED PART OF MODERN LIFE. THERE IS NO MYSTERY OR WONDER TO IT.

BUT ALMOST NO ONE CAN EXPLAIN PRECISELY HOW IT ALL WORKS.

MY QUESTION IS WHETHER WE **SHOULD** CALL IT GOD OR NOT.

LOOK, YOU DON'T HAVE TO CALL IT ENERGY OR WHATEVER. WE KNOW GOD EXISTS, SO YOU CAN JUST ADMIT IT'S GOD.

I THINK THAT WE SHOULD CALL THIS PHENOMENON A **CREATURE** CREATED BY MANKIND.

CREATURE ...?

CREA•TURE, N

- A LEGENDARY ANIMAL.
  A CREATION.

- A MONSTER OR BEAST.

- SOMETHING CREATED B
  MANKIND OR THE DEVIL

UMM ...

"AN IMAGINARY BEING, BEAST OR MONSTER..."

SO IT WRANGLED ALL OF ITS ANGELS INTO STARTING A PROCESS TO CHOOSE A NEW GOD.

THIS GOD'S ENERGY RISES AND FALLS RELATIVE TO THE NUMBER OF PEOPLE WHO BELIEVE IN IT, AND IT IS CURRENTLY NEAR THE POINT OF DYING OUT.

EMPTY

AND IT WOULD SEEM THAT THE SOURCE OF THIS CREATURE'S POWER IS THE ENERGY OF THE PEOPLE WHO BELIEVE IN GOD.

SO FAR THE PLAN HAS WORKED OUT. NEWS OF THIS GOD-CHOOSING PROCESS HAS GONE AROUND THE WORLD.

AND WHEN ONE OF THE CANDIDATES BECOMES GOD, MANY, MANY PEOPLE WILL AGAIN **BELIEVE** IN THE CONCEPT OF GOD.

SO THAT... IT WOULDN'T DISAPPEAR ...?

CORRECT.

WHAT I AM TRYING TO SAY IS...

...THE AGE OF PRAYING TO GOD HAS COME TO AN END.

WHEN YOU COME ACROSS A PROBLEM, DO NOT PRAY, BUT THINK OF A SOLUTION AS QUICKLY AS POSSIBLE.

DON'T SAY, "HELP ME, GOD." SAY, "HELP ME, SOMEONE."

IF YOU MUST PRAY TO GOD FOR FORGIVENESS, ADMIT YOUR CRIMES AND BE JUDGED FOR THEM INSTEAD.

L GOD CANDIDATE IS GAKU YO

THE FUTURE IS CRUCIAL TO HUMANITY. WE MUST ALWAYS CONSIDER WHAT IS BEST TO DO NEXT.

HUMAN KNOWLEDGE, SCIENCE AND MEDICINE WILL NOT FAIL TO SURVIVE ANY DISASTER. IN THE NEAR FUTURE, EVEN IMMORTALITY WILL BECOME A DISTINCT POSSIBILITY.

WE MUST UTILIZE THIS OPPORTUNITY TO MAKE OUR SELECTION AS GOD CANDIDATES HOLD TRUE MEANING.

SO WE OUGHT TO MAKE IT CLEAR THAT THERE IS NO GOD--AND NO NEED FOR GOD.

THE FINAL GOD CANDIDATE IS GAKU YONEDA?!

STACBUCKS COFFEE

THIS WORLD DOES NOT NEED GODS.

THAT'S RIGHT.

40 In the Crosshairs

GOD IS UNNECESSARY. GOD DOES NOT EXIST.

THE AGE IN WHICH WE NEEDED GODS IS OVER.

AT THIS VERY MOMENT, CIVILIZATION IS ADVANCING AND EVOLVING AT AN EVER-FASTER RATE.

THERE IS NOTHING TO BE GAINED FROM PRAYING TO GOD. OUR TIME IS TOO IMPORTANT TO WASTE IN THAT WAY.

EMPTY

I HEREBY DECLARE THAT THE "GOD" WE KNOW NOW IS MERELY A CREATURE, AND BY REFUSING TO BECOME WHAT WE CALL GOD, WE CAN THEREFORE PROVE THAT THERE IS NO GOD.

FAITH IS A PERSONAL CHOICE.

SO HE'S SAYING THAT'S A WASTE OF TIME, RIGHT?

BUT... I BELIEVE IN GOD. I GO TO THE SHRINE.

I MEAN, I KNOW THAT PRAYING TO GOD IS SORT OF THE LAST RESORT...

THERE'S... NO GOD...

...

THEY'RE MAKING THEIR WAY AROUND THE WORLD...

I THINK THAT COMING FROM DR. YONEDA, THESE STATEMENTS COULD BE VERY INFLUENTIAL.

朝

PREMIUM

HAAA...

FFH...

HAAA...

FFH...

DISTANCE, 400.

NO SIGN OF MOVE-MENT.

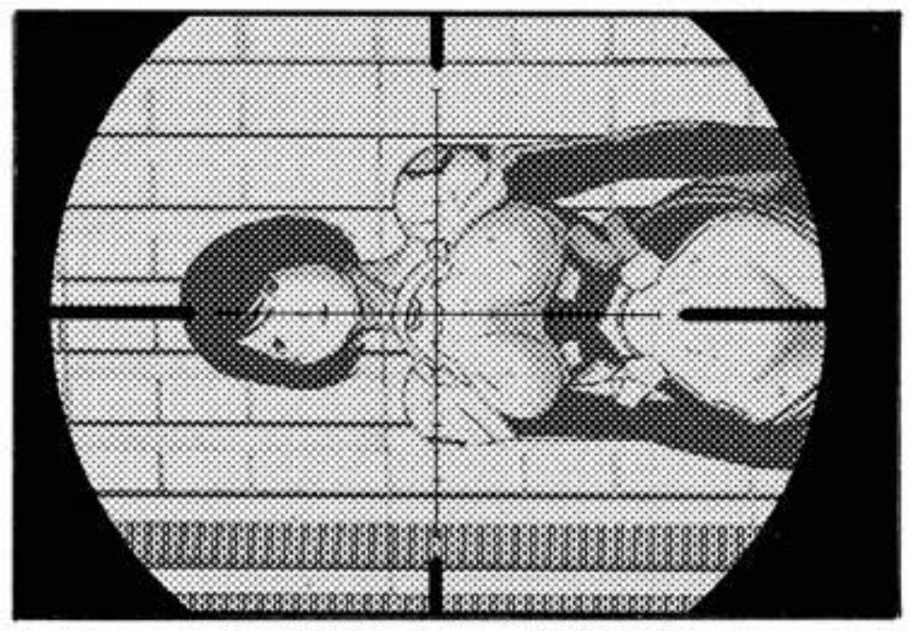
I'VE GOT A CLEAR SHOT.

WATCH OUT FOR STRANGE ACTIONS. DON'T TAKE YOUR EYES OFF THEM.

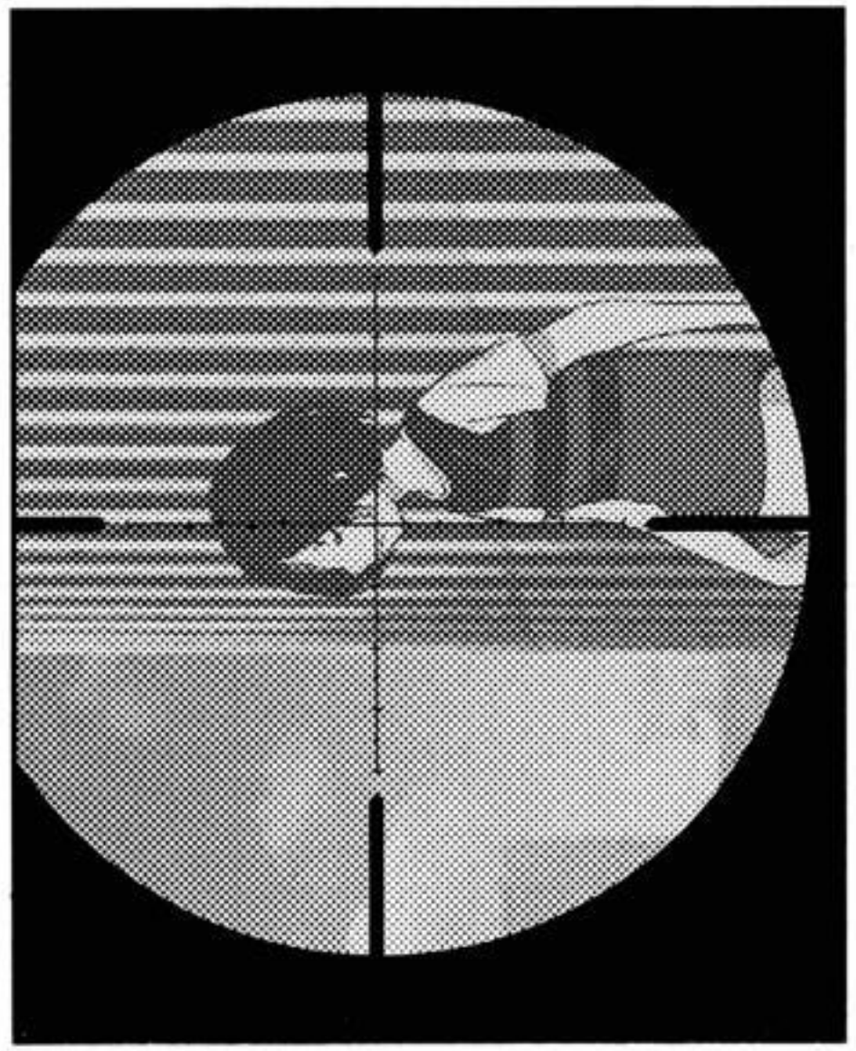
WE DON'T KNOW EXACTLY WHAT THE TARGETS ARE CAPABLE OF.

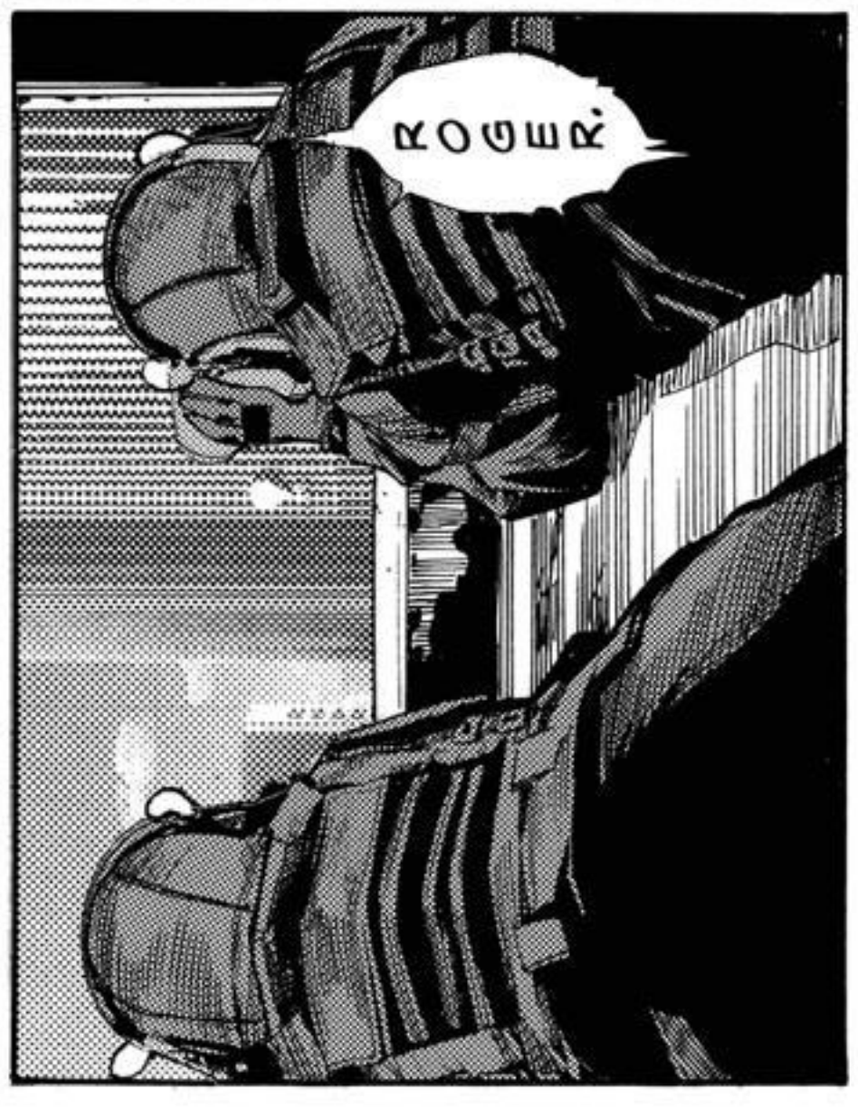
HOLD ON. ORDERS ARE FOR ALL SIX AT ONCE.

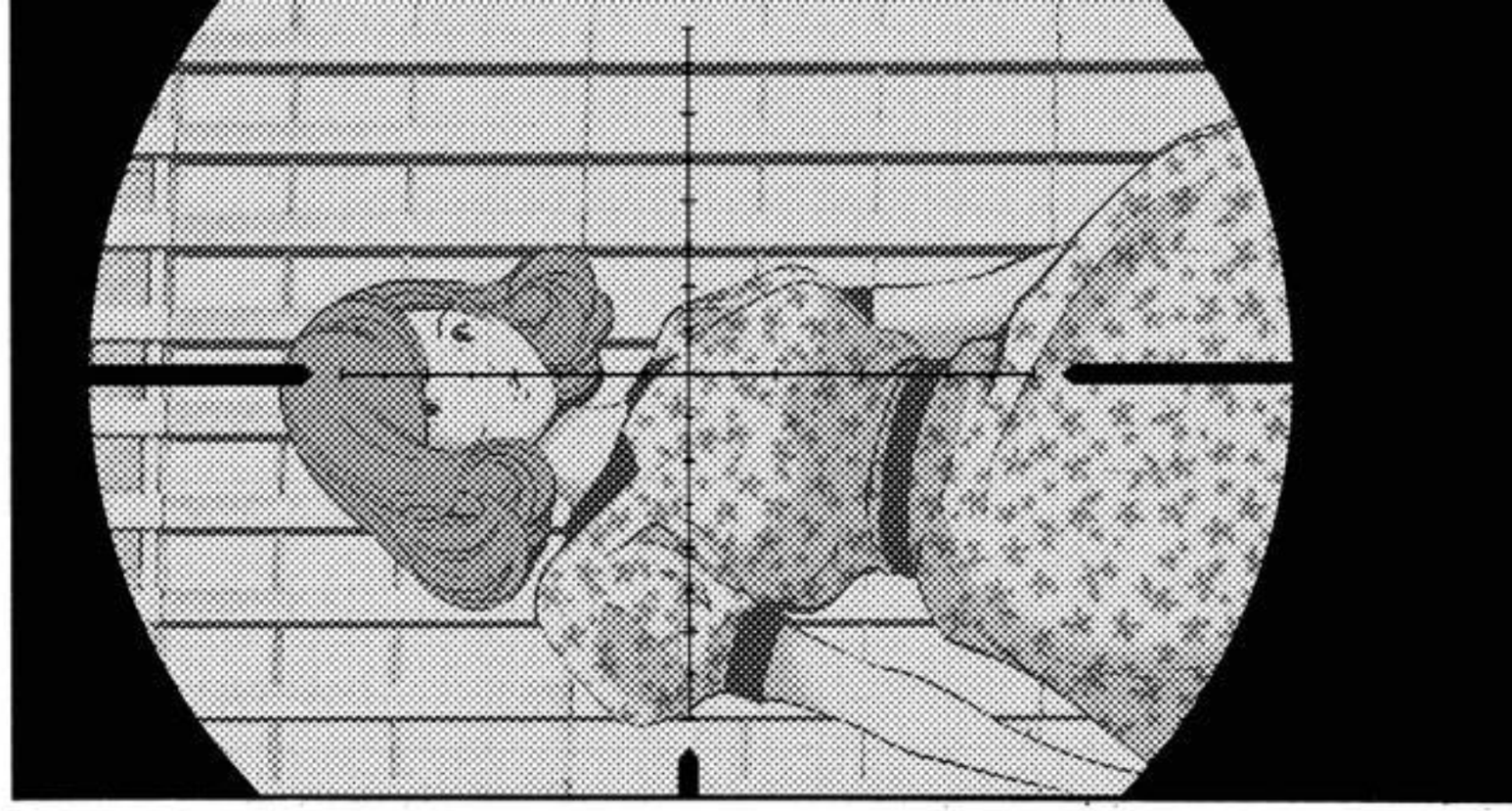
ROGER



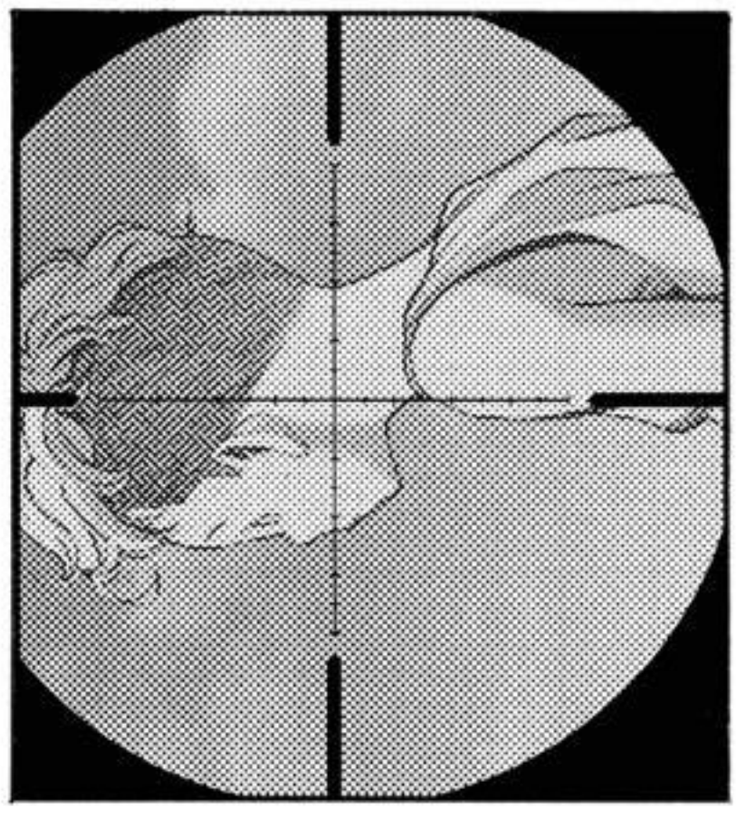
ROGER

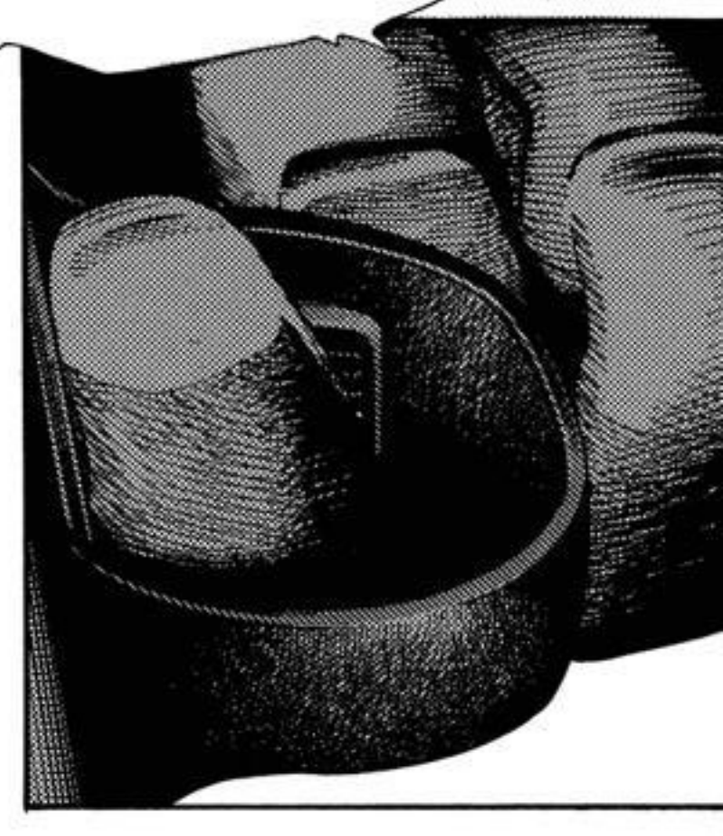


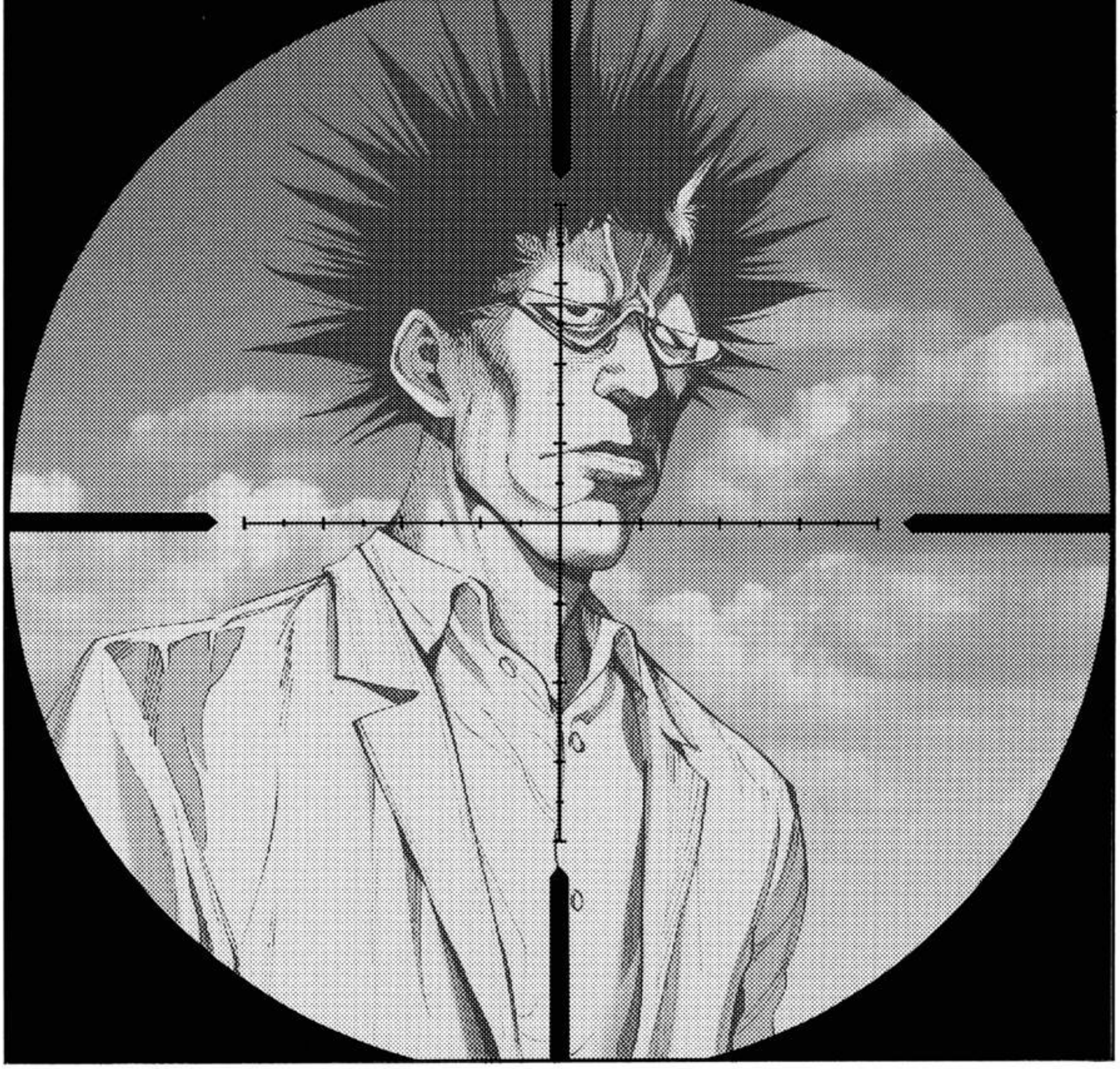

ROGER



ROGER







...BY THE WEAKENED GOD BUILT FROM THE PRAYERS OF MANKIND.

...THERE ARE THE ANGELS BEING USED...

AND THEN ...

MUNI'S PLOT IS TO DESTROY THE FALSE CELESTIAL REALM THAT CREATES NOTHING.

DESTROY THE CELESTIAL REALM...

...

THIS IS PRETTY INTERESTING, HUH?

ANGELS BEING USED...

PRAYERS OF MANKIND...

IT IS SAID THAT AT THE BEGINNING OF THE HEAVENLY WORLD, GOD WAS SUPPORTED BY HUMAN PRAYERS.

WHAT IS IT, REVEL?

...

THAT IS SOMETHING THAT A SPECIAL-RANK ANGEL OUGHT TO KNOW.

HEY, THIS IS STARTING TO SOUND LIKE YOU'RE CALLING ME STUPID.

BUT NOT BEING SAVVIER TO MIND GAMES MAKES HER UNSUITED TO THIS SORT OF COMPETITION.

NASSE IS "SPECIAL" IN THE SENSE THAT SHE CAN BE CARE-FREE AND SIMPLE WITHOUT GETTING BOGGED DOWN IN THE DETAILS.

YOU SAY THAT THERE MAY BE AN ANGEL AMONG THE 13 HERE WHO MIGHT WANT TO PREVENT YOU FROM ACHIEVING IT?

I UNDER-STAND YOUR GOAL NOW, MUNI...

NWA.

AND WHAT IS THAT ANGEL'S SPECIAL POWER?

PROFESSOR MERITUS ONEDA

Laboratory One

MEANING MUNI DOESN'T KNOW...

THE RESPONSE IS SILENCE...

OR THE ANGEL WHO SUPPOSEDLY KNOWS EVERYTHING BEHIND THE CELESTIAL WORLD...?

IS IT THE SPECIAL-RANK ANGEL WHO SEEMS TO KNOW NOTHING...?

IN EITHER CASE...

...

I AGREE ...

I THINK THAT IT'S BIZARRE FOR HUMANITY TO CHOOSE GOD.

...TO BE OVER-BEARING.

BUT I ALSO FIND YOUR STATEMENT THAT "GOD DOESN'T EXIST"...

IF HUMANITY CREATED GOD, LIKE YOU THEORIZE, THAT'S STILL GOD.

I MEAN, THERE IS A GOD.

YEAH, EXACTLY.

AND I MEAN, THERE ARE ALL KINDS OF GODS AROUND THE WORLD.

IN FACT, IF A GOD WAS BORN FROM THE PRAYERS OF PEOPLE, WOULDN'T THAT MAKE HIM, LIKE, SUPER LEGIT?

RIGHT?

...THAT GOD IS NECES-SARY.

I THINK ...

I THINK GOD IS NECESSARY, BUT ISN'T REAL.

SANTA?

I THINK IT'S KIND OF LIKE SANTA CLAUS.

WAIT... WHICH IS IT? THAT'S A CONTRA-DICTION.

HUH?

WHEN I WAS A LITTLE GIRL, I BELIEVED IN SANTA CLAUS.

BUT OVER TIME, I BEGAN TO REALIZE THAT HE WAS JUST SOMETHING PEOPLE HAD MADE UP.

AND THAT'S OKAY. HE'S A SOURCE OF DREAMS AND INSPIRATION. GOD IS THE SAME WAY.

...AND ON NEW YEAR'S, WE VISIT THE SHRINE, LINE UP TO PRAY AND DRAW A PERSONAL FORTUNE FOR THE YEAR AHEAD.

ON CHRIST-MAS IN JAPAN, WE EAT CAKE AND EXCHANGE PRESENTS...

BUT...

I KNOW.

THOSE ARE JUST ANNUAL CUSTOMS THAT WE ENJOY. THEY HAVE NOTHING TO DO WITH WHETHER ANY GODS EXIST OR NOT.

I THINK THAT'S FINE THE WAY IT IS. THERE'S NOTHING WRONG WITH PUTTING YOUR HANDS TOGETHER TO PRAY TO ANY GOD.

THERE'S NO GOD WHO'S GOING TO MAKE YOUR WISH COME TRUE.

BUT IT DOES ABSOLUTELY NOTHING.

SO IF NONE OF THE SIX OF US HAS TO BE GOD, I'M PERFECTLY FINE WITH THAT.

THERE DOESN'T HAVE TO BE.

I THINK EACH AND EVERY PERSON HAS A GOD IN THEIR OWN HEARTS, AND THAT'S OKAY THE WAY IT IS.

SAKI...

IT WILL LEAD TO THE CREATION OF A DESPOTIC GOD.

YEAH... IF ONE OF US BECOMES GOD UNDER THESE CIRCUMSTANCES, PEOPLE WILL COME FLOCKING TO PRAY, CLINGING TO THE HOPE THAT OUR SPECIAL POWERS CREATE.

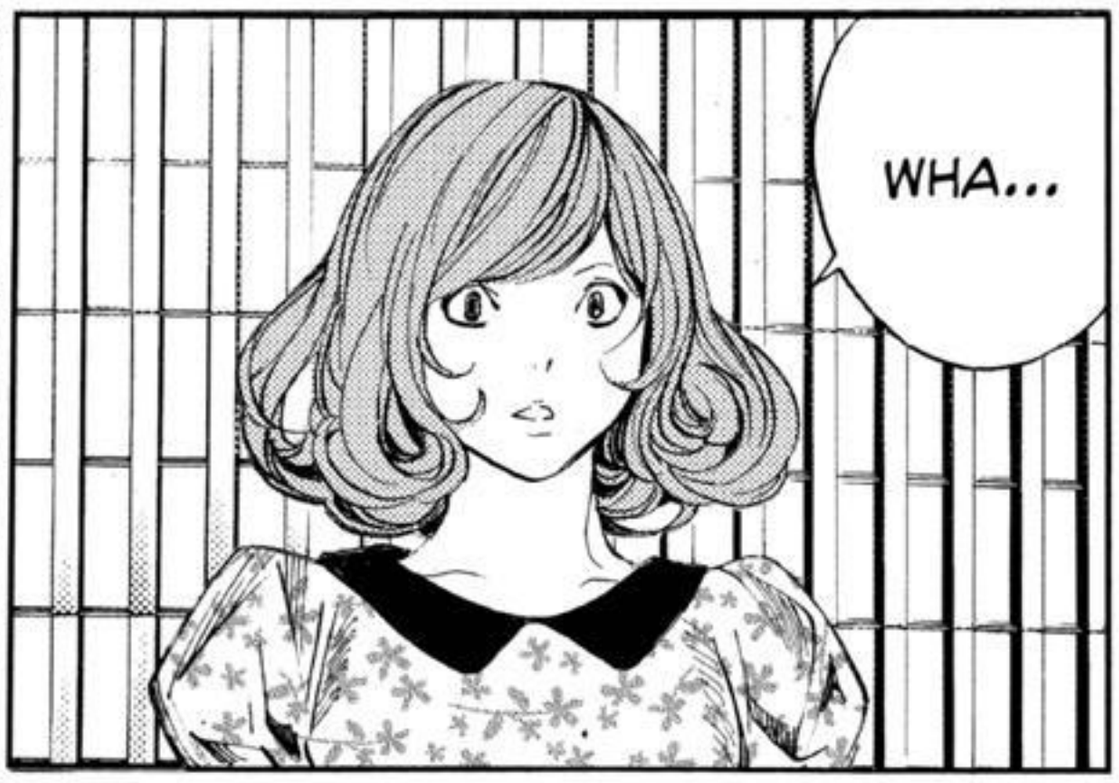
H-HEY, WHERE ARE YOU...

SHH...

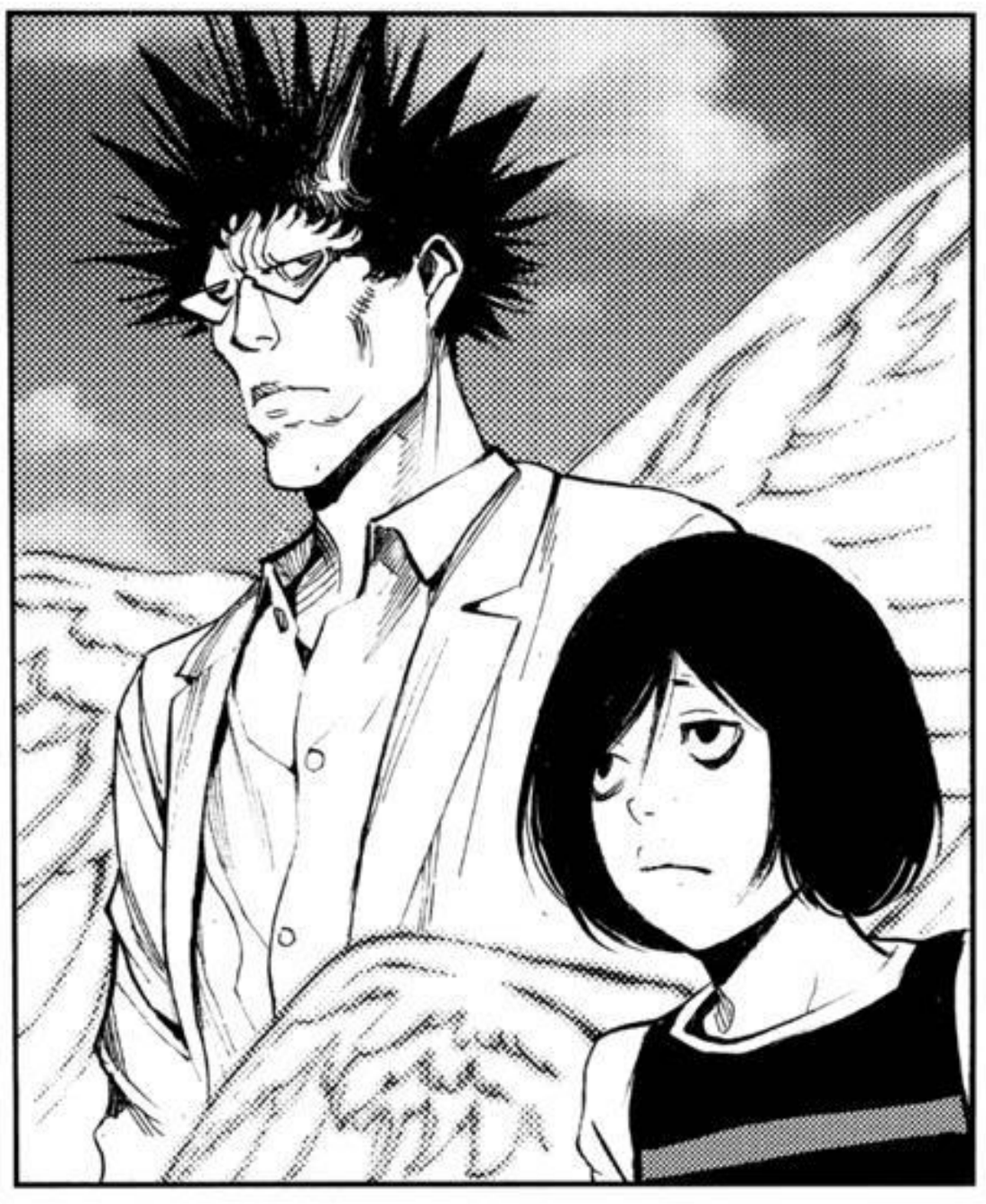
AND AFTER DR. YONEDA'S SPEECH, I THINK A MAJORITY OF PEOPLE WOULD AGREE WITH HIM.

LOOK, I NEVER BELIEVED IN GOD FROM THE START.

SO I'M ON HIS SIDE.


WHA...

IF PROFESSOR YONEDA BECOMES GOD, I'M FINE WITH IT. I DUNNO ABOUT THE OTHER FIVE...
IF YOU ASK ME, YELLOW'S CONCEPT OF A "GOD INSIDE THE HEART" MAKES THE MOST SENSE.
HUH?
WHEN YOU THINK ABOUT IT, WHETHER GOD IS REAL OR NOT KIND OF DOESN'T MATTER, DOES IT?



ISN'T THIS JUST YOU NOT WANTING TO BE GOD?

NO!

AND... AND YOU'RE ONE TO TALK! YOU WANT SOMEONE ELSE TO BECOME GOD WHO WILL LET YOU KEEP YOUR RED ARROWS, DON'T YOU?

ARE THEY FIGHTING?

IS THAT WOMAN TRYING TO CHEAT HER WAY THROUGH LIFE?

...

B-
BUT...

OGARO SAID IT, RIGHT? ONE OF THE CANDIDATES ***HAS TO*** BECOME GOD.

DO YOU KNOW OF A WAY THAT NOBODY BECOMES GOD, PROFES-SOR?

...

OF COURSE. I HAVE ALREADY DEDUCED THE METHOD.

I REALLY DO... NEED THE RED ARROWS ...

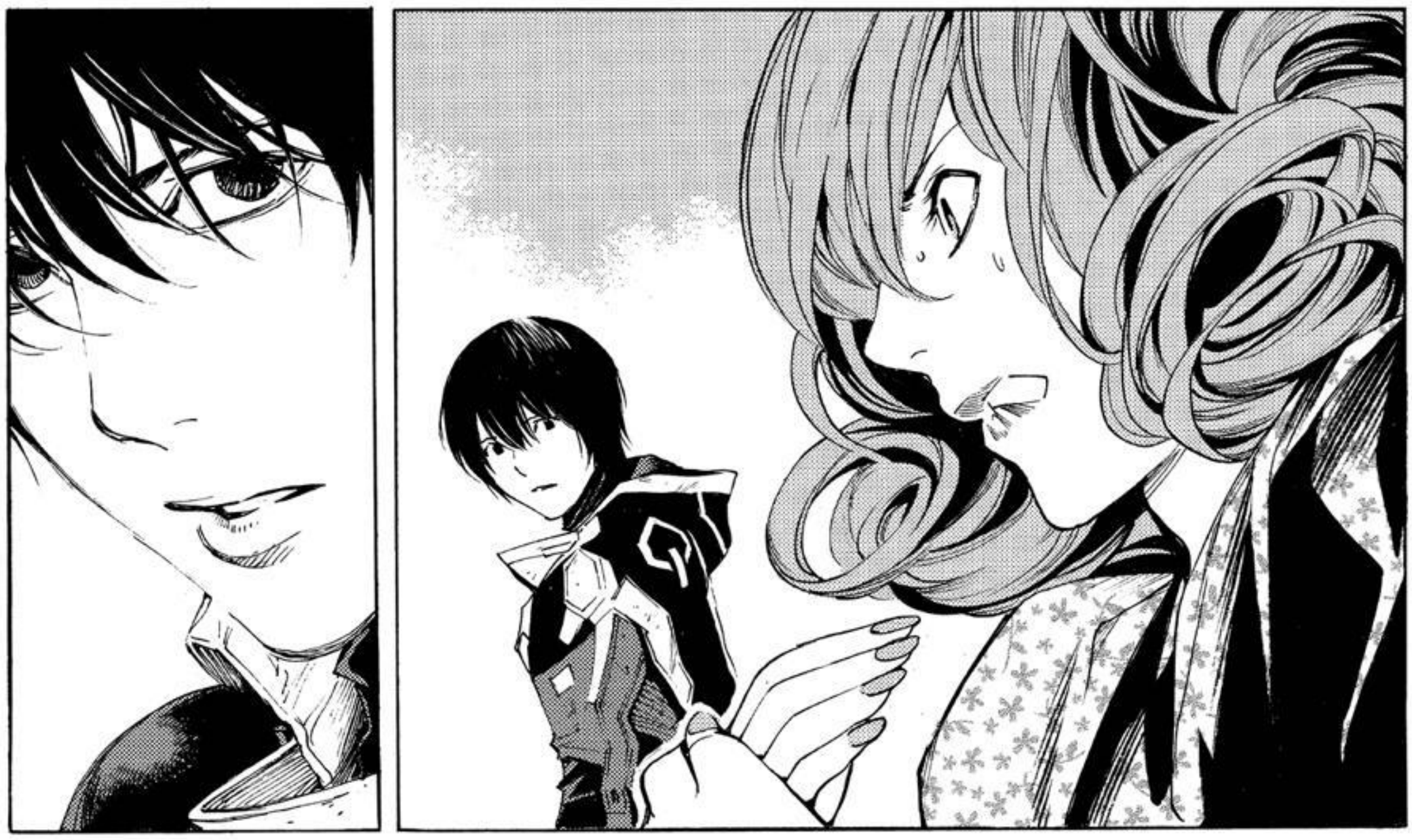
BUT ...

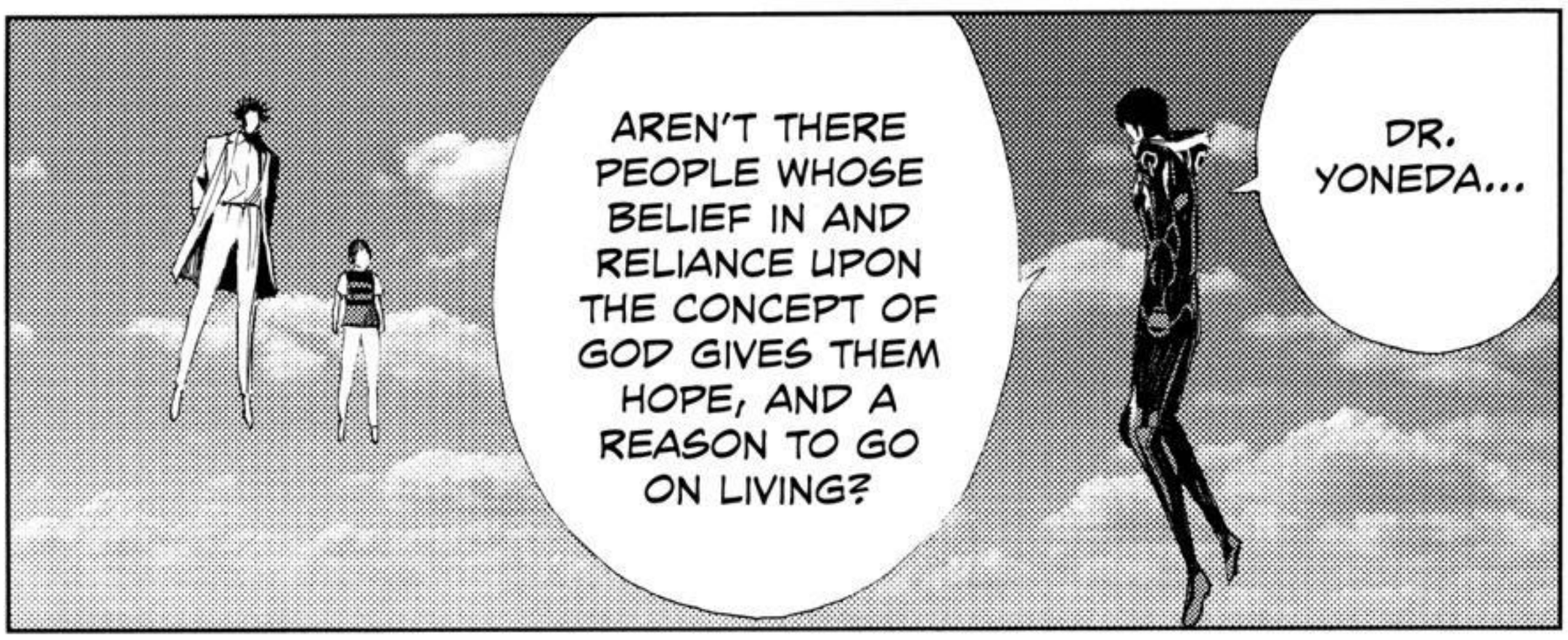
BUT I...

PLEASE, *SOME-BODY* HAS TO BE GOD!

I CAN'T GO ON LIVING WITHOUT THEM AT THIS POINT!

PLEASE!!




AREN'T THERE PEOPLE WHOSE BELIEF IN AND RELIANCE UPON THE CONCEPT OF GOD GIVES THEM HOPE, AND A REASON TO GO ON LIVING?
DR. YONEDA...

AND WHAT WILL HAPPEN TO THEM IF IT'S COLLECTIVELY DECIDED THAT THERE IS NO GOD...?

BUT THAT'S, WHAT, 0.1 PERCENT OF THE HUMAN RACE?
WELL... I SUP-POSE THERE ARE.

SO I ASSUME THOSE PEOPLE WILL FALL INTO DESPAIR AND COMMIT SUICIDE.

THEY WON'T HAVE ANYTHING TO CLING TO, NOR WILL THEY HAVE THE STRENGTH TO SOLVE THEIR OWN PROBLEMS.

NOTHING WILL CHANGE WHEN THEY PRAY.

THEY WON'T BE ABLE TO REPENT AND BEG FOR FORGIVE-NESS.

THEY WON'T BE ABLE TO BLAME THEIR MISFORTUNE ON GOD.

I AGREE, IT'S INEVITABLE. THOSE WILL BE THE PEOPLE WHO CAN'T KEEP UP WITH THE TIMES.

...

...

INEVITABLE... SUICIDE...

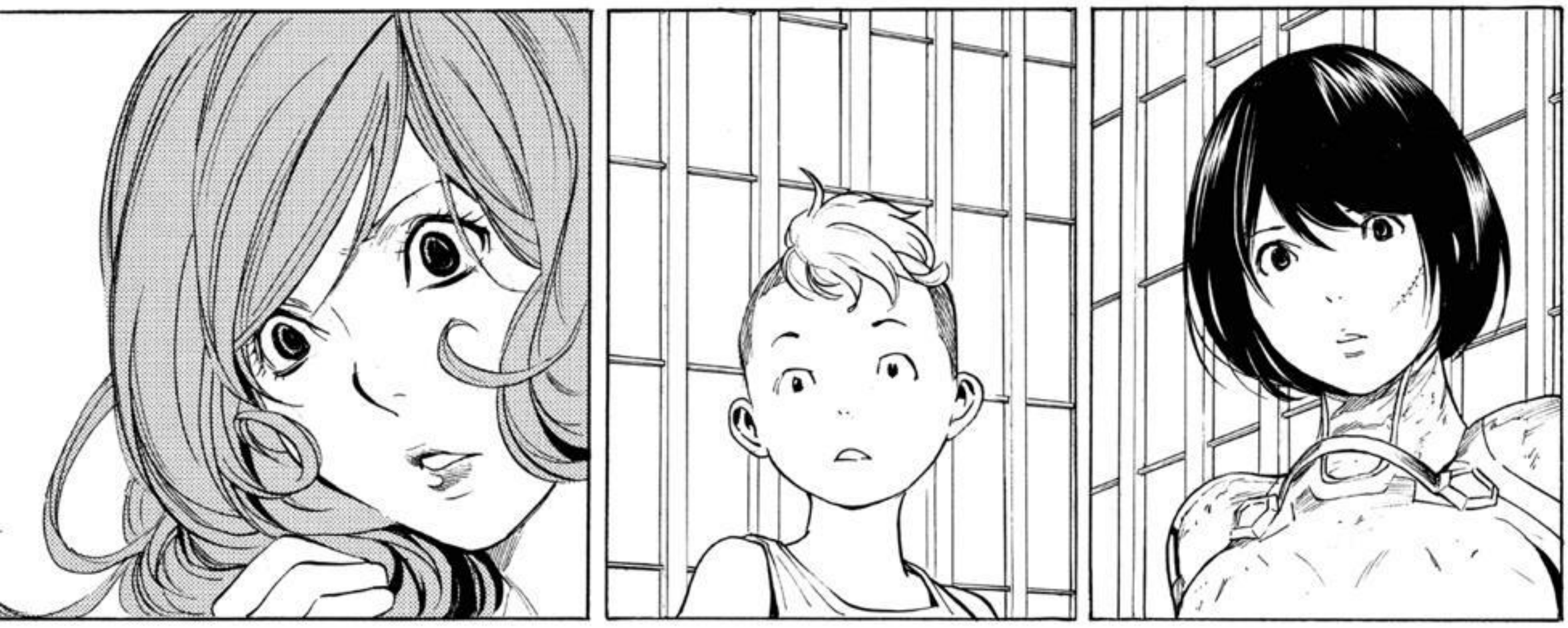
...

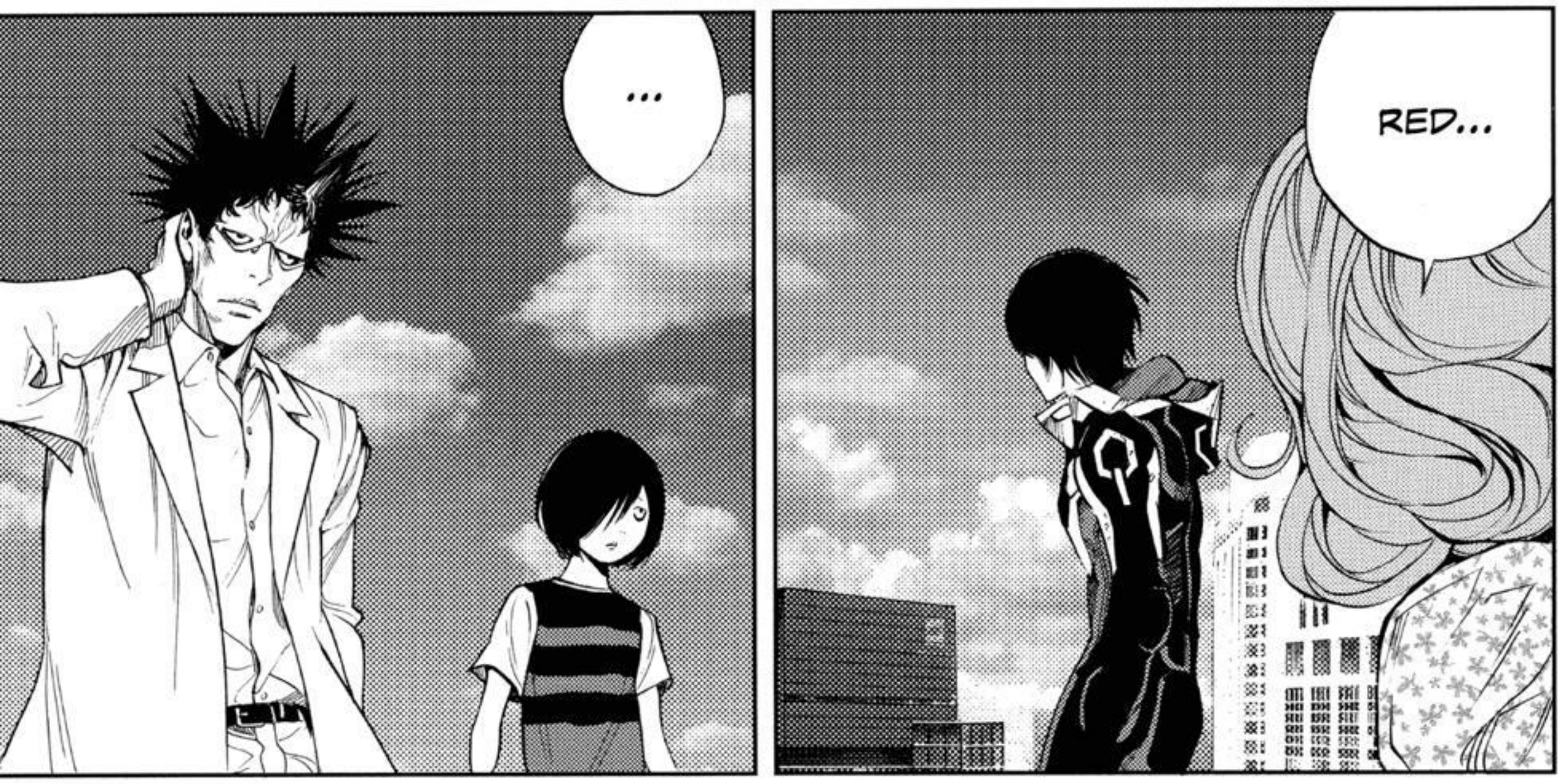
IF THAT'S WHAT WILL HAPPEN ...

SEVEN MILLION DOOMED, JUST FROM ANNOUNCING THAT THERE IS NO GOD...

EVEN 0.1 PERCENT OF THE WORLD'S POPULATION IS SEVEN MILLION PEOPLE...

THEN I WOULD RATHER BECOME GOD JUST TO PREVENT THAT FROM HAPPENING.




...
RED...

ARE YOU SURE ABOUT THAT? WEREN'T YOU MORE FOCUSED ON JUST FINDING YOUR OWN KIND OF NORMAL HAPPINESS?
MIRAI...

...

YOU WANT TO BE GOD, RED ...?

ISN'T IT A BIT LATE FOR THAT?

NO ONE'S GOING TO VOTE FOR YOU.

EXCEPT FOR TEMARI, MAYBE.

AT THE START, YOU WERE SO BOSSY, SAYING THAT IF NO ONE ELSE WAS GOING TO BE GOD, ***YOU'D*** DO IT!

THE DIALOGUE HAS CHANGED MY VIEW.

I STILL WANT TO COMMIT SUICIDE, AND I COULD DO IT WHENEVER, BUT IF I BECOME GOD, IT WOULD BE A PROBLEM FOR THE MAJORITY OF PEOPLE WHO SUPPORT DR. YONEDA'S POSITION.

ENOUGH OF THIS.

FORGET IT. I'LL DO IT.

...

HUH? THE RED WARRIOR'S GONNA BE GOD?

KAKE-HASHI...

SO HE'S COMING AROUND...

YOU WANT TO BE GOD AFTER ALL, RED?

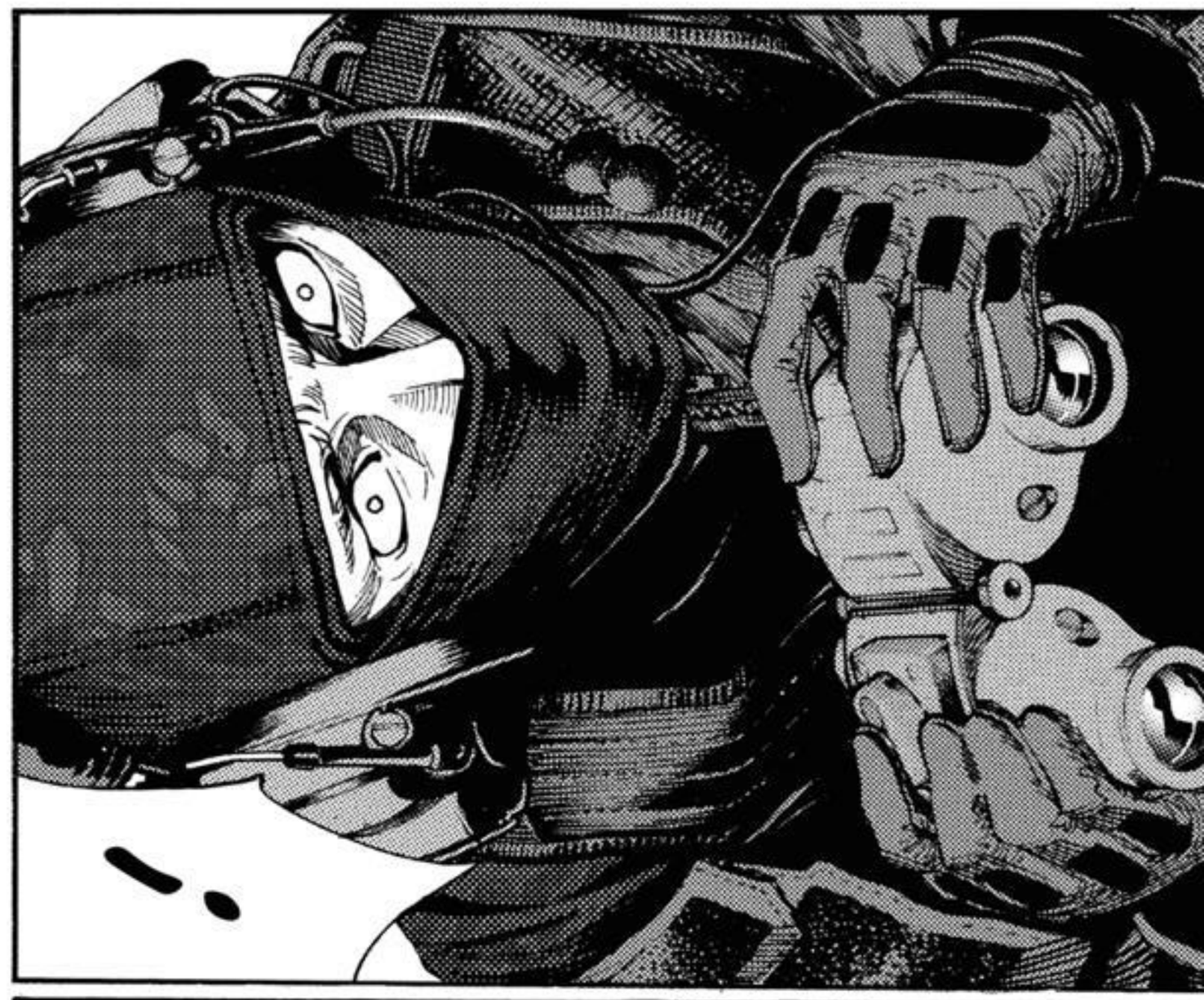
!

SUSUMU ...?

!

SHM

SHIN



HEY, THERE'S A GUY WITH A RIFLE!

THEY'VE BEEN AIMING AT US THE WHOLE TIME!

LOOK, SOME-ONE'S GOT A RIFLE HERE!

THE REAL THING! THAT'S SO COOL!!

OOH, WOW, IT'S LIKE OUT OF A MOVIE!

BUT... THE TARGET'S PROB-ABLY GOT AN ARROW ON US ...

WAIT, DON'T SHOOT!

SHIT!

KEEP THAT GUN ON RED!

AIM AT YOUR TARGETS AS ORDERED!

NO, SUSUMU! GET AWAY!

HEY, CAN I HIT HIM WITH A RED ARROW?

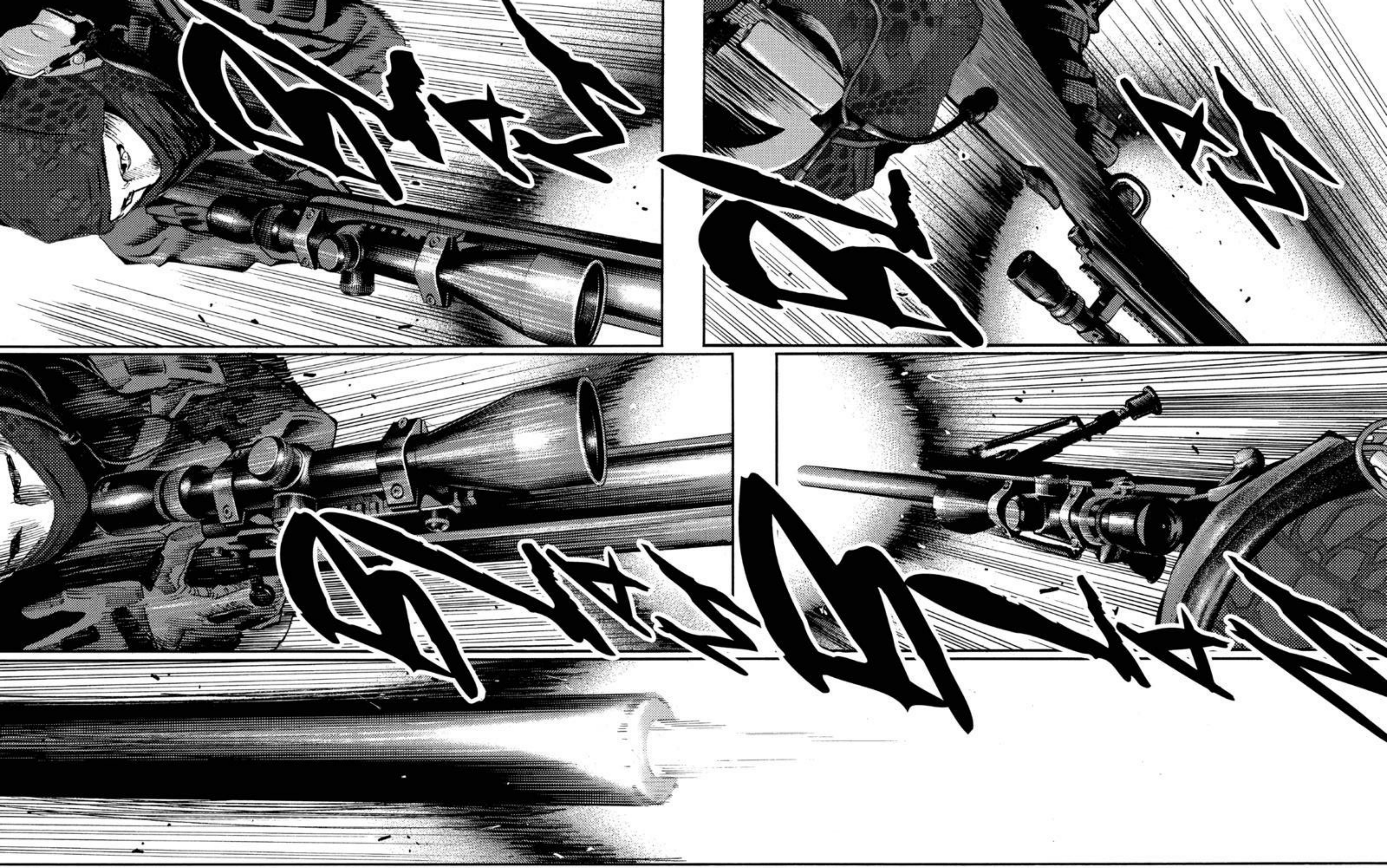
ON RED?

WHAT DOES HE MEAN... "TAR-GETS"?

SHT

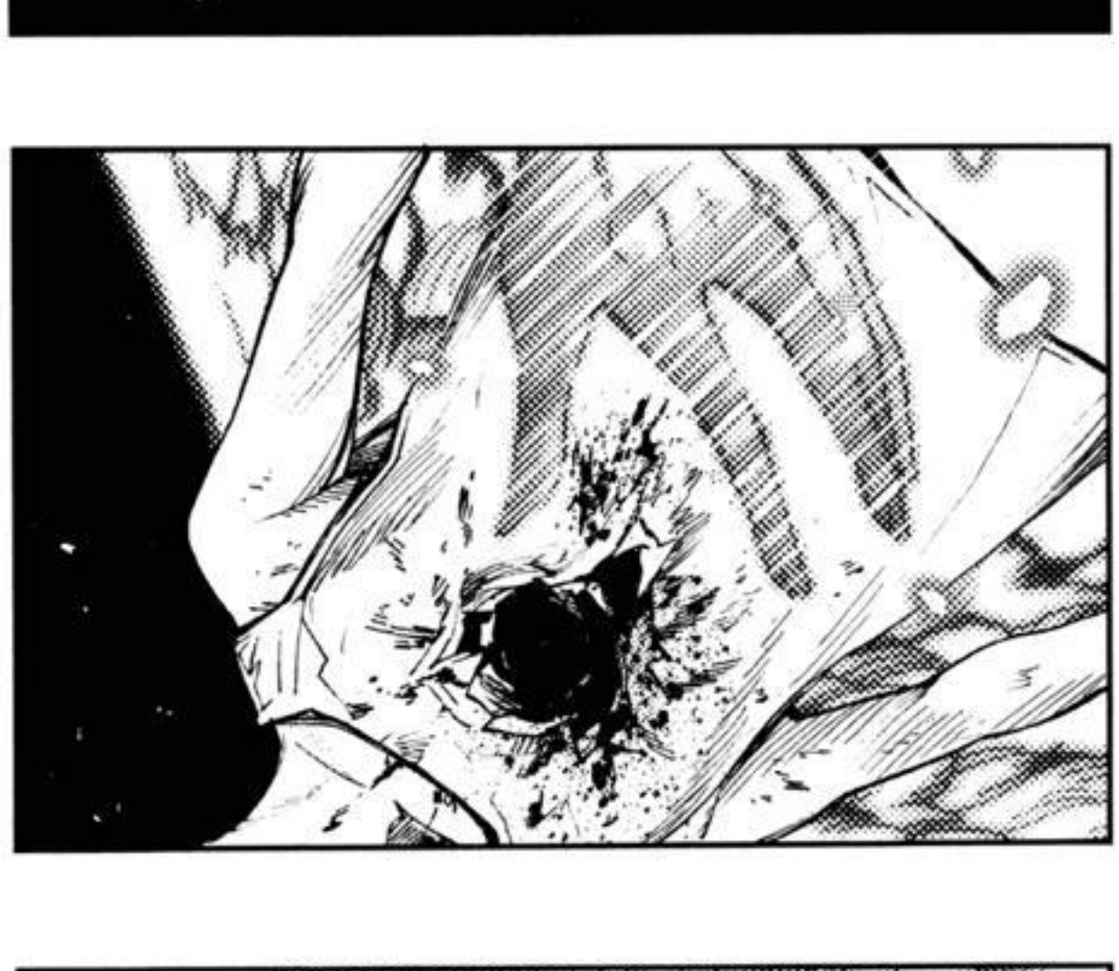
ON
OM

OPEN FIRE!


スナイパー
スナイパー
スナイパー

INCOM-
ING!
FLY
AWAY!

#41 Society's Response



!

PROFES-
SOR...

MOTEL

CH-CHAK

BLAM

!

SLK

GRA

AAAH!!

EEE!!!

TWING

CRAK

FSH

LET'S GET AWAY FROM HERE.

THEY'RE SHOOTING!

AAAH!!

HRR...

...

HRR...

KOFF

HRR...

HRR...

I'M AFRAID YOU WILL NOT SURVIVE THIS WOUND, SUSUMU YUITO.

HRR...

HRR...

FWM

SKK

GLOW

GLOW

I WILL BE TAKING ALL OF HIS ARROWS AND WINGS, PENEMA.

...

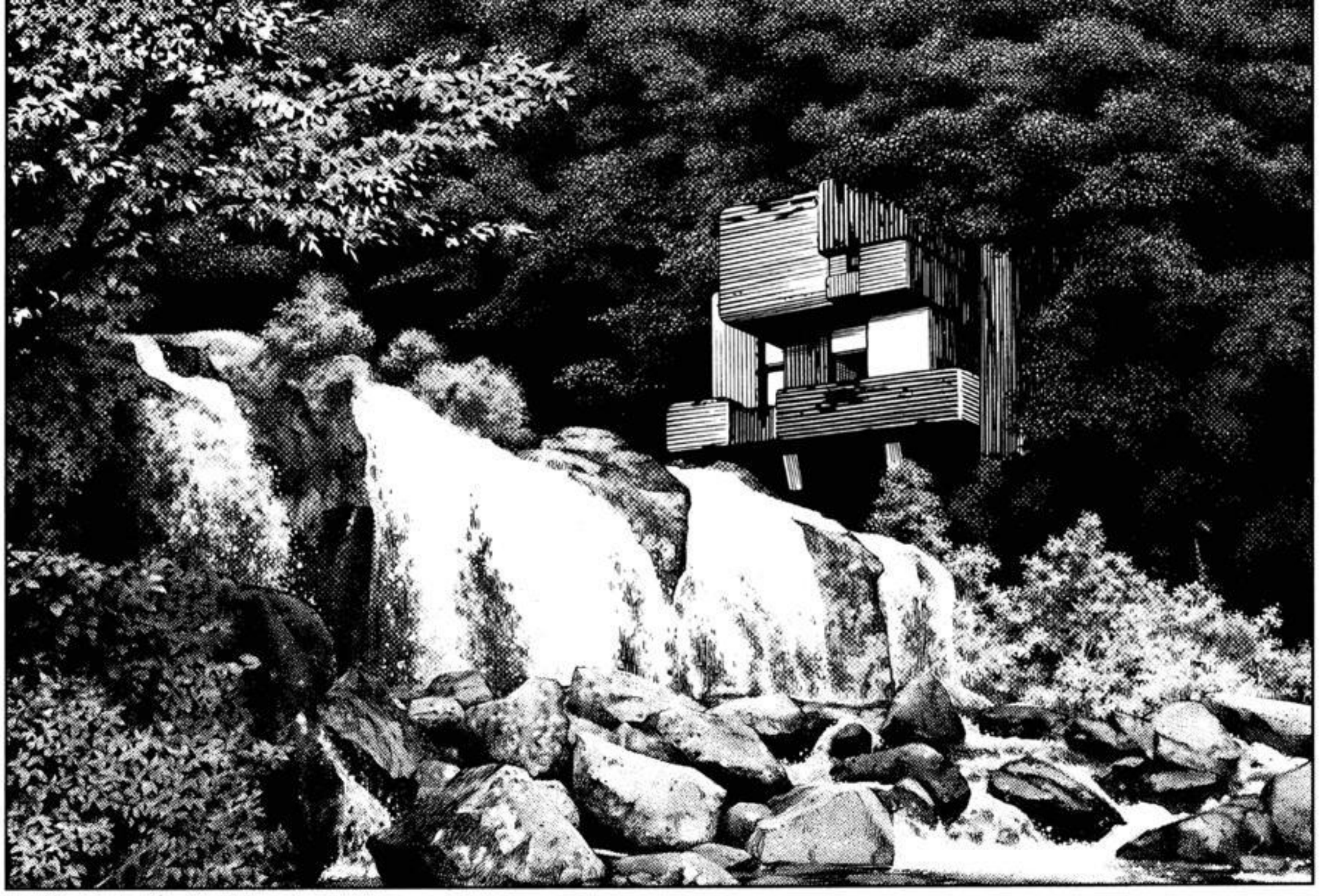
GLOW

SHM

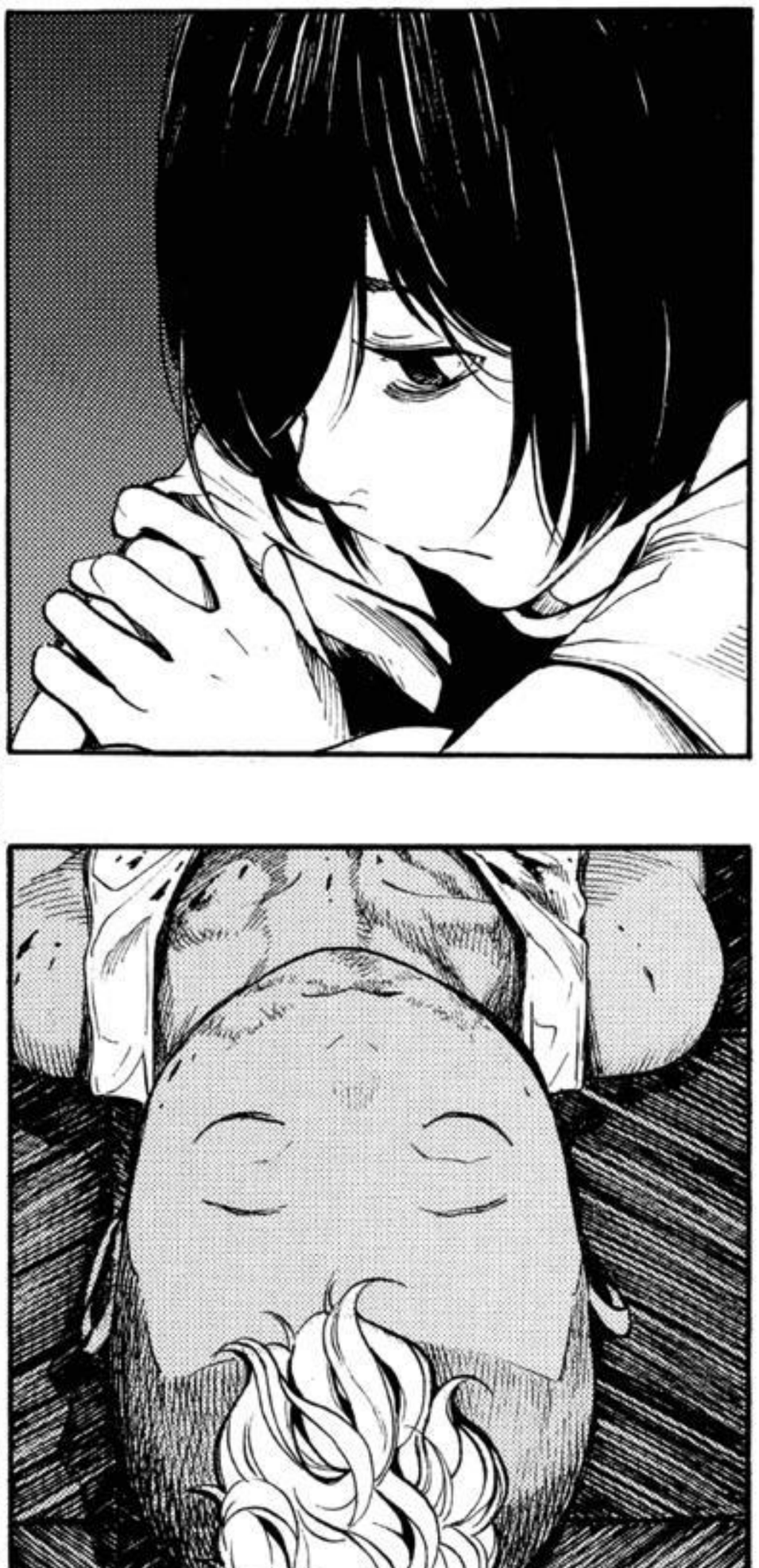
WHAT A SHAME.

THAT'S GAME OVER, THEN.

...



...BUT WHEN IT HAPPENS, IT CAN HAPPEN FAST.
I BET SUSUMU DIDN'T REALLY WANT TO DIE...
THAT'S JUST REALITY FOR YOU.



IF ONLY I'D BEEN SHOT INSTEAD.

NO... I'VE SEEN A FEW...

IS THIS YOUR FIRST TIME SEEING A DEAD BODY?

BY THE WAY, THERE WAS SOMETHING I WANTED TO SPEAK WITH YOU ABOUT.

...

YES.

...

IS IT TRUE THAT YOU WOULD GLADLY DIE AT ANY MOMENT?

YES.

SO I COULD PIERCE YOU WITH A WHITE ARROW AT ANY TIME.

...

IF I GAVE YOU ONE OF THESE WHITE ARROWS, WOULD YOU BE ABLE TO PIERCE ME WITH IT?

...

WHATEVER YOU WANT ME TO DO, I'LL DO IT.

YES. I HAVE GREAT RESPECT FOR YOU, PROFES-SOR.

DO YOU UNDER-STAND WHAT I'M SAYING?

IF THIS DESIRE GOES FAR ENOUGH, THEY MIGHT EVENTUALLY KILL THEIR TARGET OF WORSHIP OUT OF THE DESIRE TO BE REBORN AS THEM. THERE ARE MANY EXAMPLES OF THIS.

THEY DO IT TO HAVE A DEEPER UNDERSTANDING OF WHO THEY WORSHIP.

SOMETIMES, PEOPLE ARE DRIVEN TO SEEK ASSIMILATION WITH THOSE THEY RESPECT.

YES. AND YOU ARE NO EXCEPTION TO THIS RULE.

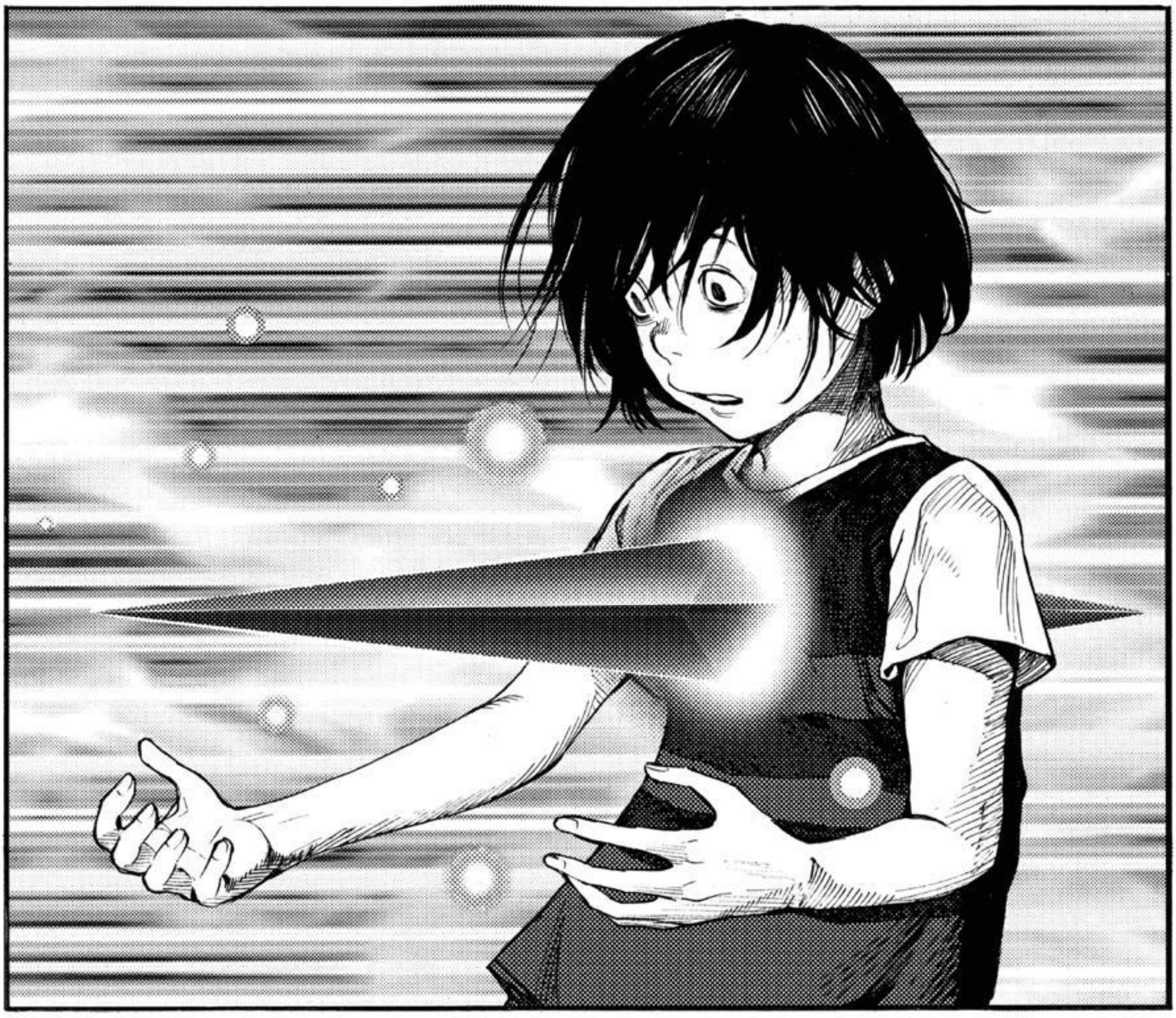
I DO! I REMEMBER READING IT IN ONE OF YOUR BOOKS.

SHIM

!

YOU SEEM TO HAVE AN EXTREME BLIND FAITH IN ME.

KWING



THIS IS JUST A PRE-CAUTION.
AND I CAN'T HAVE THAT FAINT POSSI-BILITY COMING ABOUT.

POOR SUSUMU ...

Softbank 4G

Susumu Yuito

SUSUMU!

連絡先

履歴

BZZZ!

I HAVE ACCEPTED HIS ARROWS AND WINGS.

I'M CALLING TO TELL YOU THAT SUSUMU YUITO HAS PASSED.

82%

olt Sank 4G

Susumu Yuito

GOOD-BYE.

I THINK THAT WE SHOULD PAY ATTENTION TO HOW THE REST OF THE WORLD REACTS TO THIS, THEN SET UP ANOTHER OPPORTUNITY TO TALK.

UNFORTU-NATELY, OUR DIALOGUE WAS INTER-RUPTED...

THIS ONLY HAPPENED BECAUSE HE WAS GOING ON AND ON ABOUT HOW "WE DON'T NEED A GOD."

HE'S GOT SOME NERVE.

...

SUSUMU ...

...

...

YOU SAID THAT YOU'D BE GOD, RIGHT? AND IF THAT HAPPENS, YOU'LL STILL GIVE ME RED ARROWS?

SAY, RED.

...

YURI... WHY DO YOU THINK YOU CAN'T KEEP GOING ON WITHOUT RED ARROWS?

SHUJI SAID HE WOULD DO THAT FOR ME. SO WHOEVER IT ENDS UP BEING, THAT CONDITION NEEDS TO BE THE SAME.

BECAUSE I DON'T BELIEVE I CAN GET ANY LIKES ♡ WITHOUT THEM.

I'LL STICK TO THAT PROMISE.

ALL RIGHT.

ANY-THING WRONG WITH THAT?

...

NASSE...

MM?

WHAT DO YOU THINK HAPPENS TO THE ANGELS IF A GOD DOESN'T GET CHOSEN?

AND I'M ABSO-LUTELY AGAINST DR. YONEDA! ♪

THEN I'M YOUR NUMBER ONE SUP-PORTER, RED! I'LL PUSH FOR YOU TO BE GOD. ♡

WELL, THAT'S WHEN GOD DISAPPEARS, SO THE REST OF US WILL TOO, RIGHT?

YOU MAKE IT SOUND LIKE NO BIG DEAL.

LOOK, IF BECOMING GOD IS WHAT WILL MAKE MIRAI HAPPIEST, THEN THAT'S WHAT I WANT TO HAVE HAPPEN. BUT I DON'T REALLY CARE WHAT HAPPENS TO **ME.**

...I'M SURPRISED YOU SAID YOU WOULD BE GOD.

I'LL ADMIT ...

I JUST ASSUMED THAT YOU TWO WERE HOOKING UP.

AND IF YOU'RE REALLY IN LOVE, THEN YOU WOULDN'T EVER DECIDE TO BE GOD AND LEAVE THE OTHER ONE BEHIND. BUT MAYBE THAT'S JUST ME.

IF HE BECOMES GOD, THEN HE CAN ENVELOP SAKI WITH AN EVEN GREATER LOVE FROM THE HEAVENS.

YOU THINK SO?

HMM ...

BUT I DON'T KNOW IF WE CAN RELY ON MR. HOSHI. I MEAN, THERE WERE SDF HELICOPTERS FLYING AROUND AND MYSTERY SNIPERS SHOOTING AT US...

REALLY? YUMIKI'S ONE THING, SINCE SHE'S UNDER THE EFFECTS OF YELLOW'S ARROW.

THE BIGGER QUESTION IS WHAT WE SHOULD DO NOW...

ALL WE CAN RELY UPON AT THIS POINT IS MR. HOSHI AND MS. YUMIKI...

ALL RIGHT. I'LL SPEAK WITH HOSHI AND WE'LL FIND A SAFE LOCATION.

SAKI...

I'LL TRY TALKING WITH MS. YUMIKI.

...

GIVE ME TWO OR THREE DAYS.

VERY WELL. I'LL FIND A WAY.

...

ACTUALLY, I'D PREFER IF IT WERE JUST YOU...

I'VE GOT ALL THE DATA ON DR. GAKU YONEDA.

THE PRIME MINISTER'S ADDRESS IS ABOUT TO BEGIN.

TWO SNIPERS HAVE BEEN SPOTTED ON SECURITY CAMERA FOOTAGE.

DIRECTOR.

I NEVER WOULD HAVE GUESSED THAT YOU'D BE A CANDIDATE, YONEDA.

WHAT IS IT, YUMIKI?

TEK

TEK

TEK

SHWIK

!

I NEED TO SPEAK WITH YOU.

...

SHH---

!

SO THE WHITE ARROWS HAVE CHANGED HANDS TO YET ANOTHER GOD CANDIDATE.

ALAS ...

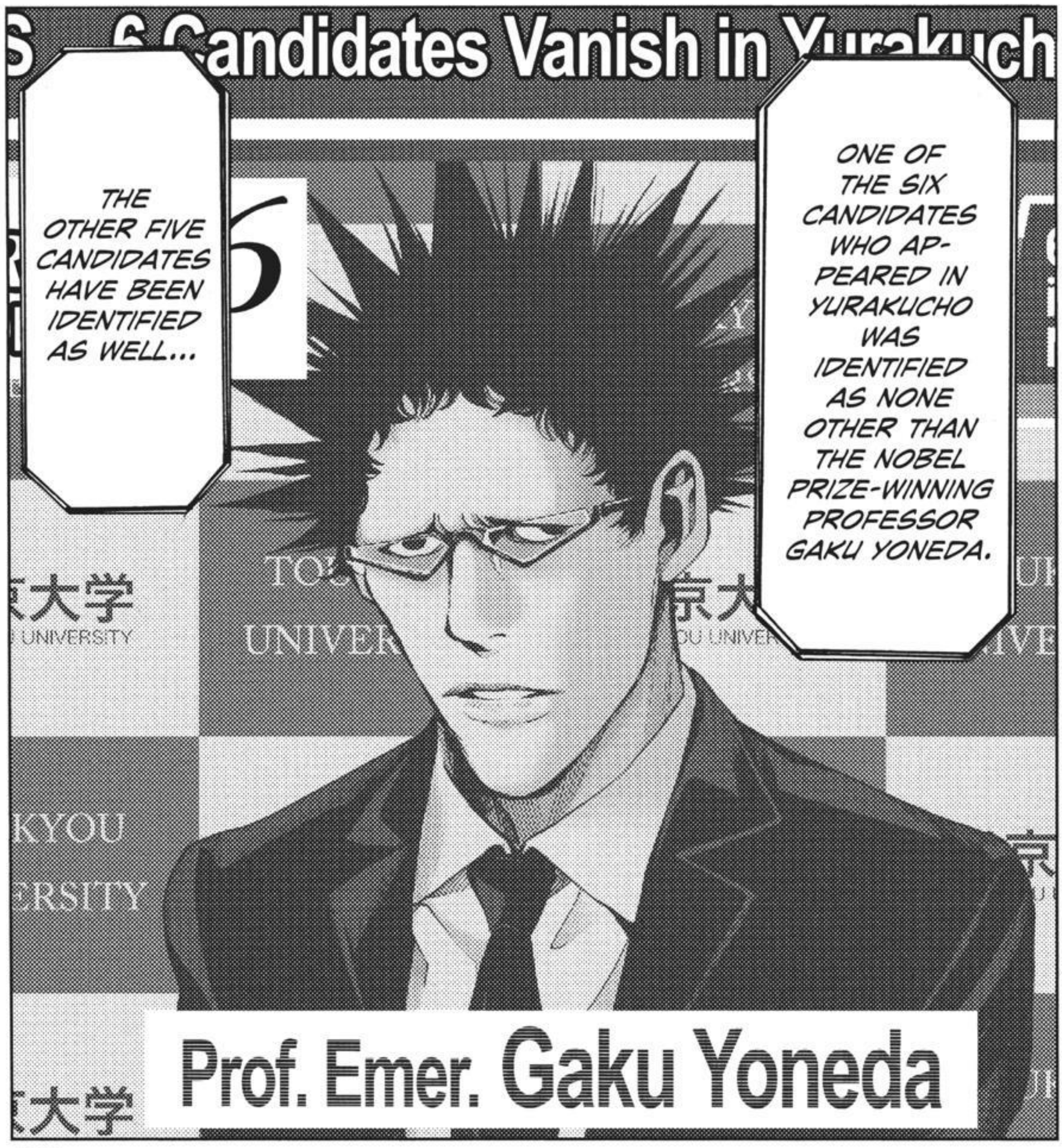
A TER-RIBLE SITUA-TION.

WHISPER

WHISPER

...GOD IS IN THE PROCESS OF VANISHING.

n Yurakucho, No Decision
6 Candidates in Yurakucho No God Chosen
LATEST NEWS 6 Candidates Vanish in Yurakucho, No Decision
GOD CANDIDATE NEWS
VARIETY 6 CANDIDATE SPECIAL
6 Candidates in Yurakucho No God Chosen
IN TODAY'S GOD CANDIDATE NEWS...


6 Candidates Vanish in Yurakuch
THE OTHER FIVE CANDIDATES HAVE BEEN IDENTIFIED AS WELL...
6
ONE OF THE SIX CANDIDATES WHO AP-PEARED IN YURAKUCHO WAS IDENTIFIED AS NONE OTHER THAN THE NOBEL PRIZE-WINNING PROFESSOR GAKU YONEDA.
Prof. Emer. Gaku Yoneda

SAKI HANA-KAGO, AGE 15.

Saki Hanakago (15)

MIRAI KAKE-HASHI, AGE 15.

Mirai Kakehashi (15)

SUSU-MU YUITO, AGE 12.

Susumu Yuito (12)

SHUJI NAKA-UMI, AGE 13.

Shuji Nakaumi (13)

WE CON-DUCTED INTERVIEWS WITH SOME OF MIRAI KAKEHASHI'S CLASSMATES ON CAMERA.

YURI TEMARI, AGE 23.

Yuri Temari (23)

@Wa4kbJ6

Yikes man!!

831 1225

@3EXT2DrHa25j

they bullied me, so i became a god

540 173

@9C6cN25

No way this guy can be god

761 936

@MrFncW5Rz

y'all bullies are dead now lMAO

689 1564

@rPZkKan

Anyone but this guy.

This kind of vengeance scares me.

265 783

6 s Vanish in

SO I WONDER IF HE'LL GET REVENGE ON HIS BULLIES IF HE BECOMES GOD...

HE WAS DEFINITELY BULLIED IN ELEMENTARY AND MIDDLE SCHOOL...

WHAT ABOUT SHUJI NAKAUMI, WHO SAID HE WOULD PROVIDE AN EASY DEATH FOR THOSE WHO WANT TO DIE? IN THE SPAN OF A SINGLE MONTH, HIS GRANDFATHER, HIS PARENTS AND THREE SCHOOLMATES HAVE COMMITTED SUICIDE.

Suicides Around Shuji Nakaumi

3/31	G-Father	Torajiro Nakaumi
4/9	Father	Kanji Nakaumi
5/10	Mother	Sachiko Nakaumi
5/16	Classmate	Nao Sasada
5/20	Classmate	Masataka Suzubayashi
5/23	Classmate	Tota Kitayama

Three family members and three classmates within two months — 6 Suicides in Total

IT'S CERTAINLY NOT GOOD!

Vanish

SO HE WAS PICKED ON. BUT THAT'S ACTUALLY NOT THAT BAD.

TE SPECIAL

THE REST OF US HAVE BEEN IDENTIFIED. THEY'RE TALKING ABOUT EVERYTHING THEY CAN FIND, TRUE OR FALSE.

IT'S AN UGLY WORLD OUT THERE.

THE POLICE DEPARTMENT HAS INDICATED FOR NOW THAT THEY ARE DENYING ANY CONNECTION TO THE SHOOTING IN YURAKUCHO...

He totally killed them all!!

14944 ★36978

@L6SubktpFn 2m

It was the perfect crime! Some kind of special power to make it look like suicide!

9457 ★13461

@EBYBfe 1m

All these god candidates are crazy, man!

6713 ★19345

Shuji Nakaumi's a murderer

He should be the dead one

2976 ★4250

@AFrL6xa25j 6m

He didn't have any friends

His cougar mom snagged some stud 20 yrs younger

1437 ★2087

@ifA351BsJ 3m

I bet all of the god candidates were picked on

1191 ★1814

@MPpysk2Rz 2m

Yuri Temari tried to enter the Miss Aoyama contest and failed. Apparently she was gonna springboard that into being a news anchor

986 ★1327

@raZ2GYb 2m

All these people have mental health issues

Find em quick and kill em all

ABSOLUTELY
...

THERE'S NO CONCERN ABOUT THIS ROOM EVER BEING USED.

THIS IS AN EMERGENCY SHELTER.

THERE ARE NO CAMERAS, NO WINDOWS, AND NO PEOPLE GOING IN OR OUT.

NOBODY WOULD SUSPECT GOD CANDIDATES OF BEING INSIDE THE METROPOLITAN GOVERNMENT BUILDING, AND IT'S EASIER FOR THE TWO OF US TO GET AROUND.

ON THE OTHER HAND...

I'LL ADMIT... IT'S A LITTLE FREAKY...

...

!

SADLY, THE GOVERNMENT STILL WANTS TO APPREHEND THE CANDIDATES.

WE'VE GOT VISUAL OF TWO OF THOSE SNIPERS, BUT THEIR NAMES AND NATIONALITIES ARE UNIDENTIFIED. THIS INCIDENT HAS ALSO SHOWN THE WORLD THAT EVEN A GOD CANDIDATE CAN BE SHOT AND KILLED IF THEY'RE BLINDSIDED.

FOR YOUR OWN SAFETY, IT'S IMPERATIVE THAT WE WRAP UP THIS MATTER AS SOON AS POSSIBLE...

THE WORLD AT LARGE IS CRITICAL OF THE GOD CANDI-DATES.

BLIND-SIDED...

I'LL CONVINCE HIM OF A BETTER WAY.

DR. YONEDA SAID THAT WE SHOULD TALK AGAIN.

...

WRAP IT UP? BUT HOW ...?

CONVINCE HIM HOW ...?

EVEN HE ADMITTED THAT IF WE CLAIM THERE IS NO GOD, THE PEOPLE WHO LIVE OFF THE HOPE OF GOD'S SALVATION MIGHT BEGIN TO DIE OF DESPAIR.

SO THERE MUST BE A WAY TO AVOID THAT. EVEN IF IT'S JUST CHANGING THE WAY IT'S SAID...

...

HE'LL ONLY ARGUE YOU INTO A CORNER. REMEMBER, PEOPLE IN ACADEMIA ARE DEADLY SERIOUS ABOUT PROVING THEIR ARGUMENTS ARE CORRECT.

YOU CAN'T.

YOU CAN'T DO IT, RED. YOU DON'T GET IT.

BUT WE HAVE TO AT LEAST **TRY**...

YONEDA IS A UNIVERSITY PROFESSOR. THEY'RE EXPERTS, THEY BELIEVE THAT THEY ARE 100 PERCENT CORRECT, AND THEY'RE NEVER GOING TO CHANGE THEIR MINDS BECAUSE OF SOMETHING AN AMATEUR SAYS.

YURI
...

...

I WILL TAKE PART IN THE DIALOGUE. I'LL HELP YOU CONVINCE YONEDA.

!

TO BE CONTINUED...

T s ug u mi **O**h b **a**

°

Born in Tokyo, Tsugumi Ohba is the author of the hit series *Death Note* and *Bakuman*。.

°

°

°

°

°

Ta **k** e **s h** i O b a **t**a

°

Takeshi Obata was born in 1969 in Niigata, Japan, and first achieved international recognition as the artist of the wildly popular *Shonen Jump* title *Hikaru no Go*, which won the 2003 Tezuka Osamu Cultural Prize: Shinsei "New Hope" Award and the 2000 Shogakukan Manga Award. He went on to illustrate the smash hit *Death Note* as well as the hugely successful manga *Bakuman*。 and *All You Need Is Kill*.

PLATINVM END

VOLUME 11
SHONEN JUMP Manga Edition

°

STORY Tsugumi Ohba
ART Takeshi Obata

°

TRANSLATION Stephen Paul
TOUCH-UP ART & LETTERING James Gaubatz
DESIGN Shawn Carrico
EDITOR Alexis Kirsch

°

ORIGINAL COVER DESIGN Narumi Noriko

°

PLATINUM END © 2015 by Tsugumi Ohba, Takeshi Obata
All rights reserved.
First published in Japan in 2015 by SHUEISHA Inc., Tokyo.
English translation rights arranged by SHUEISHA Inc.

°

The stories, characters and incidents mentioned in this publication are entirely fictional.

No portion of this book may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means without written permission from the copyright holders.

°

Printed in the U.S.A.

Published by VIZ Media, LLC
P.O. Box 77010
San Francisco, CA 94107

°

10 9 8 7 6 5 4 3 2 1
First printing, April 2020

VIZ MEDIA
viz.com

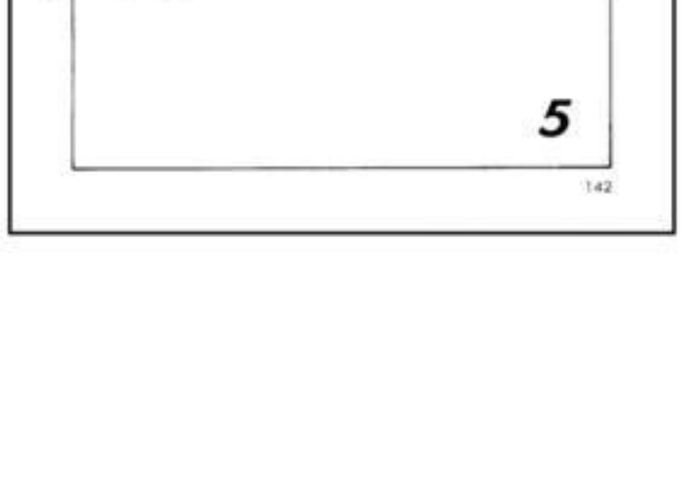
SHONEN JUMP
shonenjump.com

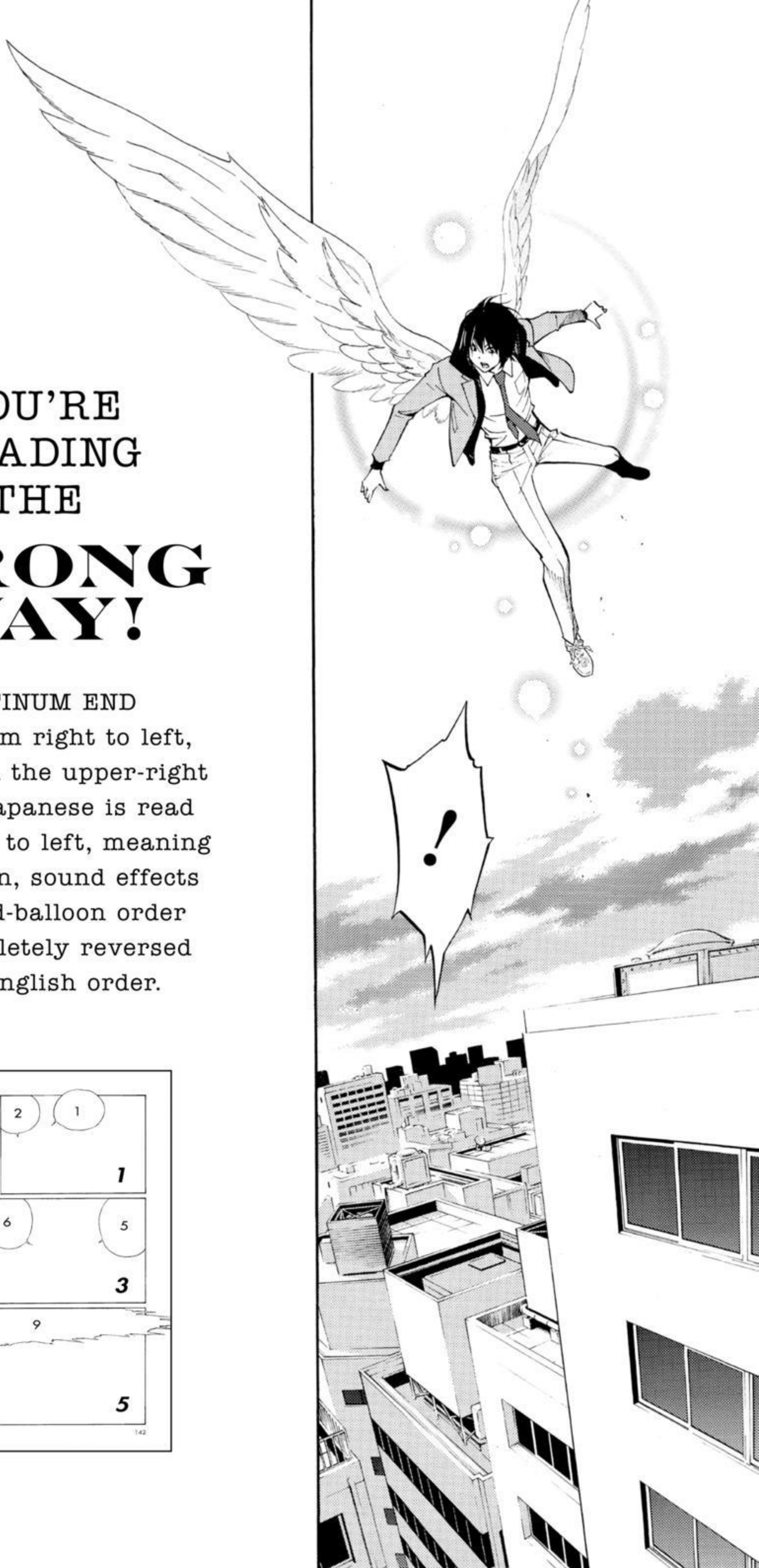
PARENTAL ADVISORY
PLATINUM END is rated M for Mature and is recommended for mature readers.
This volume contains suggestive themes.

YOU'RE READING THE

WRONG WAY!

PLATINUM END reads from right to left, starting in the upper-right corner. Japanese is read from right to left, meaning that action, sound effects and word-balloon order are completely reversed from English order.





The creators of

DEATH NOTE

return in this dark story with an angelic twist!

Seeking to negotiate with the final god candidate, Mirai and the others reveal themselves to the world. But the final candidate is a Nobel Prize-winning professor with the angel of destruction by his side. And when the professor explains his theory on what is actually behind the competition to choose a new god, it will shock the entire world!

$9.99 USA $12.99 CAN £6.99 UK

viz.com shonenjump.com

VIZ MEDIA

SHONEN JUMP

RATED M MATURE

ISBN: 978-1-9747-1256-4

50999

9 781974 712564

PARENTAL ADVISORY
EXPLICIT CONTENT

12

PLATINUM END

STORY
TSUGUMI OHBA

ART
TAKESHI OBATA

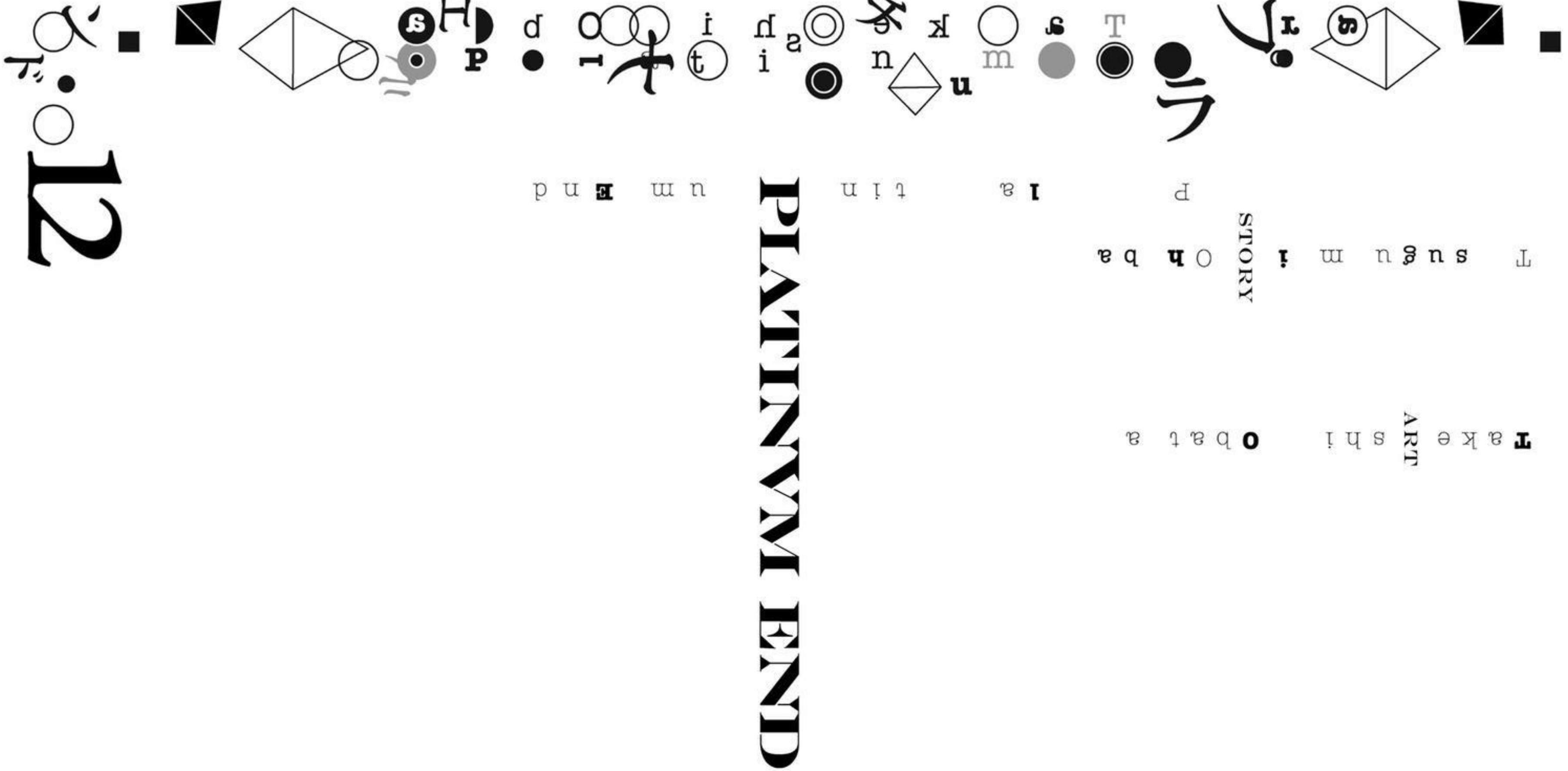
Take shi Obata

ART

Tsugumi Ohba

STORY

PLATINUM END



12

CHARACTERS

Shuji

Ogaro

The first-rank angel who chose Shuji. Angel of Darkness.

Shuji Nakaumi

A boy who believes in euthanasia and spoke of his own wish to commit suicide. Hates causing trouble for others.

Susumu

Penema

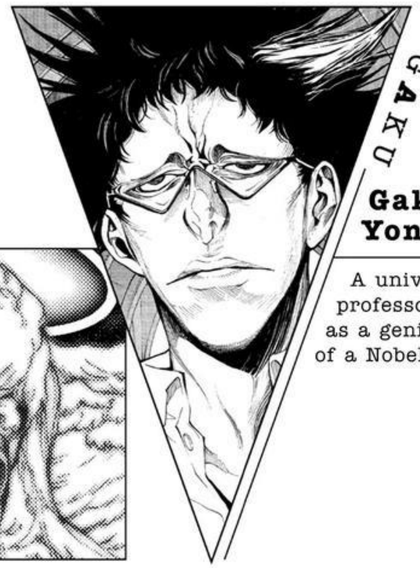
The first-rank angel who chose Susumu. Angel of Games.

Susumu Yuito

Hit by a sniper's bullet while the god cadidates were talking and died soon after.

Muni

The special-rank angel who chose Yoneda. Angel of Destruction.



Gaku

Gaku Yoneda

A university professor hailed as a genius. Winner of a Nobel Prize.

Yazeli

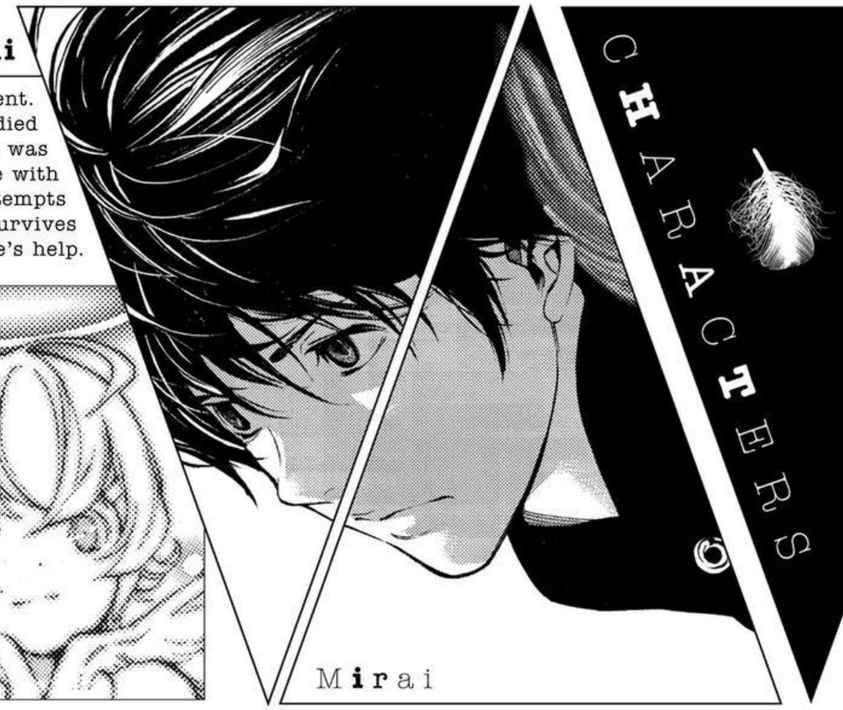
The second-rank angel who chose Yuri. Angel of Truth.

Mirai Kakehashi

First-year high school student. His parents and brother died in an accident when he was seven. After a painful life with his abusive relatives, he attempts to commit suicide and survives through Nasse's help.

Nasse

A special-rank angel who wants to bring happiness to Mirai's life. Bright and bubbly.



Mirai

Yuri

Yuri Temari

Free spirit who enjoys social media, and has no real interest in being god. Attempted suicide twice.

Revel

Promoted to the first-rank Angel of Emotion.

Saki

Saki Hanakago

Mirai's old friend and fellow student. The object of his affections.

Story

CRUEL BULLET

After Yoneda theorizes that god is unnecessary, a sniper's bullet pierces Susumu's chest without warning.

A GOD WHO EXISTS

As the world watches, Yoneda claims that the current "god" is a false creature powered by the mental energy of mankind's prayers.

CONTACT

The group answers the question of what they would do as god, shortly before finally coming into contact with Yoneda, the final candidate.

Story

"My time has come. I leave the seat of god to the next human.
To a younger, fresher power.

The next god shall be chosen from the 13 humans chosen by you 13 angels.When the chosen human is made the next god, your angelic duty is finished, and you may live beside that god in peace.

You have 999 days remaining..."

CONTENTS

#42 Root of Disaster
P5

#43 The Price of Honor
P39

#44 Stars in the Night Sky
P69

#45 Measure of Sentiment
P109

#46 Day of Reunion
P145

#47 The Time for Talk
P173

#42 Root of Disaster

BUT WHY WOULD YOU...?

I ACTUALLY KNOW HIM. BELIEVE IT OR NOT, WE WENT TO THE SAME HIGH SCHOOL.

WHAT ...?

WHEN IT COMES TIME TO HAVE THE NEXT DIALOGUE, I WILL HELP YOU CONVINCE YONEDA.

THOUGH YONEDA TOOK ALL OF TWO WEEKS TO DECIDE TO QUIT SCHOOL.

YONEDA'S A GOOD PERSON THOUGH. AND PERSONAL NATURE DOESN'T JUST CHANGE 180 DEGREES.

I KNOW THAT'S NOT RARE FOR PEOPLE WHO ARE TOO SMART FOR THE REST OF US.

I BELIEVE THAT HE'S THINKING HARD ABOUT HUMANITY'S FUTURE, IN HIS OWN WAY.

FamilyFarm

BLING-A-LING

WEL-COME TO FAMILY FARM.

SHOULD I SAY HI?

IT'S ONLY THE SECOND DAY OF SCHOOL, BUT...

THAT GUY'S IN MY CLASS...

SWIP

SWIP

SWIP

THAT WAS QUICK.

YIKES...

SWF

YONE ...

SWF

YO...

...

BEEP

BEEP

BEEP

BEEP

LET'S SEE... A THOUSAND ...

1000
100
100
100
1000

OH... EXACTLY 1,387 YEN.
1000

HE ACQUIRED HIS PURCHASES AS QUICKLY AS POSSIBLE, MENTALLY CALCULATED THE TOTAL AND ARRANGED THE CASH SO THE GIRL AT THE REGISTER COULD SEE IT EASILY.

DIDN'T EVEN HAVE THE TIME TO CALL OUT TO HIM... WHAT A DECISIVE GUY...

SWISH

THANK YOU, SIR.

!

OUCH!

NO WAY!

LIKE THIS.

AND THEN HE WENT LIKE THIS...

OOH!

IT'S NICE FOR PEOPLE WHO HAVE BEEN AROUND SINCE MIDDLE SCHOOL. THEY HAVE FRIENDS FROM THE GET-GO.

HEY, WATCH WHERE YOU'RE GOING.

WHOA!

THUD

!

LOOKS LIKE YOU NEED BETTER GLASSES, DWEEB.

SH

SH

YOU'RE THE GUYS HORSING AROUND ON THE STAIRS WITHOUT WATCHING...

SORRY, ARE YOU OKAY?

THUD

!

YONEDA...

I'M JUST GLAD YOU'RE NOT HURT.

IT'S OKAY, I WASN'T PAYING ATTEN-TION.

HE'S A REALLY NICE GUY...

FIRST THE INTERACTION AT THE STORE, NOW THIS...

FOR TODAY'S GYM CLASS, WE'RE TESTING YOUR ATHLETIC ABILITY. TAKE THIS SERIOUSLY, HEAR ME?

TAKE YOUR GLASSES OFF.

FIRST, WE'LL DO THE 50-METER DASH, TWO AT A TIME.

FWEE! GET SET ...

CLICK

SO I'M RUNNING WITH YONEDA...

THE 50-METER DASH... I'M PRETTY GOOD AT THIS ONE.

JITTER

JITTER

GET SET ...

ON YOUR MARKS.

FWEE!

3.14159...

9793238462643
0288419716939937
5820974944 5923

HE'S FAST!

0286208998628034825
8214808651 3282306647 09384
5058223172 5359408128
4102701938521105559
5493038196 4428810975 66593
2847564823 3786783165

...

CLICK

7 SHOT

YONEDA, SIX POINT TWO.

HUFF

HUFF

HOSHI, SIX SECONDS.

WHAT?

YONEDA ...

...

...

YOU SHOULDN'T DO THAT.

DO WHAT?

YOU STARTED CRUISING PARTWAY THROUGH AND ENDED UP SLOWER THAN ME.

...

...BUT THIS IS DIFFERENT.

I'VE SEEN YOU DOING THINGS TO AVOID INCONVENIENCING OTHERS MULTIPLE TIMES, AND BEEN IMPRESSED BY THAT...

LOOK, I WASN'T DEMANDING AN APOLOGY ...

UH...

...

I'M SORRY, THEN.

...

CAN I ASK YOU SOMETHING?

IRRATIONAL NUMBERS?

...

IRRATIONAL NUMBERS.

YOU WERE MUTTERING SOMETHING UNDER YOUR BREATH AS YOU RAN...

I FIND IT STRESSFUL TO PARTAKE IN THE SAME ACTIONS AS OTHERS... SO FILLING MY HEAD WITH NUMBERS HAS A TENDENCY TO RELAX ME.

SOMETIMES I GO WITH COMPLEX EQUATIONS INSTEAD.

NUMBERS THAT CAN'T BE EXPRESSED AS FRACTIONS, WITH INFINITE DECIMAL TAILS THAT DO NOT REPEAT.

...

THIS TIME I WAS RECITING PI...

FRIENDS ...?

WOULD YOU LIKE TO BE FRIENDS WITH ME?

NO?

SORRY... BUT NO.

QUIT? BUT IT'S ONLY BEEN TWO WEEKS ...

I'LL TELL YOU A SECRET.

I'M PLANNING TO QUIT SCHOOL BY THE END OF THE WEEK.

...

YOU'RE RIGHT THAT I WANT TO AVOID INCONVENIENCING OTHERS, BUT EVEN MORE THAN THAT, I DON'T WANT THEM TO INCONVENIENCE ME.

IT'S MORE EFFICIENT FOR ME TO STUDY ON MY OWN.

I DIDN'T GET INTO ANY TROUBLE FOR MISSING LOTS OF ELEMENTARY AND MIDDLE SCHOOL DAYS, BUT THERE'S MANDATORY ATTENDANCE FOR HIGH SCHOOL. I DON'T THINK I CAN DO IT.

I JUST DON'T WANT TO DEAL WITH PEOPLE.

...IS DEALING WITH UNFORTUNATE HUMAN INTERACTIONS. BUT YOU NEED FRIENDS...

IT'S TRUE THAT PART OF LIFE...

I DON'T WANT TO DEAL WITH ALL THE PETTY JEALOUSY, HATRED, SARCASM, IRRITATION AND SO ON.

JITTER

JITTER

EACH INTERACTION HAS THE POTENTIAL TO BE THE ROOT OF DISASTER. THE MORE THERE ARE, THE WORSE IT IS.

JITTER

...

NO. I'M FINE ...

WHEN I'M RESEARCHING OR CREATING THINGS BY MYSELF IS WHEN I'M HAPPIEST.

BEING HUMAN, HOWEVER, I JUST HOPE TO DO SOMETHING WITH MY TIME TO IMPROVE THE WORLD.

HELLO? YOU TWO PLANNING TO REJOIN THE CLASS ANYTIME SOON?

...

I'D RATHER JUST QUIT WITHOUT THEM FINDING OUT.

PLEASE DON'T TELL ANYONE ABOUT THIS.

HE REALLY IS A REMARK-ABLE PERSON.

ALL ON HIS OWN ...

FROM WHAT I LEARNED LATER, HE CHANGED HIS NAME WHEN HE PUBLISHED HIS FIRST BOOK.

I DON'T THINK YONEDA REALLY WANTED TO BE FAMOUS.

SO NAKAUMI'S DESIRE NOT TO CAUSE TROUBLE FOR OTHERS WAS AN INFLUENCE HE GOT FROM DR. YONEDA THEN.

THE POINT IS, HE HATES MAKING THINGS UNPLEAS-ANT FOR PEOPLE.

AFTER THAT, HE WROTE A BEST-SELLING NOVEL...

...WON THE NOBEL PRIZE IN PHYSICS...

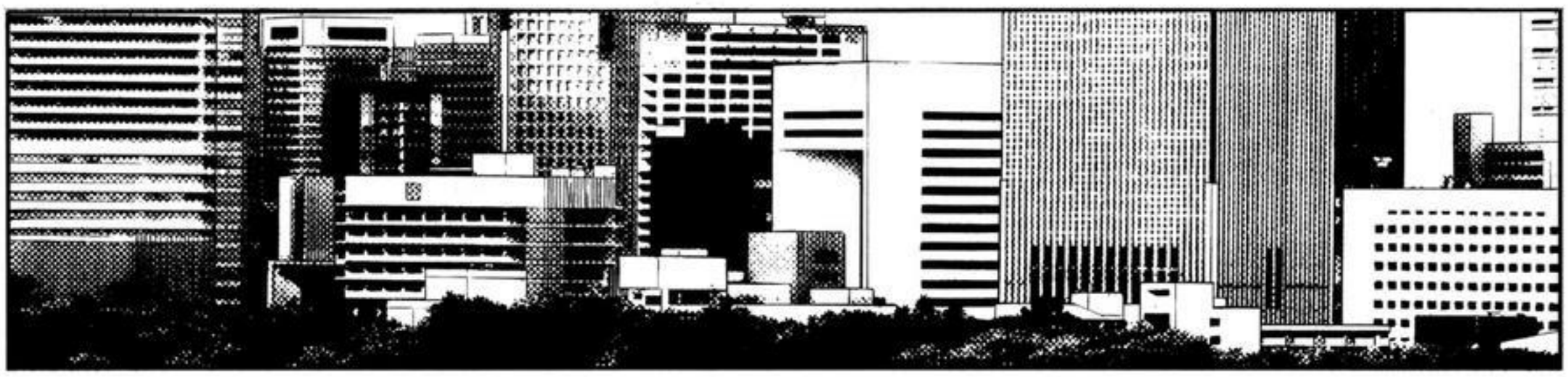
...BECAME RECOGNIZED AS ONE OF THE TOP MINDS OF THE WORLD ...

...AND EVEN RECEIVED THE PEOPLE'S HONOR AWARD.

...I'M SURE WE CAN USE THAT INFORMATION TO CREATE AN OPPORTUNITY.

THAT'S RIGHT. ASSUMING YONEDA'S NATURE HASN'T CHANGED SINCE HIS TEENAGE DAYS...

HE DOESN'T WANT TO MAKE THINGS UNPLEASANT FOR OTHERS...



Kill the god candidates

2431

@bCnXnNLi566

They'll conquer the earth

@Ski6MEUI

We don't need a god created by man

26331

@cgRReZU4H

We should let Dr. Yoneda decide everything for Japan

36499 51394

@VunPi

PLEASE GIVE US YOUR WISDOM ...

DO YOU REALLY THINK THOSE PEOPLE WILL BE AS GODS, WISE LEADER?!

WE DON'T WORSHIP "GOD" AT ALL.

WHAT-EVER THAT IS, IT IS NOT GOD.

NO PERSON WITHOUT VIRTUE CAN BE A GOD.

WE USE THE WORD BUDDHA TO REFER TO THOSE WHO HAVE ACHIEVED ENLIGHTENMENT, AFTER ALL...

LET DR. YONEDA CONTROL ALL OF JAPAN

ESIGN,
'ABE

STOMP

DR. YONEDA FOR
PRIME MINISTER

STOMP

THE
CREATURE
IS A
FALSE GOI

STOMP

STOMP

STOMP

O
E FOR
ALSE
D DS

SAVE EARTH FROM
RANNY

WE DON'T NEED
CANDIDATES

RESIG
YABE

GIVE
YONE
CONTR

WHAT ABOUT THE SNIPERS? WHAT COUNTRY SENT THEM?

ARE YOU UNDER PRESSURE THAT KEEPS YOU FROM SAYING?

AS I'VE SAID, GIVEN THAT ARTICLE 20 OF THE CONSTITUTION GUARANTEES FREEDOM OF RELIGION AND SEPARATION OF CHURCH AND STATE, I BELIEVE IT IS INAPPROPRIATE FOR ME TO COMMENT ON THIS TOPIC.

WE MUST FACE THE FACT THAT THIS SITUATION IS LEADING TO RELIGIOUS PERSECUTION.

WHAT ARE YOUR THOUGHTS ON THE MATTER, MR. PRIME MINISTER?

YOU'RE OUT OF LINE! YOU DON'T DESERVE TO SERVE IN THE DIET!

AMEND THE CONSTITUTION, THEN! ABOLISH ALL RELIGION!

TIMES HAVE CHANGED. SHOULDN'T WE BE PRIORITIZING DISASTER MANAGEMENT?

IN THE REST OF THE WORLD, AS WELL, RELIGIOUS-BASED EXTREMIST VIOLENCE IS ESCALATING.

FOR ONE THING, THE OBJECT OF WORSHIP FOR EACH RELIGION IS DIFFERENT ...

Believe 12%

Shuji Naka

88% DO NOT BELIEVE IN GOD

INTER-NATIONALLY, THE DEVOUTLY RELIGIOUS DO NOT ACCEPT THE GOD CANDIDATES.

EXISTENCE OF GOD IN JAPAN

GOD CANDI

Shuji Nakaumi 2%

ACCORDING TO HIM, IF GOD EXISTS, THEN GOD IS A "CREATURE" CREATED BY MANKIND.

93% SUPPO FOR DR. GA YONEDA

THIS DEVELOPMENT STARTED WITH DR. YONEDA'S STATEMENT THAT "HUMANITY DOES NOT NEED GOD."

ZZT...

ZZT...

ZZT...

PROFES-
SOR.

...WAS TRUE, WASN'T IT?

WHAT YOU TOLD ME YESTER-DAY...

THAT THE WAY FOR A CANDIDATE NOT TO BECOME GOD REALLY IS JUST THAT SIMPLE.

CORRECT. IN FACT, YOU MIGHT SAY THAT'S THE ONLY GUARANTEED WAY.

IF THAT'S TRUE, THEN YOU'LL...

PROFES-SOR...

OF COURSE, I'M STILL PREPARED TO DO IT.

YES. I'VE WANTED TO DIE.

SEE WHAT IT'S LIKE...?

MY WISH FOR DEATH IS MORE LIKE A DESIRE TO **SEE WHAT IT'S LIKE** TO DIE.

POP

BUT UNLIKE YOU, I DON'T JUST **WANT TO** DIE.

POP

I SIMPLY WANT TO **KNOW** WHAT HAPPENS TO A HUMAN BEING AFTER IT DIES.

THE HUMAN EXPERIENCE AFTER DEATH STILL ISN'T FULLY EXPLAINED.

IT'S A COMPELLING ARGUMENT THAT WE'RE SIMPLY PHYSICAL MATTER, AND THAT WE BECOME NOTHING UPON TURNING TO ASH, BUT IT'S NOT ENTIRELY PROVEN.

POP

THE HUMAN EXPERIENCE AFTER DEATH STILL ISN'T FULLY EXPLAINED.

AND THAT IS WHY I WANTED TO EXPERIENCE DEATH.

#43 The Price of Honor

IF THIS PROCESS WERE CHOOSING A TRUE GOD...

...

...I WOULD HAVE HAPPILY VOLUNTEERED MYSELF.

...AND IF I COULD KNOW THE EXPERIENCE AFTER DEATH AND IMPART THAT TO PEOPLE AS GOD...

YOU'RE SO BRILLIANT, PROFESSOR. I NEVER THOUGHT ABOUT IT THAT WAY.

I'M SCARED ...

BUT WHAT IF THERE'S A HELL, AND MY SUFFERING CONTINUES?

IF THERE'S A HEAVEN, GREAT, BUT ONLY IF IT'S TRULY A HAPPY PLACE...

I'M SCARED OF FINDING OUT THAT THERE'S LIFE AFTER DEATH... IF I DIE AND THERE'S NOTHING, THEN MY SUFFERING IS OVER...

AND WHILE THERE MIGHT BE A CREATURE THAT IS A GOD, THERE IS NO TRUE GOD.

HEAVEN AND HELL ARE CONCEPTS MEANT TO FOSTER BELIEF IN GODS.

...

YES, I UNDER-STAND THAT.

BUT...

TWCH

SLOSH

THAT'S JUST AN ILLUSION THE CREATURE IS SHOWING US.

IT MADE ME THINK THAT THERE **MUST** BE AN AFTERLIFE.

...I SAW AN ANGEL CARRYING AWAY WHAT LOOKED LIKE THE SOUL OF A PERSON WHO HAD JUST DIED.

POP

POP

NWA.

ISN'T THAT RIGHT, MUNI?

POP...

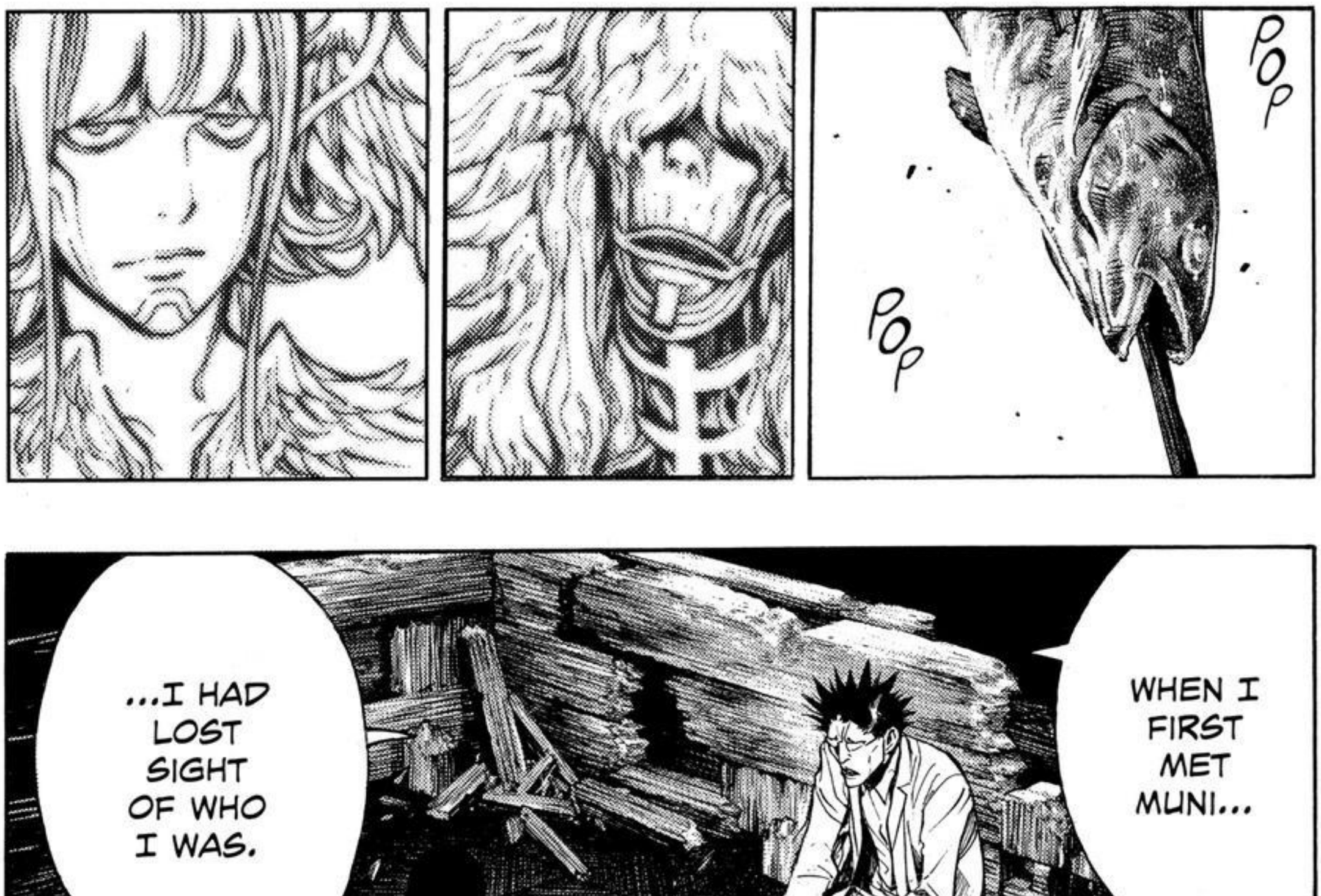
THINK OF HOW MUCH SCIENCE COULD ADVANCE IF THAT ENERGY WERE USED PROPERLY.

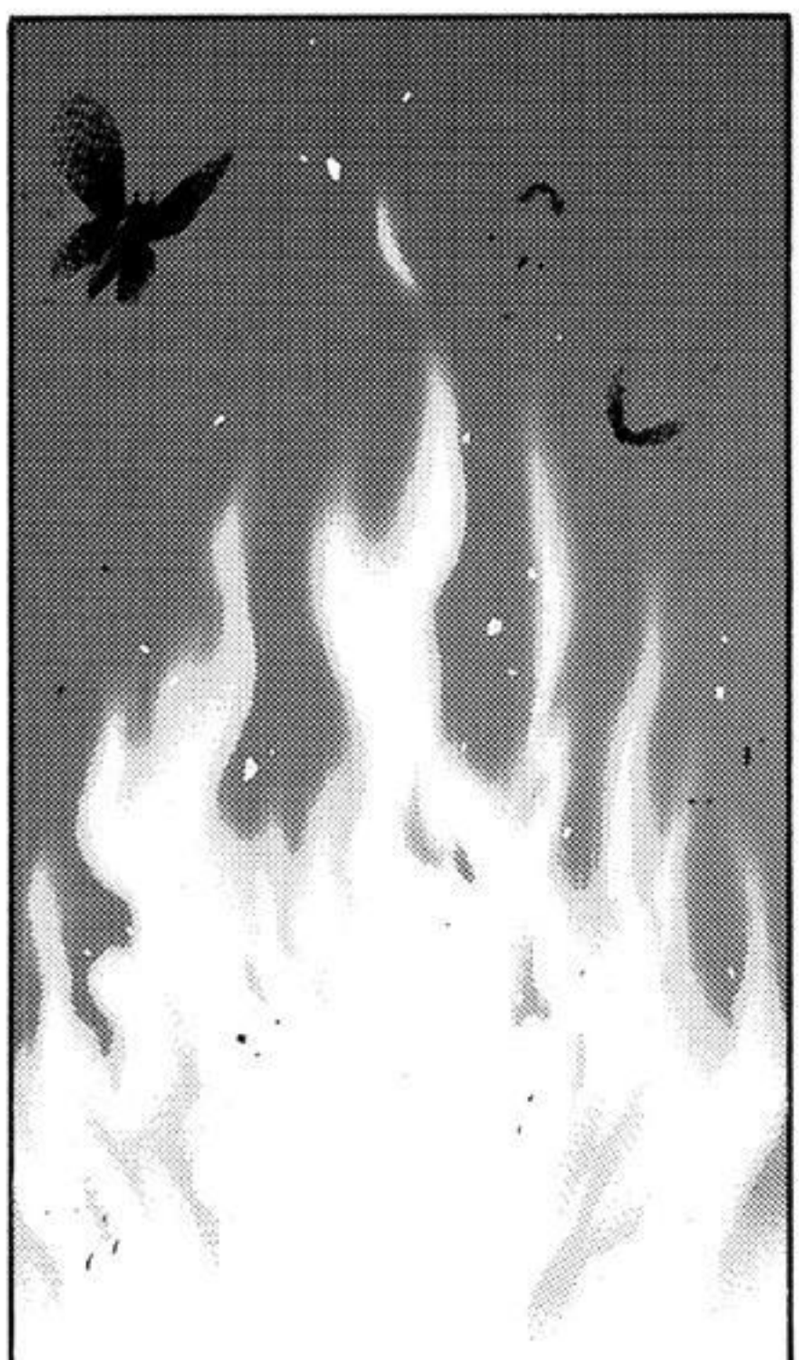
THE CREATURE IS SIPHONING OFF THE FAITH ENERGY OF A PORTION OF HUMANITY.

THAT IS MUNI'S OPINION.

GREEDY, FALSE ANGELS CREATED BY A FALSE GOD. IT WOULD BE BETTER IF THESE THINGS DID NOT EXIST.

A FALSE HEAVEN. A FALSE GOD.


POP
POP
...I HAD LOST SIGHT OF WHO I WAS.
WHEN I FIRST MET MUNI...



CAN YOU TELL US WHY YOU WITHDREW FROM THE AKUTAGAWA PRIZE CONSIDERATION?

FOR YOUR YOUNG AGE AND THE QUALITY OF YOUR NOVEL, SOME PEOPLE ONLINE CLAIM THAT IT'S ARROGANT OF YOU TO DECLINE YOUR NOMINATION. WHAT DO YOU HAVE TO SAY ABOUT THAT?

KSHAK

KSHAK

WE BRING YOU BREAKING NEWS. ASSISTANT PROFESSOR GAKU YONEDA OF TOKYO UNIVERSITY HAS RECEIVED THE NOBEL PRIZE IN PHYSICS.

UPDATE YOUNGEST NOBEL WINNER

ASST. PROF. GAKU YONEDA, TOKYO UNIVERSITY

CLAP

CLAP

CLAP

CLAP

SIMPLY SUPERB.

CONGRATULATIONS, PROFESSOR!

WELL DONE, MR. YONEDA!

HERE'S YOUR SCHEDULE OF TV APPEAR-ANCES AND LECTURES ...

HOW DOES IT FEEL TO BE MADE PROFESSOR EMERITUS AT SUCH A YOUNG AGE?

CAN WE MEET WITH YOU AFTER HOURS?

WE HAD A QUESTION ABOUT TODAY'S LECTURE...

UM, PROFES-SOR?

YAMAMORI REALTY WOULD BE MORE THAN HAPPY TO OBLIGE...

WHAT BETTER WAY TO DEDICATE YOURSELF TO RESEARCH THAN WITH A SECLUDED VILLA?

NOBEL-WINNING PROFESSOR YONEDA

OUT LATE WITH STUDENTS

ROMANTIC♡TRYST?!

GROUP DATES TWICE A WEEK WITH THREE GIRLS

LISTEN...

LISTEN, IF YOU'RE LOOKING FOR INVESTMENT OPPOR-TUNITIES...

DO YOU REMEM-BER ME?

AND LOOK AT YOU NOW.

WE USED TO BE IN THE SAME CLASS IN MIDDLE SCHOOL.

THERE ARE YOUNG WOMEN HERE TONIGHT.

YOU CAN HAVE JUST ONE DRINK, CAN'T YOU?

FSHH!

WHILE THE REST OF US ARE SUCKING UP AS BEST WE CAN, JUST TO EARN A LITTLE GRANT MONEY...

CREAK

MUST BE NICE TO BE A NOBEL LAUREATE. EVERYONE'S FAWNING OVER YOU.

THUMP

OH ...!

CRAP.

BLEAAH!!

HURRL!!

HUFF!!

HUFF!!

GLP!!

OME

I SHOULDN'T HAVE GONE TO THOSE BOOSTER CLUB PARTIES.

I SHOULDN'T HAVE DONE THOSE MEDIA APPEARANCES.

I SHOULDN'T HAVE ACCEPTED THAT NOBEL PRIZE.

MY RESEARCH MAKES NO PROGRESS.

STRANGERS WHO WANT THINGS FROM ME.

PEOPLE COMING TO ME EVERY DAY...

RATTLE

RATTLE

RATTLE

IT'S NOTHING BUT HELL, HELL, HELL, HELL, HELL, HELL, HELL, HELL...

THE TRUTH GETS PASSED ON TO OTHERS IN A DISTORTED FORM...

AWARD CEREMONIES, BANQUETS, TV APPEARANCES, LECTURES.

JUST LET ME DO MY RESEARCH... FOR THE BENEFIT OF HUMANITY...

BUT... WHAT CAN I REALLY DO TO BENEFIT THE WORLD ON MY OWN...?

IT WASN'T SUPPOSED TO BE LIKE THIS... I WANT TO GO SOMEWHERE I'M TRULY ALONE...

I KNOW THAT IT'S IMPOSSIBLE FOR A PERSON TO LIVE ON THEIR OWN... BUT I'VE TRIED TO ASSOCIATE WITH OTHERS AS LITTLE AS POSSIBLE.

FONT

TO OBLITERATE THE UNIVERSE WITHIN ME.

...TO BE HUMAN.

...IS TO CEASE...

THE ONLY ESCAPE ...

...CANNOT ESCAPE THIS FACT.

AND I...

SINCE ANCIENT TIMES, HUMANITY HAS BEEN A HERD ANIMAL.

I CAN'T DO THIS ANYMORE.

TAP

TAP

TAP

PERHAPS THIS IS THE DAY I'VE ALWAYS BEEN LONGING FOR.

I WILL DIE TODAY.

Will

I WILL BE ABLE TO LEARN WHAT HAPPENS AFTER DEATH...

THIS IS A SPLENDID THING.

ZT...

ZW...

AT FIRST I THOUGHT IT WAS A HALLUCI-NATION.

A KIND OF SUBJECTIVE VISION CAUSED BY A FLOOD OF ENDORPHINS IN MY BRAIN ONCE I ACCEPTED THE RELEASE AND LIBERATION OF IMPENDING DEATH...

HOPE IN LIFE?

...THIS WAS, IN FACT, THE ANGEL OF DESTRUC-TION.

BUT NO... DESPITE THE FACT THAT THE EXTERNAL WORLD AS WE PERCEIVE IT IS NOTHING MORE THAN THE REGISTERING OF SENSORY SIGNALS WITHIN THE BRAIN...

THERE IS NO HOPE IN LIFE.

I WANT TO KNOW WHAT EXISTS BEYOND HUMAN DEATH.

ALL OF THE TRUTH...

NWA.

YOU WILL FIND THE ANSWER EVENTUALLY.

OF COURSE, I DIDN'T ENTIRELY TRUST MUNI FROM THE START. I WAS SKEPTICAL IN THE EXTREME.

THE... TRUTH...

I SPOKE AND SPOKE WITH MUNI, AND BEFORE I KNEW IT, TWO MONTHS HAD PASSED.

THE GOD CANDIDATES **AND** THE WORLD AT LARGE...

I THOUGHT, THESE PEOPLE NEED TO KNOW THE TRUTH.

SUDDENLY, YOUNG PEOPLE WERE PUTTING THEIR LIVES ON THE LINE, FIGHTING OVER THE RIGHT TO BE SOME KIND OF FALSE GOD.

16:07:50

16:07:50

16:07:50

THE PROPER STATE OF HUMANITY IS TO UNDERSTAND THE TRUTH AND MOVE FORWARD INTO THE FUTURE.

WHY DON'T THEY UNDERSTAND SOMETHING AS SIMPLE AS THE FACT THAT GOD DOES NOT EXIST?

AND THE FIRST STEP TO DOING THAT IS DETERMINING IF ANY ANGELS ARE ON THE SIDE OF THE CREATURE, AND WHAT SPECIAL POWERS THEY MIGHT HAVE.

I'LL MAKE SURE EVERYTHING IS FINISHED WHILE THE RED ARROW STILL WORKS ON SHUJI NAKAUMI.

YES. I AGREE WITH YOU, PROFESSOR.

OGARO, ANGEL OF DARKNESS, WHO KNOWS THE HIDDEN SECRETS OF THE CELESTIAL REALM...

ARE YOU THE ANGEL WITH THE SPECIAL POWER? OR IS IT A DIFFERENT ANGEL?

IF I KNEW, I WOULD NOT TELL YOU, BECAUSE YOU ATTEMPT TO PREVENT THE CANDIDATES FROM BECOMING GOD.

IF YOU HAD AGREED, THAT WOULD HAVE HAPPENED BY NOW. BUT YOU ALONE OPPOSED THAT OUTCOME.

THE IDEAL OUTCOME FOR ME IS TO HAVE MY PARTNER BECOME GOD.

SHH

KWI

IT CAN BE ACHIEVED WITH THIS WHITE ARROW, AS YOU HEARD.

NG

AT PRESENT, THERE ARE TWO METHODS TO PREVENT A GOD CANDIDATE FROM BECOMING GOD.

YES! BOTH ME AND OGARO HEARD IT, LOUD AND CLEAR.

NO MATTER WHICH METHOD IS CHOSEN, I WILL BE PIERCING NAKAUMI WITH THIS.

...IS WHETHER TO DO IT WHEN EVERYTHING IS FINISHED, OR AT THIS VERY MOMENT.

!

IT WOULD BE AN HONOR TO DIE FROM YOUR WHITE ARROW!

THANK YOU, PROFES-SOR!

WHAT WE SHOULD FIGURE OUT NOW ...

I'D BE HAPPY TO DIE WHENEVER!!

NO DOUBT SHE WOULD PREFER TO PROLONG YOUR CHANCES AS MUCH AS POSSIBLE.

YOU MIGHT BE FINE WITH IT, BUT OGARO IS NOT.

SHE JUST CLAIMED THAT IT WOULD BE BEST TO MAKE **YOU** THE CREATURE.

IF YOU DON'T KNOW OR INTEND TO TELL ME ABOUT ANY SPECIAL ANGELS, I WILL USE THIS ARROW ON SHUJI NAKAUMI RIGHT NOW.

OGARO.

FINE, I'LL TELL YOU.

GIVE THE WHITE ARROWS YOU RECEIVED FROM SUSUMU YUITO TO MY PARTNER.

BUT I HAVE A CONDITION.

IF ANYTHING GOES WRONG WITH THE PLAN, YOU CAN HAVE HIM RETURN IT BACK TO YOU.

YOU'VE GOT YOUR RED ARROW IN MY PARTNER. HE WILL NOT USE A WHITE ARROW ON YOU.

GIVING WHITE ARROWS TO MY PARTNER WILL BE PROOF OF THE PLAN YOU'VE CHOSEN.

...

BUT IN THE END, IT'S JUST A DELAY.

YOU ARE CORRECT. IT WOULD BE PROOF, AND THERE IS NO RISK TO ME.

NO ...

IS IT TO PROLONG YOUR EXISTENCE, BECAUSE IF THE CREATURE DIES, ITS ANGELS DIE?

THEN THIS IS JUST A POINTLESS TANTRUM.

I HAVE NO EXPECTATIONS OF MY PARTNER IN THIS STATE, WITH YOUR RED ARROW IN HIM.

IT MEANS MY EXPECTATIONS LIE...

...IN MIRAI KAKEHASHI.

...IN MIRAI KAKE-HASHI.

MY EXPECTA-TIONS LIE...

#44 Stars in the Night Sky

SHWA

I CAN SEE WHY YOU ARE THE ANGEL OF DARKNESS.

...

SHING...

NOW, TELL ME WHICH ANGEL POSSESSES A SPECIAL POWER.

I SUSPECT NASSE.

AS I THOUGHT...

...

AND THAT POWER IS?

NASSE CAN TOUCH HER PARTNER, MIRAI KAKE-HASHI.

BUT NASSE OPENLY PROCLAIMED THAT SHE CAUGHT MIRAI KAKEHASHI IN HER OWN ARMS.

JUST AS HUMANS CANNOT TOUCH ANGELS, ANGELS CANNOT TOUCH ANYTHING IN THE PHYSICAL HUMAN WORLD.

...

IT'S NOT "NOTHING SPECIAL"...

DO YOU UNDER-STAND WHAT THIS MEANS?

...

IT'S NOTHING MORE SPECIAL THAN MOVING PEOPLE AND OBJECTS...

...BUT NASSE CAN DO IT.

NOT ONLY DOES NASSE NOT REALIZE IT IS A SPECIAL POWER, SHE HAS NO UNDER-STANDING OF HOW AN ANGEL IS MEANT TO ACT.

FOR ONE THING, SHE SAVED HIS LIFE...

BEING ABLE TO DIRECTLY INFLUENCE OR MANIPULATE HER PARTNER MEANS THAT SHE CAN CHANGE HIS FATE.

...

NWA.

THAT WILL NOT HAPPEN.

AND IF SHE'S ABLE TO USE AN ARROW DIRECTLY ON A GOD CANDIDATE...

...THE NEXT STEP IS A TIME AND PLACE...

NOW THAT I KNOW WHICH ANGEL TO KEEP AN EYE ON...

I SEE...

...BUT ALL THEY'RE DOING IS TALKING CRAP ABOUT US...

I KNOW WE SAID WE'D WAIT TO SEE THE PUBLIC REACTION...

ndidates aside from the prof are trash

56441 ★99386

t Temari chick is so pressed lolol

8179 ★24386

@A3tiDRsBn

All god candidates die. Oh, except for Yoneda

7375 ★93422

2分

@6zduhYxQRA

Just get lost already. In fact, die

especially the dumb one #godcandidates

★68797

NO, DAMMIT! **YOU** PEOPLE DIE!

WHAT'S WITH THE DIFFERENCE?!

@P5YE

The only choice is Dr. Yoneda. Forget th

3469 ★9435

@YUPiLYG

I'm good leaving it all to Dr. GakuYon

21467 ★62788

@gnswzMGj1344

Dr. Yoneda's got the best ideas of all of them

He's a genius. It's gotta be him.

78657 ★139744

4分

AND LOOK HOW THEY TALK ABOUT DR. YONEDA ...

IF ONLY DR. YONEDA COULD JUST ACCEPT BEING GOD...

THEN LET HIM DO IT, AND IF HE WANTS TO, HE CAN SAY, "I'M A CREATURE, NOT A GOD"...

THAT'S NOT GOING TO HAPPEN. HE'S THE ONE WHO'S ALL, "THERE IS NO GOD, THERE'S ONLY A CREATURE."

...

WELL, IF HE WAS OKAY WITH THAT, HE WOULD'VE ACCEPTED AND DONE IT ALREADY, WOULDN'T HE?

WHAT IS A GOD CANDIDATE?

WHAT ARE WE DOING, ANYWAY?

IS THE ONLY POINT OF THE CANDIDATES TO BE SACRIFICES TO MAKE A NEW GOD?

SUSUMU'S DEAD... THAT'S ANOTHER ONE DOWN. WE'RE DWINDLING ONE BY ONE...

IF WE HADN'T CHOSEN YOU TO BE CANDIDATES, YOU WOULD ALREADY BE DEAD BY NOW.

YOU'RE WRONG ABOUT THAT, SAKI.

WHAT?

NASSE ...

...

IT NEEDS TO BE AT LEAST A WEEK... MAYBE TWO?

IT'S ONLY BEEN FIVE DAYS SINCE THEN...

I'M SICK OF THE TV AND INTERNET. HOW LONG DO WE HAVE TO WAIT?

UUUGH...

THU MP

THE RED ARROW I PUT IN HER ONLY HAS TWO DAYS LEFT...

MR. HOSHI, MS. YUMIKI...

RIGHT, YOU USED IT ON THE FIRST DAY OF SCHOOL, THE EVENING OF SEPTEMBER 1, SO IT'LL END ON OCTOBER 4.

THAT'S TOO BAD.

IT'S SO COMPLICATED. BUT WE CAN JUST HAVE ME OR RED USE ANOTHER ONE NEXT.

COR-RECT.

AND YOU CURRENTLY HAVE A RED ARROW DEPLOYED IN MR. HOSHI.

WELL, BOTH OF THEM ARE SAYING THE POLICE STILL WANT TO CAPTURE THE CANDIDATES, SO WE NEED TO KEEP THEM UNDER RED ARROW CONTROL.

ARE YOU SURE? I THINK THAT WE CAN TRUST THEM EVEN WITHOUT AN ARROW.

...

I STILL DON'T TRUST THEM...

BUT THEY WERE ON OUR SIDE FROM THE VERY FIRST POINT WE MET THEM.

I'LL USE A RED ARROW ON MR. HOSHI NEXT.

ALL RIGHT.

THEN HE CAN USE THOSE ARROWS TO PIERCE SENIOR OFFICIALS AT THE POLICE DEPARTMENT, AND WE'LL HAVE THEM DELEGATE HIM AS A KIND OF REPRESENTATIVE OF THE POLICE. THAT'S THE BEST PLAN, IN MY OPINION.

I'LL USE THE RED ARROW ON HIM AND GIVE HIM SOME WINGS AND ARROWS FROM SAKI.

HE'S GOING TO ATTEND THE NEXT DISCUS-SION TOO.

ALL RIGHT. WE'LL DO THAT.

AND THE RED ARROW YOU PUT IN MINAMIKAWA HAS ANOTHER SIX DAYS LEFT...
BUT AS FOR HIM...
RIGHT.

I THINK WE CAN LET HIM GO AFTER THIS.

THAT'S RIGHT. I WANT A VERY VISIBLE LOCATION WHERE AS MANY PEOPLE AS POSSIBLE CAN WITNESS HISTORY IN THE MAKING.

AT THE SITE OF THE NEW NATIONAL STADIUM?

PRIME MINISTER'S HOME

AND JUST BECAUSE I ANNOUNCE A TIME AND PLACE DOESN'T MEAN THE GOD CANDIDATES WILL SHOW UP...

AFTER THE LAST INCIDENT, WE'LL HAVE TO EVACUATE ALL CIVILIANS AT **LEAST** A FULL KILOMETER FROM THE SITE FOR SAFETY PURPOSES.

WE... WE CAN'T!

BUT THEY MUST BE REMOTELY CONTROLLED, 500 METERS FROM THE STADIUM. ON OCTOBER 10.

I WANT IT BROADCAST ON TV WITH AS MANY CAMERAS AS WE CAN GET.

WRONG.

THEY WANT TO END THIS GOD-CHOOSING PROCESS SOONER THAN ANYONE.

THEY WILL COME.

...

SHIM

SHING

SWI

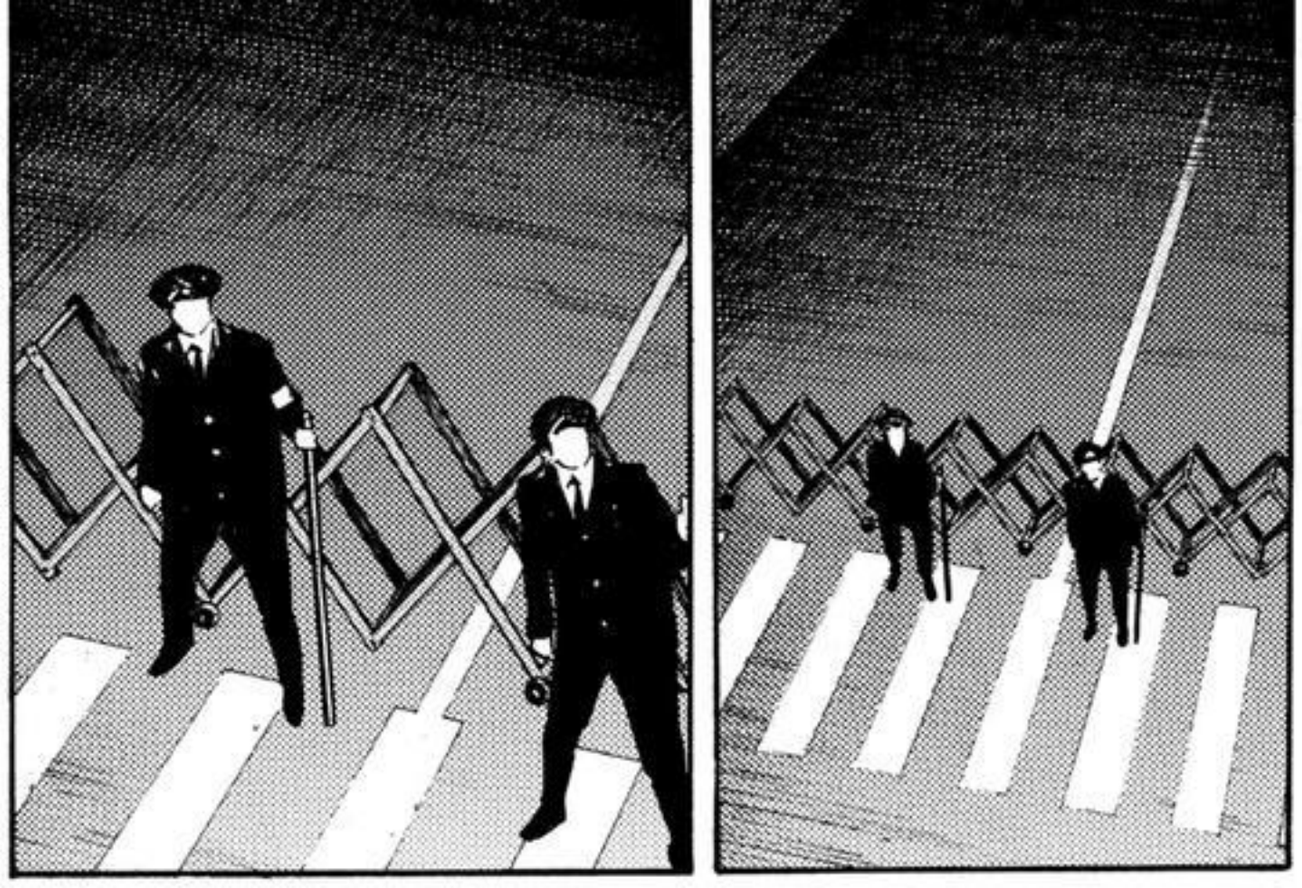
SH

NOW BOTH MR. HOSHI AND MS. YUMIKI CAN USE WINGS AND RED ARROWS.

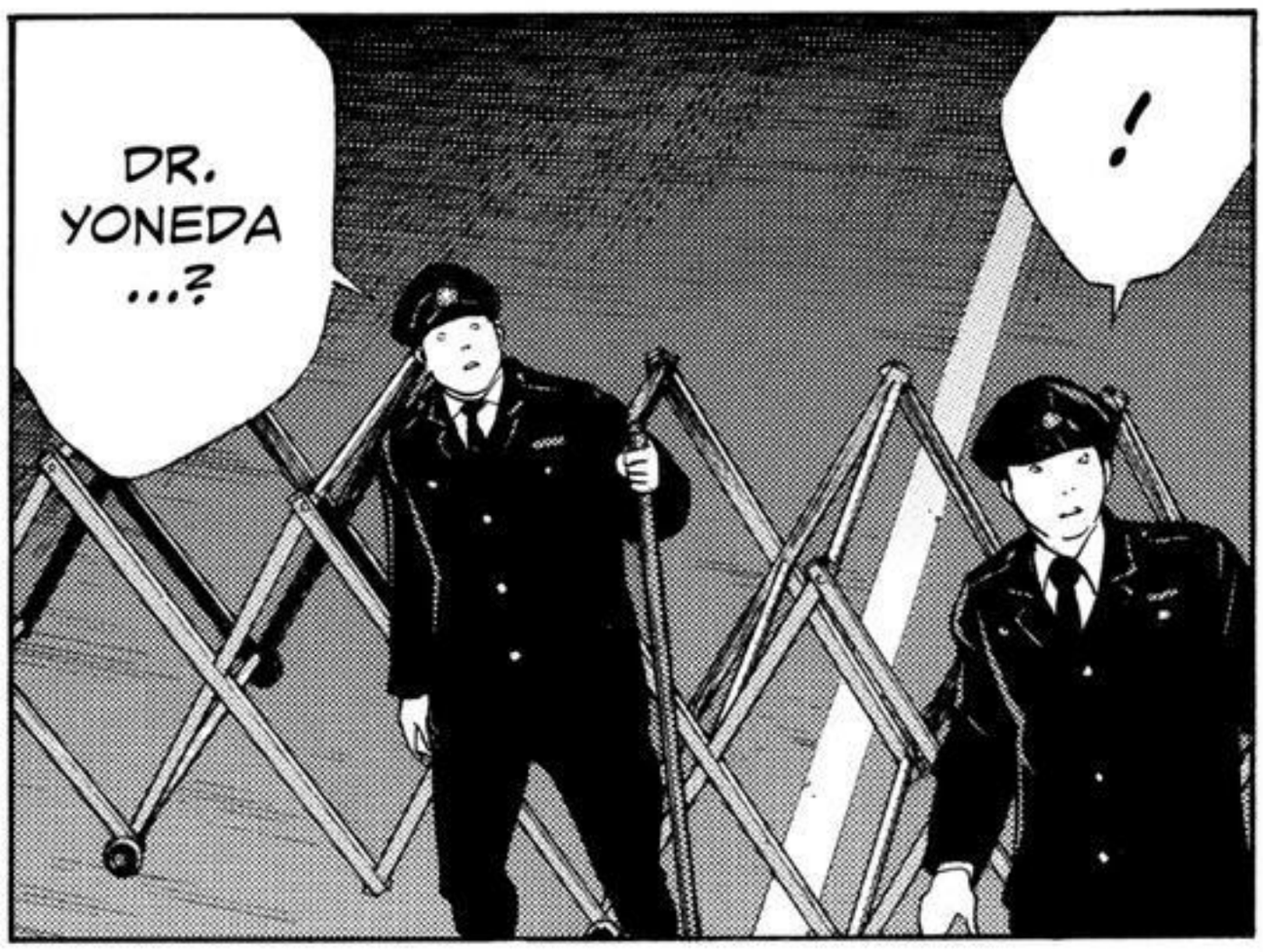
YES.

ALL RIGHT. GOT THAT, YUMIKI?

USE RED ARROWS ON THE SUPERINTENDENT-GENERAL AND HIS DEPUTY AS SOON AS YOU CAN.



FWOOO


DR. YONEDA ...?
!

SHAK

TEK

TMP

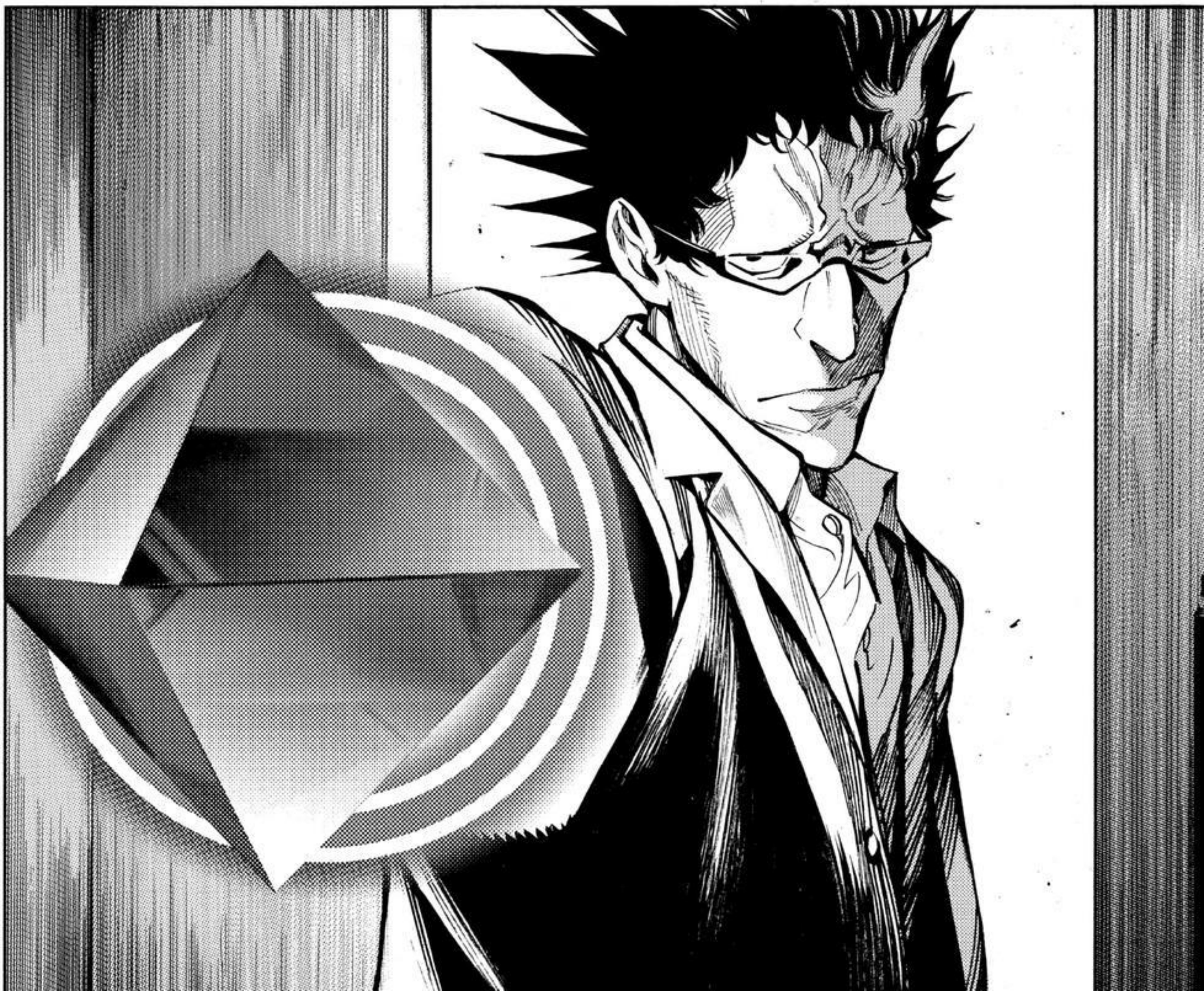
TMP

TMP

TMP

SKRAK

О!
ВА
М



SHAK

USE THEM WISELY, PRIORITIZING MINISTERS WHO ARE POWERFUL AND CAPABLE.

YES, DOCTOR...

THIS IS FOR YOU, PRIME MINISTER ...

ヒントロ
しまあじ
すずき
まぐろ
かんぱち
黒鯛
平目

RSTL

RSTL

店

FWAP

HUFF!!

HUFF!!

BEEP

BEEP

DON'T LEAVE THE HOUSE UNTIL THE CHOOSING IS DONE? YOU GOTTA BE KIDDING ME.

AND I COULDN'T EVEN GET A PHONE SIGNAL.

S...
SENPAI!
I WAS SO
WORRIED!
I COULDN'T
REACH YOU,
AND YOU
NEVER CAME
TO SCHOOL!

S-
SAYURI?!

WHAT?!
YOU...
YOU PIG!

S-SORRY...
I FELL IN
LOVE WITH
SOMEONE
ELSE.

NO! I CAN'T
EXPLAIN THIS
OVER THE
PHONE. CAN
YOU MEET
ME AT THE
USUAL PARK?

ER,
I MEAN,
IT'S NOT
THAT
EITHER...

UH...

ER,
IT'S NOT
WHAT YOU...
IT WAS
ANOTHER
GUY!

WHAT...
RIGHT
NOW?

Y-
YEAH...
PLEASE...

PHEW...

...

WHY NOT TRY A DIFFERENT LOOK?

OH, YUMIKI LEFT THAT THERE.

KAKE-
HASHI
...

SHFF

YOU'RE READY FOR THE POSSIBILITY THAT YOU MIGHT BE MADE GOD AT THE NEXT DISCUSSION, AREN'T YOU...?

YEAH
...

THEN ...

I WANT TO TALK WITH YOU ALONE, BEFORE THAT HAPPENS.

OKAY... GIVE ME A MINUTE.

I'LL CHANGE...

KCHAK

IT'S ALL MESSED UP...

UGH ...

YEAH, BUT I WASN'T REALLY AWARE OF IT AT THE TIME.

SO THE RED WARRIOR DID THAT...?

THANK YOU, SAYURI.

I BELIEVE YOU. YOU'RE NOT CLEVER ENOUGH TO KEEP A LIE THAT COMPLEX STRAIGHT.

THAT SOUNDS REALLY TOUGH, SENPAI.

YEAH.

IT FEELS LIKE EVERY-THING IS DIFFERENT... IT'S QUIETER... AND SCARY...

BUT I WONDER WHAT'S GOING TO HAPPEN NOW.

NO MATTER WHO BECOMES GOD, OR DOESN'T ...

IT WILL?

IT'LL BE ALL RIGHT.

DR. YONEDA'S SMART, SO HE'S NO PROBLEM. AND EVERYONE ELSE IS KIND AND HAS EMPATHY FOR OTHERS.

...

SAYURI ...

IF THAT'S TRUE, THEN GOOD ...

BUT I DON'T WANT TO HAVE A WHOLE NEW WORLD START, AND NOT BE ABLE TO SEE YOU ANYMORE.

OOH, A SHOOTING STAR.

REALLY ?!

OH...

OKAY.

JUST MAKE A WISH. HURRY!

NO... IT'S GOING UPWARD FROM THE GROUND.

AND THERE ARE TWO OF THEM...

WHAT DID YOU WISH FOR, SAYURI?
I WISHED FOR WORLD PEACE.

I...

UH--!

HEE HEE! I KNOW IT'S A CLICHÉ.

WHAT ABOUT YOU?

...

I WISHED...

I WISHED THAT I COULD KISS YOU TODAY.

TMP

#45 Measure of Sentiment

...ON THE VERY FIRST DAY I GOT MY WINGS.

I CAME HERE...

IT'S BEAUTI-FUL...

KAKE-
HASHI...

I LOVE YOU.

THANK YOU.

...AND I...

I'M GLAD THAT YOU...

...ARE STILL ALIVE.

YEAH.

CORRECT.

Yabe

THE METROPOLITAN POLICE... AND THE NATIONAL POLICE AGENCY?

THE SEVEN TOP POLICE OFFICIALS WERE ALREADY UNDER THE CONTROL OF RED ARROWS.

...

THAT WOULD BE RED'S WORK, THEN.

KREAK

I WOULDN'T BE SURPRISED IF THEY TRIED TO GET TO THE MINISTER OF DEFENSE AS WELL, ONLY FOR YOU TO HAVE BEATEN THEM TO THE PUNCH, MR. PRIME MINISTER.

GIVEN WHAT HAPPENED TO THAT OTHER CANDIDATE, IT'S A NATURAL PSYCHOLOGICAL RESPONSE TO WANT TO PROTECT YOURSELF.

I UNDER-STAND...

DON'T WORRY. THEY DON'T WANT TO START A WAR- THEY JUST WANT TO KEEP THE DIALOGUE GOING. I WOULD LIKE OUR LITTLE ARRANGEMENT ANNOUNCED AS SOON AS POSSIBLE.

IT HASN'T EVEN BEEN THREE HOURS YET.

THEY'RE TAKING A LONG TIME. I'M WORRIED ABOUT KAKEHASHI.

GOOD GRIEF... WHERE HAVE THEY GONE?

THERE'S DEFINITELY SOMETHING GOING ON BETWEEN THEM.

MAYBE THE TWO OF THEM FLEW OFF TO ESCAPE.

NO! KAKE-HASHI WOULD NEVER DO SOME-THING LIKE...

MISS TEMARI, THAT'S AWFULLY CLOSE TO DISCRIMINA-TION AGAINST GAY PEOPLE.

HUH?

I KNOW RED HAS HIS ARROW IN YOU, BUT THIS GUY-ON-GUY STUFF IS KINDA HARD TO TAKE.

KAKEHASHI THIS, KAKEHASHI THAT.

MY ONLY ROMANTIC INTEREST IS IN MEN. THAT'S ALL.

LOOK, PERSONAL PREFERENCES AND TASTES ARE NOT "DISCRIMI-NATION."

THAT'S HOW IT GOES. IT STARTS WHEN SOMEONE IN POWER SAYS, "I DON'T LIKE THOSE PEOPLE, SO LET'S ALL MAKE LIFE MISERABLE FOR THEM."

DISCRIMINATION IS A SOCIAL SYSTEM BACKED BY THE POWERFUL, LIKE SLAVERY OR ANTI-SEMITIC PERSECUTION OR APARTHEID OR WHATEVER.

IF YOU ASK ME, THE NEXT GOD SHOULD DO SOMETHING ABOUT ALL THIS HYSTERIA ABOUT CLAIMING HARASSMENT AND DISCRIMINATION.

AT THAT POINT, IT WOULD BE AN ACT OF DISCRIMINATION TO REFUSE A MARRIAGE PROPOSAL.

WHEN METRO-POLIMAN SAID, "IF I'M GOD, I'LL KILL ALL THE POOR AND UGLIES," THAT'S DISCRIMINATION. ARE YOU GONNA SAY THAT SWIPING LEFT OR RIGHT ON A DATING APP IS THE SAME THING?

LEGALIZE GAY MARRIAGE BEFORE YOU START COMING AFTER ME.

I SAID IT WAS "HARD TO TAKE," NOT "CREEPY."

A

SHE'S GOT A POINT.

THAT'S WHY I NEED **SOMEONE** TO BE GOD, SO THEY CAN LET ME HAVE THEM.

AT ANY RATE, I NEED RED ARROWS BECAUSE I ONLY LIKE HOT GUYS WITH MONEY.

IT'S FROM THE COMMIS-SIONER GENERAL.

BZZT

THAT'S ONE HOUR FROM NOW...

AT NINE O'CLOCK ...

THE PRIME MINISTER'S MAKING A SPECIAL ANNOUNCE-MENT?

WHY DON'T YOU CALL THEM IN, THEN?

WE SHOULD LET KAKEHASHI AND HANAKAGO KNOW ABOUT THIS.

I'M GUESSING HE'S NOT ANNOUNCING THE LEGALIZATION OF GAY MARRIAGE.

IT IS NOT A STORY, BUT FACT. THE GOD CANDIDATES ARE REAL.

M YABE'S REMARKS ABOUT GOD CANDIDAT

WIDE OW.

LIVE

PM YABE SPEAKS TO THE NA

THE "GOD-CHOOSING PROCESS," AS IT IS KNOWN AMONG THE PUBLIC, HAS BEEN CAUSING AN UPROAR AT HOME AND ABROAD.

LIVE
PM RESIDENCE

ATE INFORMATION

AFTER MORE THAN A DOZEN MEETINGS WITH THE GOVERNMENT ...

ONE OF THE CANDIDATES IS TOHTO UNIVERSITY PROFESSOR EMERITUS GAKU YONEDA. DR. YONEDA HAS REQUESTED THAT THE GOVERNMENT PROVIDE A SAFE PLACE FOR DIALOGUE.

...AND HAVE DECIDED TO OFFER THE GOD CANDIDATES THE USE OF THE CONSTRUCTION SITE OF THE NEW NATIONAL STADIUM FOR THEIR DISCUSSION.

...WE HAVE AGREED TO THIS REQUEST ...

WE DON'T NEED GOD

RESIGN YABE

CREAT A FALSE GOD

CANDIDA

IT'S AN IMPORTANT ANNOUNCE-MENT. WE SHOULD WATCH.

WHAT IS THIS? IS MY SHOW NOT GONNA AIR THIS WEEK?

QUIT YABE

YONE FOR

NEW NATIONAL STADIUM?

IT IS SCHEDULED FOR OCTOBER 10 AT 1:00 P.M.

IN ONE WEEK?!

...

THERE ARE NO TOURISTS FLYING IN ANYMORE.

THE GOVERN-MENT'S DESPER-ATE.

YEAH, AND THERE ARE PROTESTS HAPPENING ALL OVER.

SOME COUNTRIES ARE EVEN THREATENING TO BOYCOTT THE TOKYO OLYMPICS IF A JAPANESE PERSON BECOMES GOD.

WE NEED TO PUT AN END TO ALL THIS CRAZI-NESS.

LIVE

IS THE PRIME MINISTER JUST DR. YONEDA'S SLAVE NOW?

YEAH, BUT HE'S THE WORLD-FAMOUS YONEDA!

THAT'S RIDICULOUS! SOMEONE JUST GOT SHOT BY A SNIPER, AND THEY'RE GOING TO ANNOUNCE THIS A WEEK IN ADVANCE?

...

PM YABE'S REMARKS ABOUT GOP CANDIDATES

NS WIDE show.

LIVE

PM YABE SPEAKS T

FOR SAFETY PURPOSES, EVERYTHING WITHIN A KILOMETER OF THE SITE WILL BE DECLARED AN EVACUATION ZONE. ANY WHO DO NOT HEED THIS ORDER WILL BE ESCORTED OUT BY POLICE AND SELF-DEFENSE FORCE OFFICERS...

LIVE

RM RE

Geegle Earth

LASTLY, I HAVE A MESSAGE FROM DR. GAKU YONEDA HIMSELF.

YEP.

IS AN EVACUATION ORDER WORSE THAN AN EVACUATION RECOMMENDATION?

!

イブ中継 PM YABE'S REMARKS ABOUT GOD CANDIDATES

news WIDE show.

LIVE PM YABE SPEAKS TO THE NATION

GOD CANDIDATE INFORMATION

LIVE
PM RESIDENCE

M YABE SPEAKS TO THE NATION

I BELIEVE THAT THE MAJORITY OF THEM ARE IN FAVOR OF MY POINT OF VIEW.

I'M GAKU YONEDA. IN THE PAST WEEK I'VE LISTENED TO PEOPLE FROM ALL OVER THE WORLD, NOT JUST JAPAN.

UNFOR-TUNATELY, THERE WAS AN INTER-RUPTION, FORCING US TO CALL OFF OUR DISCUSSION.

THERE IS NO NEED FOR GOD IN THE MODERN WORLD, AND CERTAINLY NOT A FALSE GOD. THIS CONSENSUS IS ONLY NATURAL.

HOW-EVER...

A SUPERSONIC BULLET FROM A BLIND SPOT IS SOMETHING EVEN A CANDIDATE CANNOT EVADE, IF HE DOESN'T KNOW IT'S COMING.

I WILL ADMIT THAT THERE IS A CERTAIN LOGIC TO THE IDEA OF SIMPLY KILLING ALL THE GOD CANDIDATES.

YOU MUST NOT ATTEMPT TO KILL THE GOD CANDIDATES.

IF THERE IS EVEN A SINGLE SECOND'S GAP BETWEEN THE DEATHS OF ALL THE GOD CANDIDATES, THE LAST ONE IS ASSURED TO BECOME THIS FALSE GOD AND SURVIVE THE ATTEMPT.

継 PM YABE'S REMARKS ABOUT GOD CANDID
WIDE LIVE PM YABE SPEAK TO THE NATION
INFORMATION
LIVE PM RESIDENCE
LIVE MESSAGE FROM DR. YONEDA

WE WILL AIR THE ENTIRETY OF OUR DISCUSSION AND BRING IT TO AN ACCEPTABLE CONCLUSION.

LEAVE THIS MATTER UP TO US, THE CANDIDATES.

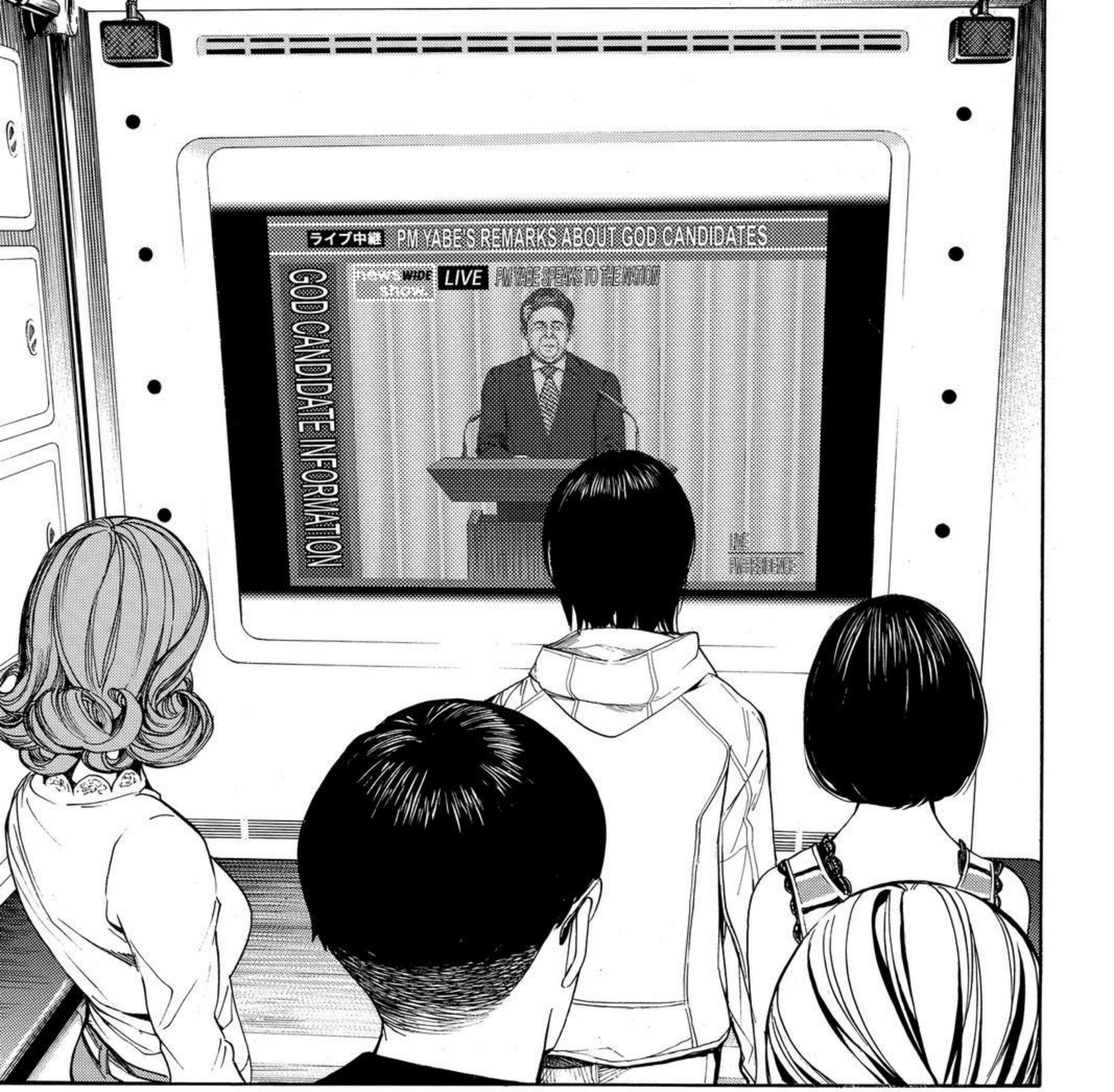
LIVE MESSAGE FROM DR. YONEDA

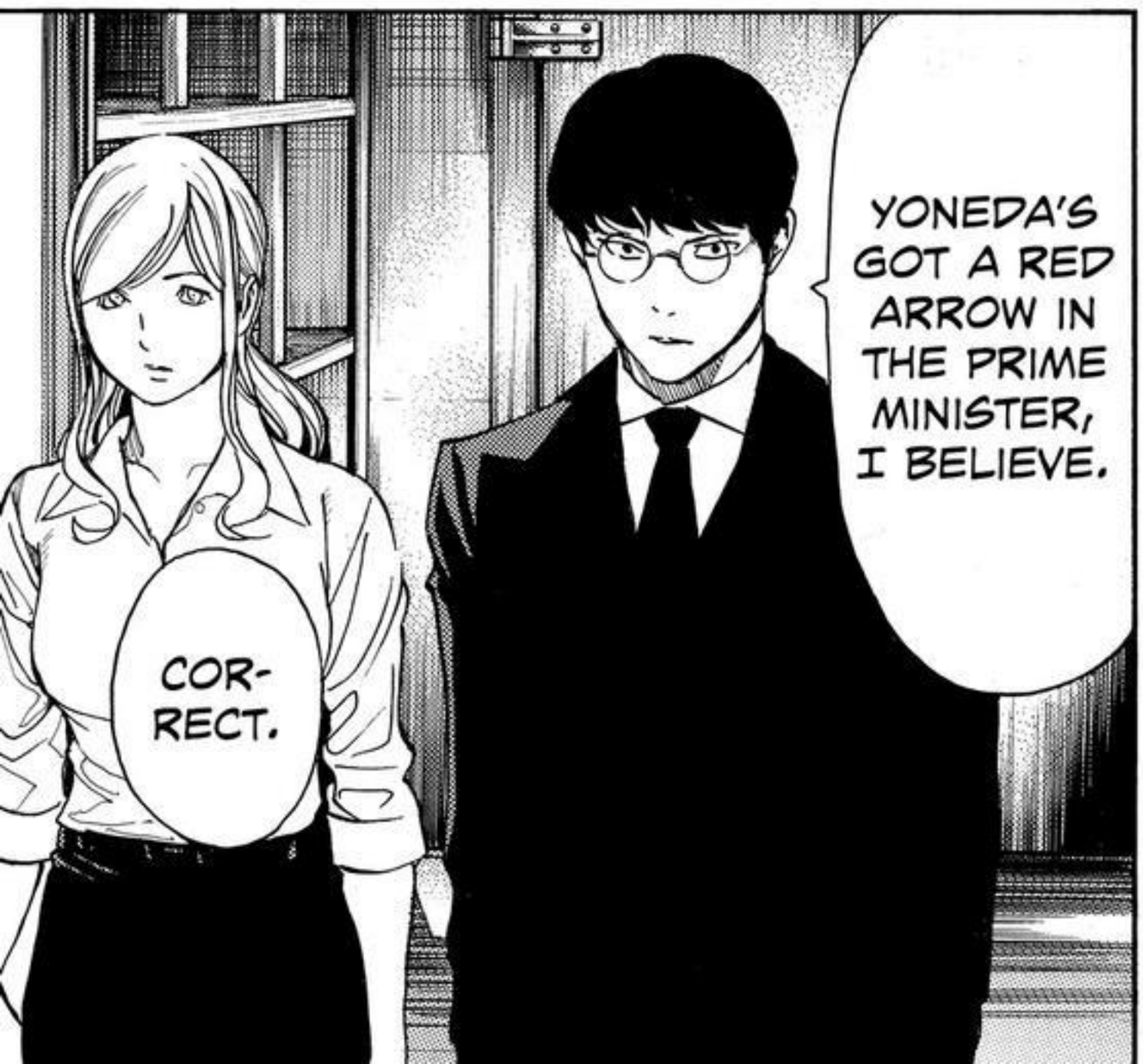
TSUYAYA

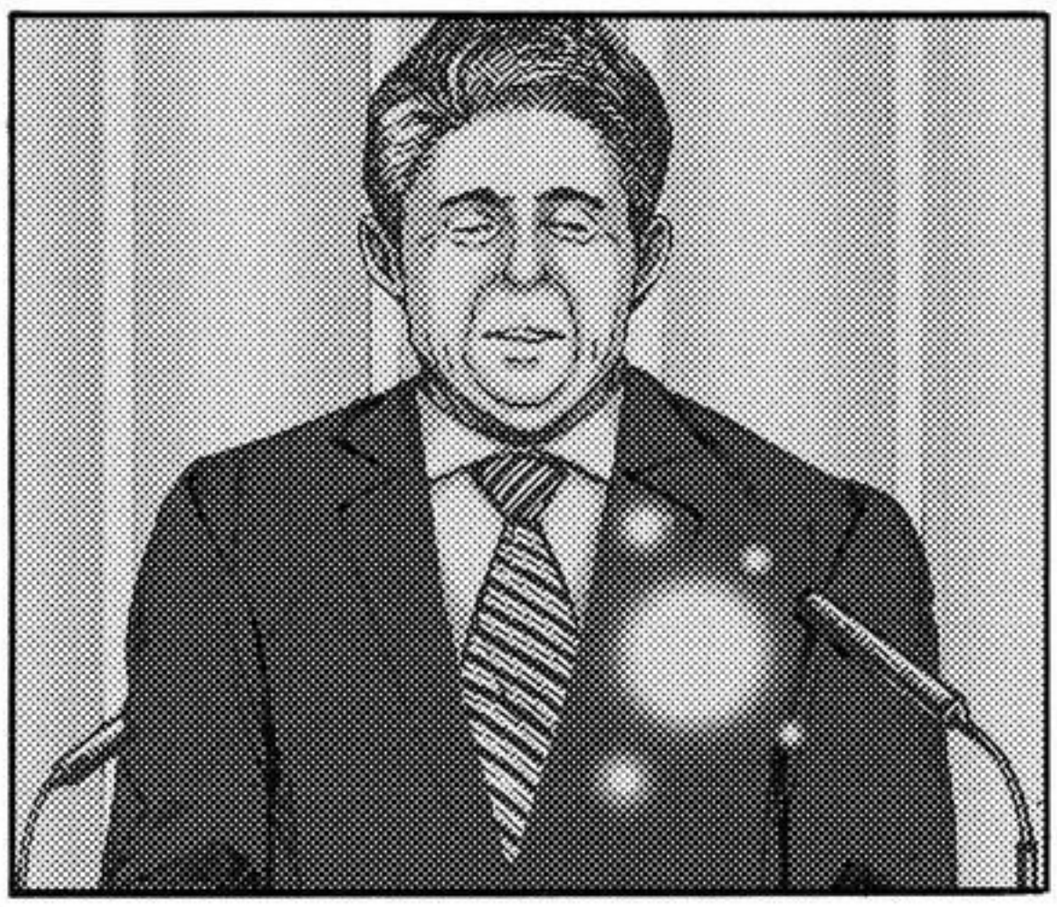
I WILL SEE YOU AGAIN AT THE NEW NATIONAL STADIUM CONSTRUC-TION SITE ON OCTOBER 10.

WELL, IF HE SAYS SO...

IT'LL FINISH ON OCTOBER 10...


ライブ中継 PM YABE'S REMARKS ABOUT GOD CANDIDATES
NEWS WIDE Show
LIVE PM YABE SPEAKS TO THE NATION
GOD CANDIDATE INFORMATION
LIVE
PM PRESIDENCE


YONEDA'S GOT A RED ARROW IN THE PRIME MINISTER, I BELIEVE.
COR-RECT.



ACTUALLY, I THINK THAT THIS REALLY IS DR. YONEDA GIVING US A SAFE PLACE TO TALK.

THIS IS BASICALLY GUARANTEED TO BE A TRAP.

AT THIS POINT, HOW MUCH CAN WE REALLY TRUST EITHER THE GOVERN-MENT OR DR. YONEDA ...?

WHICH IS WHY I'M SAYING WE'LL NEVER CONVINCE HIM OF ANYTHING.

I AGREE. HE WOULDN'T NEED TO DO THAT BECAUSE HE HAS ABSOLUTE CONFIDENCE IN HIMSELF.

DON'T YOU GET IT?

!

YOU NEVER KNOW UNTIL YOU TRY.

IF ONE OF US DOESN'T BECOME GOD, THEN THERE'S NO WAY TO WIPE AWAY THE GOD-CHOOSING PROCESS AND THE CANDIDATES, IS THERE?

THE RED ARROWS AREN'T THE ONLY REASON I'D WANT SOMEONE TO BE GOD.

THAT IS CORRECT.

AM I RIGHT, YAZELI?

IF THAT'S THE CASE, THEN I CAN'T SPEAK FOR DR. YONEDA, BUT I KNOW THAT NONE OF THE REST OF THE GOD CANDIDATES WILL EVER FIND HAPPINESS.

MAYBE NOT.

...

IN THE END, THE BEST WAY IS TO KILL DR. YONEDA.

FALSE GOD OR NOT, THIS ISN'T JUST FOR THE SAKE OF THOSE WHO NEED GOD.

THERE'S ALSO THE HAPPINESS OF THOSE WHO WERE CHOSEN TO BE CANDIDATES...

WE'VE BEEN TRYING SO HARD NOT TO GO THAT ROUTE...

BUT THAT MAKES US NO DIFFERENT FROM METRO-POLIMAN.

WE CAN'T BE HAPPY...

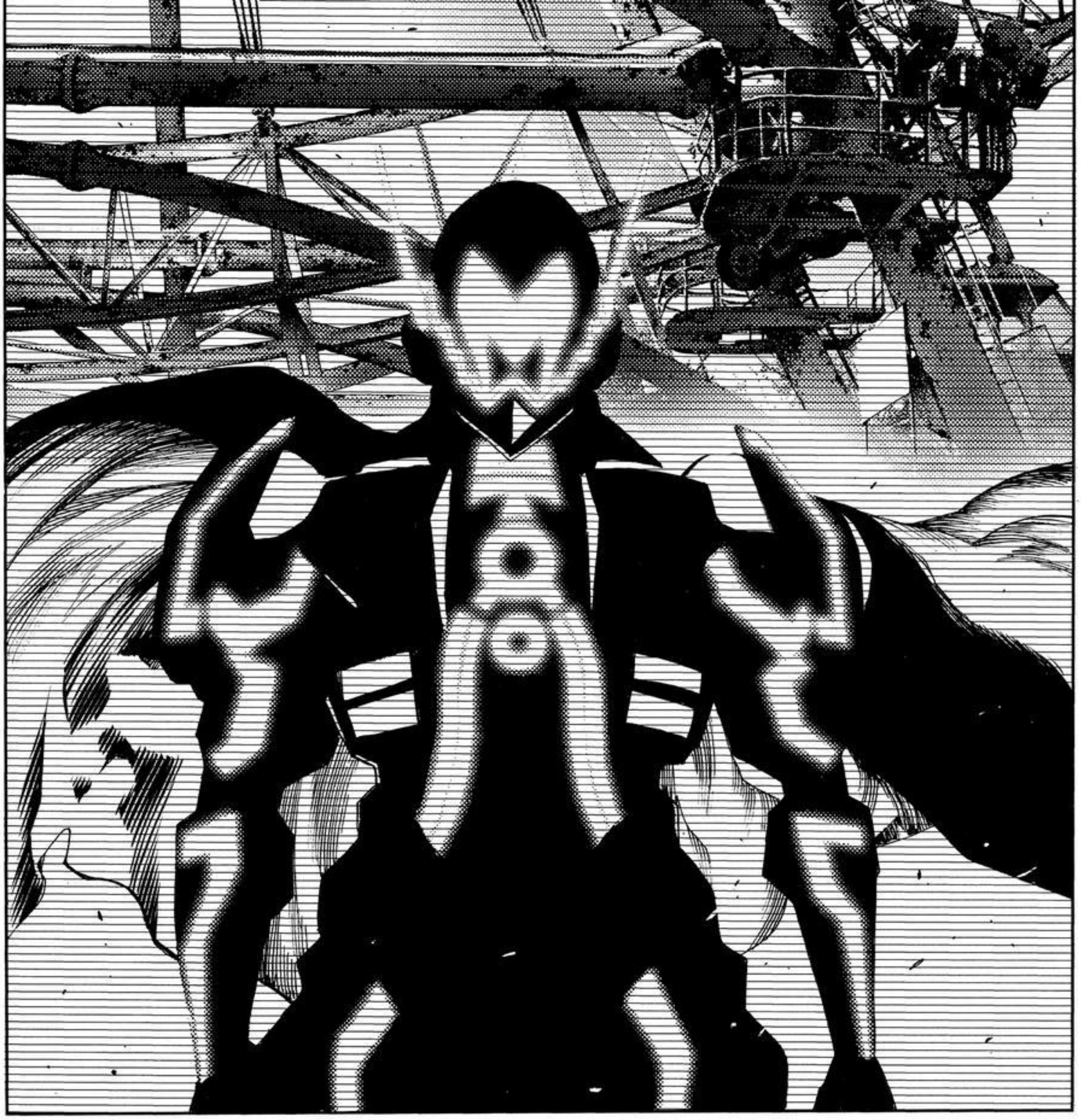
...

KAKE-HASHI?

IF, NO MATTER HOW MUCH WE TALK...

...OR HOW PERSUASIVE OUR ARGUMENTS ARE...

...DR. YONEDA STILL DOESN'T AGREE TO ALLOW A GOD CANDIDATE TO BE GOD...



HE WILL HAVE TO DIE.

#46 Day of Reunion

WHERE EXACTLY ARE WE GOING, PROFESSOR?

SHEF

TO WHERE THE VOLUNTEERS YOU RECRUITED ARE WAITING.

SN...

SUH--!

IT'S A VALUABLE SOURCE OF PROTEIN.

...

SHF...

!

KAW

KRAA

LET'S BEGIN THE TEST.

カア
カアア
カアア
カア

THAT'S RIGHT...

I SUPPOSE... YOU'D SAY THIS WAS SUICIDE...

Y- YEAH...

...

CAN YOU GO AND COLLECT FIREWOOD, NAKAUMI?

KSHUF

WE KNOW THAT NASSE HAS A SPECIAL POWER AND CAN MAKE CONTACT WITH HUMANS.

MUNI.

...SHOULDN'T SHE HAVE TO WITHDRAW FROM THE CHOOSING PROCESS, OR BE DEMOTED?

BUT IF SHE DIRECTLY TOUCHES AND AIDS MIRAI KAKEHASHI AFTER HE BECAME A GOD CANDIDATE...

NWAH.

ONE DAY REMAINING UNTIL OCTOBER 10.

A

IT'S ABOUT TIME.

SO TOMOR-ROW'S THE BIG DAY.

HUH ...?

IT'S TOUGH TO HANG AROUND HERE WHEN I FEEL LIKE I'M JUST A THIRD WHEEL FOR YOU TWO.

IT'S FINE, I'M NOT BLAMING YOU FOR ANYTHING.

...

HEY! RED! STOP LOOKING SO DOWN IN THE DUMPS...

IT'S NOT THAT.

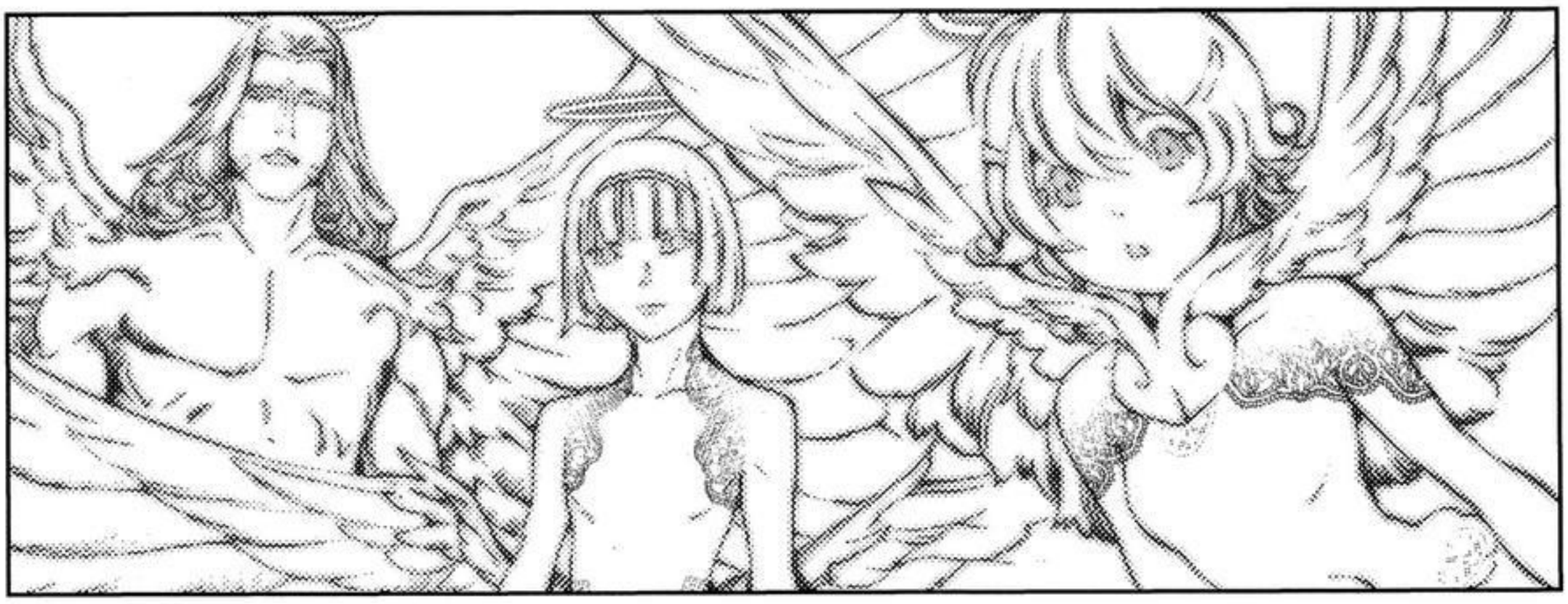
REGARDLESS OF WHICH RELIGION, ABOUT HALF THE PEOPLE OF THE WORLD BELIEVE IN GOD. BUT AFTER DR. YONEDA'S SPEECH, THE NUMBER OF BELIEVERS WENT DOWN TO JUST 10 PERCENT.

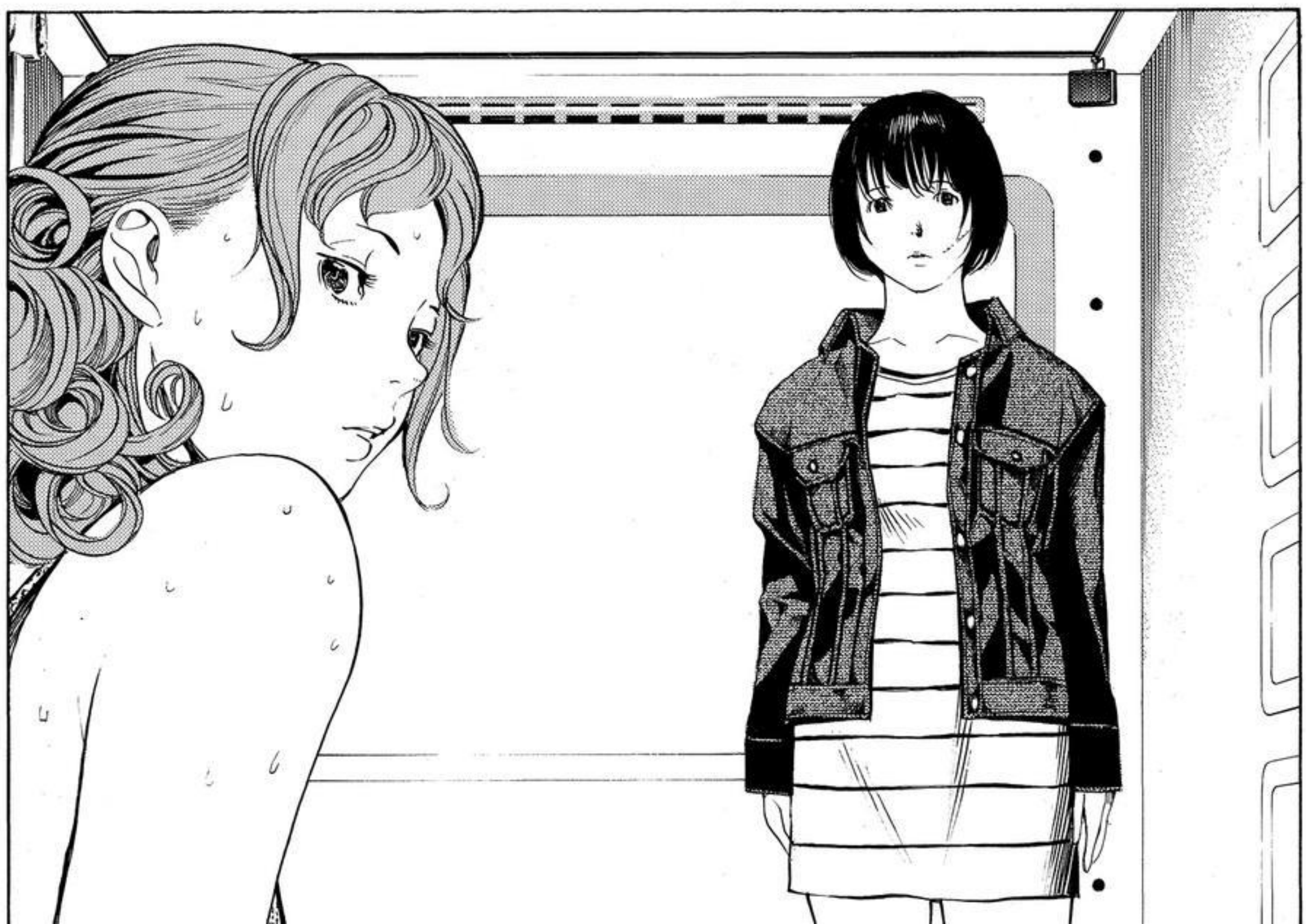
THAT'S TRUE, BUT...

BUT THERE ARE STILL PEOPLE WHO DO BELIEVE IN GOD.

MEANING THAT LOTS OF PEOPLE RECON-SIDERED AND DECIDED THAT GOD DOESN'T EXIST.

...THE VAST MAJORITY OF PEOPLE WON'T ACCEPT THEM AS GOD.
EVEN WHEN A CANDIDATE BECOMES GOD...





IT COULD GO JUST LIKE THAT ...

BUT WHEN WE LOST THE WAR, AND THEY SHOWED PHOTOGRAPHS OF THE EMPEROR TO THE POPULACE, AND HE ADMITTED THAT HE WAS HUMAN, WE ACCEPTED IT...

IN THE PAST, JAPAN BELIEVED THAT THE EMPEROR WAS A LITERAL GOD.

YOU MIGHT BE RIGHT.

...

THE CANDIDATES CAN FLY, BUT WE'VE BEEN PLASTERED ALL OVER THE NET, SO PEOPLE ARE GOING TO HAVE A HARD TIME ACCEPTING IT IF ONE OF US SAYS, "I'M YOUR GOD NOW."

IT'S HARD FOR ANY FLESH-AND-BLOOD HUMAN TO CLAIM THEY'RE GOD...

AND AS LONG AS THERE ARE SOME OF THOSE PEOPLE AROUND, YOU SHOULD BE GOD! FOR THEM!

BUT NO MATTER HOW SMALL OF A MINORITY WE ARE, I BELIEVE IN GOD AND WORSHIP GOD.

BE LIKE ME-- I ONLY CHECK OUT BEAUTY WEBSITES.

HONESTLY, YOU SHOULDN'T EVEN PAY ATTENTION TO WHAT THE REST OF THE WORLD IS SAYING.

RIGHT.

SOME PEOPLE ARE SAYING, "RED AND YELLOW BEAT METRO-POLIMAN, SO THEY HAVE WHAT IT TAKES TO BE GOD."

THIS IS GOING TO BE A WORLDWIDE BROADCAST.

CLACK

CLICK

MORE IMPORTANTLY, WHAT ARE YOU GONNA WEAR TOMORROW?

SAME FOR ME.

I'M JUST GOING TO WEAR MY USUAL YELLOW BODY-SUIT.

WHAT LOSERS!

YOU'RE JOKING ...

SHF...

THANK YOU FOR THE INVITATION.

NOT TO WORRY. NO OTHER NATION WANTS A JAPANESE "CREATURE" GOD RULING OVER THE WORLD.

WHAT ARE WE DOING ABOUT OTHER COUNTRIES?

WHEN YOU SURMISED THAT EVEN A SPLIT-SECOND GAP BETWEEN THE DEATHS OF THE CANDIDATES WOULD CAUSE THE LAST ONE TO AUTOMATICALLY SURVIVE AND BECOME THE FALSE GOD, THAT SEEMS TO HAVE CONVINCED THEM NOT TO TRY ANY FUNNY BUSINESS.

...

CLINK

CHOMP

URP

I'VE NEVER EATEN SUCH DELICIOUS MEAT BEFORE IN MY LIFE.

CLINK

CHOMP

CHOMP

PWO-FESSUH ...

AND YOUR DELIGHT AT ITS FLAVOR...

...AS WELL AS THE WARY DISTANCE OF THE WORLD'S LEADERS...

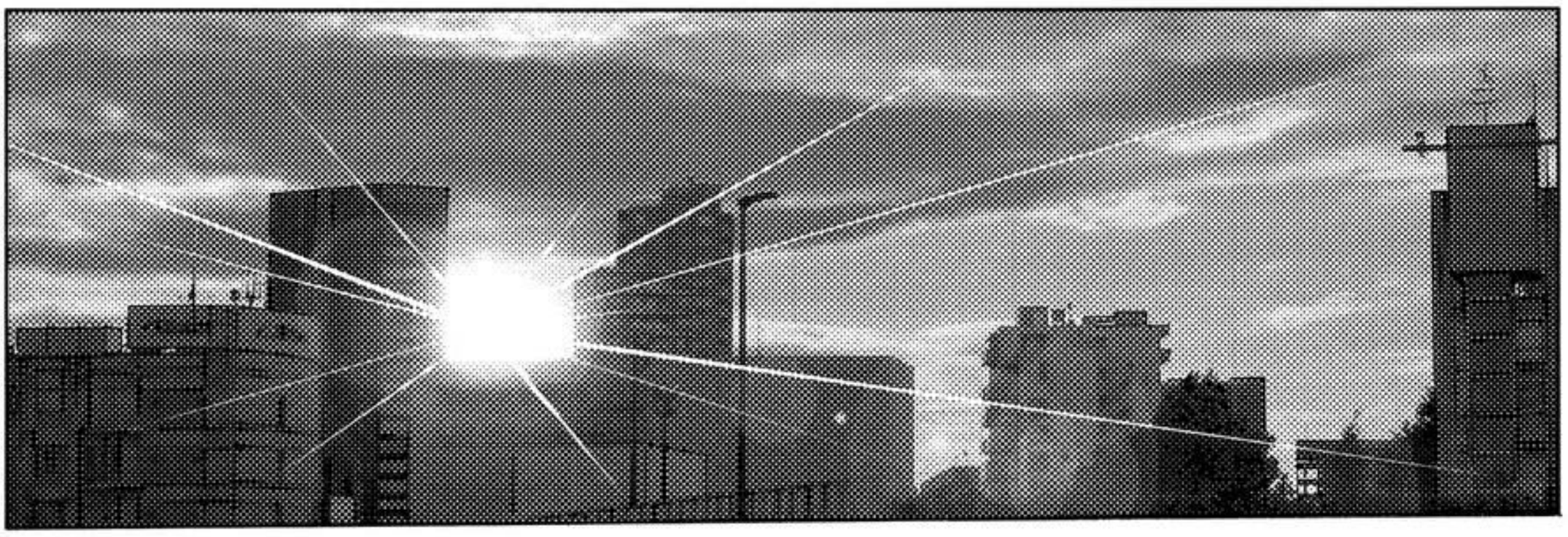
...HAS ALL BEEN PREDETER-MINED, LIKE THE COURSE OF THE ENTIRE WORLD.

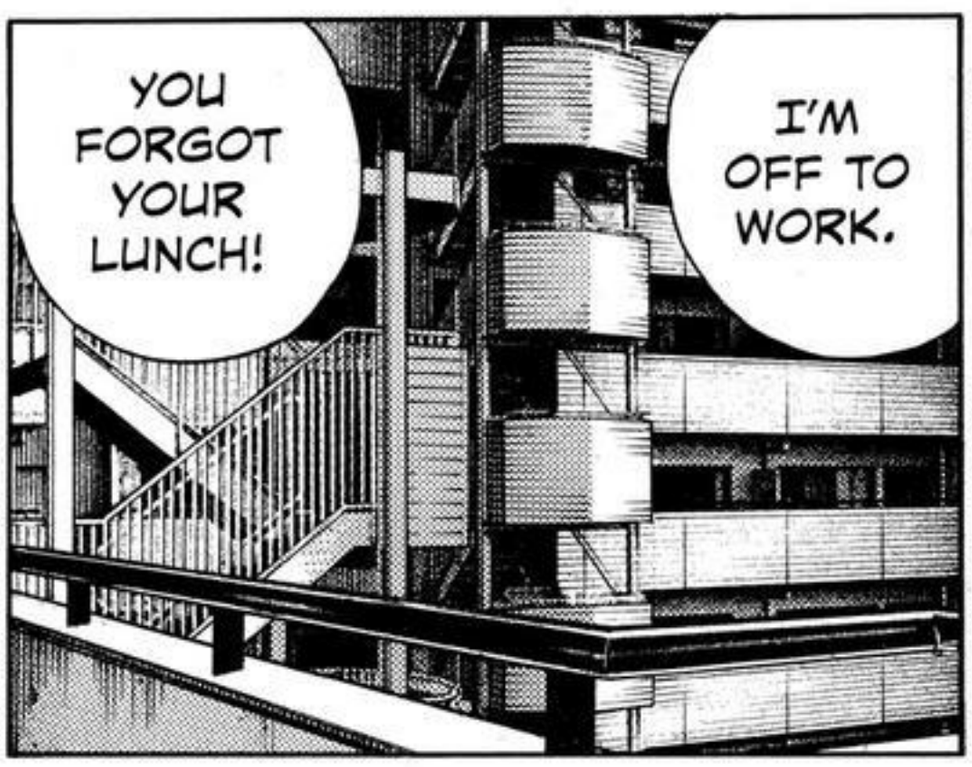
THIS IS CHATEAU-BRIAND STEAK MADE WITH SANDA BEEF.

THIS COW WAS RAISED WITH GREAT CARE...

...ALL FOR THE PURPOSE OF BEING EATEN BY US AT THIS DINNER.

...I SHALL BRING IT ALL TO AN END.
AND TOMOR-ROW...




YOU FORGOT YOUR LUNCH!
I'M OFF TO WORK.

TODAY'S THE DAY, HUH?

MORNING.

2
YEAH, FOR THE GOD CAN-DIDATES...
IT'S DR. YONEDA'S THING...

OH, CRAP! IT'S OCTOBER 10.

TAKE OUT THE TRASH, DEAR!

WUFF

WUFF

AND A TWO...

AND A ONE...

IT'S 10/10 NOW

HUH? WHAT

OH!!! CRAP!

THE DAY GOD GETS DECIDED

I DUNNO. YOU THINK THAT'LL REALLY HAPPEN

NO WAY

I GUESS I'M OKAY WITH IT IF IT TURNS OUT TO BE [illegible]ONE AMAZING AND IMPORT[illegible] PROFESSOR

WHOOSH

OCTOBER 10.

THE BREEZE IS SO STRONG...

OCTOBER 10.

OCTOBER 10

I'M HERE OUTSIDE OF NEW NATIONAL STADIUM.

THERE ARE POLICE STATIONED ALL OVER THE PLACE, AND NO CIVILIANS ARE ALLOWED WITHIN A KILOMETER OF THE STADIUM.

THERE ARE ALL KINDS OF BROADCAST TRUCKS AND FOREIGN MEDIA TEAMS HERE IN THE SHINJUKU GYOEN PARKING LOT.

THIS IS WHERE THE MEDIA HAS SET UP FOR THE SECOND ROUND OF THE GOD CANDIDATE DISCUSSION, WHICH IS SCHEDULED TO BEGIN IN 15 MINUTES.

WE'RE GOING TO TAKE YOU TO OUR LIVE CAMERA INSIDE THE NEW NATIONAL STADIUM.

IS THAT SO?

LIVE FROM OLYMPIC STADIUM

OH! MISS YAGI, I'M HEARING THAT DR. YONEDA HAS JUST MADE HIS APPEARANCE.

WH
O

HERE IS A MESSAGE FROM DR. YONEDA.

I WANT YOU TO COME TO THIS PLACE OF DIALOGUE FEELING SECURE IN YOUR PERSONAL SAFETY.

THERE WILL BE NO DANGER, UNLIKE LAST TIME.

PRIME MINISTER YABE HAS DISCUSSED THE MATTER WITH OTHER HEADS OF STATE.

WHAT DO YOU MEAN, IT DOESN'T START AT ONE O'CLOCK?!

WHAT?

WE'RE READY.

LET'S GO.

SHWA

DR. GAKU YONEDA'S ANSWER REVE

WAIT, I'M...

#47 The Time for Talk

MORE GOD CANDIDATES HAVE ARRIVED.

IT LOOKS LIKE THE RED AND YELLOW WARRIORS...

SHH

HUH ...?!

THE NUMBER OF CANDIDATES HAS GROWN.

WHAT DOES THIS MEAN ...?!

TWO MORE ...?

YONEDA... DO YOU REMEMBER ME?

...

I'M A POLICE DETECTIVE NOW. BUT DON'T WORRY, I CAME UNARMED.

I'M HOSHI. I WAS YOUR CLASSMATE IN HIGH SCHOOL.

?

FIVE MINUTES, EIGHT SECONDS.

...AND THAT WAS THE TOTAL TIME OF OUR CONVERSA-TIONS.

OUT OF 358 STUDENTS AT THE HIGH SCHOOL YOU AND I ATTENDED, YOU ARE THE ONE PERSON WHO SPOKE WITH ME...

...AND FOUR MINUTES 55 SECONDS AFTER THE 50-METER DASH.

THIRTEEN SECONDS AT THE FOOT OF THE STAIRS...

FWP

I AM ESPECIALLY ATTUNED TO NUMBERS, YOU SEE.

AND IT WOULD SEEM THAT YOU'VE USED ARROWS ON THE PM, ALL THE MINISTERS AND THE HEADS OF THE SELF-DEFENSE FORCES.

I'D HEARD THAT THE TOP RANKS OF THE POLICE HAD BEEN PIERCED WITH RED ARROWS.

WHAT A REUNION FOR US.

GIGA BLDG.

GIGA

LASA

LATEST GOD CANDIDATE INFO

FINAL CANDIDATE FACE-OFF

LIVE

WHAT IS DR. GAKU YONEDA'S ANSWER?!

5 CANDIDATES' FINAL FACE-OFF

5 CANDIDATES' FINAL FACE-

WHAT DOES THIS MEAN? THE RED ARROWS ARE THE ONES THAT MAKE PEOPLE FALL IN LOVE, RIGHT?

NO, DON'T DO THIS!

WHY ARE THERE TWO EXTRA PEOPLE?

SO THE COPS AND THE SDF ARE FIGHTING?

SO, RED AND YELLOW STUCK A RED ARROW IN A POLICE DETECTIVE. WHAT DO THEY PLAN TO MAKE YOU DO?

YOU'VE GOT THE WRONG IDEA.

HE SAID HE WANTED TO OFFER YOU ADVICE AS AN OLD MATE. WE ONLY USED THE RED ARROW TO GIVE HIM WINGS.

MR. HOSHI TOOK US IN OVER A MONTH AGO BECAUSE HE WAS CONCERNED FOR OUR SAFETY.

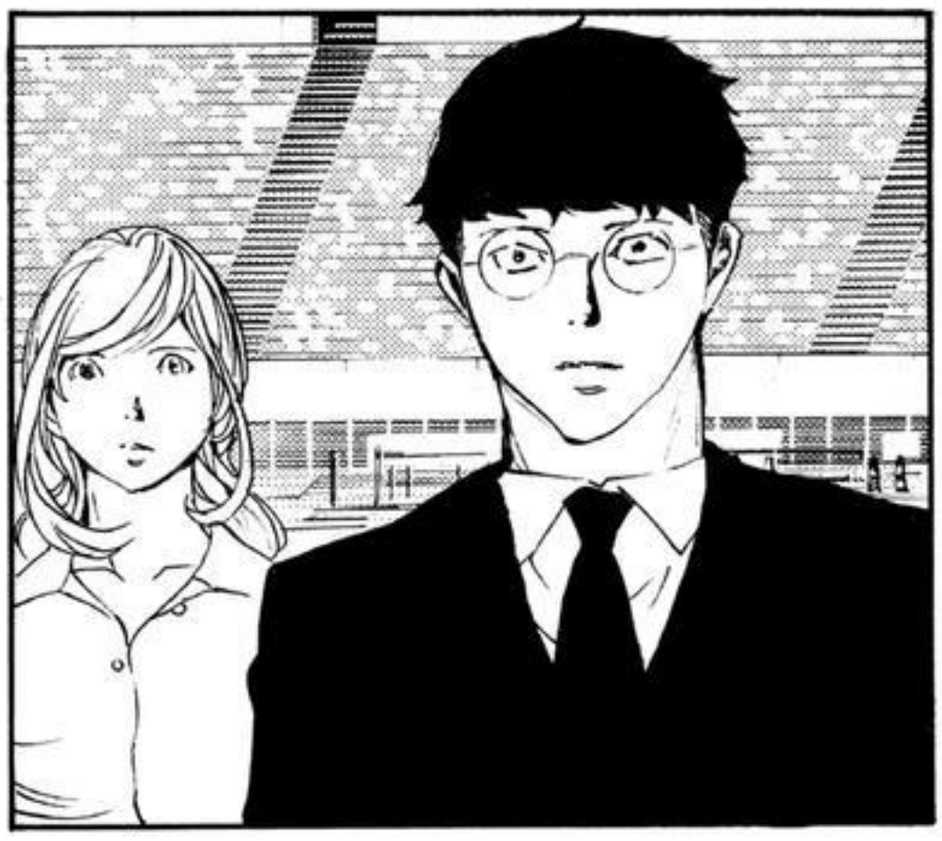
!

MATE AS IN "CLASSMATE," OR AS IN "FRIEND"? IN EITHER CASE, WE WERE NEVER CLOSE.

I FIND IT HARD TO UNDERSTAND WHY YOU WOULD NOW BE ABANDONING THOSE PEOPLE WHO NEED GOD THE MOST.

THAT'S TRUE. YOU DIDN'T WANT TO BE INVOLVED WITH PEOPLE ...

I REMEMBER YOU SAYING THAT YOU TREATED PEOPLE GENTLY BECAUSE YOU DID NOT WANT TO INFLICT DISCOMFORT UPON THEM.



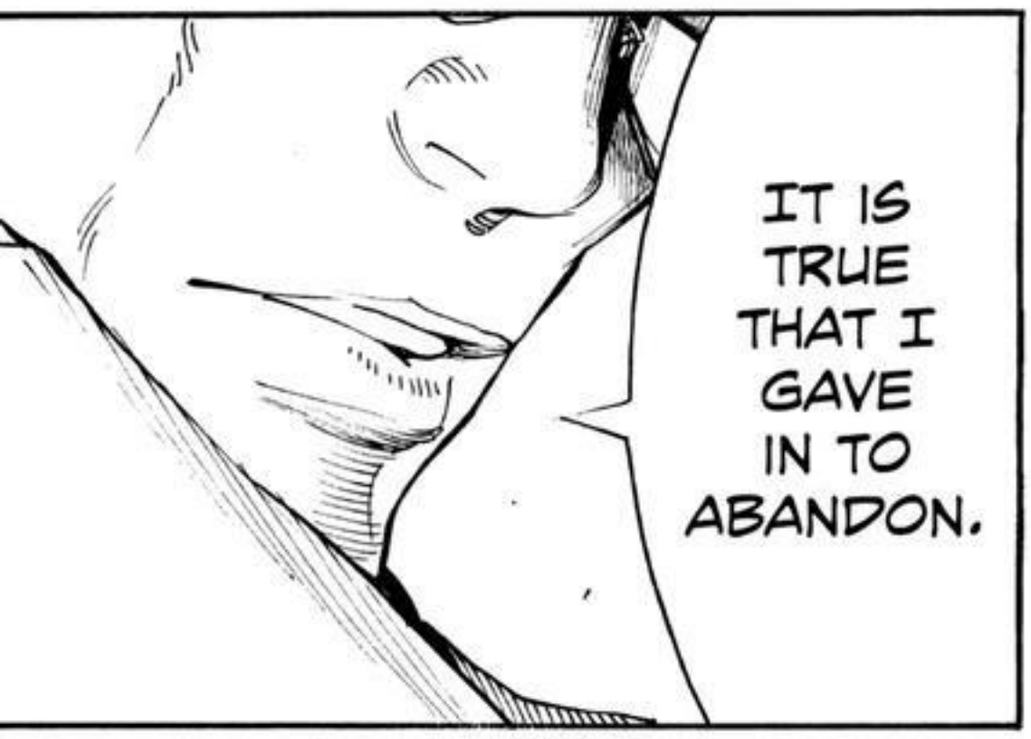
YOU SEEM TO BE SUFFERING FROM A MISUNDER-STANDING.

I DIDN'T WANT TO DISCOMFORT THEM BECAUSE I DID NOT WANT THEM TO BOTHER ME IN RETURN. I DID NOT WANT ANY LINGERING PERSONAL BUSINESS.
I WAS NOT "TREATING PEOPLE GENTLY." I WAS MERELY MINIMIZING THE TIME OF INDIVIDUAL CONTACT AND ENSURING THE LACK OF ANY FUTURE CONTACT AFTER THAT.

I CHOSE THE WRONG METHOD OF INTERACTION. I SHOULD NOT HAVE ALLOWED A SINGLE PERSON TO SPEAK WITH ME AFTER ALL.

IN FACT, I REMEMBER THAT YOU ASKED TO BE MY FRIEND, AND I FIRMLY DECLINED. AND YET HERE YOU ARE, A TROUBLESOME CONNECTION TO MY PAST.

...
KINDA SOUNDS LIKE THERE'S NO POINT TO YOU BEING HERE ANYMORE.
HEY...


IT IS TRUE THAT I GAVE IN TO ABANDON.

DID THE LOSS OF PRIVACY THAT CAME WITH YOUR PRESTIGE DRIVE YOU TO SELF-ABANDON-MENT?
THEN WHY ARE YOU FORMING SUCH A CONNECTION WITH THE PEOPLE OF THE WORLD NOW?

IT INFLICTED SUCH MENTAL INSTABILITY ON ME THAT I EVEN CONSIDERED DEATH AT ONE POINT.

SO MANY PEOPLE HAVE APPROACHED ME SINCE THEN.

HOW MANY TIMES HAVE I WISHED THAT I NEVER WON THE NOBEL?

BUT HUMAN BEINGS ARE MYSTERIOUS THINGS.

BY *GIVING UP* ON THE IDEA OF STAYING INDEPENDENT OF OTHERS, I WAS ABLE TO CONQUER MY FEAR OF THEM.

IF YOU GIVE SOMETHING UP, YOU GAIN SOMETHING IN RETURN.

YOU CON-QUERED YOUR FEAR ...?

HE ACTS LIKE SUCH A BIG-SHOT EXPERT, BUT HE WAS AFRAID OF PEOPLE?

HUH ...?

IN WHICH CASE...

NO ONE IS CAPABLE OF DEVIATING FROM THAT.

A PERSON'S ACTIONS AND FUTURE ARE DETERMINED FROM THE START.

DO NOT ALLOW OTHERS TO CONTROL YOU.

DO NOT FEAR OTHERS.

IF YOU MAKE IT HAPPEN BEFORE YOU MEET YOUR DEATH, THAT IS THE DEFINITION OF HAPPINESS.

THINK OF WHAT IS POSSIBLE FOR YOU TO ACHIEVE WITHIN THAT PATH AND DO IT.

PROFES-
SOR...

I FEEL PATHETIC THAT ALL I WANTED TO DO WAS KILL MYSELF...

...I HAVE SOMETHING TO ACHIEVE WITH THE PROFESSOR...

AT THIS VERY MOMENT...

GIGA BLDG.

GIGA VISION

LASA

LATEST CGD CANDIDATE INFO

WHAT IS DR. GAKU YONEDA'S ANSWER?!

FINAL FACE-OFF

5 CANDIDATES' FINAL FACE-OFF

5 CANDIDATES' FINAL FACE-O

神候補最新情報

インテリア・家具

TAX FREE

Welcome!

...THERE IS SOMETHING THAT I CAN ACHIEVE HERE AND NOW.

...AND EXPLAINING MY IDEAS TO THE WORLD...

BY NOT FEARING ASSOCIATION WITH OTHERS...

...TAKING A PUBLIC POSITION AS A SCHOLAR...

...THAT I AM FACED WITH NOW.

...IS TO KILL THE THREE GOD CANDIDATES ...

AND THE FIRST STEP TO ACHIEVING THAT...

IT IS TO ENSURE THAT NO GOD CANDIDATE BECOMES A FALSE GOD.

TO DO THIS, THREE OF THE FIVE REMAINING CANDIDATES MUST DIE, SO THAT THE FINAL TWO CAN TAKE EACH OTHER OUT WITH WHITE ARROWS.

THE WAY TO GUARANTEE THAT WE DO NOT PRODUCE A FALSE GOD "CREATURE" IS FOR ALL OF THE CANDIDATES TO DIE.

ON THEIR SIDE, ONLY MIRAI KAKEHASHI HAS WHITE ARROWS.

LASTLY, SHUJI NAKAUMI AND I WILL KILL EACH OTHER WITH THE WHITE ARROWS I GAVE HIM.

THE THREE OF THEM MUST DIE.

MIRAI KAKEHASHI, SAKI HANAKAGO, YURI TEMARI.

OUR MUTUAL ENDING IS ABSOLUTELY ASSURED.

SHUJI NAKAUMI WORSHIPS ME AND IS UNDER THE EFFECT OF A RED ARROW. HE IS ALSO ACCEPTING OF DEATH.

IN OTHER WORDS...

ライブ中継 PM YABE'S REMARKS ABOUT GOD CANDIDATE INFORMATION

NEWS WIDE shows LIVE PM YABE SPEAKS TO THE NATION

TO THE PUBLIC, I ANNOUNCED THAT IF THE MOMENT OF DEATH IS EVEN A SECOND APART, THE LAST LIVING CANDIDATE WILL BECOME THE CREATURE.

LIVE
PM RESIDENCE

...

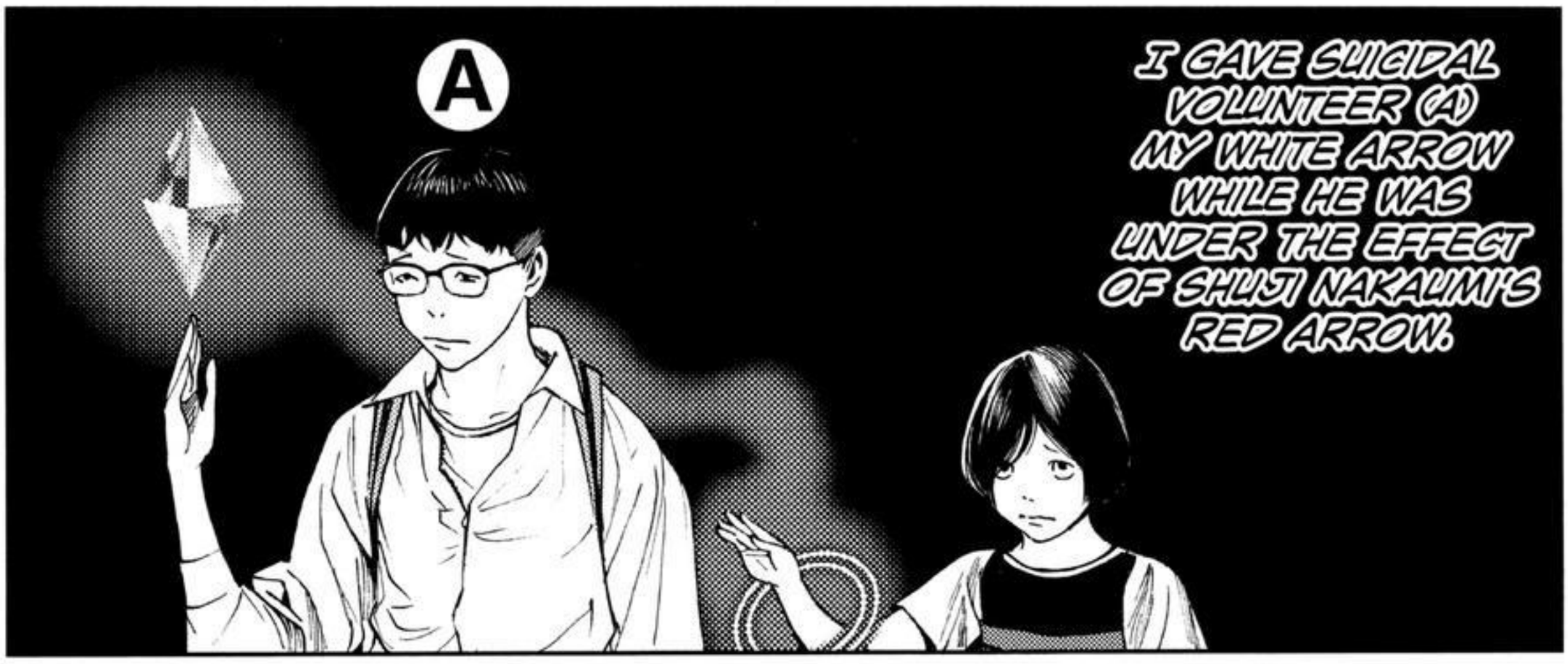
NO ONE IS EXPECTING ME TO ATTEMPT FORCING A CONCLUSION TO THE PROCESS THROUGH THE OBLITERATION OF THE CANDIDATES.

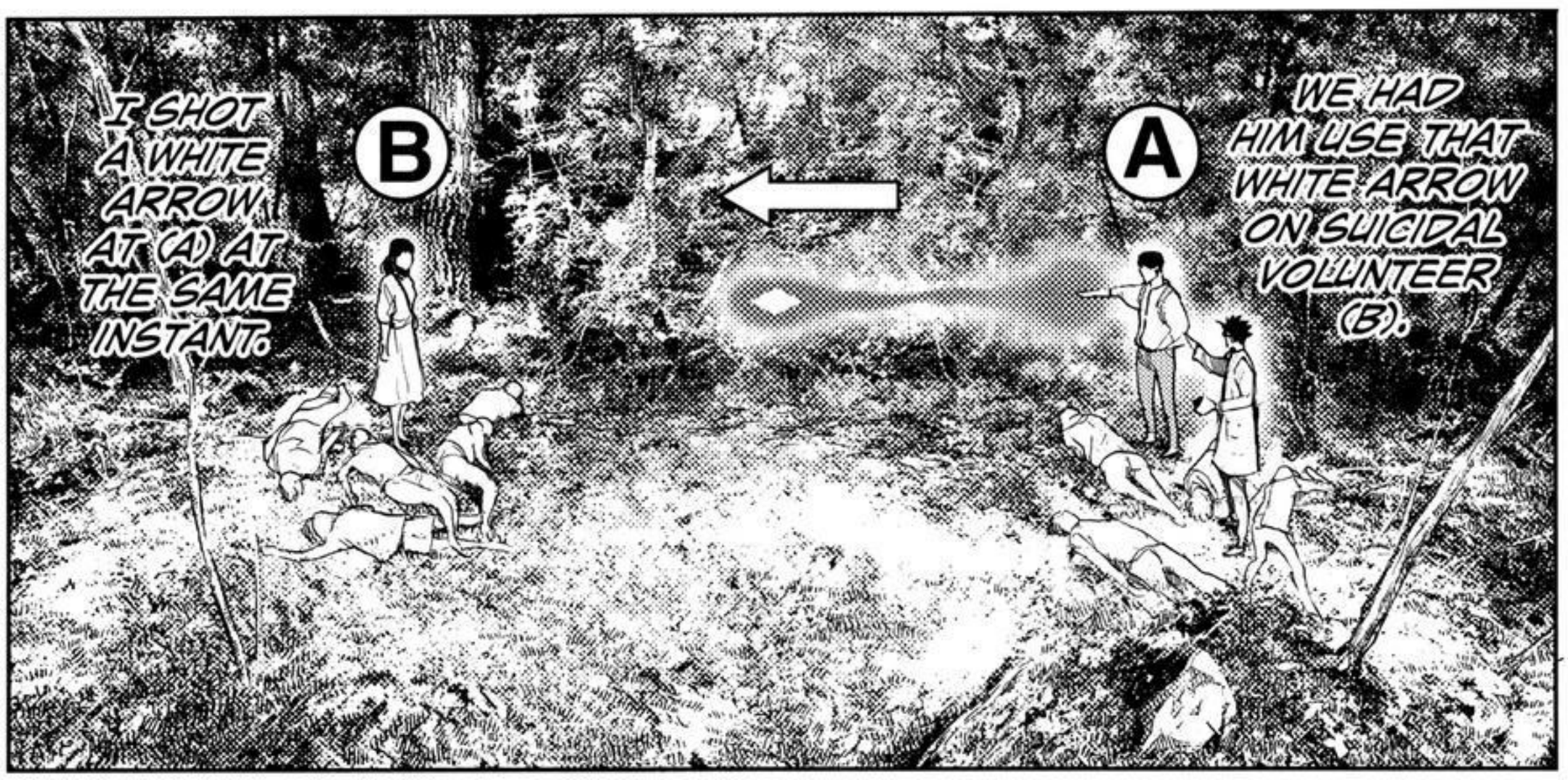
IT WILL NOT BE A MUTUAL DEATH IF THERE IS A SECOND'S DISCREPANCY, BUT THESE WHITE ARROWS ARE THE CREATION OF A BEING GENERATED BY HUMANITY.

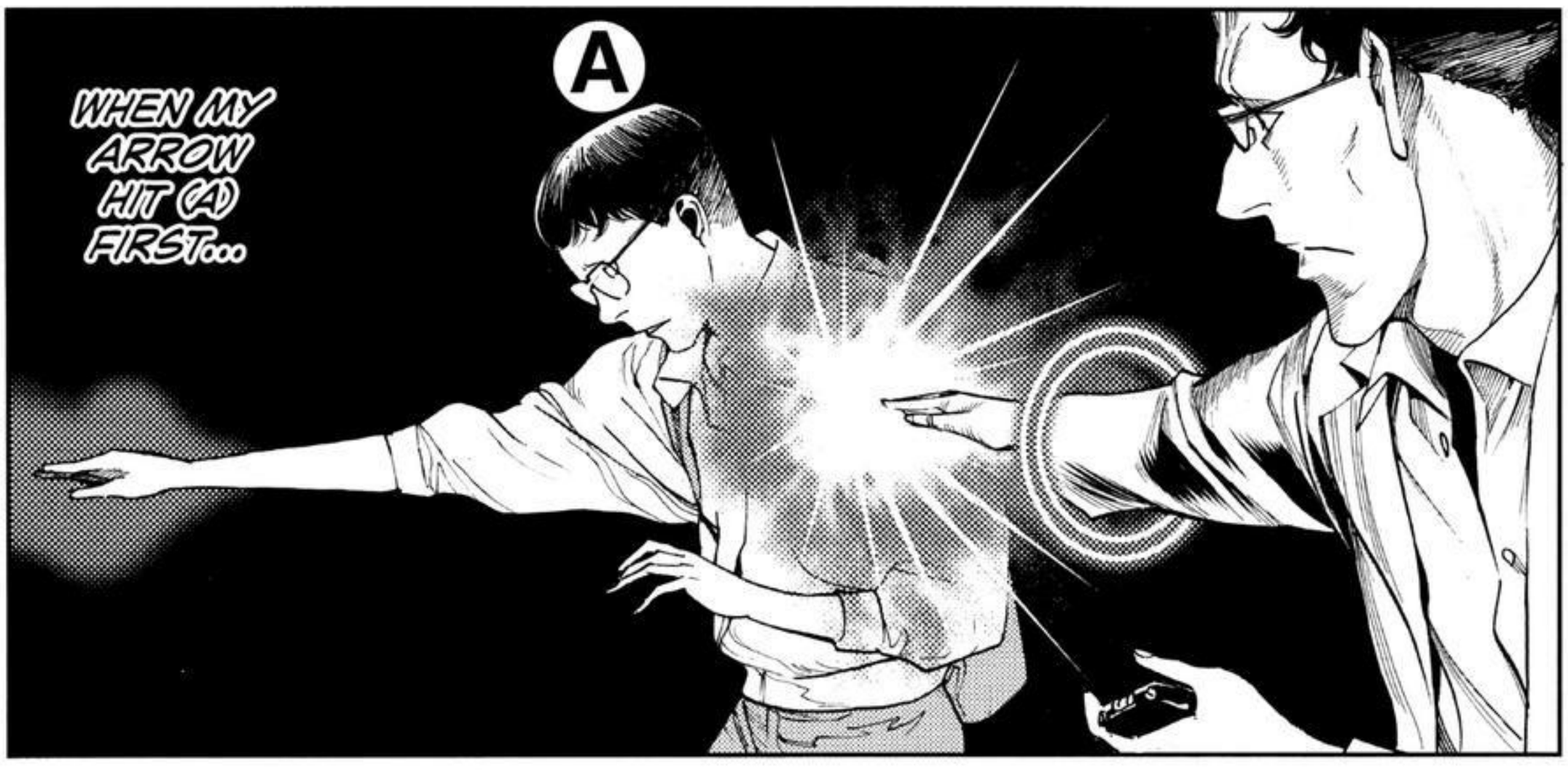
THE ANSWER IS THAT ANYTHING WITHIN 0.15 SECONDS COUNTS AS SIMULTANEOUS.

THE SUCCESS OF A MUTUAL SHOOTING MUST FALL WITHIN A HUMAN'S RECOGNITION OF SUCH. HOW MUCH OF A DISCREPANCY CAN THERE BE?

THAT IS WHAT OUR TESTS CONFIRMED.

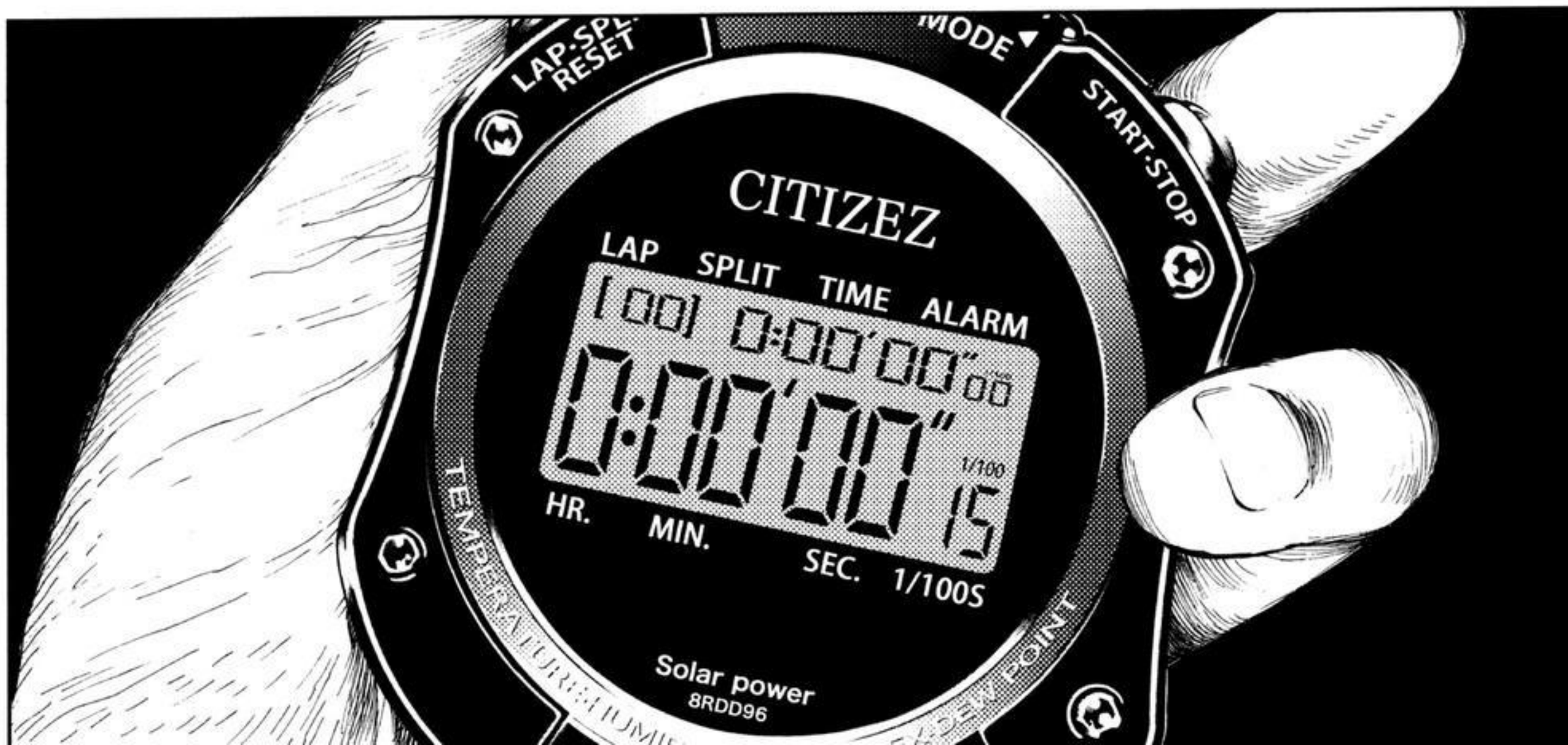

A
I GAVE SUICIDAL VOLUNTEER (A) MY WHITE ARROW WHILE HE WAS UNDER THE EFFECT OF SHUJI NAKAUMI'S RED ARROW.


I SHOT A WHITE ARROW AT (A) AT THE SAME INSTANT.
B
A
WE HAD HIM USE THAT WHITE ARROW ON SUICIDAL VOLUNTEER (B).


WHEN MY ARROW HIT (A) FIRST...
A

WHEN IT HAPPENED 0.16 SECONDS LATER, (B) DID NOT DIE.

...(B) WOULD DIE FROM (A)'S ARROW ONLY IF IT WAS WITHIN 0.15 SECONDS OF (A)'S DEATH.



IT IS ONLY POSSIBLE BECAUSE OF THE WHITE ARROWS.

IT MAY SOUND LIKE 0.15 SECONDS IS A LONG TIME, BUT IT IS QUITE DIFFICULT TO INTENTIONALLY KILL TWO HUMAN BEINGS WITHIN A SPAN OF 0.15 SECONDS.

...THEN NO FALSE GOD WILL RESULT FROM THIS PROCESS.

IF THE FINAL TWO CANDIDATES HIT EACH OTHER WITH WHITE ARROWS WITHIN A SPAN OF 0.15 SECONDS...

TO BE CONTINUED...

T s u**g** u mi **O**h b **a**

Born in Tokyo, Tsugumi Ohba is the author of the hit series *Death Note* and *Bakuman。*.

Ta**k** e s**h** i O b a **t**a

Takeshi Obata was born in 1969 in Niigata, Japan, and first achieved international recognition as the artist of the wildly popular *Shonen Jump* title *Hikaru no Go*, which won the 2003 Tezuka Osamu Cultural Prize: Shinsei "New Hope" Award and the 2000 Shogakukan Manga Award. He went on to illustrate the smash hit *Death Note* as well as the hugely successful manga *Bakuman。* and *All You Need Is Kill.*

PLATINVM END

VOLUME 12
SHONEN JUMP Manga Edition

°

STORY Tsugumi Ohba
ART Takeshi Obata

°

TRANSLATION Stephen Paul
TOUCH-UP ART & LETTERING James Gaubatz
DESIGN Shawn Carrico
EDITOR Alexis Kirsch

°

ORIGINAL COVER DESIGN Narumi Noriko

°

PLATINUM END © 2015 by Tsugumi Ohba, Takeshi Obata
All rights reserved.
First published in Japan in 2015 by SHUEISHA Inc., Tokyo.
English translation rights arranged by SHUEISHA Inc.

°

The stories, characters and incidents mentioned in this publication are entirely fictional.

No portion of this book may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means without written permission from the copyright holders.

°

Printed in the U.S.A.

Published by VIZ Media, LLC
P.O. Box 77010
San Francisco, CA 94107

°

°

10 9 8 7 6 5 4 3 2 1
First printing, January 2021

VIZ MEDIA
viz.com

SHONEN JUMP

ratings.viz.com RATED M MATURE

PARENTAL ADVISORY
PLATINUM END is rated M for Mature and is recommended for mature readers.
This volume contains suggestive themes.

The creators of

DEATH NOTE

return in this dark story with an angelic twist!

Just when it seemed like the god candidates might come to an agreement, one of them is suddenly assassinated. And now Professor Yoneda seems to be in control of the entire god selection process. Will the remaining candidates yield to Yoneda's desire to rid humanity of fake gods, or does Mirai have a different plan in mind...?

$9.99 USA $12.99 CAN £7.99 UK

viz.com

VIZ MEDIA

SHONEN JUMP

RATED M MATURE

ISBN: 978-1-9747-1974-7

50999

9 781974 719747

PARENTAL ADVISORY
EXPLICIT CONTENT

13

PLATINUM END

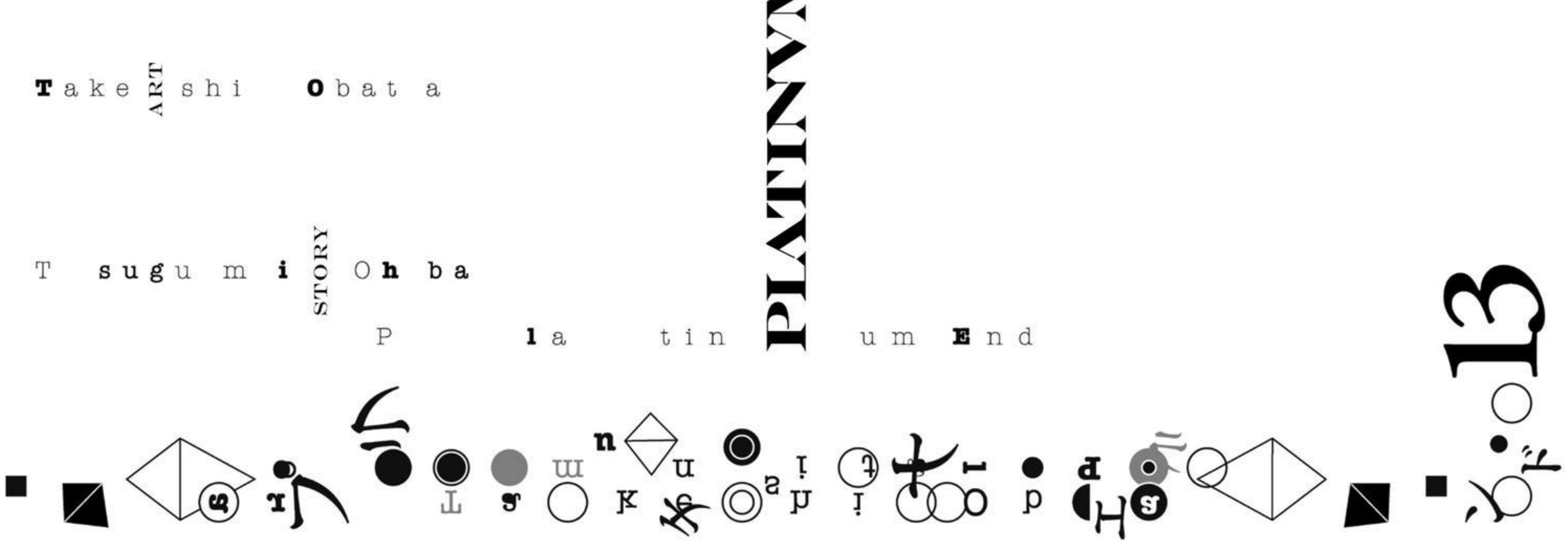
STORY
TSUGUMI OHBA

ART
TAKESHI OBATA

PLATINUM END

Takeshi Obata ART

Tsugumi Ohba STORY

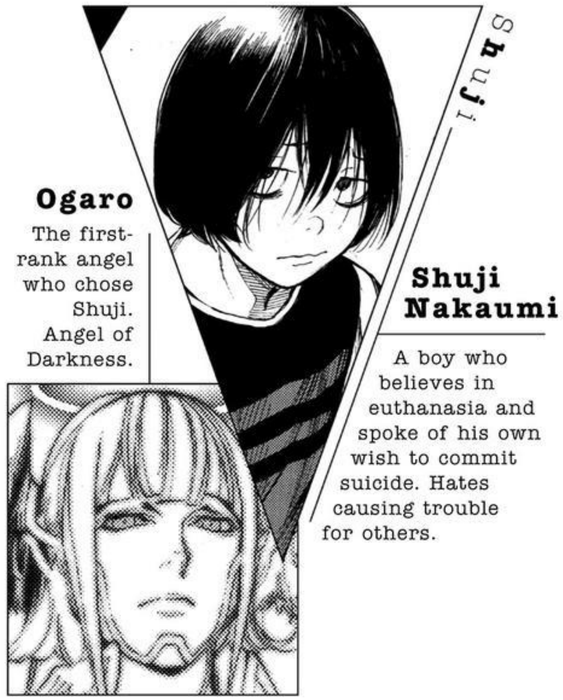


Muni

The special-rank angel who chose Yoneda. Angel of Destruction.

Gaku Yoneda

A university professor hailed as a genius. Winner of a Nobel Prize.



Ogaro

The first-rank angel who chose Shuji. Angel of Darkness.

Shuji Nakaumi

A boy who believes in euthanasia and spoke of his own wish to commit suicide. Hates causing trouble for others.

Yumiki

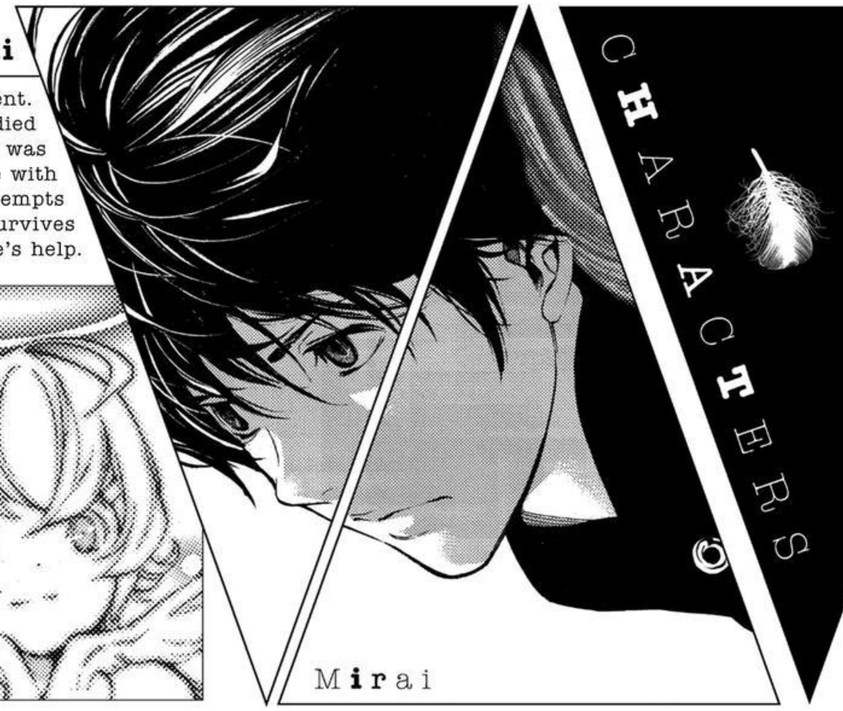
Hoshi's subordinate and fiancée.

Hoshi

A police agent working with Yumiki to help Mirai's group without telling the government.

Yazeli

The second-rank angel who chose Yuri. Angel of Truth.



Mirai Kakehashi

First-year high school student. His parents and brother died in an accident when he was seven. After a painful life with his abusive relatives, he attempts to commit suicide and survives through Nasse's help.

Nasse

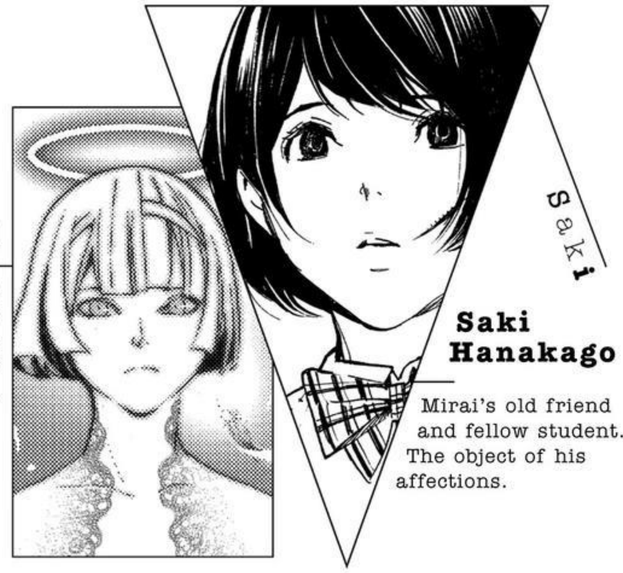
A special-rank angel who wants to bring happiness to Mirai's life. Bright and bubbly.

Yuri Temari

Free spirit who enjoys social media, and has no real interest in being god. Attempted suicide twice.

Revel

Promoted to the first-rank Angel of Emotion.



Saki Hanakago

Mirai's old friend and fellow student. The object of his affections.

Story

WHAT MUST BE DONE...

At Yoneda's request, another meeting of god candidates is convened. "We'll end it all here," he says...

Yoneda asks Ogaro about any angels with special powers. Nasse's name is mentioned—she can touch the human world directly.

A SPECIAL ANGEL

AS IT SHOULD BE

The public agrees that god is unnecessary. Yoneda has red arrows in Shuji and the prime minister in a plot to wipe out the god candidates.

Story

"My time has come. I leave the seat of god to the next human.
To a younger, fresher power.

The next god shall be chosen from the 13 humans chosen by you 13 angels.When the chosen human is made the next god, your angelic duty is finished, and you may live beside that god in peace.

You have 999 days remaining..."

CONTENTS

#48 The Fault of Science
P5

#49 The Scale of Sacrifice
P37

#50 For Yourself
P69

#51 Choose a Life
P101

#52 Wings of Determination
P133

#53 Hand of Salvation
P173

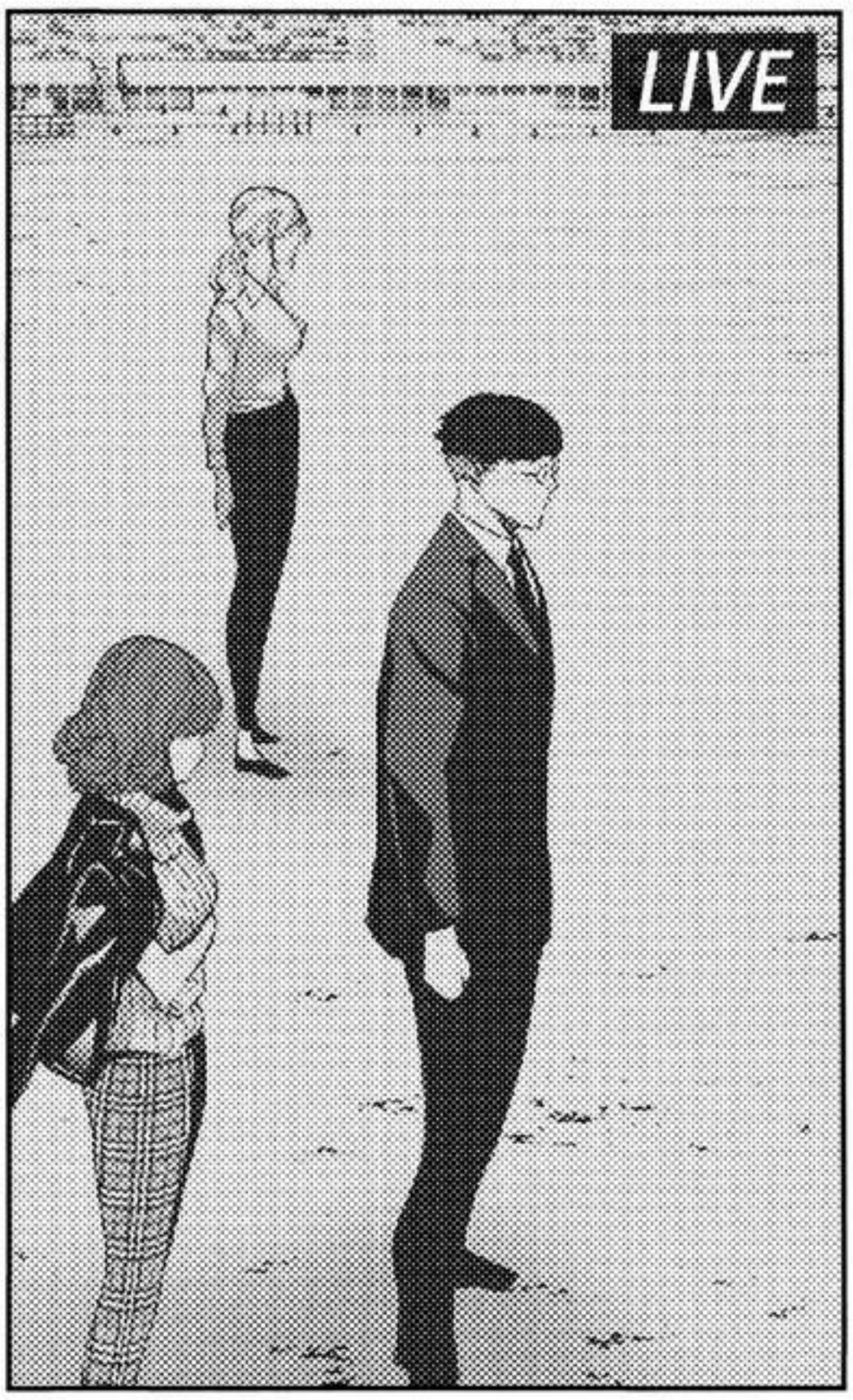
#48 The Fault of Science

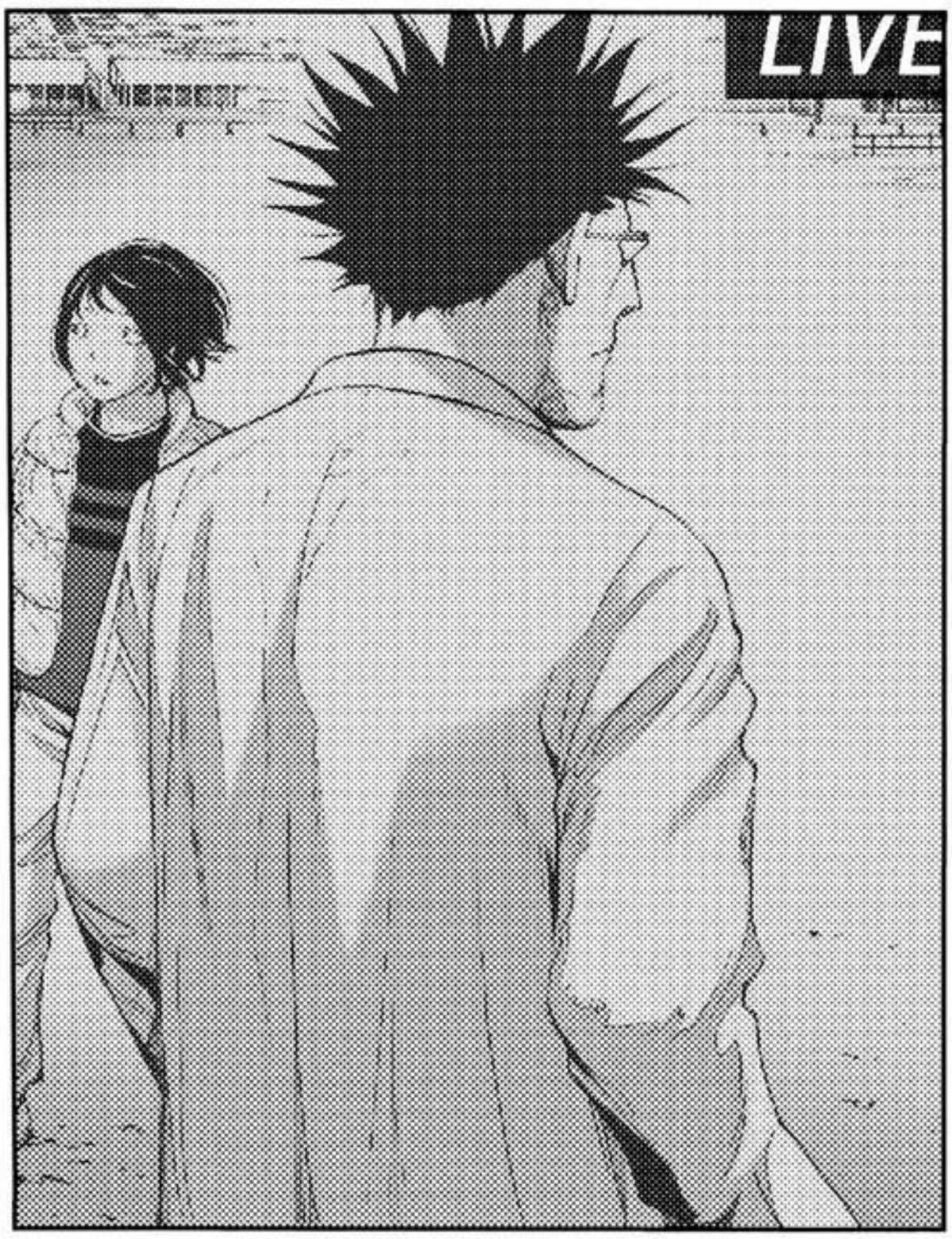
...THEN NO FALSE GOD WILL RESULT FROM THIS PROCESS.

IF THE FINAL TWO CANDIDATES HIT EACH OTHER WITH WHITE ARROWS WITHIN A SPAN OF 0.15 SECONDS...

VMMMM

LIVE


LIVE


LIVE

I DON'T GET IT.

WHAT'S WRONG WITH HAVING A CREATURE?

LET'S SAY, FOR THE SAKE OF ARGUMENT, THAT THIS GOD-CHOOSING PROCESS MAKES A CREATURE, A FALSE GOD.

...

RIGHT NOW, THERE ARE PEOPLE WHO BELIEVE IN GOD, AND PEOPLE WHO DON'T.

IF RED SAYS HE'LL DO IT, AND NO ONE HAS TO BE KILLED, AND THIS SETTLES EVERYTHING, SHOULDN'T THAT BE GOOD ENOUGH?

THE LAST THING YOU WANT IS PEOPLE WHO WILL BELIEVE IN HIM, RIGHT?

AND I DON'T EVEN BELIEVE IN GOD.

I MEAN, I'D STILL THINK OF HIM AS THE RED WARRIOR.

NO... IT'S NOT.

THE PROFESSOR'S OBVIOUSLY RIGHT. JUST DO WHATEVER HE SAYS.

MY ANSWER IS...

...

MAN'S END SHOULD BE DETERMINED BY MAN.

MAN DECIDES MAN'S END? I HAVE NO IDEA WHAT YOU MEAN.

OGARO SAID THAT GOD HAS THE POWER TO END HUMANITY...

...

...

BUT RED SAID THAT HE WON'T DO ANYTHING IF HE BECOMES GOD...

...

THAT'S PREMATURE.

FIRST OF ALL, THE QUESTION OF WHAT HAPPENS TO THE MIND WHEN A PERSON BECOMES A CREATURE IS UNANSWERED.

AND THEN YOU CANNOT TELL ANYTHING TO MANKIND. GOD HAS NEVER SPOKEN TO US DIRECTLY.

BUT APPARENTLY EVEN THE DEATH OF THAT CREATURE WILL NOT BE RELAYED TO MANKIND.

ALL WE KNOW ABOUT THE CREATURE IS THAT IF NOBODY FILLS THAT ROLE, THE FALSE GOD THAT CURRENTLY EXISTS WILL DIE IN 790 DAYS.

...

IT IS TRUE THAT GOD'S WILL CANNOT BE PASSED DIRECTLY TO HUMANITY, HOWEVER...

THIS IS THE FIRST I'VE HEARD THAT THE 999-DAY TIME LIMIT OF THE GOD-CHOOSING PROCESS IS LINKED TO GOD'S LIFE SPAN...

HUH?

MAYBE MUNI IS TELLING YOU NONSENSE!

SHE'S RIGHT. THAT'S NOT THE REAL ISSUE.

WAIT, WAIT, BEFORE THAT...

WAIT ...

...

YOU'RE ONLY LAYING OUT YOUR HYPOTHESIS.

YONEDA, YOU HAVEN'T PROVEN THAT THE CURRENT GOD IS JUST A MONSTER CREATED BY MANKIND.

IN OTHER WORDS...

BY MY CALCULATIONS, THE PROOF WOULD REQUIRE 130 YEARS. IT WOULD TAKE OVER 150 YEARS TO MAKE THE EQUIVALENT OF THE CREATURE AND ITS ARROWS.

THAT IS THE WEAKEST EXCUSE...

...

IT WOULD BE IMPOSSIBLE TO PROVE THIS WHILE I AM STILL ALIVE.

THAT'S JUST ANTICIPATING THE NEAR FUTURE.

THERE'S NO WAY YOU CAN SAY WHAT'LL HAPPEN OVER A HUNDRED YEARS FROM NOW.

BUT THE PROFESSOR'S CORRECTLY PREDICTED ALL KINDS OF FUTURE DEVELOPMENTS IN HIS BOOK FROM 20 YEARS AGO!

ZSH

EVERYTHING THAT EXISTS, FROM START TO FINISH, IS MERELY CARRYING OUT A SEQUENCE OF PREDETERMINED ACTIONS.

THEREFORE, FROM BIRTH TO DEATH, IT IS ALREADY DECIDED HOW A HUMAN WILL ACT. THAT INCLUDES WHAT I AM DOING NOW, OF COURSE.

HUH?

THAT'S NOT TRUE. WE THINK FOR OURSELVES AND GRAPPLE WITH INDECISION, MAKING TOUGH CHOICES IN SEARCH OF AN IDEAL FUTURE AND HAPPINESS.

DON'T WORRY. WE ALL HAVE OUR OWN THOUGHTS, EVEN IF THEY ARE DECIDED FOR US. I THINK YOU'LL UNDERSTAND IF YOU THINK OF EACH PERSON AS JUST A SINGLE PIECE OF ALL CREATION.

YOUR INDECISION AND CHOICES ARE PREDETERMINED. YOU SIMPLY DON'T LIKE TO HEAR THE TRUTH WHEN IT IS PLACED BEFORE YOU.

...

ALL RIGHT, YOU'VE COMPLETELY LOST ME.

YOU... YOU THINK IT'S AMAZING?

THAT'S AMAZING, SENPAI!

FINAL CANDIDATE FACE-OFF

LIVE

LATEST GOD CANDIDATE INFO

WHAT IS DR. GAKU YONE

WELL, I REMEMBER HAVING AN ARGUMENT IN ELEMENTARY SCHOOL ABOUT WHETHER OR NOT OUR ACTIONS ARE DETERMINED BY FATE...

DO YOU KNOW WHAT HE MEANS, SENPAI?

...ABOUT THE END OF MAN-KIND.

TO UNDERSTAND WHAT I MEAN, YOU FIRST NEED TO KNOW...

MURMUR

THE END...?

WHAT IS DR. GAKU YONEDA'S ANSWER?!

HUMANITY WILL COLLAPSE WITHIN 500 YEARS.

IT HAS NOTHING TO DO WITH THE HEAT DEATH OF THE SUN, OR GEOGRAPHICAL CATASTROPHE, OR FREAK WEATHER OCCURRENCES.

WHAT HAPPENED TO YOUR STORY ABOUT PEOPLE DEVELOPING ETERNAL LIFE IN THE NEAR FUTURE?

...

THAT WILL COME WITHIN 300 YEARS.

STILL, I'VE READ THAT THESE THINGS MIGHT BE FICTION NOW, BUT COULD BECOME REALITY IN A CENTURY OR TWO.

THAT'S JUST SOME SCI-FI THING.

NOW... WHEN A HUMAN BEING HAS NO FEAR OF AGING, DO YOU KNOW WHAT THEY DESIRE NEXT?

SHHF

AT PRESENT, THERE ARE ALREADY PLENTY OF PEOPLE LIVING WITH ARTIFICIALLY GROWN OR TRANSPLANTED ORGANS.

IT WILL INVOLVE SWITCHING OUT EVERYTHING BUT THE CONSCIOUSNESS INTO A MACHINE, OR YOUNGER FLESH.

TO TRANSCEND THE CONCEPT OF TIME ITSELF, AND BECOME ITS MASTER.

TIME.

CITIZEN

LAP SPLIT TIME ALARM

[69] 4:28'56" 37

8:51'49" 1/100 12

HR. MIN. SEC. 1/100S

Solar power

30 LAP-SPLIT MEMORY

CITIZEN

AP SPLIT TIME ALARM

69] 4:28'56" 37

1:38'57" 1/100

49

IR. MIN. SEC. 1/100S

IN OTHER WORDS, THE ULTIMATE PREDICTIVE POWER. AND THAT **WILL** COME ABOUT.

KNOWING THE FUTURE. SEEING THE FUTURE.

THE FIRST PERSON TO ACHIEVE THIS WILL GAIN UNFATHOMABLE WEALTH.

BUT EVENTUALLY, WHEN ALL HUMAN BEINGS ARE ABLE TO KNOW ALL OF THE FUTURE...

...
HUMANITY WILL DESPAIR.

YOU CAN ONLY LET YOURSELF DRIFT IN THE CURRENT OF TIME.

YOU UNDERSTAND WHAT I MEAN. WHEN YOUR ACTIONS ARE DECIDED FOR YOU, AND YOU KNOW WHAT COMES AHEAD, THERE IS NOTHING BUT EMPTINESS.

YOU WILL LOSE THE WILL TO LIVE, AND EVENTUALLY END YOUR OWN LIFE.

TRY TO CHANGE THE FUTURE-- ONLY TO FIND THAT ATTEMPT AND ITS RESULT WERE ALREADY A PREOR-DAINED FACT.

TICK

TICK

TICK

TICK

AND ULTIMATELY ...

CITIZEN

LAP SPLIT TIME ALARM

[00] 0:00'00" 1/100 00

0:00'00" 1/100 00

HR. MIN. SEC. 1/100S

Solar power

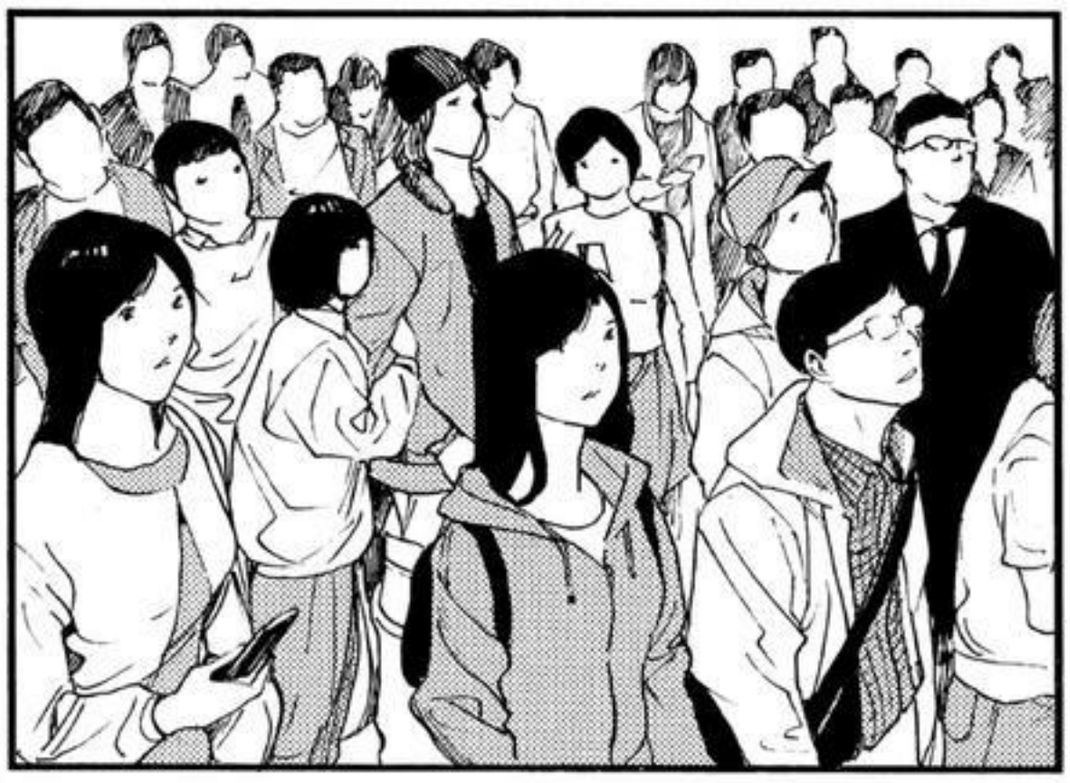
8RDD96

...EVERY HUMAN BEING WILL GIVE UP ON LIFE.

TICK

THE FAULT OF SCIENCE THAT HAS GONE TOO FAR IS VAST.

BUT HUMAN CURIOSITY CANNOT BE STOPPED.



IN 500 YEARS...

...MANKIND WILL DESPAIR, AND CEASE TO GO ON LIVING.

HUMANITY WILL CHOOSE THE PATH OF EXTINCTION.

ACCORDING TO YOUR THEORY, YOU MEAN.

...

IF WE GAIN SCIENCE THAT CAN KNOW AND SEE THE FUTURE, IT WILL BE LESS THAN A CENTURY BEFORE WE CAN CREATE A TIME MACHINE...

CONSIDERING THE SPEED AND DIRECTION OF SCIENCE'S ADVANCEMENT, IT IS CERTAIN THAT HUMANITY WILL STAND ABOVE THE CONSTRAINTS OF SPACE-TIME.

...OR SO IT WOULD HAVE SEEMED.

I WANT ONE...

A TIME MACHINE ...

...

FOR REAL? ...

BUT NO PERSON FROM THE FUTURE HAS EVER APPEARED IN OUR MIDST. THIS WOULD BE EVIDENCE THAT HUMANITY HAS NOT REACHED THAT POINT.

YOU **ARE** WRONG, PROFES-SOR.

YOU WRITE BOOKS FOR A LIVING-- DON'T YOU EVER READ ANYTHING BY OTHER PEOPLE?

IF NO FUTURE PEOPLE HAVE COME BACK IN TIME, THEN THAT JUST MEANS THE TIME PATROL'S WORKING PROPERLY TO PREVENT THEM FROM CHANGING THE COURSE OF HISTORY.

W-WHAT?! ARE YOU MOCKING ME?!

YOU AND I ARE NOT CONVERSING ON THE SAME LEVEL... IT IS POINTLESS TO SPEAK TO YOU.

ZSHK

...

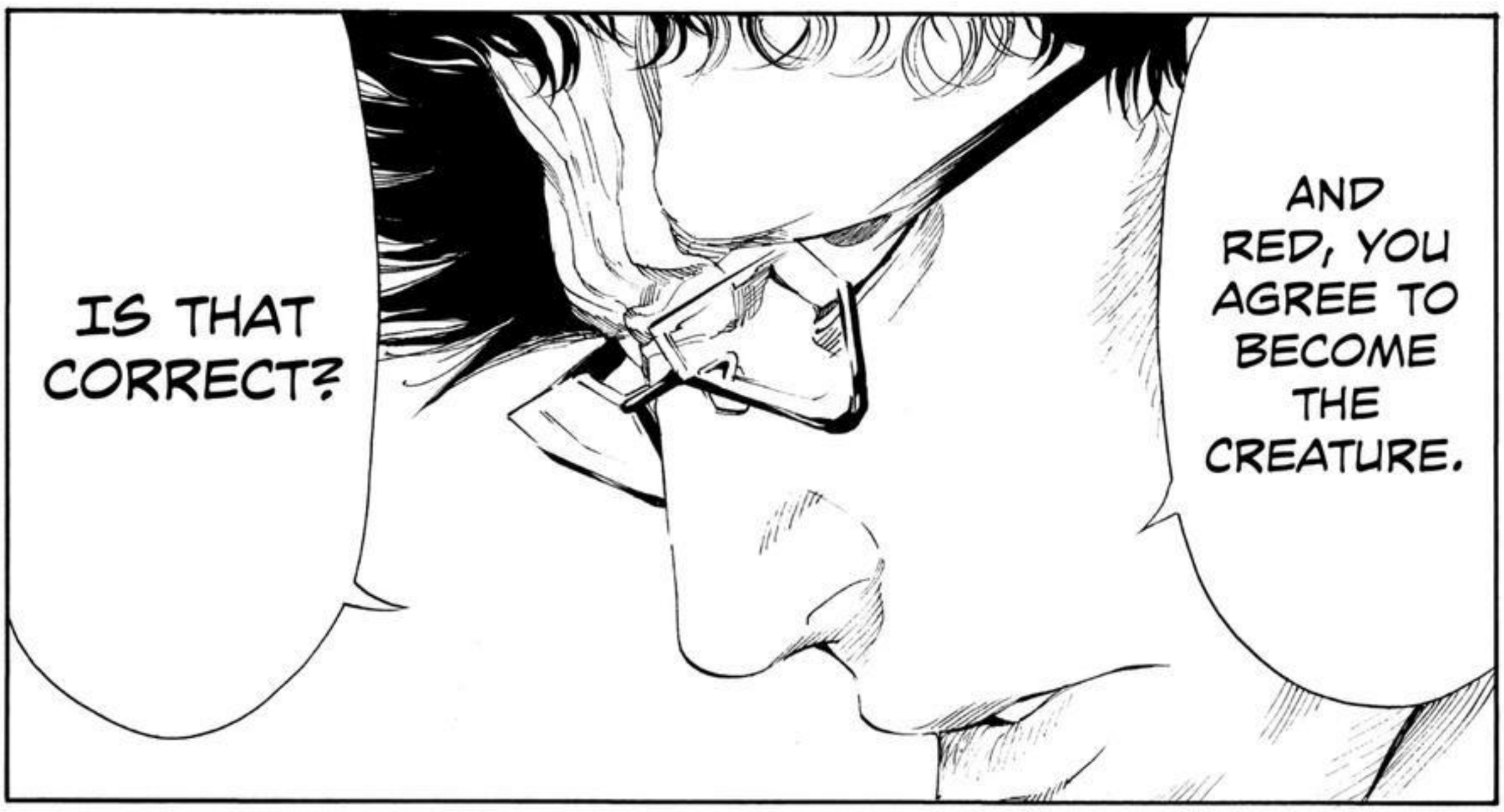
YELLOW, DO YOU AGREE THAT IT SHOULD BE RED?

I ASSUME THAT IS ACCEPT-ABLE TO YOU?

SO RED WILL BECOME THE CREA-TURE.

YES, I SAID THAT!

YES.


IS THAT CORRECT?
AND RED, YOU AGREE TO BECOME THE CREATURE.

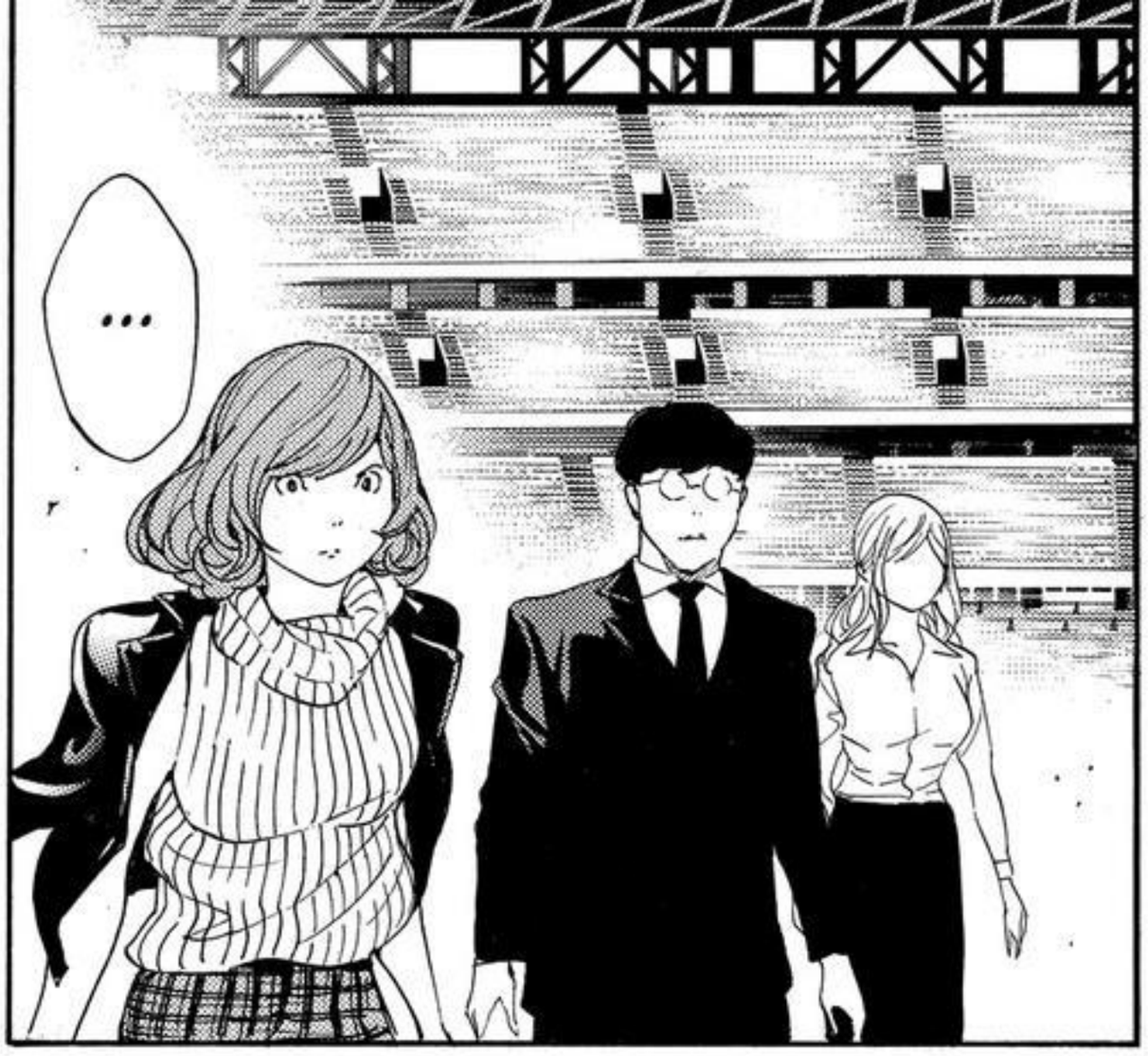
IT
IS.

ZSHK

...

A DIALOGUE TO DETERMINE WHETHER YOU BECOME THE CREATURE, OR I STOP YOU.

THEN WHY DON'T WE HAVE A CONVERSATION, JUST BETWEEN THE TWO OF US?


...

I DON'T MIND.

I AGREE...

...

WELL... IF RED SAYS SO...

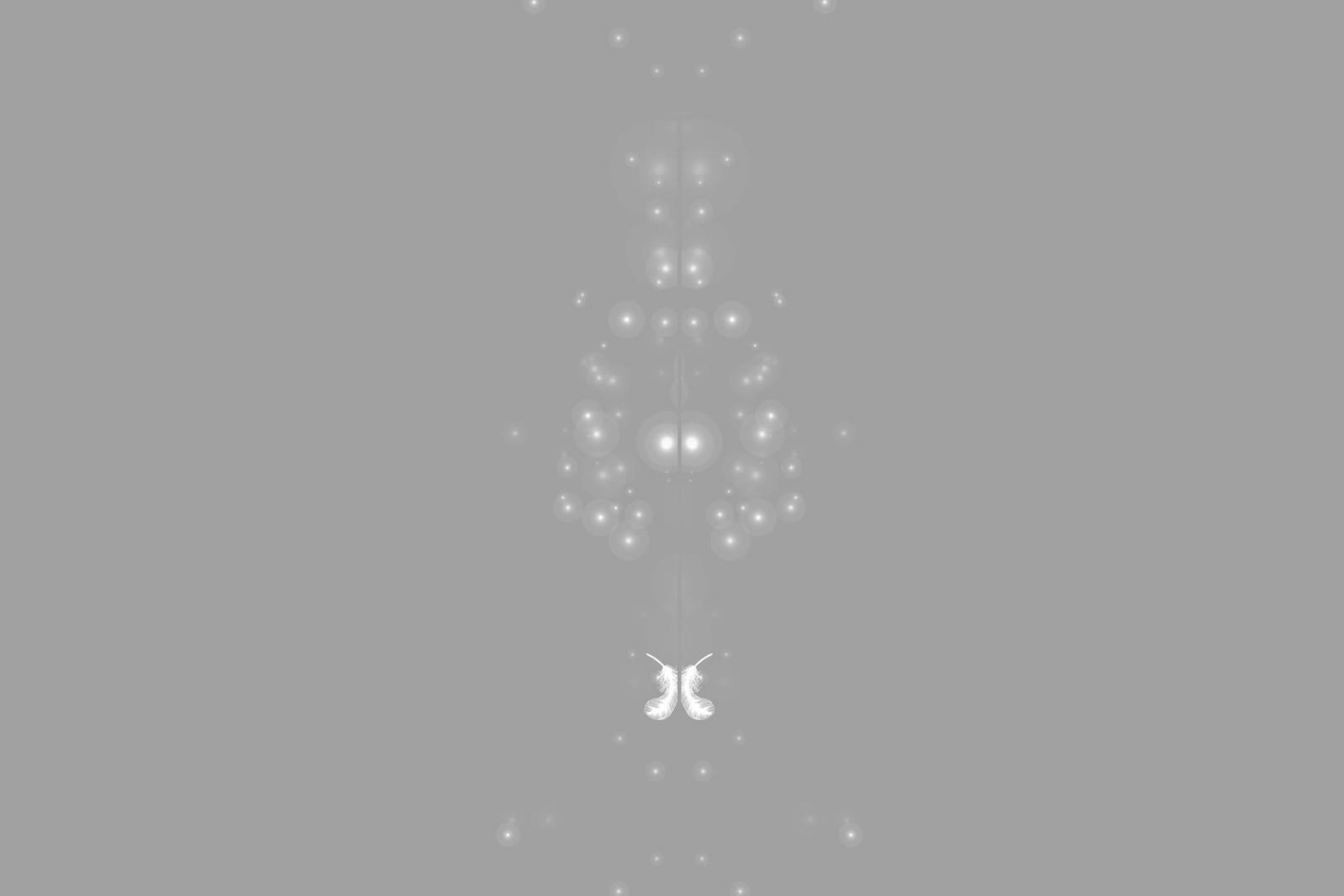
GOOD.

PROFES-SOR...

I'M FINE WITH THAT.

THEN LET'S HAVE THE OTHER THREE LEAVE, SO THE TWO OF US CAN SPEAK.

OKAY.



LET'S HAVE THE OTHERS LEAVE SO THE TWO OF US CAN SPEAK.

#49 The Scale of Sacrifice

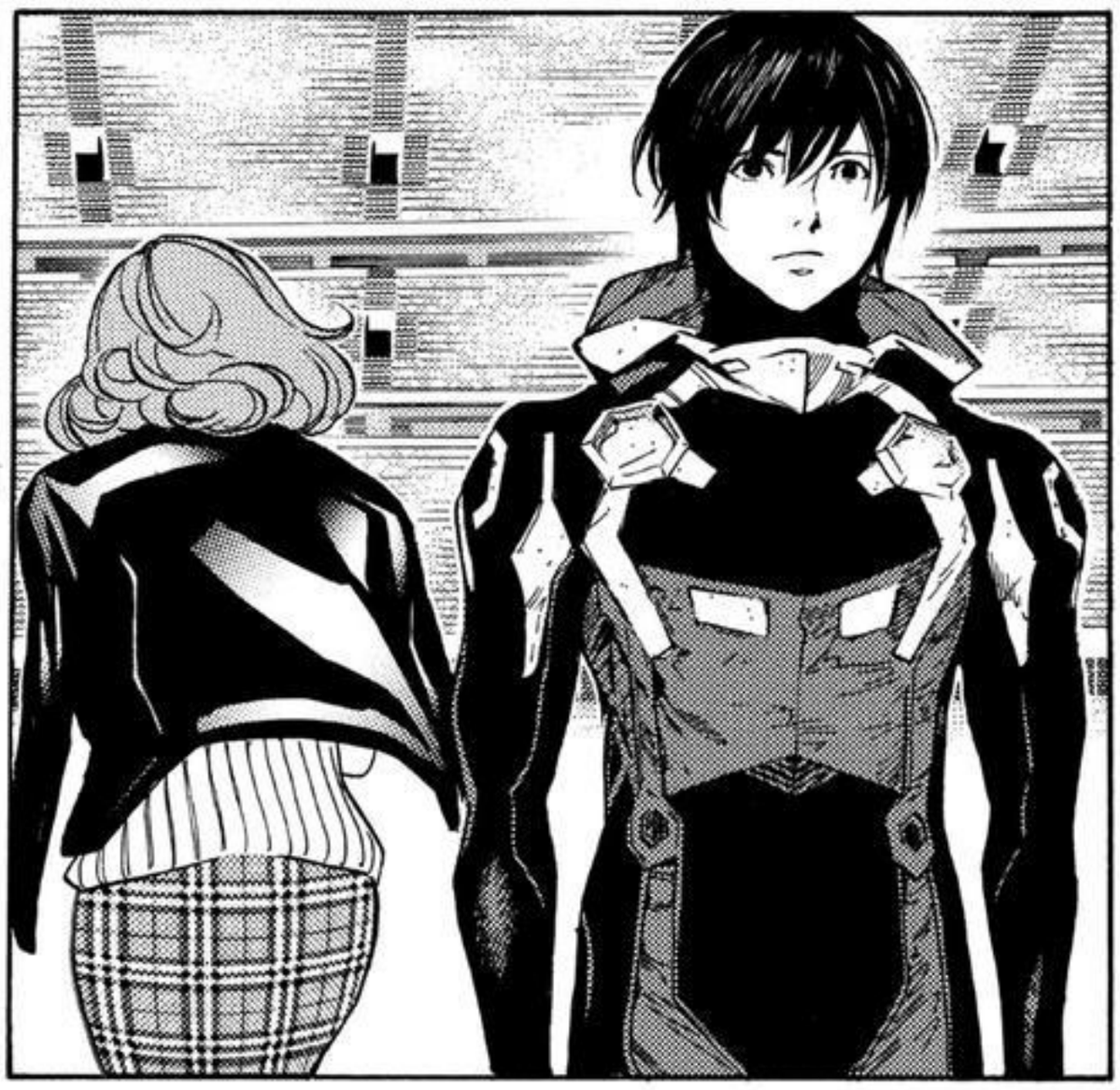
OKAY.

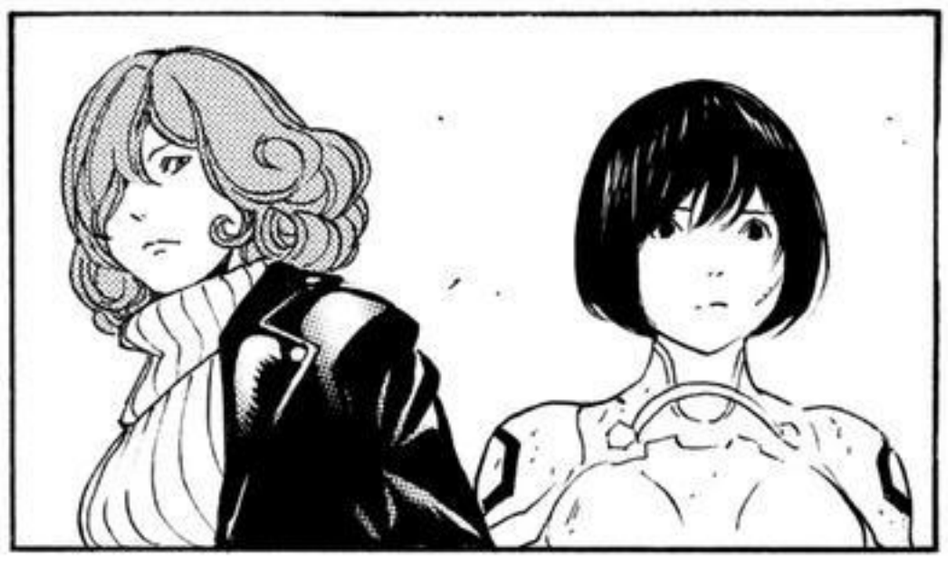
IF IT DOESN'T LOOK LIKE YOU CAN TALK IT OUT, YOU KNOW WHAT TO DO.

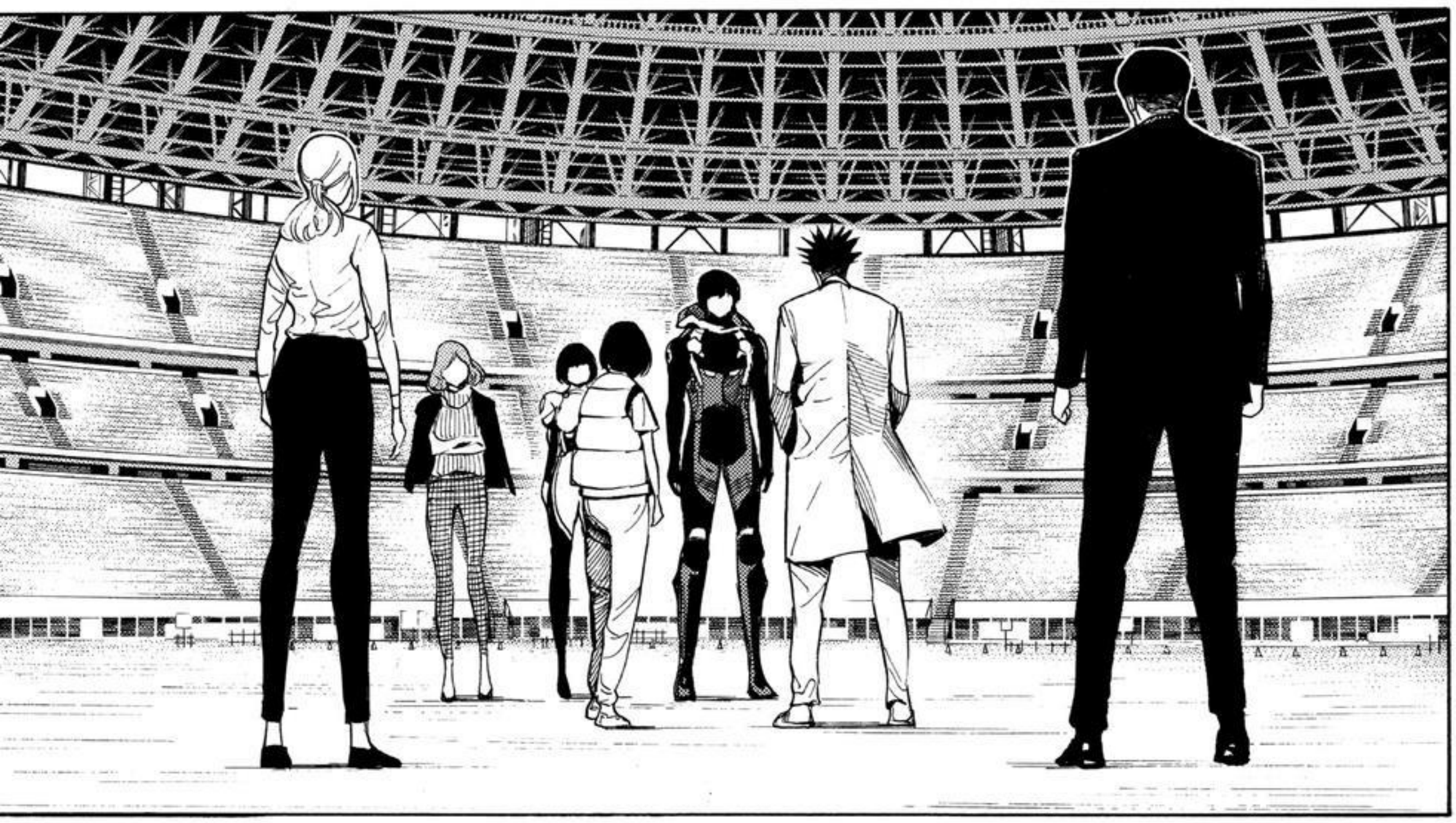
YOU HAVE TO BE GOD, RED.

NSH

NSH







SHIN
THEN I SUPPOSE WE'LL SPLIT UP FOR NOW.

NO.

SINCE THE GROUP IS SPLIT BETWEEN RED'S FACTION AND YONEDA'S FACTION, THAT ALLOWS EACH SIDE TO MONITOR THE OTHER TOO.

FOR SAFETY'S SAKE, IT'S BETTER IF WE STAY TOGETHER.

JUST WHAT A COP WOULD SAY.

MONITOR?

...

...

...IT'S JUST ME ALL ON MY OWN.

BUT ON THE PROFES-SOR'S SIDE...

I AGREE THAT IT'S BETTER NOT TO SPLIT UP.

NAKAUMI ...

...DO YOU REALLY THINK THAT YURI TEMARI AND SAKI HANAKAGO WILL DO HARM TO YOU AFTER ALL THIS TIME?

I SUPPOSE NOT. I CAN STAY WITH THEM, I GUESS.

THE THREE OF THEM...? WHAT ABOUT YOU?

GO WITH THE THREE OF THEM, YUMIKI.

HUH?

I WILL STAY HERE.

I DOUBT THERE WILL BE ANY FURTHER INTERRUPTIONS. I JUST WANT TO STAY HERE AND OBSERVE THE DISCUSSION.

I WILL NOT BE SPEAKING UP, OF COURSE.

...

PLEASE DO THAT, MR. HOSHI.

THEN I DO NOT MIND.

LET'S GET GOING THEN.

UH... GOING? WHERE?

I MEAN... IT WAS NICE, BUT...

THAT'S WHERE THEY HAD ME LOCKED UP.

THAT'S WHERE DR. YONEDA AND I WERE BEFORE COMING HERE.

TO THE RECEPTION HALL.

...

!

WHAT DO YOU MEAN?

THE FACT THAT DR. YONEDA WAS WAITING THERE STRIKES ME AS STRANGE.

THERE'S AN UNLOCKED WINDOW SO THAT THEY CAN'T DETECT US COMING AND GOING.

NO, IT'S FINE. THERE'S SECURITY THERE, BUT WE HAVE A RED ARROW IN THE PRIME MINISTER SO THAT THE NEGOTIATIONS CAN GO SMOOTHLY. HE'S NOT ALLOWED TO DEFY THE GOD CANDIDATES.

...

WELL, YOU DON'T HAVE TO COME IF YOU DON'T WANT TO.

YOU'RE NOT A CANDIDATE ANYWAY.

FWOOSH

AS YOU CAN SEE, THE GOD CANDIDATES HAVE SPLIT INTO TWO GROUPS, APPARENTLY SO THAT DR. YONEDA AND MIRAI KAKEHASHI CAN HAVE A PRIVATE DIALOGUE.

LIVE

FINAL CANDIDATE FACE OFF

LATEST GOD CANDIDATE INFO

WHAT IS DR. GAKU YONEDA'S ANSWER?!

CONFRONTATION OF THE 5 GOD CANDIDATES?

FINAL CONFRONTATION O

SHWI

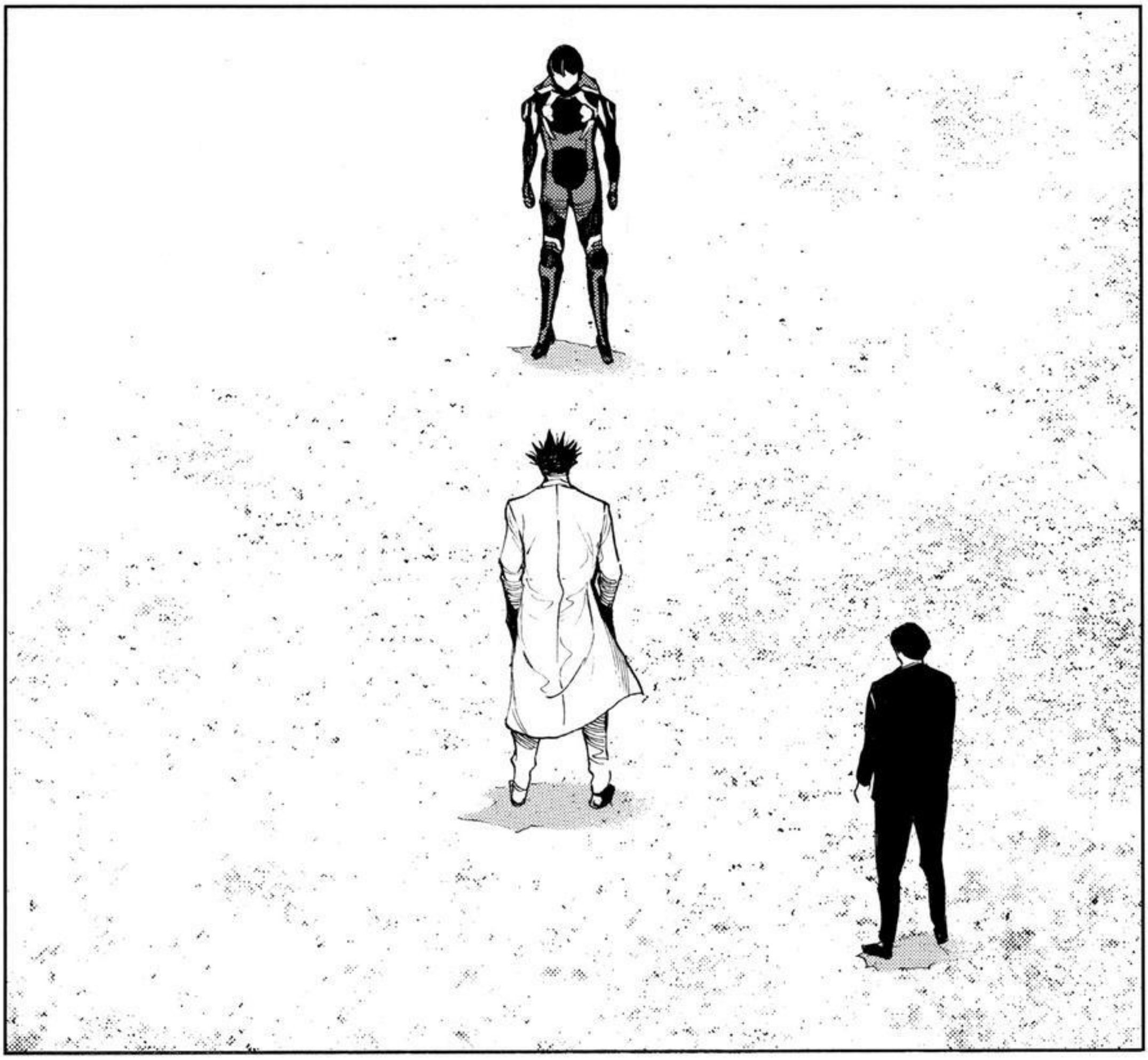
ALL RIGHT...

GO, YUMIKI.

A GUY WHO WAS PICKED ON IN MIDDLE SCHOOL, HAVING A DIALOGUE WITH PROFESSOR YONEDA...?

AND HE SAYS HUMANITY WILL BE EXTINCT WITHIN 500 YEARS?

YOU THINK IT'S TRUE...?



I ASK YOU AGAIN ABOUT YOUR INTENTION TO BECOME THE FALSE GOD OR NOT.

MAY I PRESUME THAT YOU DO?

YES.

EVEN IF THAT MANTLE IS FALSE?

AM I WRONG?

ON THE CONTRARY, THERE ARE MANY WHO WILL DESPAIR IF NONE OF THE CANDIDATES BECOME GOD.

EVEN IF IT'S "FALSE," ACCORDING TO YOUR DEFINITION, NO ONE WILL WANT TO DIE BECAUSE I'VE BECOME GOD.

THAT'S WHAT MIRAI WANTS NOW.

AS MANY PEOPLE WITH HAPPY LIVES AS POSSIBLE...

TO PUT IT SIMPLY, I WANT AS MANY PEOPLE TO LEAD HAPPY LIVES AS POSSIBLE.

HAPPINESS ...

...

OVER THE LAST TWO WEEKS OR SO, I'VE LEARNED AS MUCH AS I CAN ABOUT MIRAI KAKEHASHI, YURI TEMARI AND SAKI HANAKAGO, AND SPOKEN DIRECTLY WITH SHUJI NAKAUMI.

MIRAI KAKEHASHI, IS THIS HOW YOU DEFINE HUMAN HAPPINESS?

ONE'S PRE-DISPOSITION TOWARD EITHER OF THESE CONCEPTS WILL MAKE A TREMENDOUS DIFFERENCE.

GRATITUDE, HATRED...

AS LONG AS INDIVIDUAL BRAINS WORK DIFFERENTLY, HAPPINESS CANNOT BE MEASURED IN DOPAMINE AND ADRENALINE LEVELS.

HATRED...

NOTHING GOOD WILL EVER COME OF IT. IT'S BAD FOR YOURSELF AND BAD FOR OTHERS.

THE WORST POSSIBLE THING YOU CAN DO IS HATE OTHERS.

IT IS ESTABLISHED BY DETERMINING WHICH OTHERS ARE UNHAPPY OR MISFORTUNATE. DO YOU UNDERSTAND THAT YOUR CURRENT ACTIONS REFLECT THIS TOO?

AND "HAPPINESS" IS ULTIMATELY A COMPARISON TO OTHERS.

YES, I UNDER-STAND.

...

BUT THERE'S ABSOLUTELY NOTHING WRONG WITH DEFINING YOUR OWN HAPPINESS BY MAKING OTHERS HAPPY.

AS LONG AS PEOPLE HAVE TO COMPETE TO SURVIVE, THERE WILL BE PEOPLE WHO SEE OTHERS' HAPPINESS AND FEEL THAT THEY THEMSELVES ARE UNHAPPY.

...BECOMING GOD DOESN'T MEAN I'LL DIE. AS LONG AS I LIVE, I WON'T GIVE UP ON MY HAPPINESS AS A HUMAN BEING.

PLUS...

YOU CAN'T TRUST ANYONE WHO SAYS STUFF LIKE THAT.

HE'S VIRTUE SIGNALING.

SOUNDS LIKE A HYPOCRITE TO ME.

HIS OWN HAPPINESS IS MAKING OTHERS HAPPY?

FINAL CANDIDATE FACE-OFF

LIVE FROM NEW OLYMPIC STADIUM

LATEST GOD CANDIDATE INFO

WHAT IS DR. GAKU YONEDA'S ANSWER?!

THE 5 GOD CANDIDATES?

IT'S KIND OF HARD TO IMAGINE A CHILD LIKE THAT BEING GOD AND LOOKING DOWN UPON US...

WELL, IT'S BETTER THAN **DELIGHTING** IN OTHERS' SUFFERING.

WHO CARES ABOUT HYPOCRISY AS LONG AS THERE'S PEACE?

YOU DON'T REALLY CARE WHETHER KAKEHASHI BECOMES GOD OR NOT, DO YOU?

THAT LINE ABOUT "NOT GIVING UP ON YOUR HAPPINESS AS A HUMAN BEING" KINDA HIT ME JUST NOW...

AT THIS POINT, MAYBE I DO.

THERE'S A GIGANTIC SCREEN IN HERE.

LET'S GO IN THIS ROOM.

WAIT.

THEN LET'S GO IN THIS ROOM...

...

THIS ROOM IS BUILT ON THE SAME DESIGN, CORRECT?

UMM... PROBABLY?

I WILL GO IN FIRST AND INVESTIGATE.

CREAK...

CLICK

BUT IF YOU BECOME THE CREATURE, THAT WILL MEAN AT LEAST ONE PERSON DYING... YOU UNDERSTAND THAT?

YOU SAID THAT YOU WANT AS MANY PEOPLE AS POSSIBLE TO CHOOSE LIFE.

BUT FROM WHAT I'VE SEEN OF YOU, I DON'T THINK YOU HAVE THE RESOLVE TO DO IT.

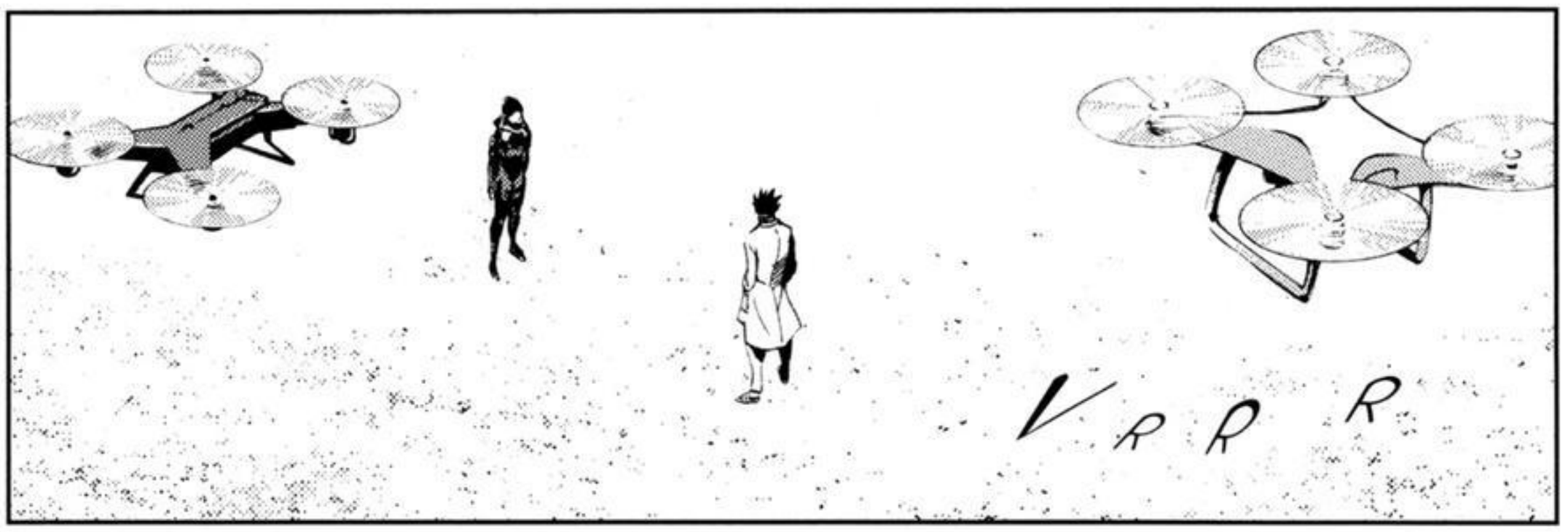
I DO.

...

THEREFORE, YOU WOULD HAVE TO KILL ME SINCE I DON'T WANT YOU TO BECOME THE CREATURE.

I DO.

SHING



SO IS THIS JUST COMING DOWN TO WHO KILLS THE OTHER?

WELL? IS IT SAFE?

02150.083.420

2018.10.10 12:23:41

RED!
!

HE'S GOT A WHITE ARROW OUT!

THUMP

!

...

FFT

HUH?

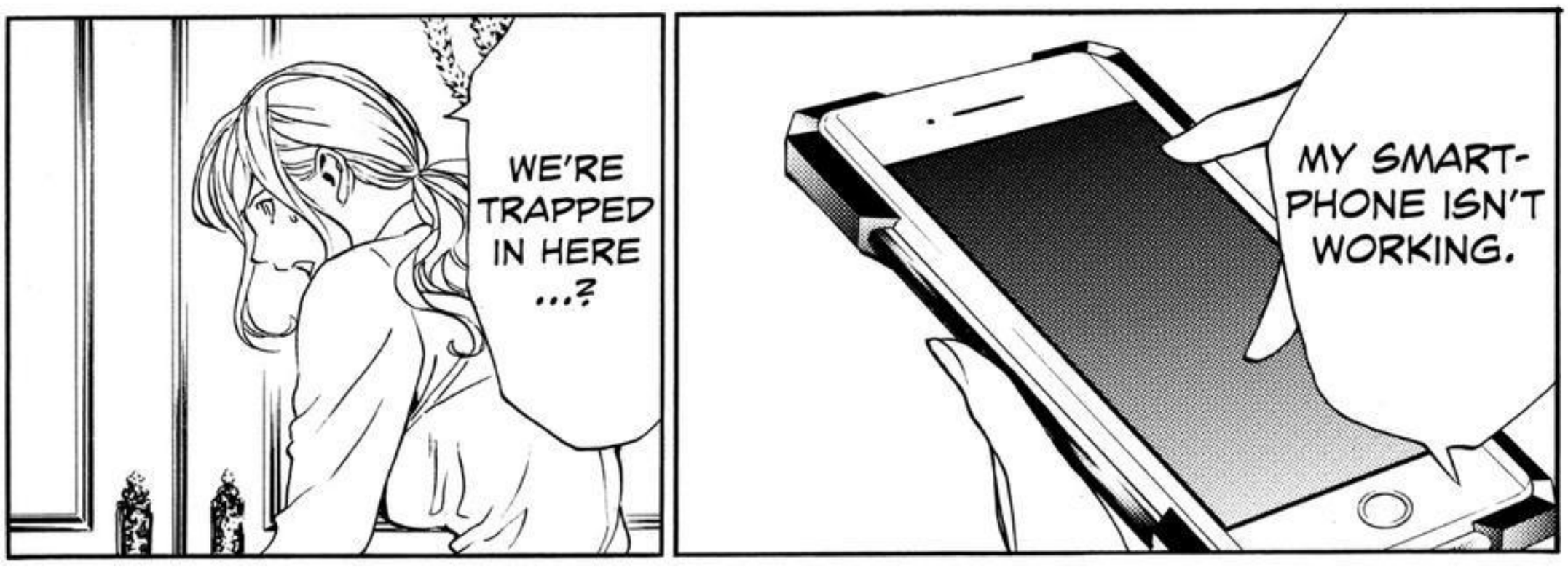
...

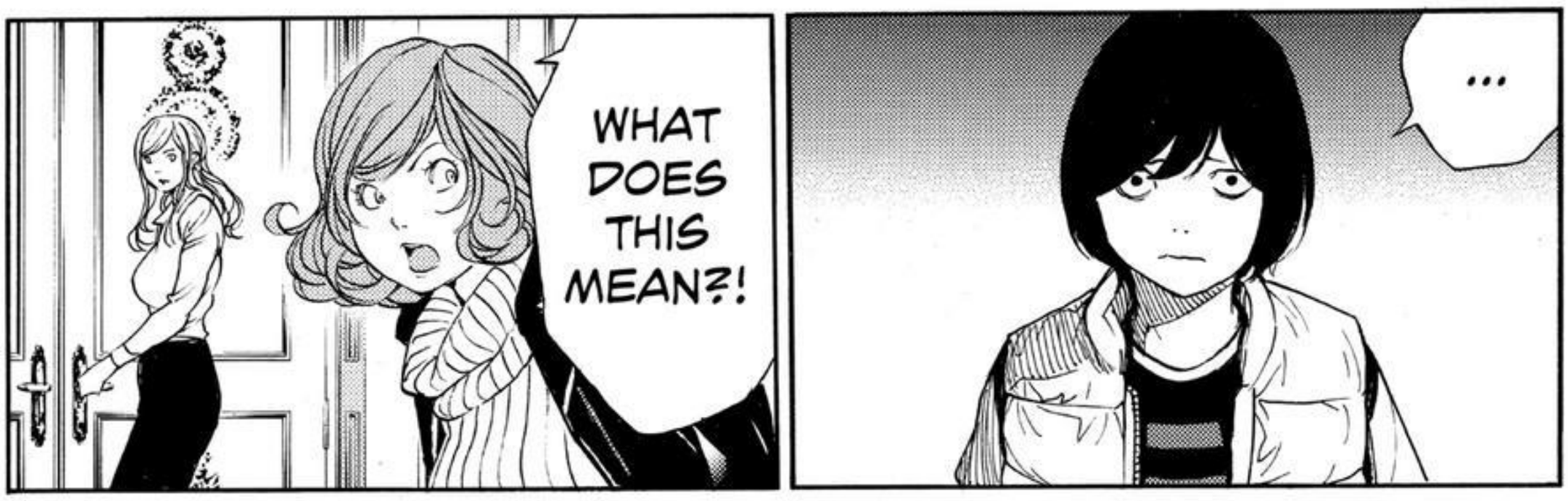
CLICK

CLICK

THE DOOR'S LOCKED!

WHAT HAPPENED ?!


WE'RE TRAPPED IN HERE ...?
MY SMART-PHONE ISN'T WORKING.


WHAT DOES THIS MEAN?!
...

!

A WHITE ARROW!

DO WHAT I SAY, AND I WON'T KILL YOU.

IT'S A SIMPLE DIFFERENCE OF NUMBERS. ONE SACRIFICE IS BETTER THAN MANY...

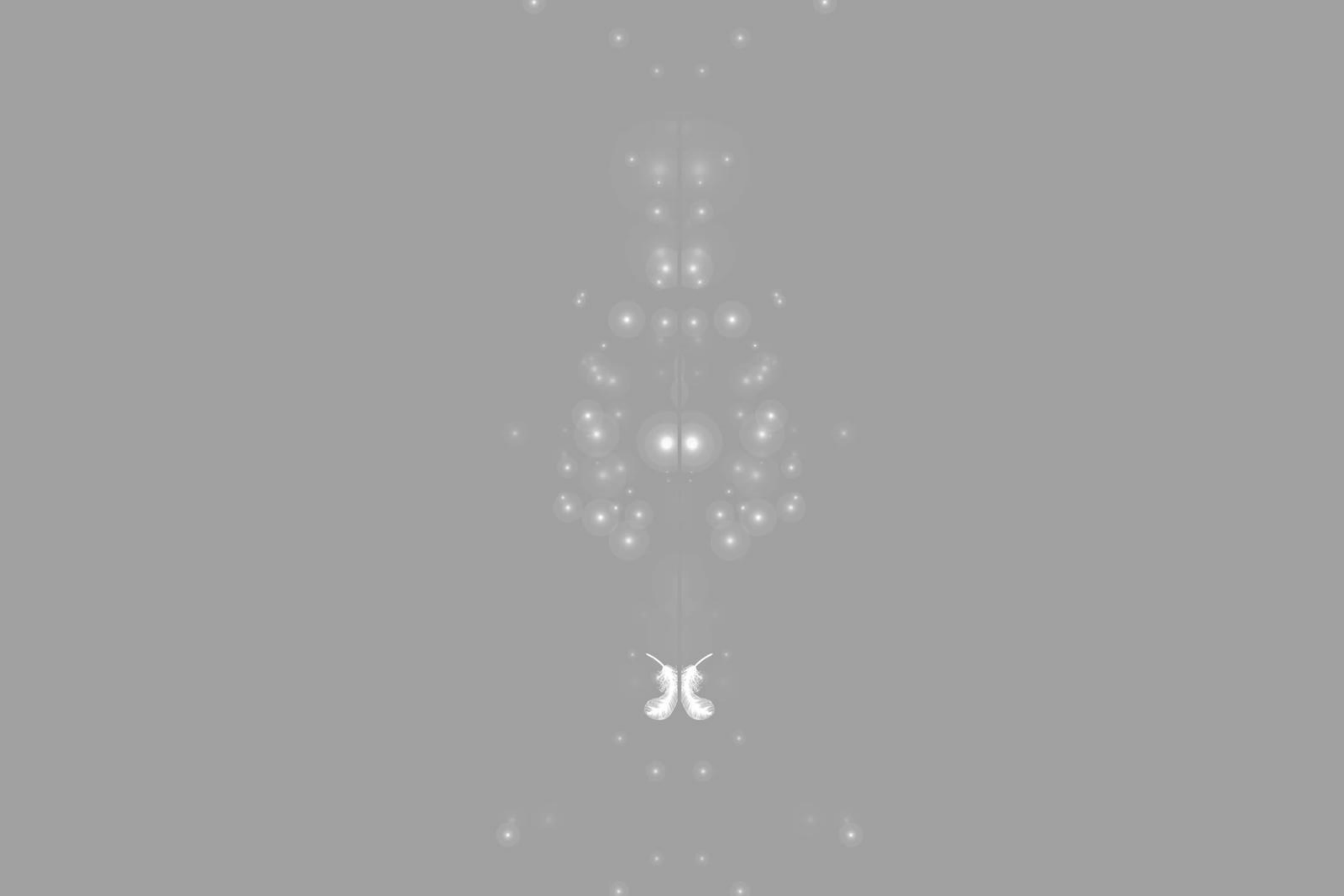
MIRAI...

YOU CAN DO IT!

!

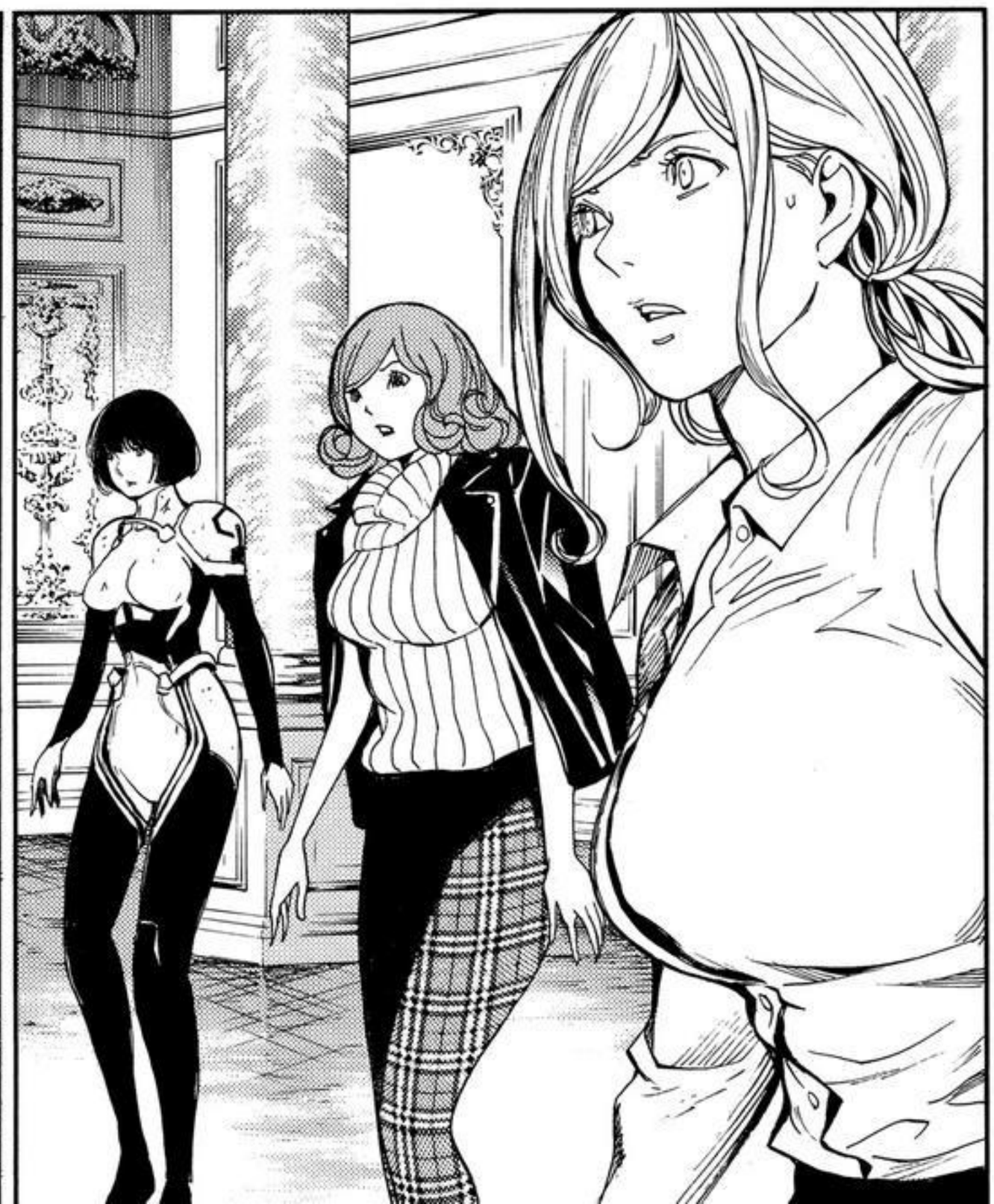
THERE'S NO 100 PERCENT GUARANTEE THAT I'LL USE WINGS TO AVOID THE...

CAN YOU ACTUALLY SHOOT ME?



DO WHAT I SAY, AND I WON'T KILL YOU.

#50 For Yourself



WE'RE LOCKED INSIDE. THIS IS MY FAULT...

KCHAK KCHAK KCHAK

SO YOU TRICKED US?!

...

THIS IS MAKING SURE WE DON'T CREATE A NEW FALSE GOD.

ONLY UNTIL THEIR TALK IS OVER.

HMPH!

YOU DON'T HAVE TO MAKE THREATS. I'M NOT DOING ANYTHING TO YOU.

...

SHH...

TAK

SZOOP

GRNK

AM

WH

SHAK

URG...

!

TING

SHING

!

IT MUST BE DR. YONEDA'S ...

AN- OTHER RED ARROW ...

WHAT? IT WON'T STICK IN HIM?!

...

IF YOU'RE GOING TO FIGHT BACK, YOU LEAVE ME NO CHOICE.

...

LOOK OUT, MISS YUMIKI!

SHW

IIII

!

ドサッ

TEP

KOFF

KOFF

THIS ROOM ISN'T LARGE ENOUGH TO FLY AROUND IN.

ARE YOU ALL RIGHT? DON'T HURT YOURSELF.

バサッ

I CAN'T GIVE UP...

PLEASE BEHAVE YOURSELF.

...

HE'S ACTING BASED ON WHAT THE PROFESSOR TOLD HIM, SO WE CAN'T TALK ANY SENSE INTO HIM.

LOOK, THIS IS BAD!

HE'S GOT A WHITE ARROW, AND ONE OF DR. YONEDA'S RED ARROWS IN HIM!

YES. WE'VE GOT YOU INVOLVED IN THE SIMPLEST PLAN HE CAME UP WITH.

WE DIDN'T PLAN ON MR. HOSHI AND MISS YUMIKI, BUT IT WON'T BE A PROBLEM.

THIS IS ALL ACCORDING TO HIS PLAN, ISN'T IT?

KEEP IN MIND, IT'S NOT REALLY NAKAUMI WE'RE DEALING WITH, BUT DR. YONEDA ...

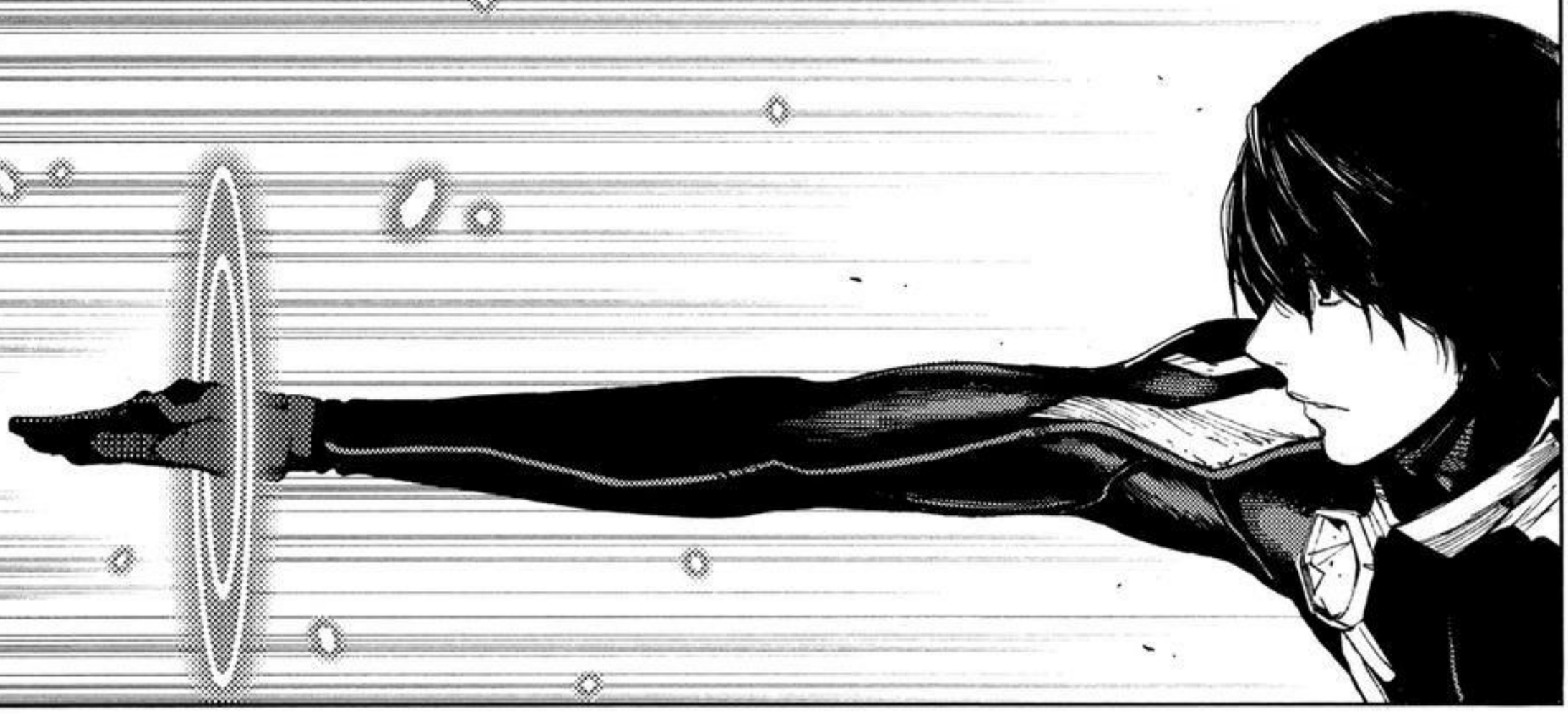
PLEASE, YOU SHOULDN'T MOVE...

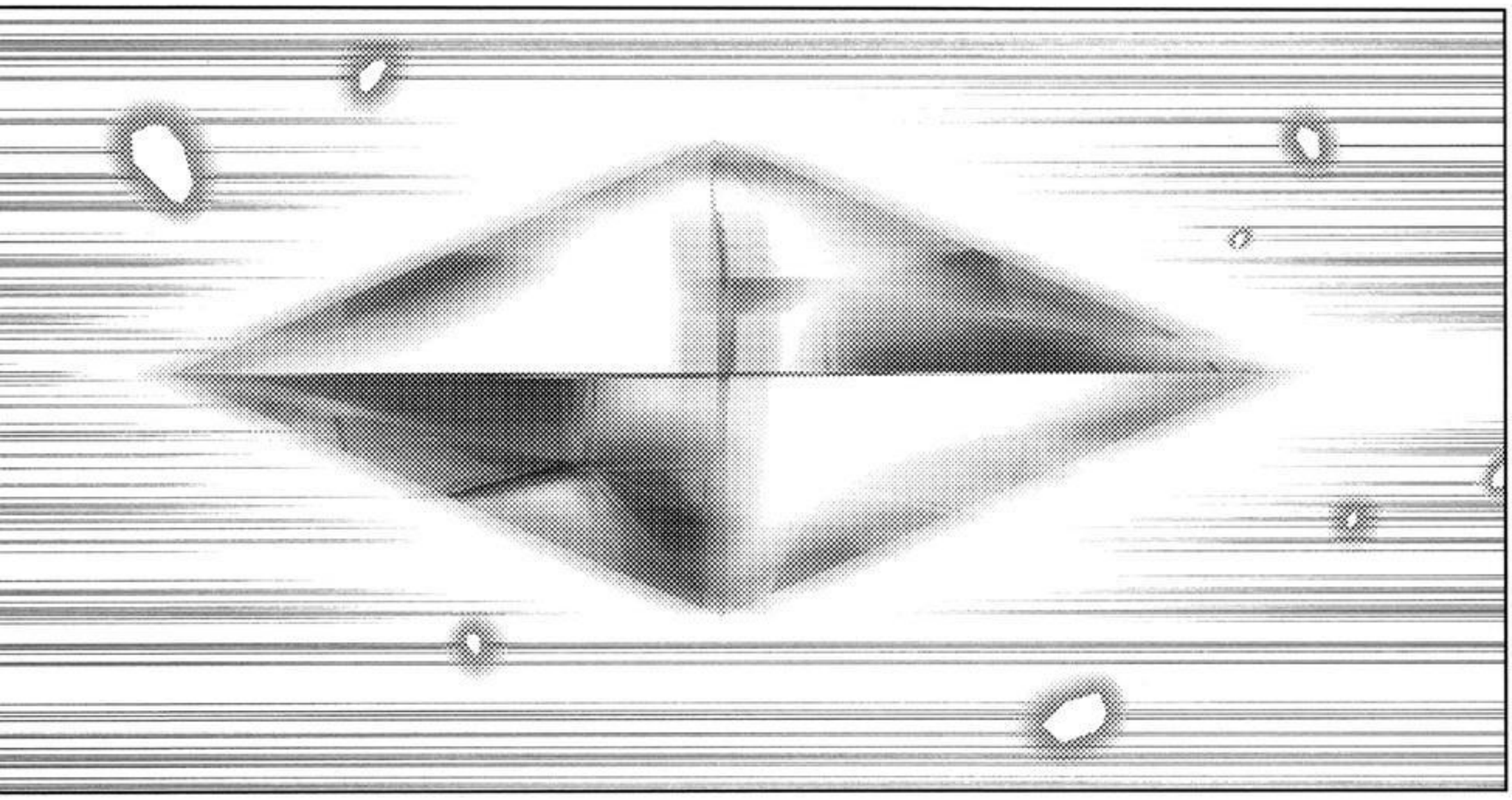
...

THAT'S JUST GREAT. HE'S THE LEAST RELIABLE OF ALL...

I GUESS WE JUST HAVE TO REST OUR HOPES ON RED...

SIGH ...





SLAM

I SHOULD HAVE FIGURED IT WOULD GO THIS WAY.

SHM

I'M SURPRISED.

!

SHM

YOU CHOSE TO SHOOT YOUR WHITE ARROW WITHOUT MISSING A BEAT...

ZSH

THAT WOULD MEAN THAT IT WAS WORTH IT.

MAYBE IT'S BECAUSE I LISTENED TO YOUR IDEAS.

YOU SAW HIM VANISH, RIGHT?

NO WAY! YONEDA'S A NATIONAL TREASURE!

HE WAS TRYING TO KILL THE PROFESSOR?

A WHITE ARROW ...?

JUST ANSWER ONE THING FOR ME.

BUT HUMANITY WILL BE EXTINCT IN 500 YEARS, AND IT WILL BE CAUSED BY SCIENCE RUN AMOK.

YOU SAID THAT WHAT'S IMPORTANT TO PEOPLE IS THEIR FUTURE.

SO WHY AREN'T YOU TRYING TO CHANGE THE COURSE OF SCIENCE, TO PUSH IT AWAY FROM THAT DISASTROUS DIRECTION?

BECAUSE HUMANITY'S DOWNFALL IS GUARANTEED ...

...

ZSH...

ZSH

LISTEN CLOSELY.

THE PAST CANNOT BE CHANGED. IT IS DETERMINED. DO YOU UNDERSTAND THAT?

ZSH

AND WHEN THIS MOMENT PASSES, IT BECOMES THE PAST. DO YOU UNDER-STAND?

THE PAST CAN'T BE CHANGED. THAT'S OBVIOUS. IT'S NOT EVEN SOMETHING YOU NEED TO **UNDERSTAND.**

IN THAT CASE ...

ZSH...

...

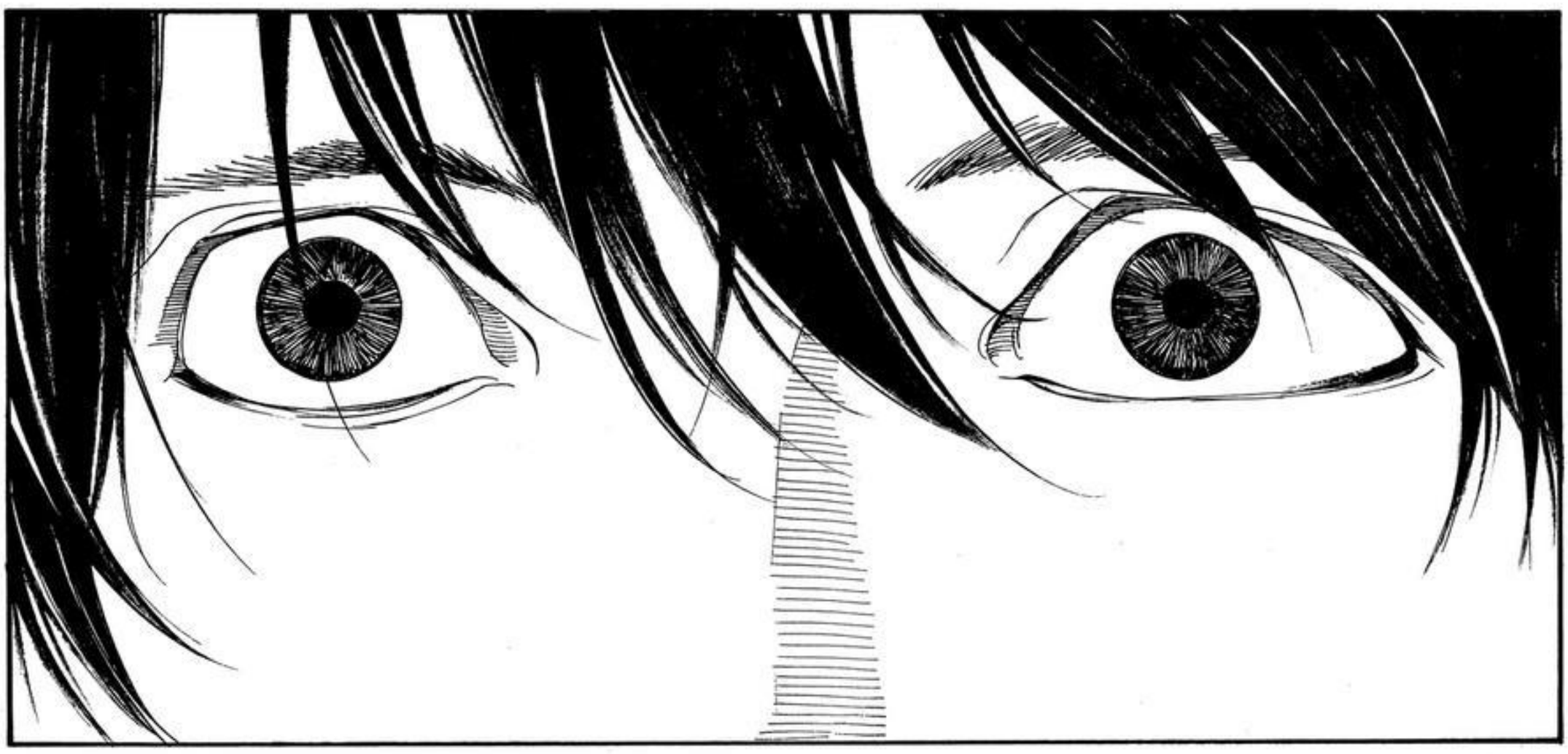
THAT, TOO, IS OBVIOUS.

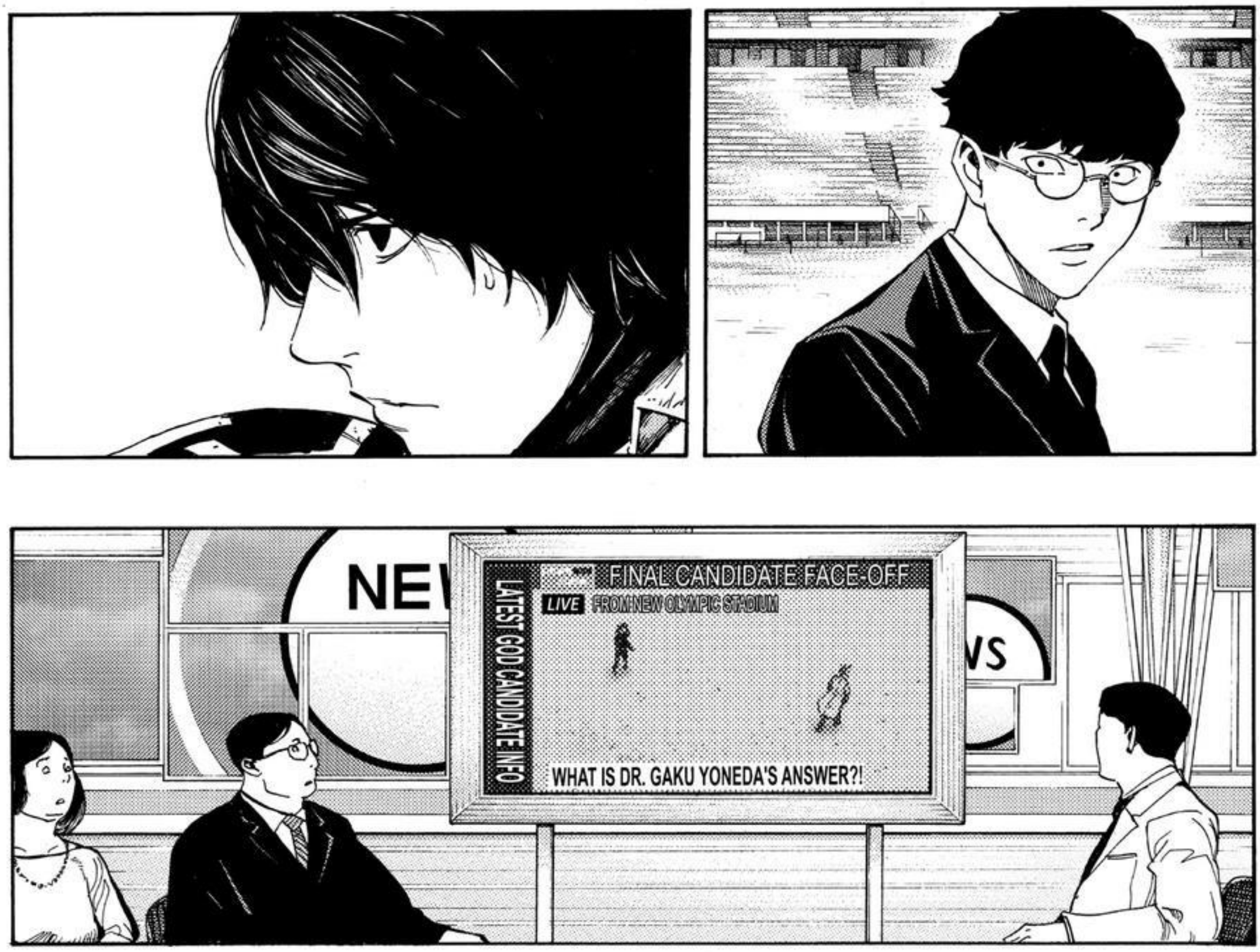
WHICHEVER ONE YOU SELECT IS ALREADY THE PAST IN THE VERY NEXT MOMENT.

FROM THE BEGINNING OF THE WORLD--NO, THE UNIVERSE-- TO THE END, EVERYTHING IS A SERIES OF MOMENTS.

STILL WITH ME?

ZSH




FINAL CANDIDATE FACE-OFF
LIVE FROM NEW OLYMPIC STADIUM
LATEST GOD CANDIDATE INFO
WHAT IS DR. GAKU YONEDA'S ANSWER?!

サロスパス
DHO
F22
FOREVER 22
LATEST GOD CANDIDATE INFO
WHAT IS DR. GAKU YONEDA'S ANSWER?!

NO, IDIOT. THERE'S NO "WHAT HAPPENS NEXT." ALL MOMENTS ARE DETERMINED AND EXIST TOGETHER.

SO THE PAST DOESN'T CHANGE, BUT WHAT HAPPENS NEXT ALSO BECOMES THE PAST, SO IT'S ALSO ALREADY DECIDED?

NOW I'M EVEN MORE CONFUSED ...

IS THAT IT?

THEY DON'T THINK THE WAY YOU DO.

ALMOST EVERYONE LIVES IN THE PRESENT.

YONEDA ...

YOU'RE RIGHT, I'M SORRY.

...

I THOUGHT YOU WEREN'T GOING TO INTERRUPT.

...IS SOMETHING THAT ONLY A GOD WHO HAS SEEN HUMANITY FROM START TO FINISH CAN SAY.

WHAT THE PROFESSOR IS SAYING...

THEN THINK OF IT THIS WAY.

IS THAT THE DEEPEST YOUR UNDER-STANDING CAN GO?

AND WITHIN THAT BLINK, BIRTH AND EXTINCTION EXIST IN INFINITE NUMBERS.

THOUSANDS OF YEARS, MILLIONS OF YEARS-- THESE ARE BUT A BLINK TO THE UNIVERSE.

INFINITE
...

I'M SORRY. I DON'T THINK I'M SMART ENOUGH TO UNDER-STAND.

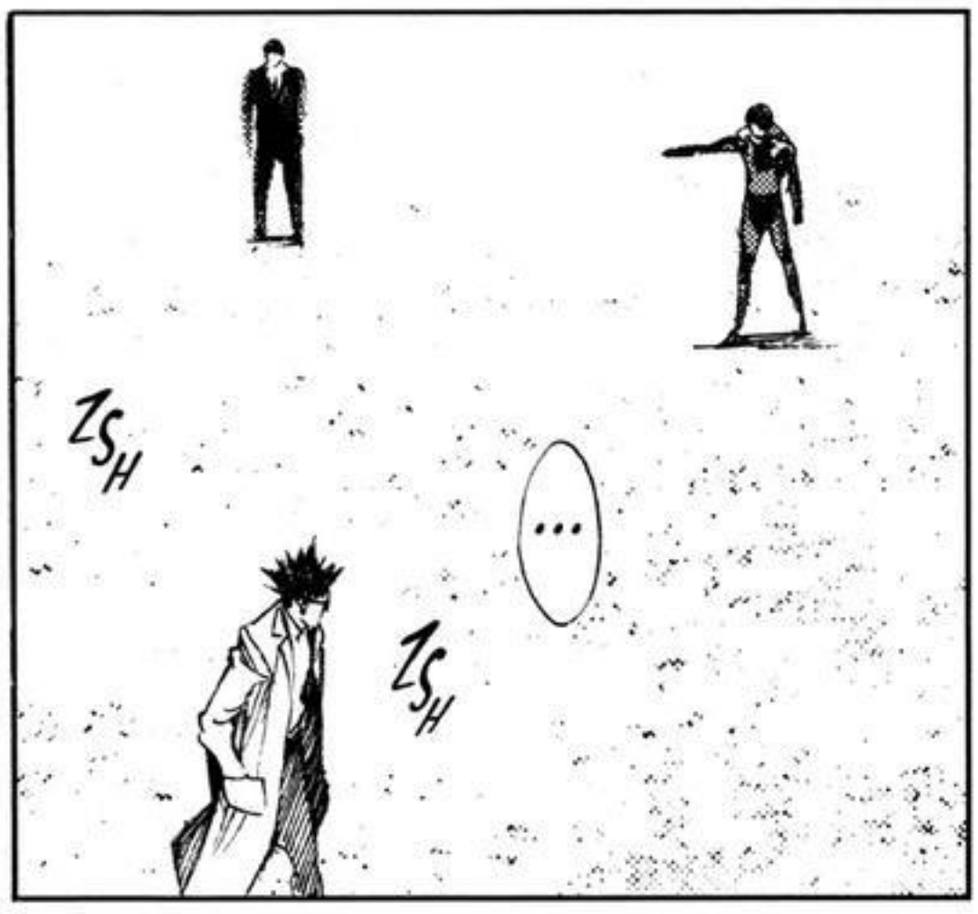
THAT'S FINE. YOUR LACK OF UNDER-STANDING IS NOT A PROBLEM.

ZSH...

BETWEEN 100 AND 200 YEARS FROM NOW, I WILL BE PROVEN CORRECT, AND THEN PEOPLE WILL UNDERSTAND. IT IS ALREADY DETERMINED.

I AM MERELY PURSUING THE ACTIONS NECESSARY FOR THAT MOMENT.

ZSHK...



FOR THE WORLD, FOR OTHERS, FOR THE FUTURE-- WHATEVER CAUSE YOU WANT TO GIVE IT, IT'S ULTIMATELY FOR YOURSELF.

THAT JUST MEANS THAT'S YOUR IDEAL FUTURE.

THE IDEAL FUTURE THAT EACH INDIVIDUAL ENVISIONS IS DIFFERENT.

HOW CLOSE THEY GET TO THOSE IDEALS IS THE DEFINITION OF HAPPINESS.

AND THAT TIES DIRECTLY INTO MY CONCEPT OF HAPPINESS.

MY IDEAL IS TO KEEP THE NUMBER OF SACRIFICES AS LOW AS POSSIBLE.

THAT WILL COST TOO MANY HUMAN LIVES.

YOUR IDEAL IS TO PREVENT CREATING A FALSE GOD THROUGH THIS PROCESS AND TO HAVE NO GOD AT ALL.

I WILL WIN MY OWN FUTURE.

THE FUTURE IS THE ACCUMULATION OF THE PRESENT, AND NOT DETERMINED.

BY PIERCING YOU.

HE CAN JUST FLY AWAY, RIGHT?

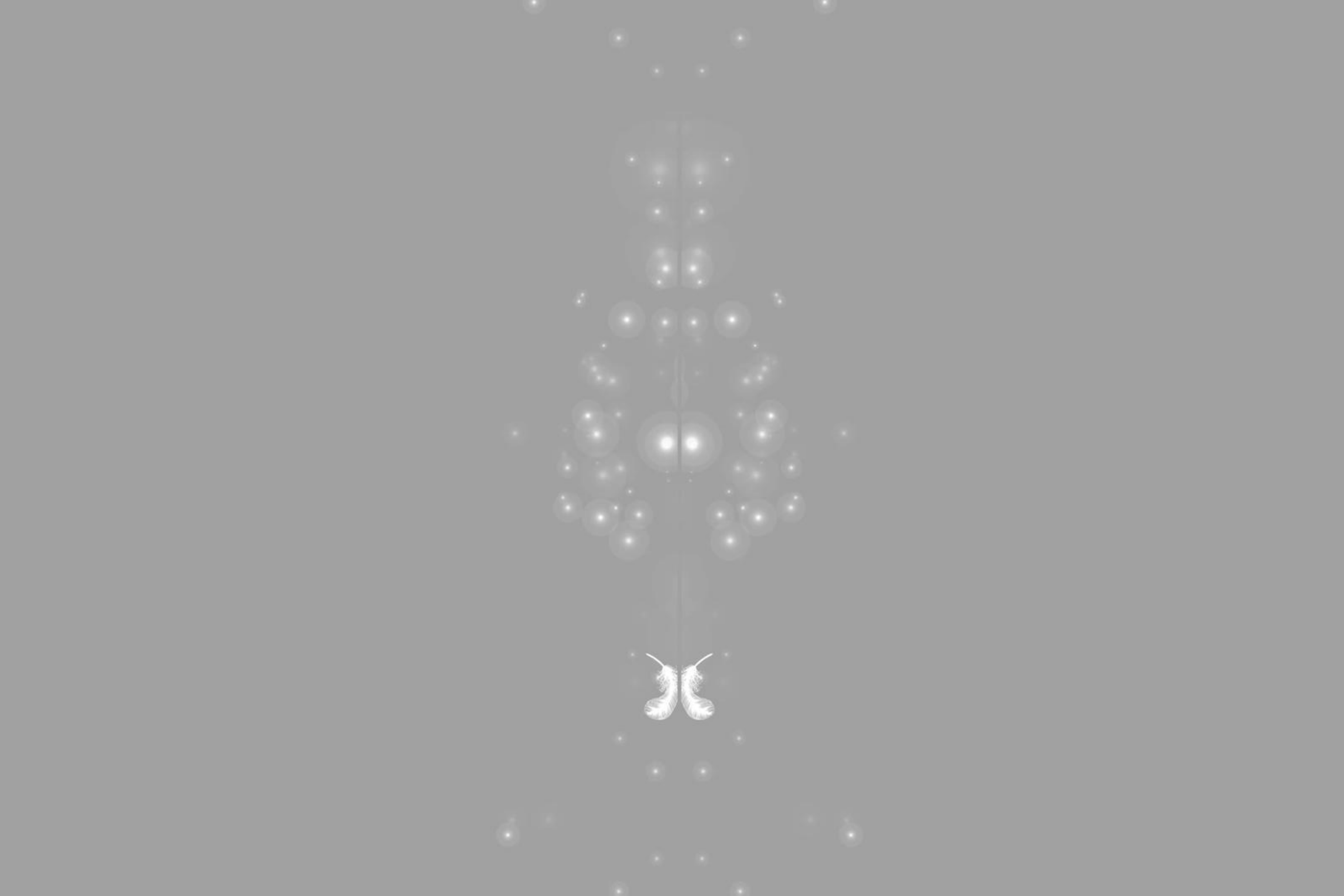
THE WHITE ARROW AGAIN?

YEAH. AND NOBODY WINS IF THEY BOTH SHOOT WHITE.

YOU CAN TALK A BOLD GAME NOW...

BUT I SAID THAT I LOOKED INTO YOU, DIDN'T I?

IT'S DONE NOW. LOOK.



#51 Choose a Life

WHAT DOES THIS MEAN?

YONEDA ...

YOU DON'T GET IT?

CLICK

YOU ARE GOING TO CHOOSE A LIFE. NOT CHEW--BUT CHOOSE.

EITHER YOU GIVE UP ON BEING A FALSE GOD, OR YELLOW DIES.

AT THE PRESENT MOMENT, THIS IS THE MOST EFFECTIVE MEANS OF PREVENTING A FALSE GOD.

YOU HAVE 28 SECONDS.

NOW DECIDE.

LAP SPLIT TIME ALARM

0:00'28"00

1/100

HR. MIN. SEC. 1/100

Solar powar

02150.083.420

2018.10.10 12:40:11

WHAT'S THE MEANING OF THIS...?

ONLY IF YOU FOLLOW ORDERS. IF YOU DON'T, WE'LL KILL YOU. THAT APPLIES TO RED TOO.

YOU SAID YOU WOULDN'T KILL US IF WE FOLLOWED YOUR ORDERS.

IF YOU'RE GOING TO KILL ANYONE, KILL ME, NOT YELLOW.

...

HUH?

IF THERE AREN'T GOING TO BE RED ARROWS ANYMORE, I'D RATHER DIE...

THE PROFESSOR'S ALREADY GOT SOME PLAN TO PREVENT A GOD FROM BEING CREATED, RIGHT?

...

IF YOU **WANT** TO DIE, I CAN KILL YOU...

...BUT I'M STILL GOING TO POINT THIS WHITE ARROW AT SAKI AFTER YOU'RE DEAD.

...

DO YOU STILL WANT TO DIE?

WELL, THEN THERE'D BE NO POINT...

Y'KNOW...

...

EXACTLY.

...SO THAT'S MY TOP PRIORITY.

THAT'S A GOOD POINT, BUT NOW I HAVE A GOAL TO ACHIEVE WITH THE PROFESSOR...

TO THE POINT WHERE YOU WANTED TO COMMIT SUICIDE.

I REMEMBER YOU TALKING A BIG GAME ABOUT HOW YOU HATED TO CAUSE TROUBLE FOR OTHER PEOPLE.

WELL, I CAN'T THINK OF ANYTHING THAT CAUSES MORE TROUBLE FOR PEOPLE THAN KILLING THEM.

WHY DON'T YOU JUST GO OFF AND DIE BY YOURSELF?!

RECALL

CITIZEZ

LAP SPLIT TIME ALARM

[00] 0'00"00

0'00"06 29

1/100

nR. MIN. SEC. 1/100S

Solar power

TEMPERATURE·HUMIDITY·HEAT INDEX·DEW POINT

LIGHT

30 LAP.SPLIT MEMORY

U

YOU'RE RUNNING OUT OF TIME, KAKEHASHI ...

ALL RIGHT.

I WILL GIVE UP ON BEING GOD.

1/100

THAT MEANS THERE WILL NOT BE A NEW GOD.

THE CANDIDATE MIRAI KAKEHASHI HAS GIVEN UP ON BEING GOD.

SO THE PROFESSOR'S RIGHT.

OR FALSE GOD, ANYWAY.

HE'D PROBABLY BEND THE RULES TO FAVOR YELLOW IF HE WERE GOD.

ARE RED AND YELLOW AN ITEM, THEN?

THANK GOOD-NESS.

...

IT'S **NOT.** I NEED THERE TO BE A GOD.

IF THIS MEANS EVERY-THING IS RESOLVED ...

HUH? NO SHE'S NOT.

SHE'S PROBABLY SAYING, "FORGET ABOUT ME, JUST KILL YONEDA."

WHAT WILL YELLOW SAY WHEN SHE SEES THIS?

CLIK

BUT I MUST SAY, RED, I'M DISAP-POINTED IN YOU.

WHEN I HEARD YOU SAY, "I WILL DO NOTHING IF I BECOME GOD," I THOUGHT YOU WERE A PERSON CAPABLE OF MORE RATIONAL DECISIONS. PERHAPS I THOUGHT TOO HIGHLY OF YOU.

BUT JUST NOW, YOU'VE ESSENTIALLY STATED THAT YOU WOULD ABANDON THOSE MILLIONS FOR THE SAKE OF YELLOW ALONE.

TWELVE MINUTES AND 49 SECONDS AGO, IT WAS A QUESTION OF NUMBERS. YOU SAID THAT STOPPING ME WOULD SAVE THE LIVES OF MILLIONS.

I'M GLAD **HE'S** NOT GOD, FALSE OR REAL.

WHAT A SCUM-BAG.

...BUT THEN HE REVERSES HIMSELF FOR HIS GIRL-FRIEND.

THAT'S TRUE.

FIRST HE ACTED LIKE THE CALM, COOL GUY...

OF COURSE, I KNEW YOU WOULD MAKE THIS CHOICE.

BUT IF I WERE IN YOUR POSITION, I WOULD NEVER DO SOMETHING SO STUPID.

AM I CORRECT ABOUT THAT?

TO YOU, THE WEIGHT OF LIFE IS ORGANIZED AS...

...YELLOW FIRST, THEN MILLIONS OF PEOPLE, AND THEN MY LIFE.

YOU ARE CORRECT.

10.10 12:49:05

ON AND ON HE GOES ABOUT THIS STUFF. WHAT A JERK.

SAKI HANAKAGO IS THE ONE PERSON I CARE ABOUT THE MOST.

THE MOST, EH...?

...

WOO WOO!

I HATE THIS IDEA OF "THE MOST IMPORTANT PERSON." IT HAS NO BASIS IN SCIENCE... OR EVEN BIOLOGY...

"MOST IMPORTANT PERSON." "MY FATED PARTNER." THESE ARE ILLUSIONS THAT THE WEAK-MINDED FALL INTO.

PROFES-
SOR.

YOU WOULD THROW AWAY THE CHANCE TO BE A FALSE GOD OVER THE PRIMITIVE, ANIMALISTIC IMPULSE FOR MALES AND FEMALES TO DESIRE ONE ANOTHER...

THERE ARE OVER 7.7 BILLION PEOPLE LIVING ON THIS PLANET.

...

YOU ARE LACKING IN CERTAIN HUMAN QUALITIES, I BELIEVE.

IT WAS "LOVE, FRIENDSHIP AND COMPANIONSHIP."

I READ SOMETHING YOU WROTE ONCE. THAT FRIENDSHIP, LOVERS AND COMPANIONSHIP ARE MERELY TOOLS THAT NOVELISTS USE TO ENTERTAIN THEIR READERS.

YOU SAID THAT IN REALITY, PEOPLE RARELY FIND THESE THINGS, AND WHEN THEY DO, THEY ARE BETRAYED BY THEM IN THE END.

IT IS THE WAY OF THINGS.

ZSH...

THERE ARE TIMES WHEN I'VE FELT THAT WAY TOO...

HA HA HA!

HOLD YOUR NOSE AROUND HIM!

PIG-STY!

PIG-STY!

HUH?

I'M ONLY 15, SO WHILE I MIGHT SAY SHE'S THE MOST IMPORTANT PERSON TO ME, THAT DOESN'T NECESSARILY MEAN I'LL BE WITH HER MY ENTIRE LIFE.

BUT...

YOU SHOULD NEVER SAY THAT.

IT MAKES NO SENSE TO REFUTE FRIENDSHIP AND LOVE AS MERE ILLUSIONS.

YOU DON'T UNDERSTAND HOW PEOPLE FEEL.

YOU ONLY SAY THAT BECAUSE YOU'VE AVOIDED INTERACTING WITH PEOPLE.

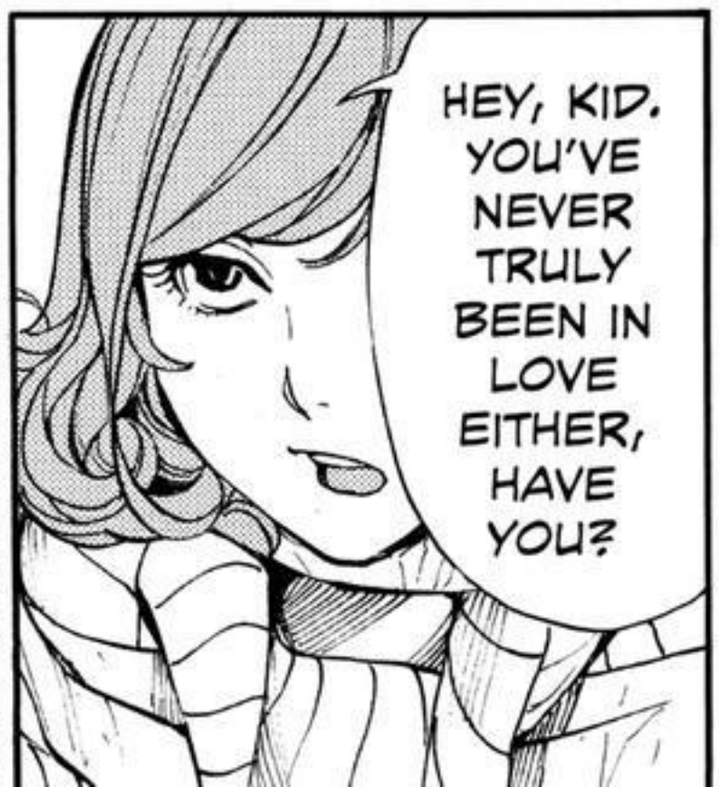
NO ONE WHO EVER TRULY LOVED SOMEONE ELSE WOULD SAY THAT.

AT THIS MOMENT, I LOVE HER. SO I **SHOULD** DO THIS.

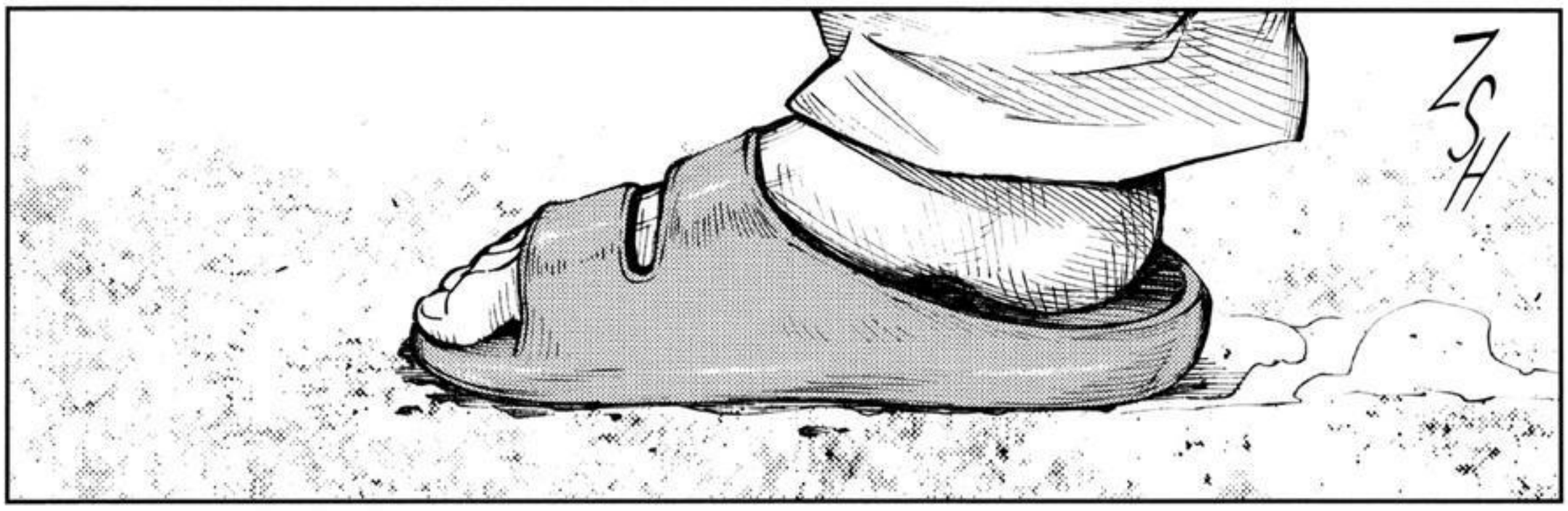
...

THERE'S NOTHING WRONG WITH MY CHOICE OF ACTIONS.

SHUT UP!
EEK!


HEY, KID. YOU'VE NEVER TRULY BEEN IN LOVE EITHER, HAVE YOU?

DAMN... I'M JEALOUS ...


ZSH

BUT... THAT STATEMENT OF YOURS WAS A VERY GOOD ONE.
ZSH
WE SEEM TO HAVE STRAYED FROM THE TOPIC.

ZSH...
IT WILL ADD GREATER MEANING TO THE NEXT LIFE YOU CHOOSE.
YOUR NEXT CHOICE IS...
THE NEXT LIFE...?
!

EITHER YOU DIE, OR YELLOW DIES.

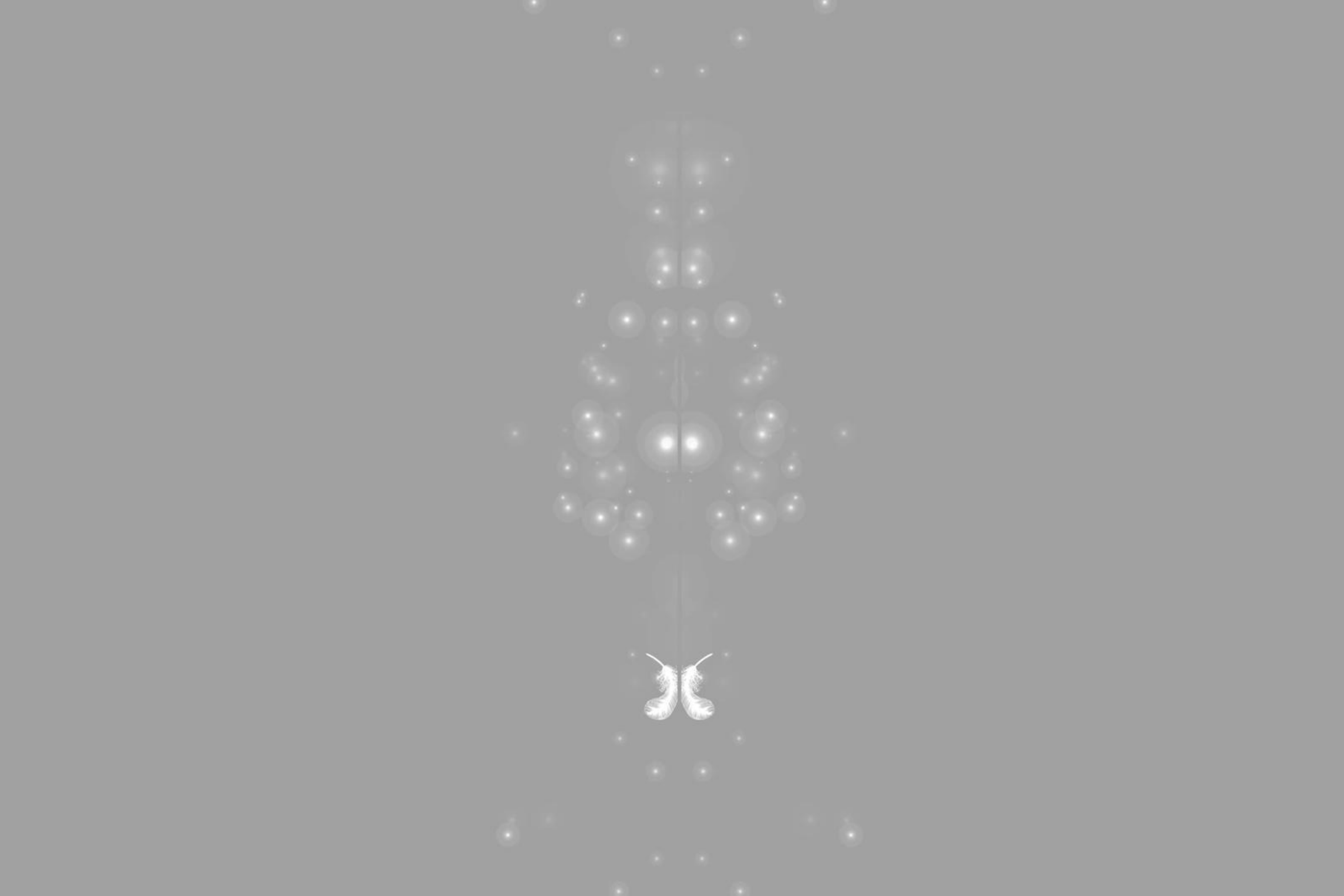
YOU MIGHT GIVE UP ON TRYING TO BE A FALSE GOD, BUT EITHER WAY, I CAN'T HAVE YOU ESCAPING.

YOU MUST HAVE KNOWN IT WOULD COME TO THIS WHEN THE TWO OF US MET TO TALK.

IT WAS ALWAYS GOING TO BE A FIGHT TO THE DEATH.

LET'S ADD ANOTHER 28 SECONDS ...

CLIK



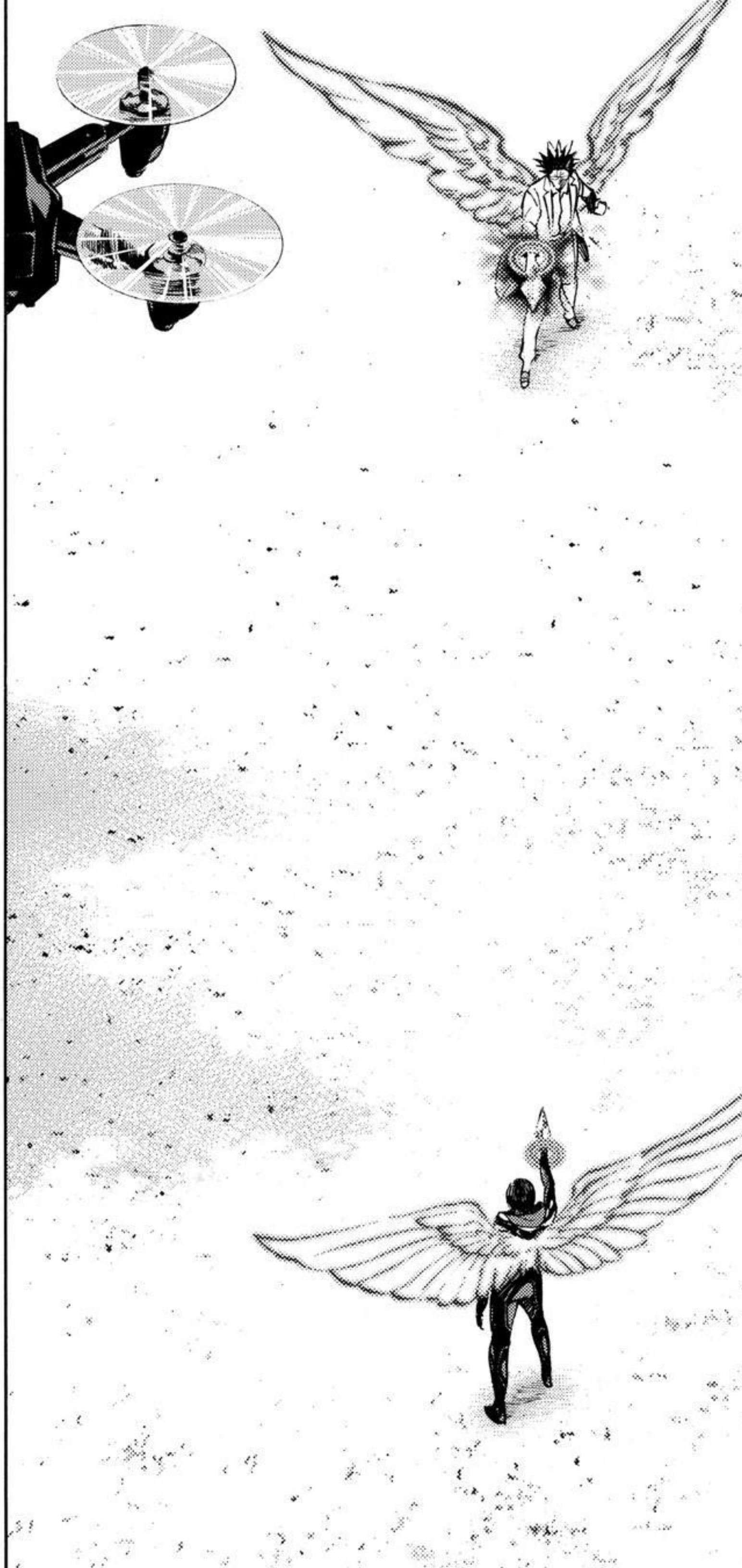
EITHER YOU FALL VICTIM TO MY WHITE ARROW, OR YELLOW FALLS VICTIM TO SHUJI NAKAUMI'S.

ANOTHER 28 SECONDS.

#52 Wings of Determination

...YELLOW WILL DIE.

OF COURSE, EVEN IF YOU CHOOSE YOUR OWN DEATH, IF YOU SHOULD DODGE THE WHITE ARROW...



#52 Wings of Determination

REVEL.

GO AND TELL KAKEHASHI THAT I'M FINE WITH IT.

WE DON'T WANT YOU TELLING ANYONE ABOUT THIS PLACE.

NOT SO FAST.

IF REVEL OR YAZELI LEAVE THIS ROOM, I'LL KILL ALL OF YOU.

...

NO, SAKI... YOUR LIFE IS MORE IMPORTANT TO ME THAN MIRAI'S.

REVEL, I DON'T CARE. JUST GO...

WE OUGHT TO LEAVE THIS SITUATION UP TO OUR HUMAN PARTNERS.

...

AND NOW...

LET US BEGIN.

CLICK

I'M AN OBSTACLE TO HIM BECAUSE I HAVE WHITE ARROWS...

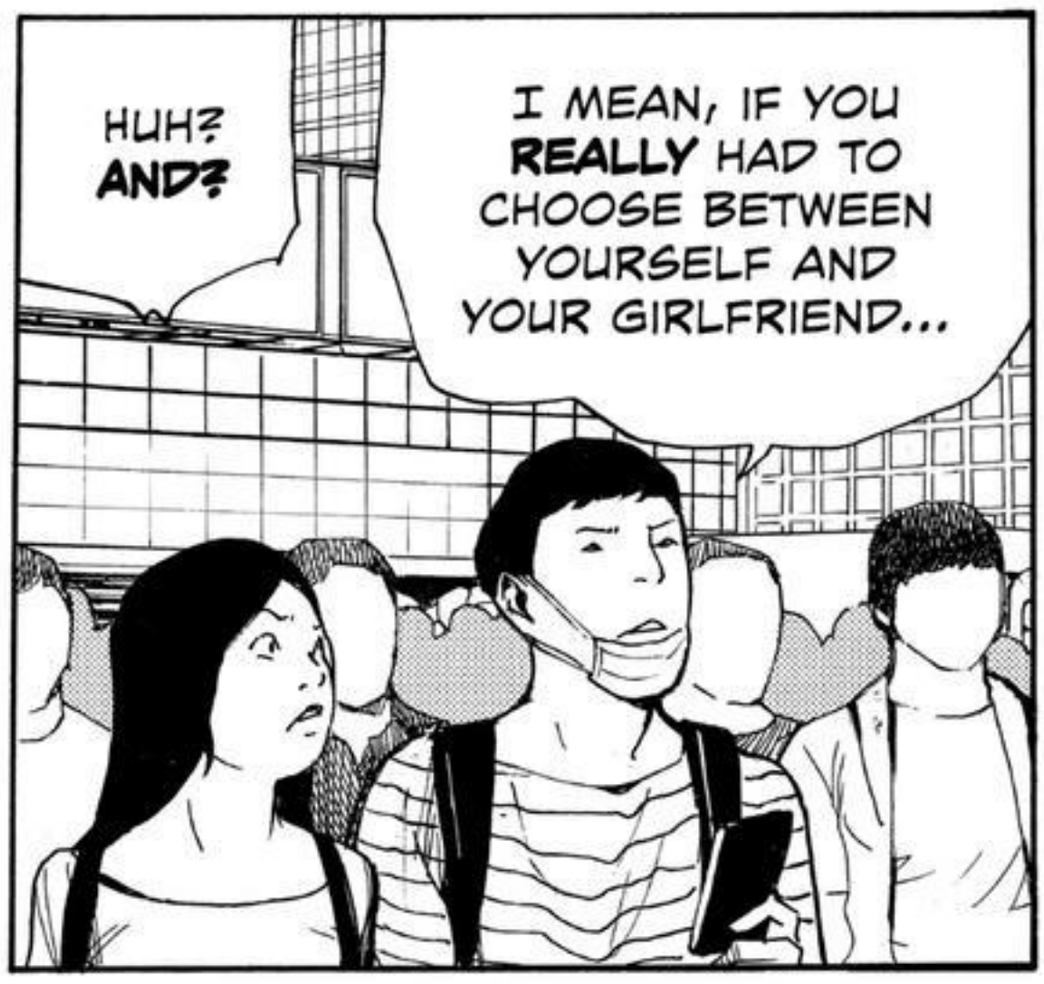
HE THINKS THAT I'M GOING TO CHOOSE MY OWN DEATH.

...

AS A MATTER OF FACT, THE BEST WAY OUT OF THIS SITUATION IS FOR ME TO KILL HIM...

LIVE
FROM NEW OLYMPIC STADIUM
WHAT IS DR. GAKU YONEDA'S ANSWER?!
FINAL CONFRONTATION OF THE 5 GOD CANDIDATES?
HE'S ALL TALK. LOSER.
AFTER HIS BIG COOL SPEECH ABOUT LOVE.
OH, HE HAS TO STOP AND THINK ABOUT IT NOW?

RED WAS VERY CLEAR ABOUT NOT LIVING ONLY FOR HIMSELF...


HUH?
AND?
I MEAN, IF YOU **REALLY** HAD TO CHOOSE BETWEEN YOURSELF AND YOUR GIRLFRIEND...

LIVE
FINAL CANDIDATE FACEOFF - WILL GOD BE DECIDED?
FROM NEW OLYMPIC STADIUM
LATEST GOD CANDIDATE INFO
...
WHAT IS DR. GAKU YONEDA'S ANSWER?!

YELLOW HAS SAID THAT WE DON'T NEED A FALSE GOD CREATURE TO BEGIN WITH.

AND IF I DIE, YELLOW WILL ABSO-LUTELY BE SAFE?

SHE SAID THAT SHE CAN'T GO ON UNLESS SOMEONE BECOMES GOD, SO SHE CAN HAVE HER RED ARROWS...

AND TEMARI?

WHAT SHE WANTS IS **MONEY.**

WHAT SHE NEEDS IS NOT A CREATURE, NOR RED ARROWS.

THE ASSISTANCE SHE NEEDS TO LIVE HAPPILY IS MINUSCULE.

WELL, AS LONG AS I HAVE ENOUGH MONEY, I CAN DEAL WITH THAT.

IN ANY CASE, THIS MEANS I CAN SURVIVE, NO MATTER WHICH WAY THIS ONE GOES.

BUT I GUESS I'LL STILL TECHNICALLY BE A CANDIDATE IN THAT SITUATION ...

WHAT, IS HE GOING TO BE MY SUGAR DADDY? I'M NOT OPPOSED TO IT...

OH YEAH?

...

THE FIRST STEP TO DOING THAT IS KILLING RED, OUR BIGGEST PROBLEM...

I GUESS HE HAS TO LIE TO DO THAT...

THE PROFESSOR IS LYING...

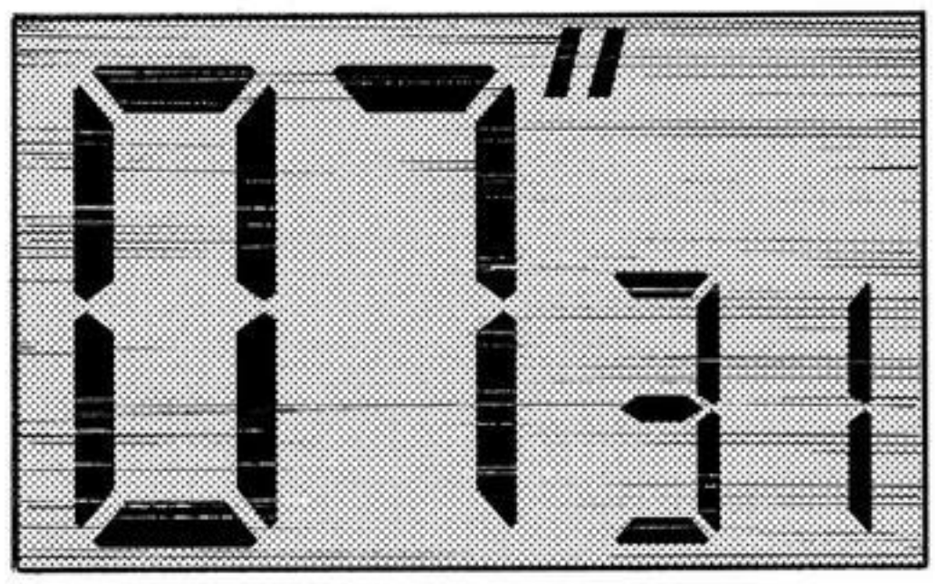
THE WAY TO AVOID MAKING A CREATURE GOD IS FOR ALL OF THE CANDIDATES TO DIE...

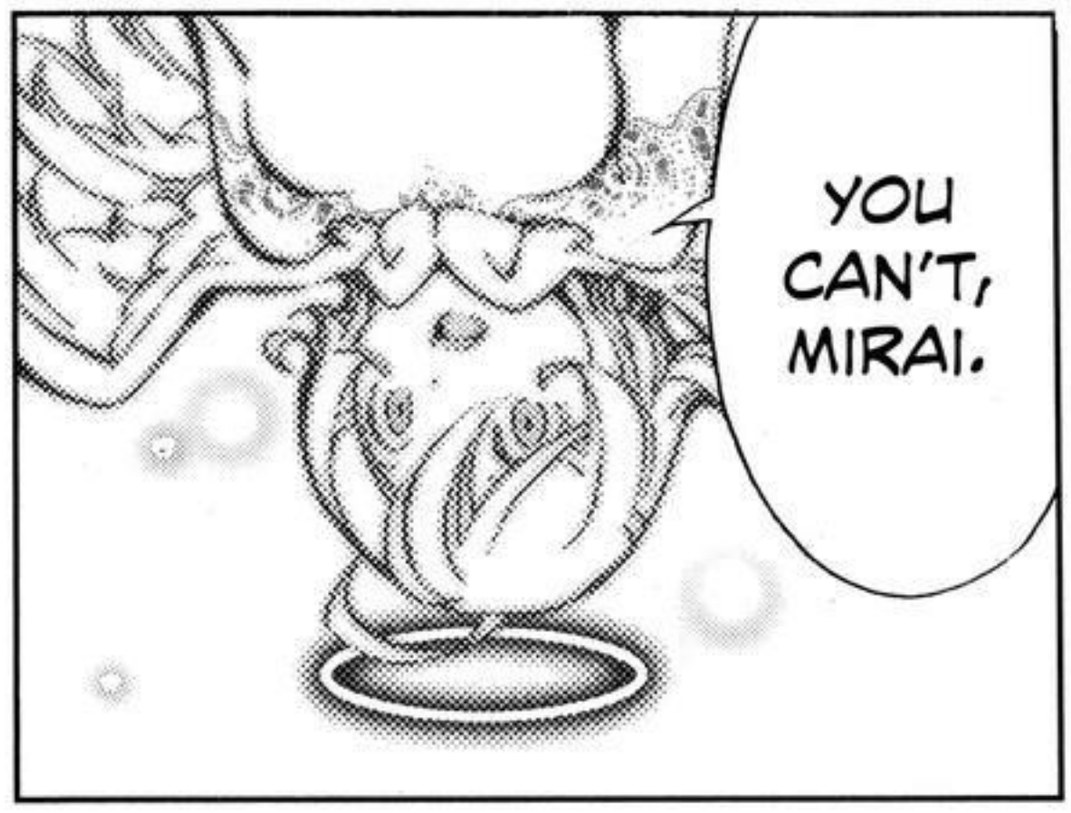
I...I'M JUST FEELING BAD, IMAGINING YOU WASTING THE FORTUNE THE PROFESSOR EARNED FROM PATENTS AND ROYALTIES...

HUH? HEY, KID, WHY THE GLOOMY LOOK?

OH, THAT'S JUST YOU.

YOU HAVE EIGHT SECONDS.




YOU CAN'T, MIRAI.

I CAME HERE TO MAKE YOU HAPPY, MIRAI.
YOU CAN'T DIE.

LOOK AT HOW FAR YOU'VE COME SINCE THEIR DEATHS.

YOU NEED TO BE HAPPY ENOUGH FOR THE REST OF YOUR FAMILY.

YOU CAN'T BE HAPPY IF YOU DIE.

SO IT'S NOT LIKE SAKI DYING MEANS YOU CAN'T BE HAPPY ANYMORE.

NASSE SEEMS DESPERATE TO GET HER PARTNER TO BECOME GOD TOO.

FIVE SECONDS LEFT.

I FOUND A FOUR-LEAF CLOVER.

HERE, SAKI, YOU CAN HAVE MINE.

I HEARD THAT YELLOW LADYBUGS BRING YOU HAPPINESS TOO.

I WANT TO LIVE!

I WAS HOPING WE COULD FIND A WAY TO SMILE FOR EACH OTHER LIKE THIS.

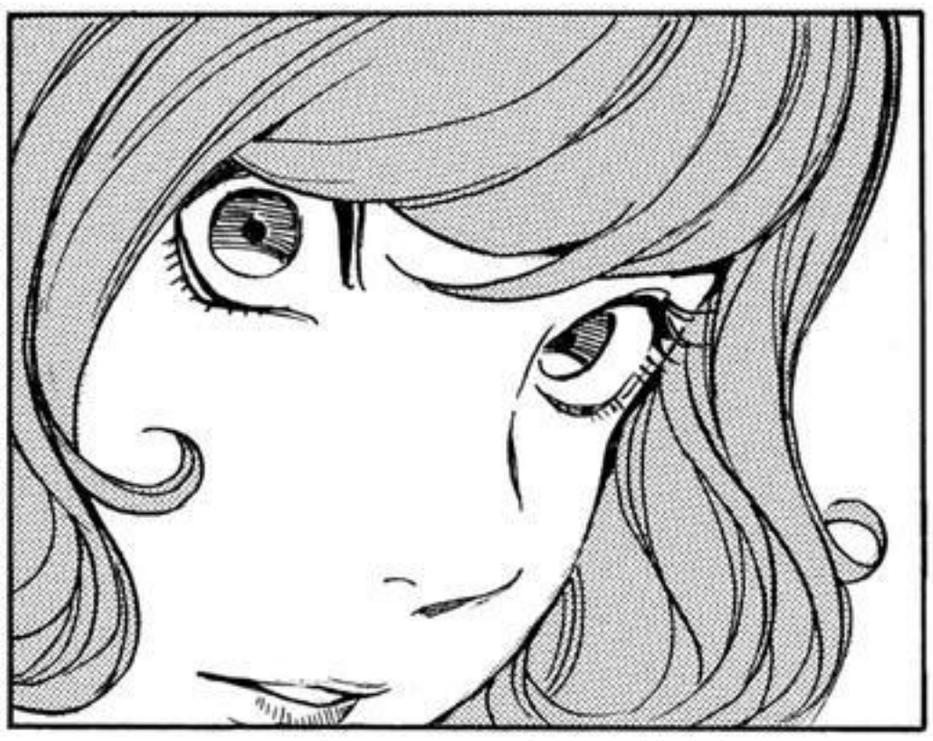
YOU'VE HAD THAT PENSIVE LOOK FOR SO LONG.

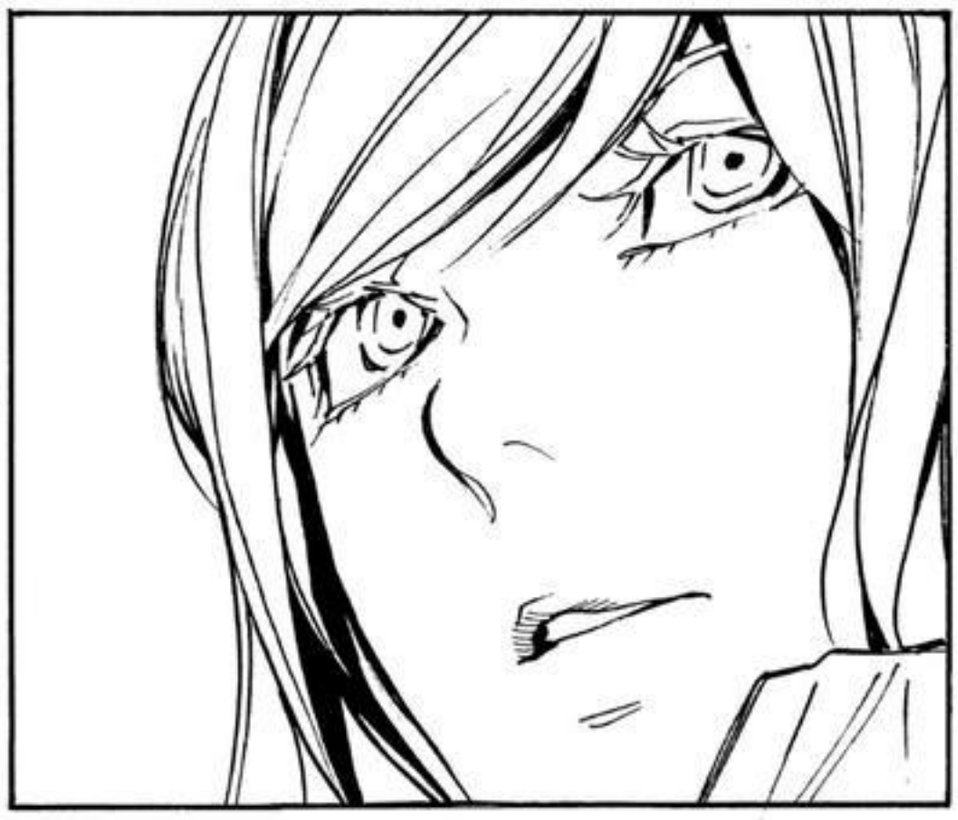
KAKEHASHI ...

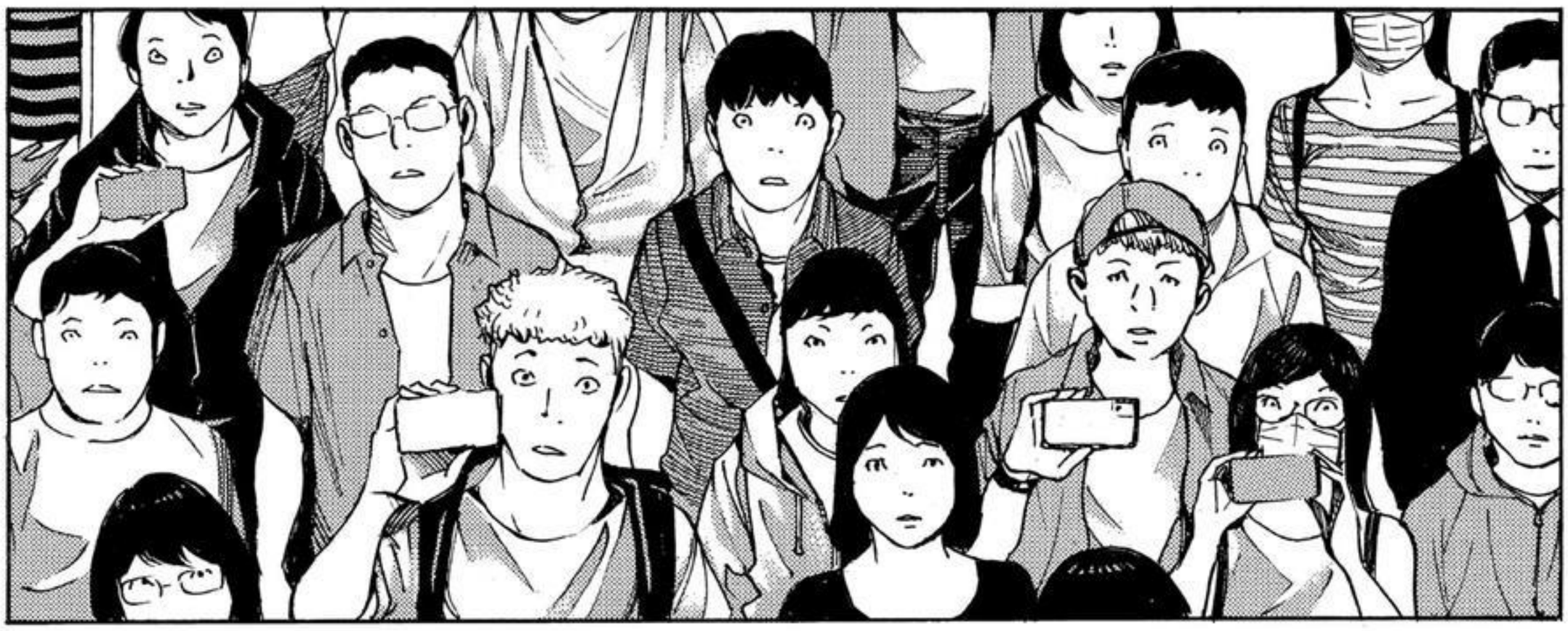
I LOVE YOU.

...THAN MY OWN.

THERE IS A LIFE MORE IMPORTANT TO ME...





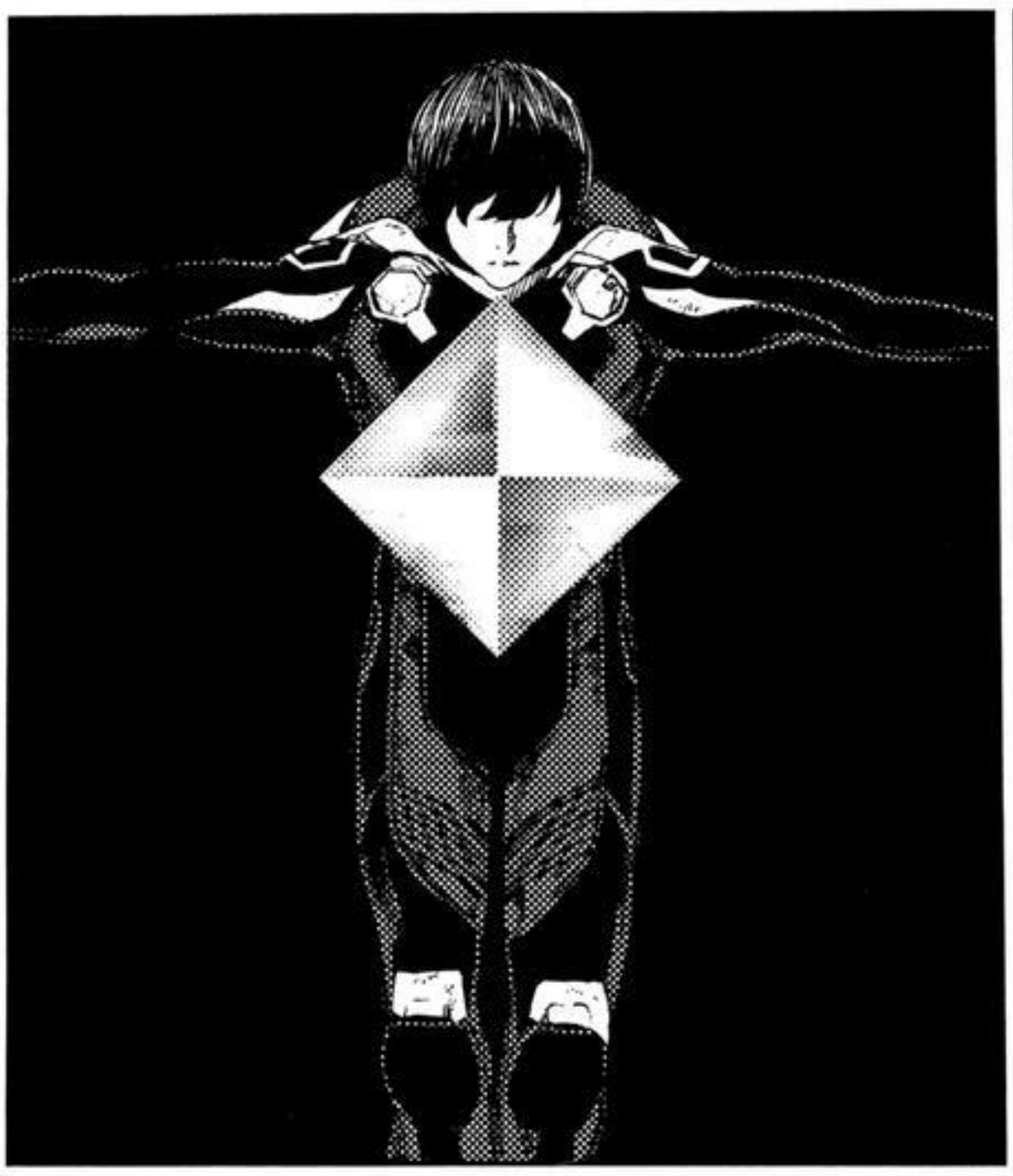


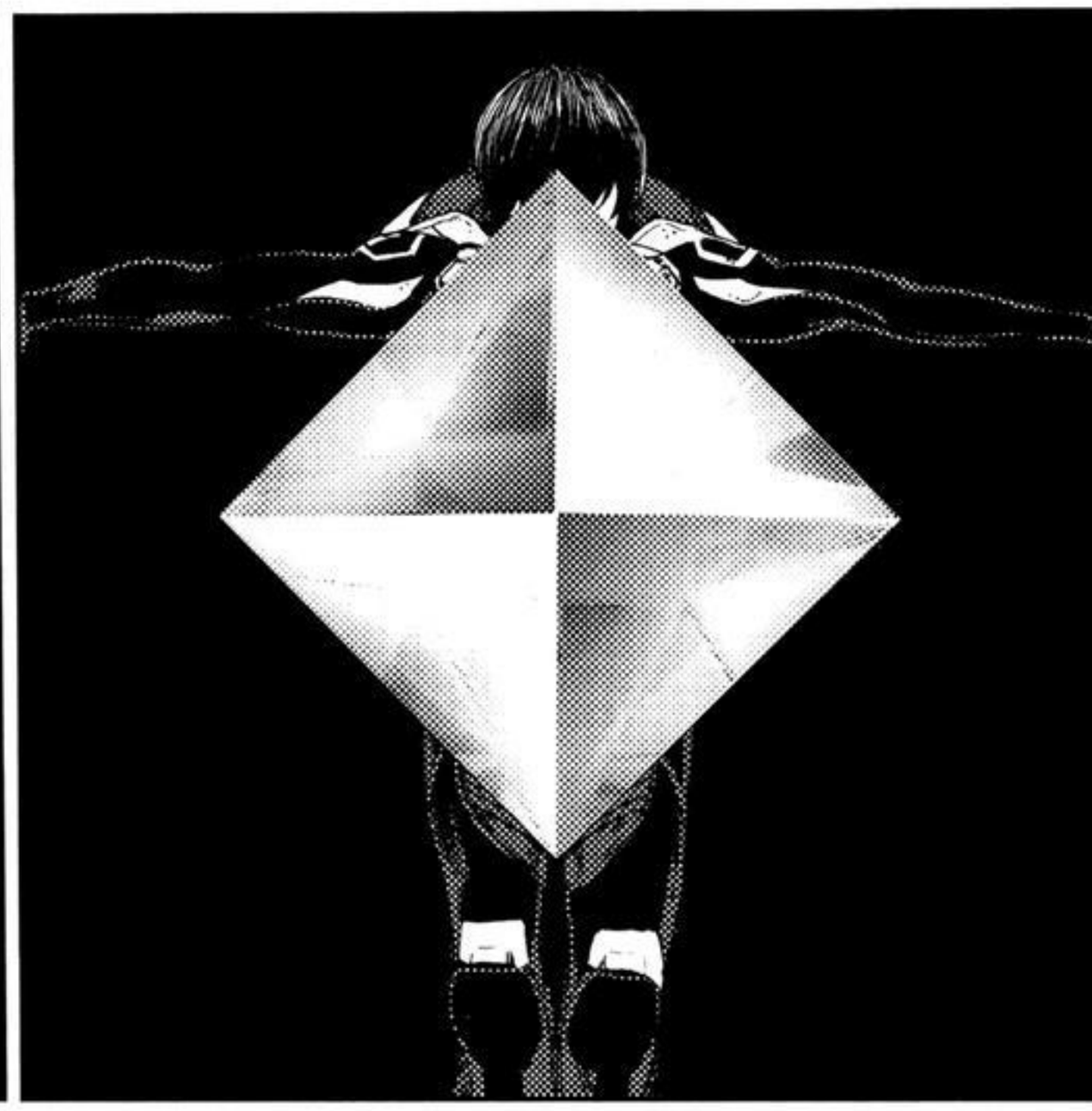
1'07"11

IT'S TIME.

NAKAUMI, IF RED TRIES TO ESCAPE, USE YOUR ARROW ON YELLOW.

FFT
SHHH





WHOO
HS

TING

IF I ESCAPE, SAKI WILL...

WHAT ARE YOU DOING?!

YOU'RE **NOT** ESCAPING.

NASSE, WHY ARE YOU-

THIS TIME, YOU CAN'T SIMPLY SACRIFICE YOUR-SELF.

BUT IF **YOU** DIE, IT'S ALL OVER.

NO! IF ME ANNOUNCING I'LL BE GOD MEANS SAKI DIES, THEN IT'S ALL BESIDE THE POINT!

HOPING FOR YOUR OWN DEATH IS THE SAME AS SUICIDE.

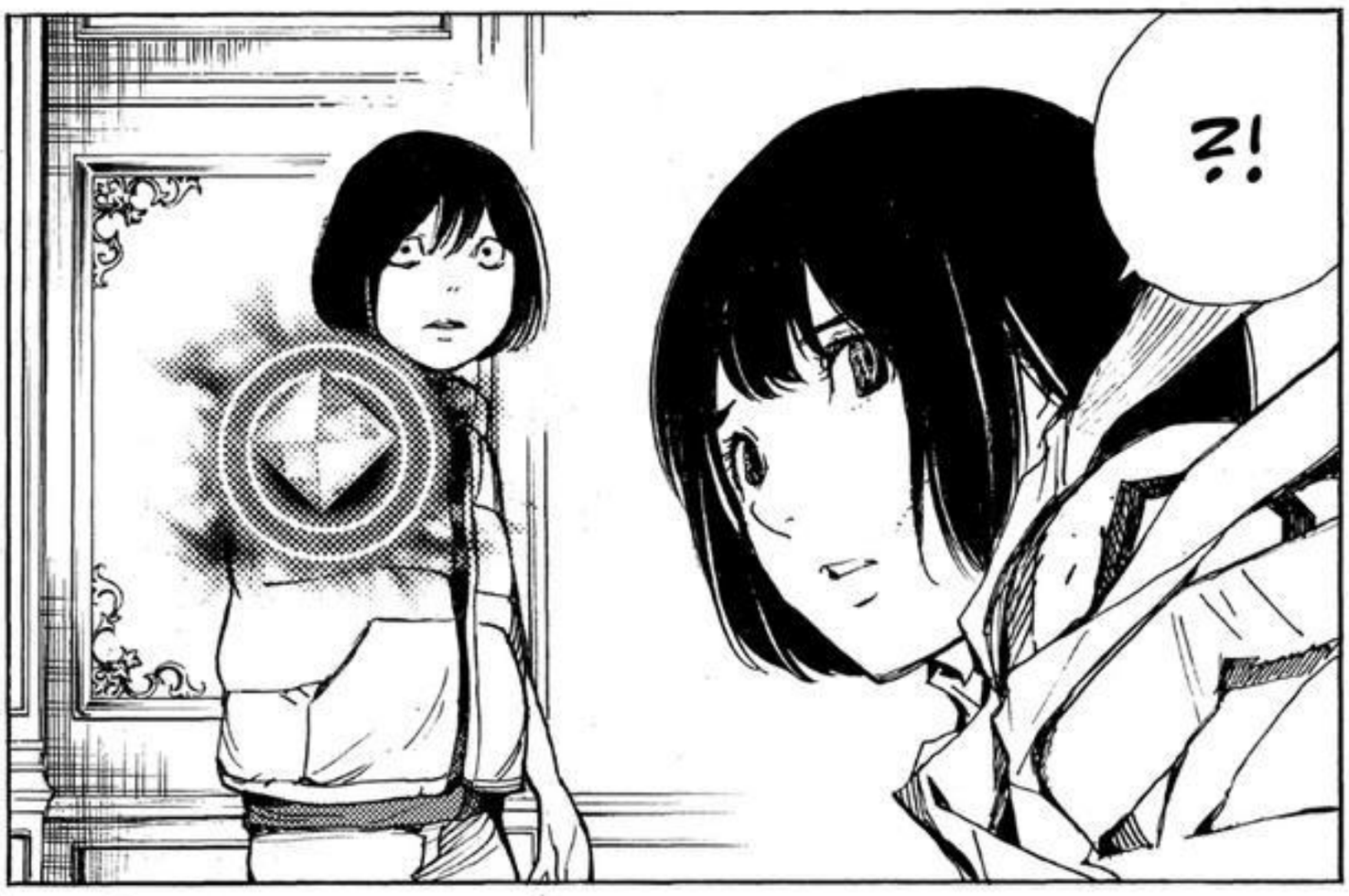
SHOOM

TA T

YOU SAID IT YOURSELF! IT'S THE MOST MISERABLE WAY FOR A HUMAN BEING TO DIE!

SHM

NASSE?


?!

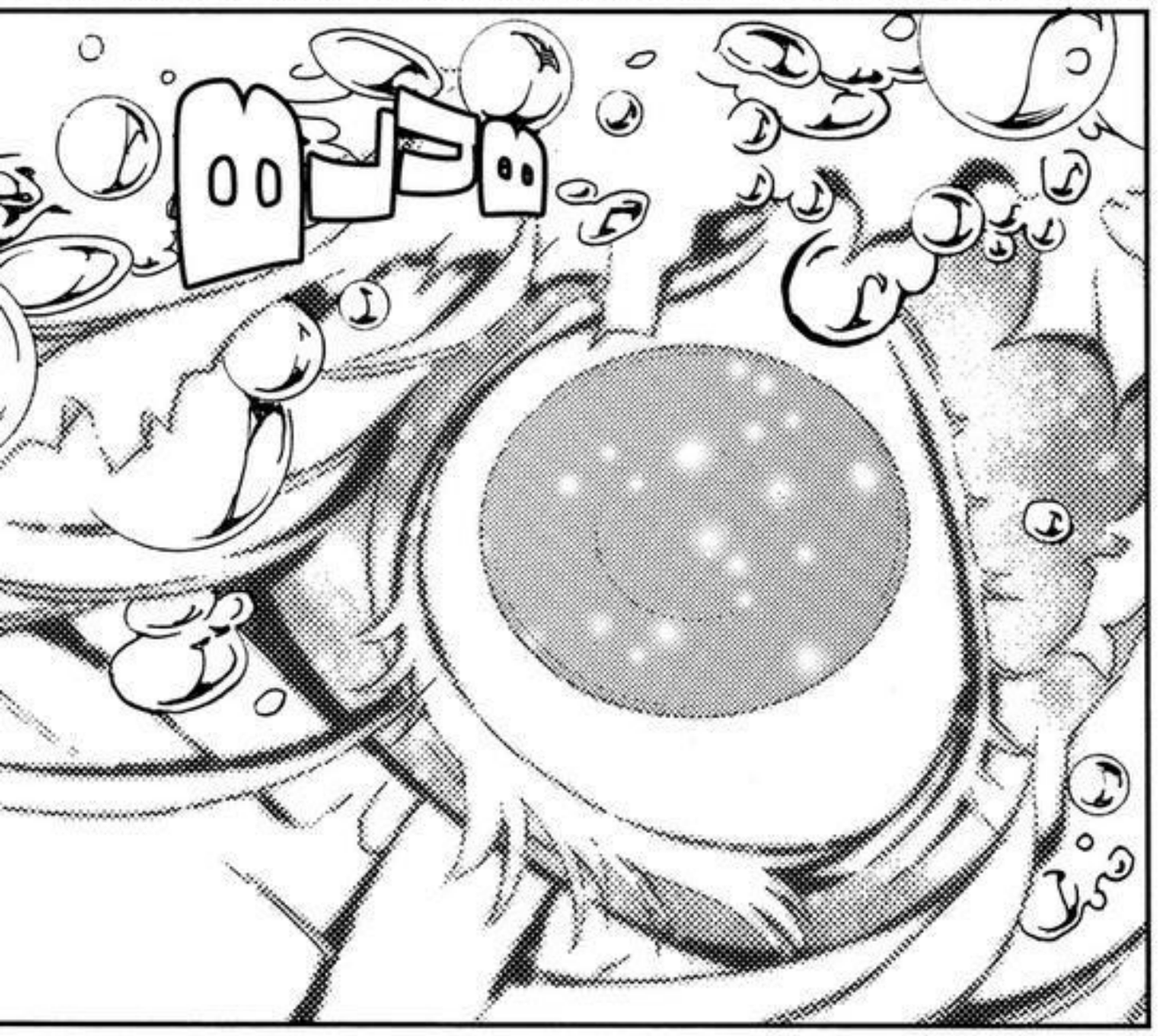
SO MUNI WAS CORRECT AFTER ALL...

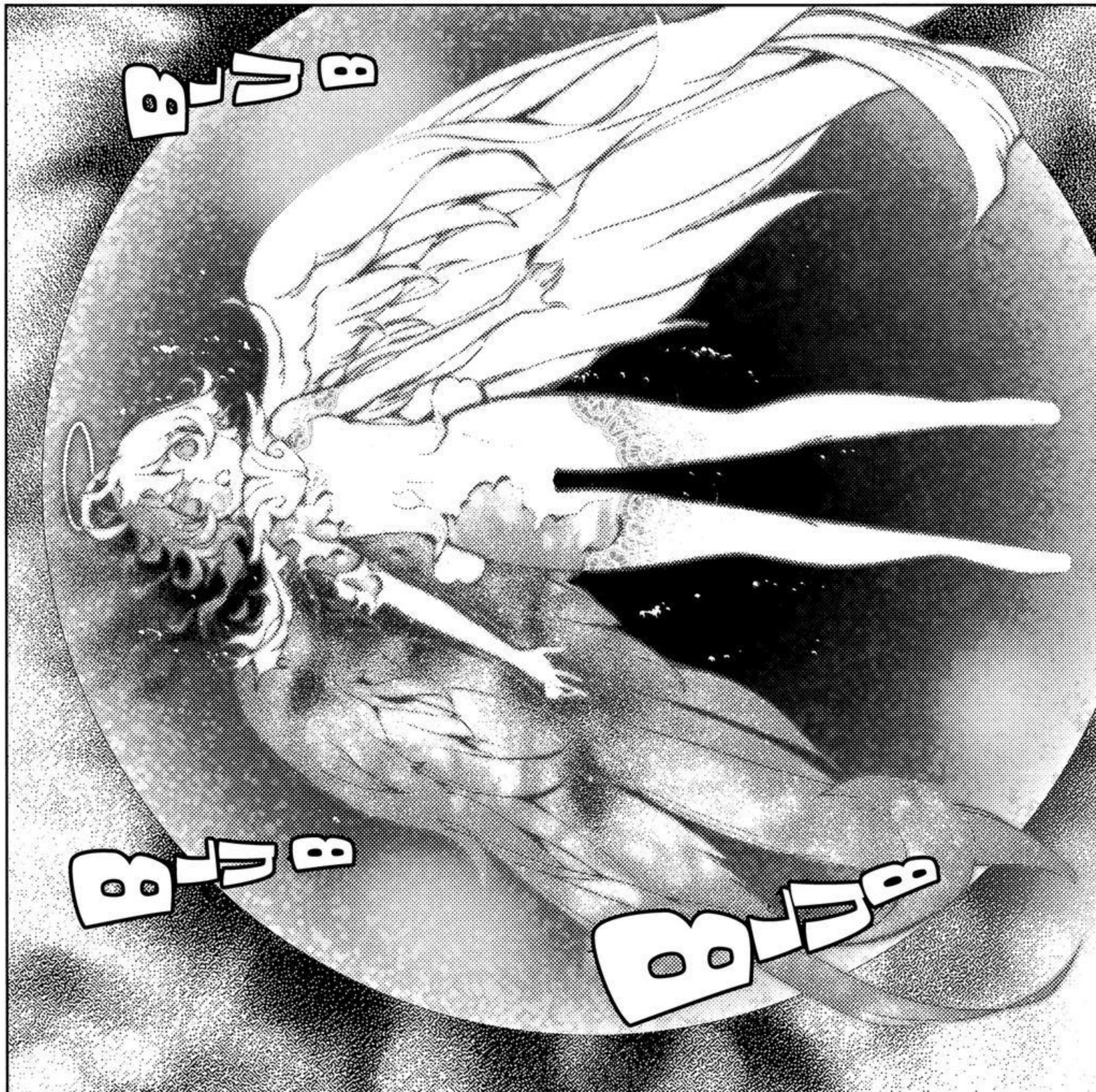
NASSE ...

KILL
NG

BLUB

NASSE
?

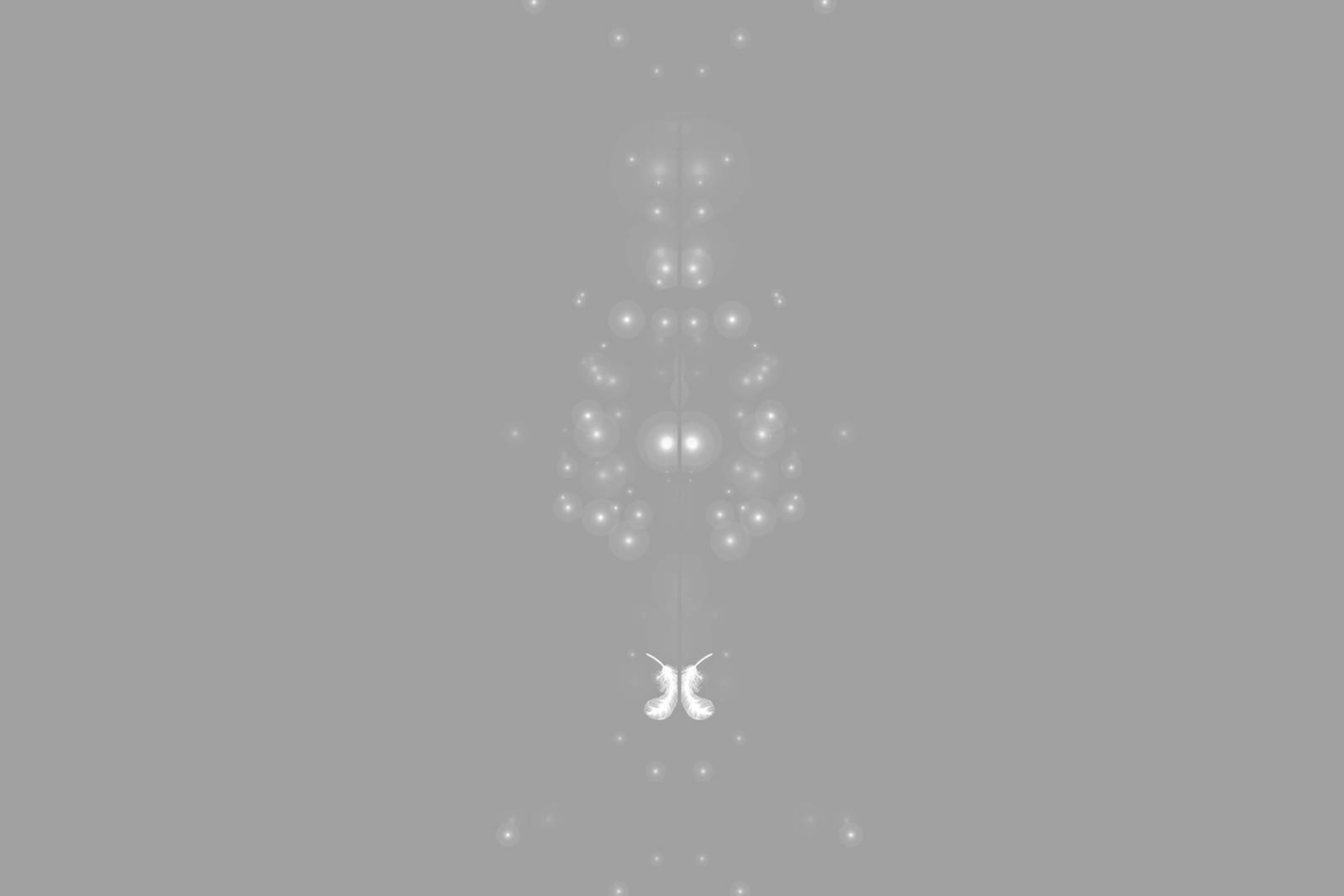




BLUB

BLUB

BLUB

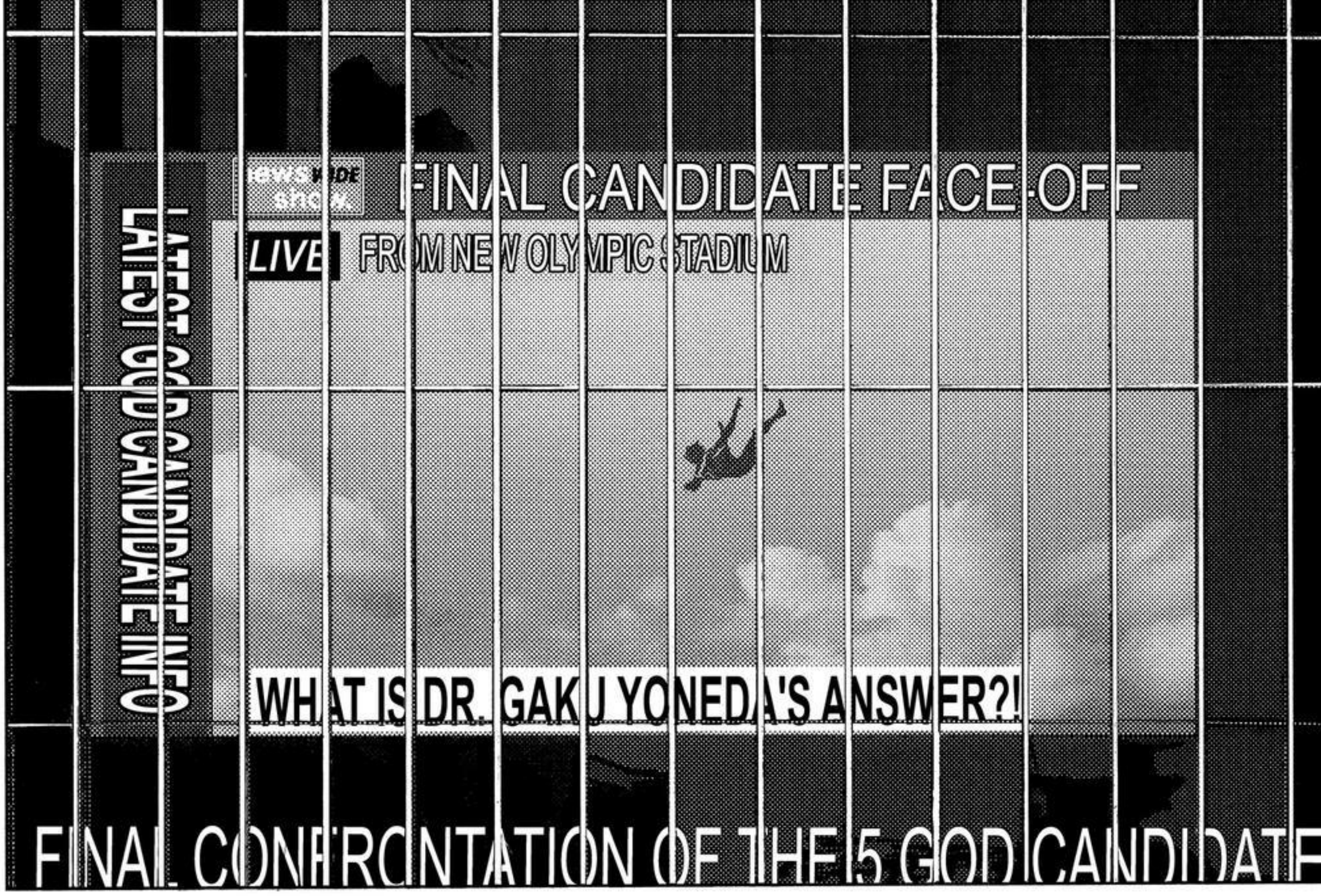


GLUB

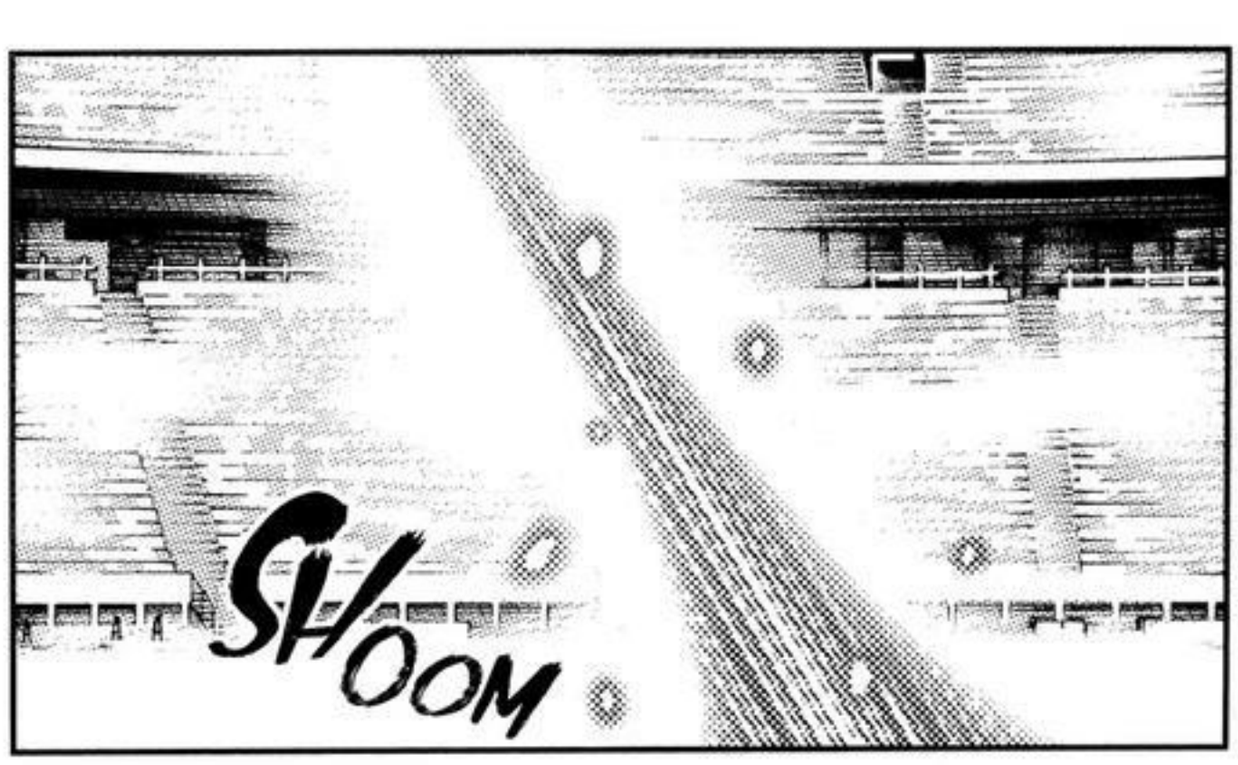
GLUB

NASSE
...

#53 Hand of Salvation


LATEST GOD CANDIDATE INFO
news WIDE show
LIVE
FINAL CANDIDATE FACE-OFF
FROM NEW OLYMPIC STADIUM
WHAT IS DR. GAKU YONEDA'S ANSWER?!
FINAL CONFRONTATION OF THE 5 GOD CANDIDATE

SWISH


SHOOM

WHAT? WHAT'S THAT?
FIRST HE VANISHED, NOW HE'S FALLING FROM THE SKY?
WAIT, CAN'T HE FLY?
HE'S FALLING!!

ARE YOU ALL RIGHT, KAKE-HASHI?!

NASSE'S ...

FWP

SO MUNI WAS CORRECT ...

GLUB...

BLUB

MIRAI, I'M SORRY.

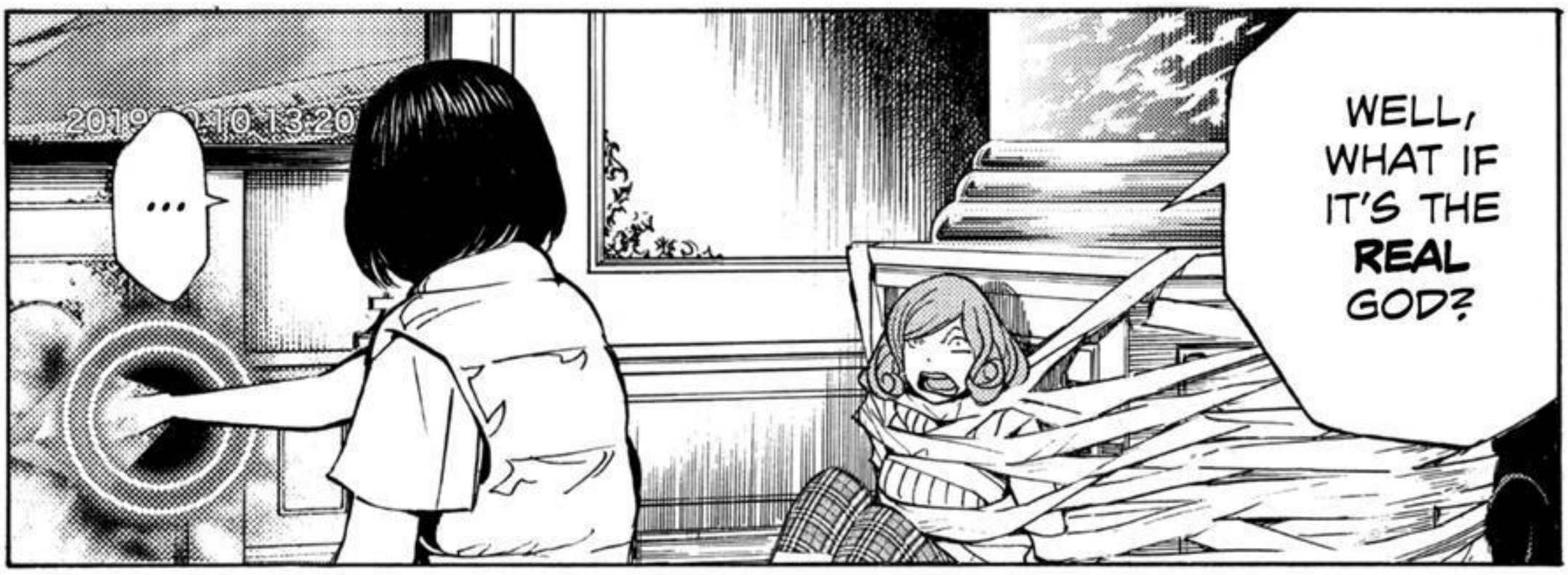
I'VE... BEEN DEMOTED... TO SECOND RANK...

BUT OF COURSE. SHE INTERFERED DIRECTLY TO KEEP HER CANDIDATE FROM BECOMING DISQUALIFIED FOR THE POSITION OF GOD...

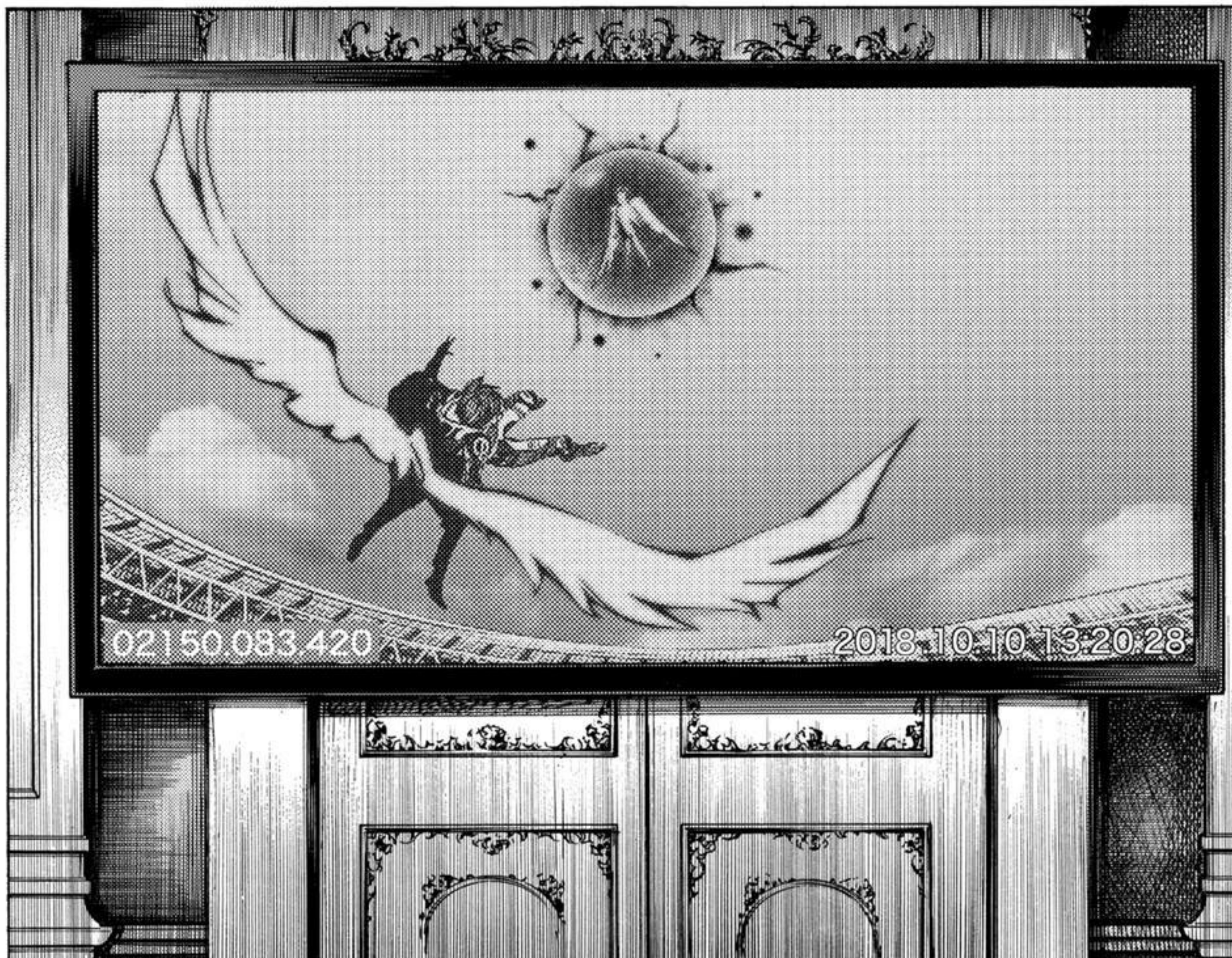
SECOND RANK?

THERE, YOU SEE? GOD IS WATCHING, AFTER ALL...

IT'S NOT GOD. IT'S A CREATURE.


...
WELL, WHAT IF IT'S THE REAL GOD?

I CAN'T EVEN HOLD A CONVERSATION WITH YOU.
NO WONDER PROFESSOR YONEDA IS LAMENTING.


02150.083.420
2018.10.10 13:20:28

I BELIEVE THAT AT THE MOMENT OF WITHDRAWAL, IT WOULD MEAN MIRAI KAKEHASHI'S DEATH.

IF SHE LOST HER RANK ALTOGETHER AND HAD TO WITHDRAW FROM THE GOD-CHOOSING PROCESS, WE WOULDN'T HAVE TO KILL RED.

...

THEN THE PROFESSOR WOULDN'T HAVE TO DIRTY HIS OWN HANDS.

...

WINGS OR RED ARROWS? DECIDE WHICH YOU WOULD RATHER HAVE LEFT.

I WAS DEMOTED TO SECOND RANK, SO I CAN ONLY GIVE YOU RED ARROWS OR WINGS.

IF YOU DON'T HAVE WINGS, YOU CAN'T AVOID HIS ARROWS. YOU SHOULD RETURN THE RED ARROWS INSTEAD.

...

WINGS OR RED ARROWS ...

WORRY ABOUT YOURSELF, NOT US! YOU'RE THE GOD CANDIDATE!

BUT THAT WILL MEAN THAT YOU AND MS. YUMIKI CAN'T USE THE WINGS OR ARROWS I GAVE YOU GUYS ANYMORE!

THEN I WILL COLLECT THE RINGS FOR YOUR WHITE ARROWS AND WINGS.

I'LL KEEP THE RED ARROWS, NASSE.

I DON'T NEED TO FLY ANYMORE.

SHING…

SHING

AH!

HMM.

PHEW!

SORRY.

APPARENTLY, THE NEXT TIME I TRY TO SAVE YOU, YOU'LL DIE.

...

ACK

AH

...

NOW RED HAS LOST THE WHITE ARROWS THAT ARE HIS WEAPON. HE CANNOT EVEN FLY ON HIS OWN.

THINGS ARE HAPPENING NEARLY EXACTLY AS I PLANNED.

HAVE YOU KILLED YELLOW YET?

NAKAUMI?

NO, NOT YET...

THAT'S GOOD.

IF YOU DO NOT, THEN WE WILL KILL YELLOW THIS TIME.

HOSHI. RELEASE RED.

ARE YOU SURE...?

PUT ME DOWN, MR. HOSHI.

I THINK DR. YONEDA'S GOT ALL OF THE ADVANTAGE.

RED MIGHT AS WELL BE DEAD.

BUT THEN YELLOW WILL DIE.

HE WON'T DIE IF HE RUNS AWAY...

FINAL CANDIDATE FACE-OFF

LIVE

WHAT IS DR. GAKU YONEDA'S ANSWER?!

FINAL CONFRONTATION OF THE 5 GOD CANDIDATES!

WHAT'S GOING ON?

STARBUCKS COFFEE

TSUYAYA

BUT I'M SURE THE PROFESSOR WILL KILL RED FIRST.

02150.083.420

201 .10.10 13:28:31

IF RED TRIES TO RUN, I HIT YELLOW WITH THE WHITE ARROW.

THESE SAD PEOPLE JUST HAVEN'T FIGURED IT OUT YET...

RUN AWAY OR DON'T. IN THE END, ALL OF THE GOD CANDIDATES ARE GOING TO BE DEAD.

HEY, KID. IF HOSHI DRAGS RED AWAY WITHOUT HIS SAY-SO, ARE YOU GONNA KILL YELLOW ANYWAY?

JUST FOLLOW WHAT HE SAYS...

I DON'T HAVE TO THINK ABOUT ANYTHING MORE COMPLICATED THAN THAT.

EITHER ONE OF US CAN KILL OUR TARGET.

10.10 13:28:3

I CAN'T JUST WATCH YOU DIE.

THE MOMENT I DO THAT, YONEDA WILL KILL YOU.

I CAN'T ...

...

LET ME DOWN, MR. HOSHI.

KAKE-HASHI...

THEN DROP ME AND GO SOME-WHERE YOU CAN'T SEE IT HAPPEN.

IF HE DEMANDS TO BE LET DOWN, HOSHI HAS NO CHOICE BUT TO OBEY.

MIRAI'S RED ARROW IS STUCK IN HOSHI RIGHT NOW.

EVEN IF IT MEANS I DIE.

THAT'S NOT TRUE. NO MATTER WHAT, I WANT RED TO SURVIVE.

SO I BET YOU'RE JUST PRAYING THAT HOSHI PUTS RED DOWN, HUH?

BUT...

YOU MAKE A GIRL JEALOUS.

GEEZ, TALK ABOUT A DEDICATED COUPLE.

I WANT TO LIVE AND BE HAPPY.

I DON'T WANT TO DIE, EITHER.

THAT'S WHAT HE TAUGHT ME. TO LIVE AND BE HAPPY.

...

AND KAKEHASHI FEELS THE SAME WAY.

SH... SHUT UP!

AND I'M SURE HE FEELS JUST AS STRONGLY ...

NOT AT A MOMENT LIKE THIS.

DON'T TALK ABOUT THAT...

SHUJI...

YOU'RE NOT CAPABLE OF KILLING...

WHAT ARE YOU TALKING ABOUT? HE'S KILLED SEVERAL PEOPLE!

PEOPLE WHO ALREADY WANTED TO DIE.

...

HE HASN'T KILLED ANYONE WHO WANTS TO LIVE.

THAT'S NOT TRUE...

IF THE PROFES-SOR TELLS HIM TO KILL, THAT'S WHAT HE'LL DO!

HE'S GOT THE PROFES-SOR'S RED ARROW IN HIM!

SHUJI'S ALWAYS CONSIDERED THE LIVES OF OTHERS BEFORE HIS OWN. TO ORDER HIM TO KILL SOMEONE WHO WANTS TO LIVE HAS TO BE BEYOND THE SCOPE OF ITS POWER.

YOU CAN TELL A PERSON UNDER THE INFLUENCE OF A RED ARROW TO DIE, BUT THEY WON'T DO IT IF THEY DON'T DESIRE THAT OUT-COME.

HE TOOK THE RESPONSIBILITY OF USING HIS RED ARROW ON PEOPLE WHO DESIRED DEATH PURELY OUT OF HIS DESIRE TO EASE THEIR SUFFERING.

HE'S SUCH A CONSID-ERATE BOY.

SHUT UP!

NOT ANOTHER WORD, OR I'LL KILL YOU ALL!

...

THEN SHOW ME YOU CAN KILL ME. I DON'T WANT TO DIE.

THEN KAKEHASHI WON'T HAVE TO DIE.

KILL ME AND TELL THE PROFES-SOR YOU DID IT.

SAKI!

I SHOULD SAY IT ONE MORE TIME.

IT MEANS HE'LL DIE.

IF HOSHI LETS HIM DOWN, I CAN'T GO TO SAVE MIRAI DIRECTLY ANYMORE.

IF SAKI DIES, YOU'LL STILL HAVE THE CHANCE TO GET PAST IT AND MOVE ON.

THINK IT OVER AGAIN, MIRAI.

...

AND I WILL NEVER FIND HAPPINESS, HAVING KILLED HER.

DON'T MAKE ME REPEAT MYSELF. IF I DECLARE MYSELF GOD, IT MEANS THAT SAKI IS DEAD.

SO IS DYING HERE THE GREATEST HAPPINESS YOU CAN HOPE FOR?

NEVER.

NEVER?

MISERY ...

SINCE I DON'T HAVE A WAY OUT OF THIS, THAT'S JUST THE BEST REMAINING OPTION.

NO. IT'S NOT HAPPINESS AT ALL. IT'S MISERY. BUT SAKI DYING WOULD BE EVEN WORSE.

I'M SORRY.

I CAME HERE TO BRING YOU HAPPINESS. I DON'T THINK I SUCCEEDED.

...

SHALL WE GET TO THE POINT ALREADY?

DO I NEED TO START ANOTHER COUNTDOWN?

...I'VE HAD THE CHANCE TO KNOW HAPPINESS SEVERAL TIMES.

IT'S ALL RIGHT. THANKS TO YOU SAVING MY LIFE BACK THEN...

ALL RIGHT.

...

CAN YOU DO THIS FOR ME NOW, MR. HOSHI?

...

FINAL CANDIDATE FACE-OFF

WHAT IS DR. GAKU YONEDA'S ANSWER?

FINAL CONFRONTATION OF THE 5 GOD CANDIDATES

IS HE GETTING DOWN?

STARKUCKS COFFEE

TSUYAYA

TMP

FINAL CANDIDATE FACE-OFF
LIVE FROM NEW OLYMPIC STADIUM
LATEST ON CANDIDATE INFO
WHAT IS DR. GAKU YONEDA'S ANSWER?
FINAL CONFRONTATION OF THE 5 GOD CANDIDATES?

02150.

ALL RIGHT ...

I'M GOING TO KILL YOU NOW.

FAREWELL.

AND NOW ...

ズン

...SAKI WILL DIE.

...IF I FAIL...

NO MATTER WHAT I TRY...

NO. I HAVE NO WINGS ANYMORE.

...THEN USE THE RED ON HIM...

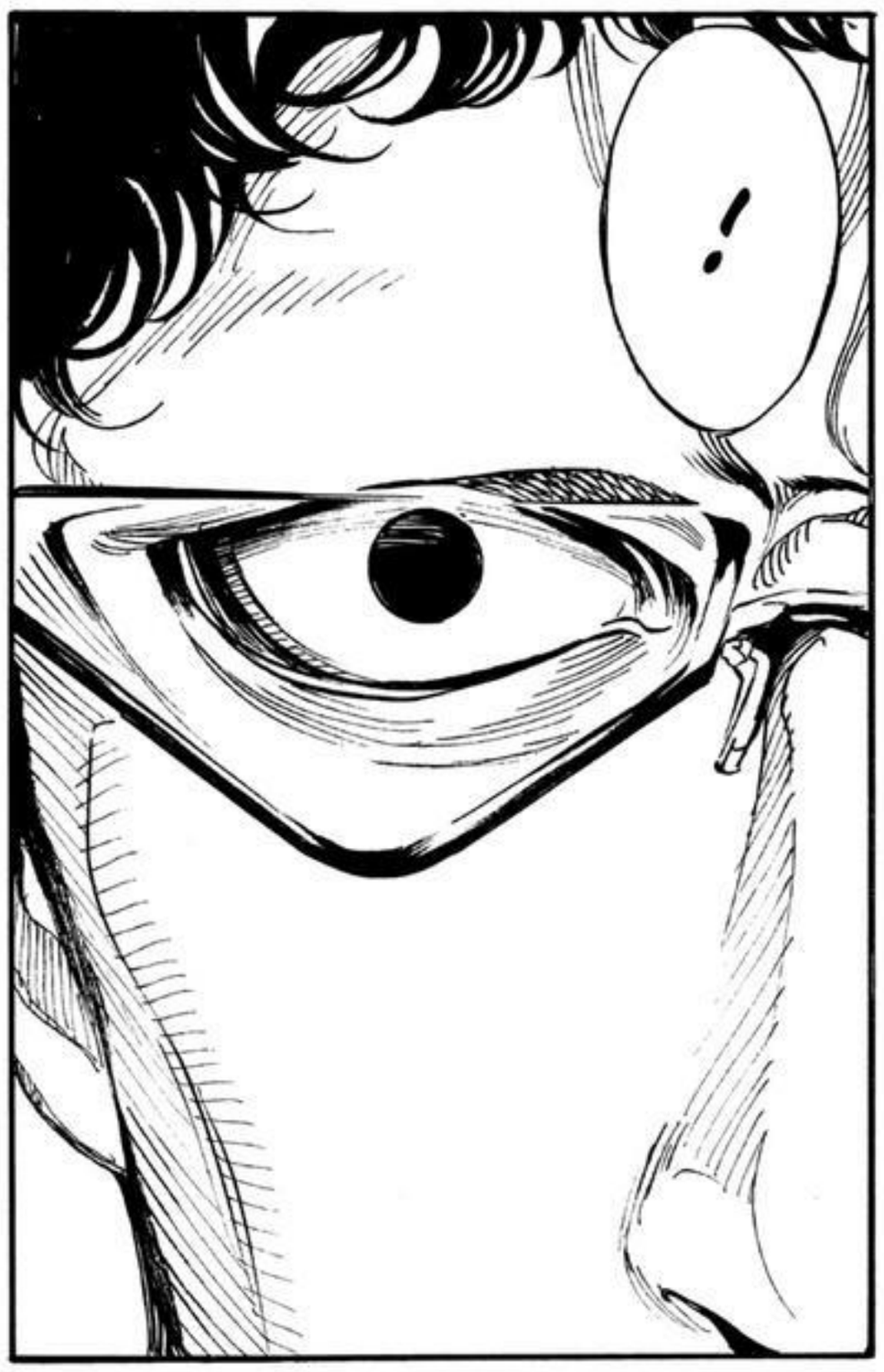
I COULD USE THE RED ARROW TO DEFLECT THE WHITE...

SAKI...

ヒヒヒ

HE ES-
CAPED
?!
HE VAN-
ISHED
...

!
HUH
?!


!

SAKI!!

TO BE CONTINUED...

T s u**g** u mi **O**h b **a**

Born in Tokyo, Tsugumi Ohba is the author of the hit series *Death Note* and *Bakuman。*.

Ta **k** e s **h** i O b a **t**a

Takeshi Obata was born in 1969 in Niigata, Japan, and first achieved international recognition as the artist of the wildly popular *Shonen Jump* title *Hikaru no Go*, which won the 2003 Tezuka Osamu Cultural Prize: Shinsei "New Hope" Award and the 2000 Shogakukan Manga Award. He went on to illustrate the smash hit *Death Note* as well as the hugely successful manga *Bakuman。* and *All You Need Is Kill*.

PLATINVM END

VOLUME 13
SHONEN JUMP Manga Edition

°

STORY Tsugumi Ohba
ART Takeshi Obata

°

TRANSLATION Stephen Paul
TOUCH-UP ART & LETTERING James Gaubatz
DESIGN Shawn Carrico
EDITOR Alexis Kirsch

°

ORIGINAL COVER DESIGN Narumi Noriko

°

PLATINUM END © 2015 by Tsugumi Ohba, Takeshi Obata
All rights reserved.
First published in Japan in 2015 by SHUEISHA Inc., Tokyo.
English translation rights arranged by SHUEISHA Inc.

°

The stories, characters and incidents mentioned in this publication are entirely fictional.

No portion of this book may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means without written permission from the copyright holders.

°

Printed in the U.S.A.

Published by VIZ Media, LLC
P.O. Box 77010
San Francisco, CA 94107

°

10 9 8 7 6 5 4 3 2 1
First printing, July 2021

VIZ MEDIA
viz.com

SHONEN JUMP

PARENTAL ADVISORY
PLATINUM END is rated M for Mature and is recommended for mature readers. This volume contains suggestive themes.

The creators of

DEATH NOTE

return in this dark story with an angelic twist!

The remaining candidates meet for a final showdown to determine who will be the next god. Professor Yoneda plans to prevent a new god from being chosen at all costs. Mirai has finally stepped up and will assume the mantle of god if it means stopping Yoneda. Who will survive the confrontation and who will become the new god?

$9.99 USA $12.99 CAN £7.99 UK

viz.com

VIZ MEDIA

SHONEN JUMP

RATED M MATURE

ISBN: 978-1-9747-2291-4

50999

9 781974 722914

PARENTAL ADVISORY
EXPLICIT CONTENT

PLATINUM END

STORY
TSUGUMI OHBA

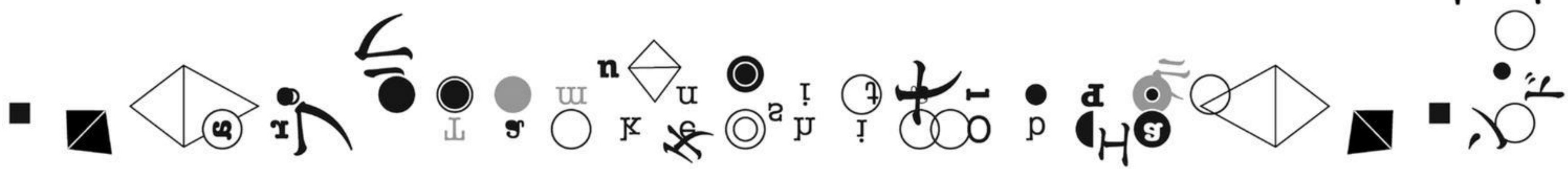
ART
TAKESHI OBATA

PLATINUM END

ART Takeshi Obata

STORY Tsugumi Ohba

Platinum End



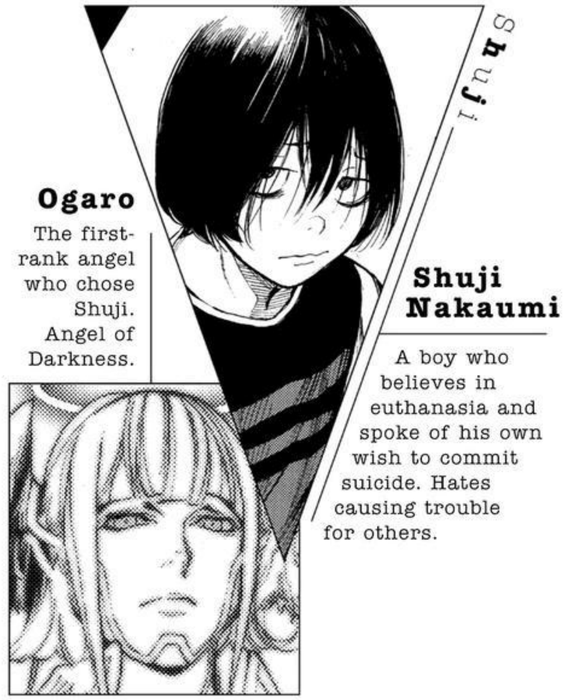
vol.14

Muni

The special-rank angel who chose Yoneda. Angel of Destruction.

Gaku Yoneda

A university professor hailed as a genius. Winner of a Nobel Prize.



Ogaro

The first-rank angel who chose Shuji. Angel of Darkness.

Shuji Nakaumi

A boy who believes in euthanasia and spoke of his own wish to commit suicide. Hates causing trouble for others.

Yumiki

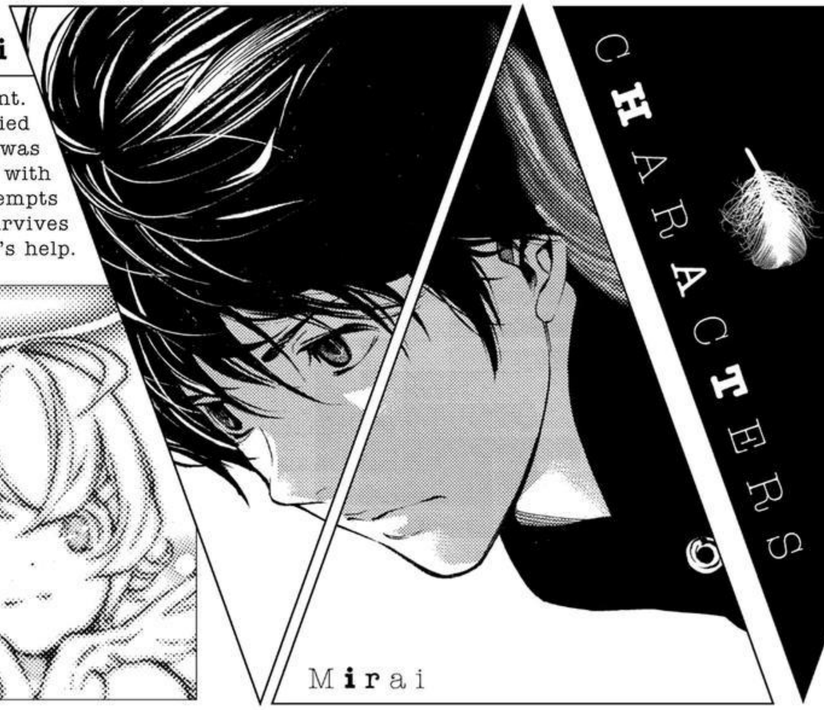
Hoshi's subordinate and fiancée.

Hoshi

A police agent working with Yumiki to help Mirai's group without telling the government.

Yazeli

The second-rank angel who chose Yuri. Angel of Truth.



Mirai Kakehashi

First-year high school student. His parents and brother died in an accident when he was seven. After a painful life with his abusive relatives, he attempts to commit suicide and survives through Nasse's help.

Nasse

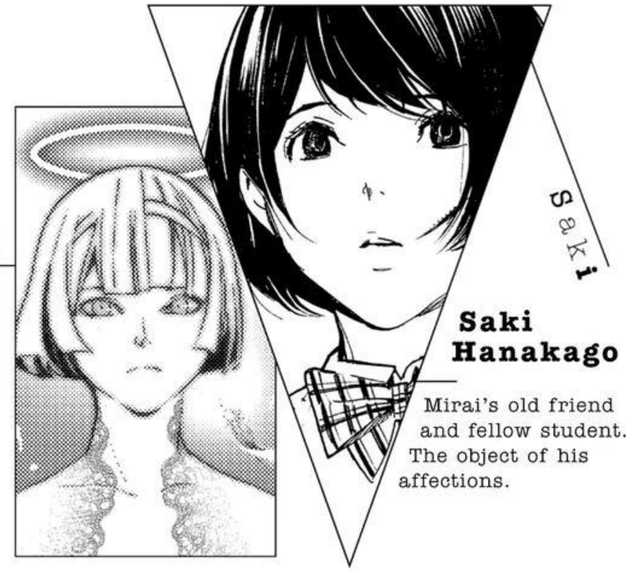
A special-rank angel who wants to bring happiness to Mirai's life. Bright and bubbly.

Yuri Temari

Free spirit who enjoys social media, and has no real interest in being god. Attempted suicide twice.

Revel

Promoted to the first-rank Angel of Emotion.



Saki Hanakago

Mirai's old friend and fellow student. The object of his affections.

Story

WINGS OF SALVATION

With the women captured, Yoneda unleashes a white arrow on Mirai. But a moment later, Saki appears and rescues Mirai.

THE BOY'S TRAP

The others leave to allow Mirai and Yoneda to be alone, but Shuji holds them hostage with white arrows.

HUMANITY'S FUTURE

Yoneda predicts the end of humanity. Mirai says he'll be god. The two decide to have a dialogue.

Story

"My time has come. I leave the seat of god to the next human.
To a younger, fresher power.

The next god shall be chosen from the 13 humans chosen by you 13 angels.When the chosen human is made the next god, your angelic duty is finished, and you may live beside that god in peace.

You have 999 days remaining..."

CONTENTS

#54 At the End of Thought
P5

#55 Birth of a God
P47

#56 Master of Creation
P81

#57 Each One's Happiness
P117

#58 The Final Arrow
P159

KAKEHASHI!

SAKI?!

#54 At the End of Thought

YELLOW?

SHM

SHWOOSH

WSH

...

SHM

NAKA-UMI...

YUMIKI...

FINAL CONFRONTATION OF THE 5 GOD CANDIDA

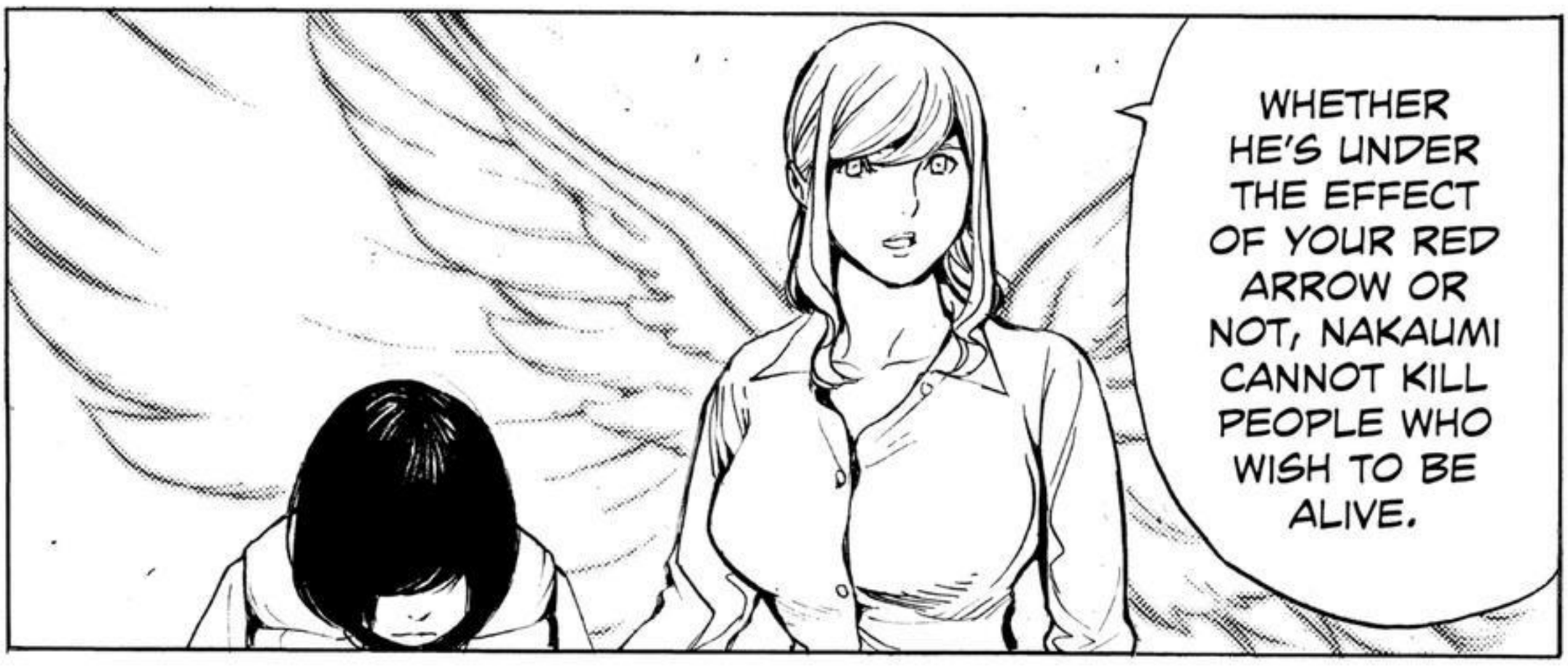
STARBUCKS COFFEE

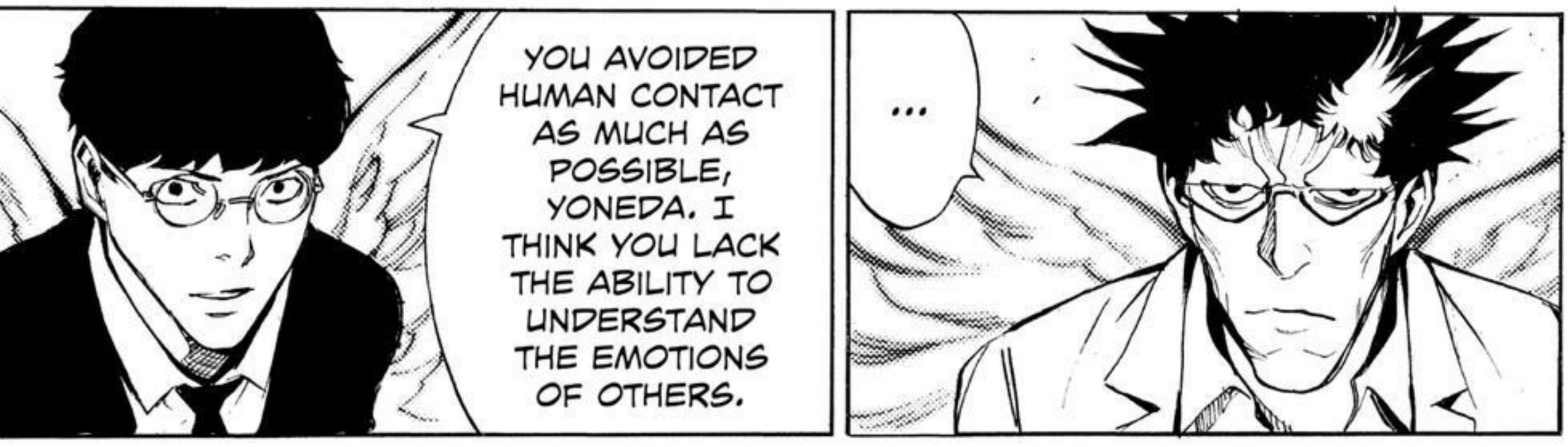
THE GOD CANDIDATES HAVE RETURNED FROM WHATEVER SEPARATED THEM.

TEK...

TEK...

WHAT IS THE MEANING OF THIS?


WHETHER HE'S UNDER THE EFFECT OF YOUR RED ARROW OR NOT, NAKAUMI CANNOT KILL PEOPLE WHO WISH TO BE ALIVE.


YOU AVOIDED HUMAN CONTACT AS MUCH AS POSSIBLE, YONEDA. I THINK YOU LACK THE ABILITY TO UNDERSTAND THE EMOTIONS OF OTHERS.
...

I CAN TAKE PART IN A MUTUAL SHOOTOUT TO ENSURE THERE IS NO GOD CREATURE...

...BUT I CAN'T JUST KILL THE OTHER CANDIDATES OUTRIGHT.

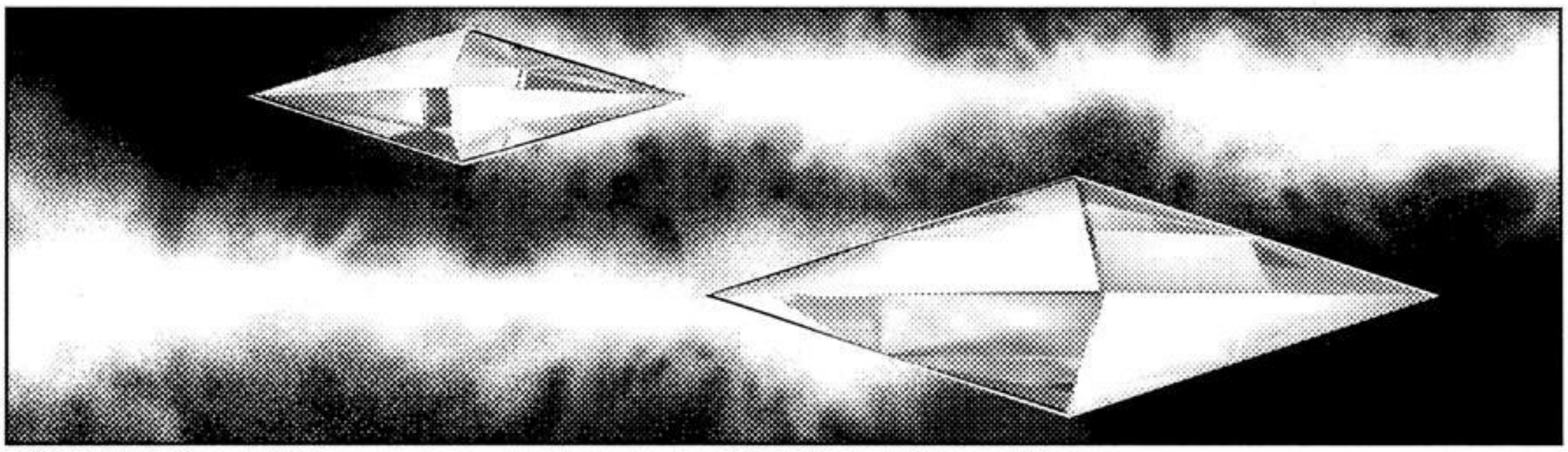
PROFESSOR, I'M SORRY...

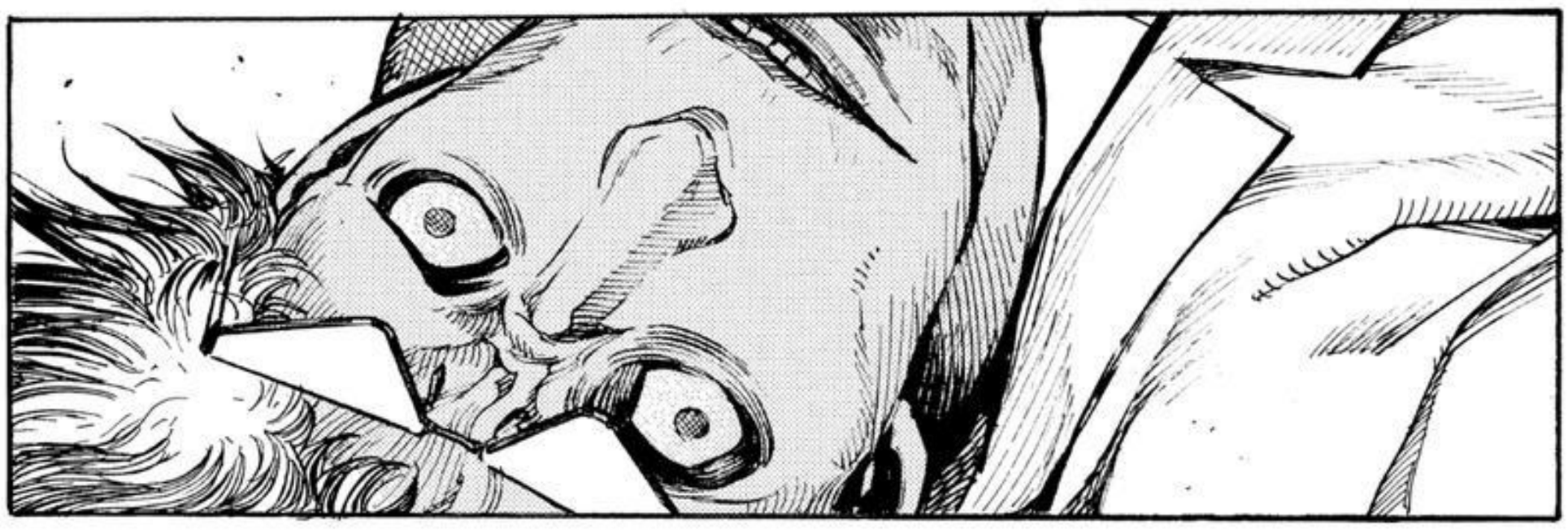
MUTUAL SHOOTOUT ...?

...

YOU WERE PLANNING TO KILL ALL OF THE GOD CANDIDATES.

AND THEN HAVE THE LAST TWO SHOOT EACH OTHER... TO ENSURE NO GOD IS BORN...





NAKAUMI ...

...I WOULD LIKE THE WHITE ARROWS I GAVE TO YOU BACK.

ZSH.

I EXPECTED THIS POSSI-BILITY.

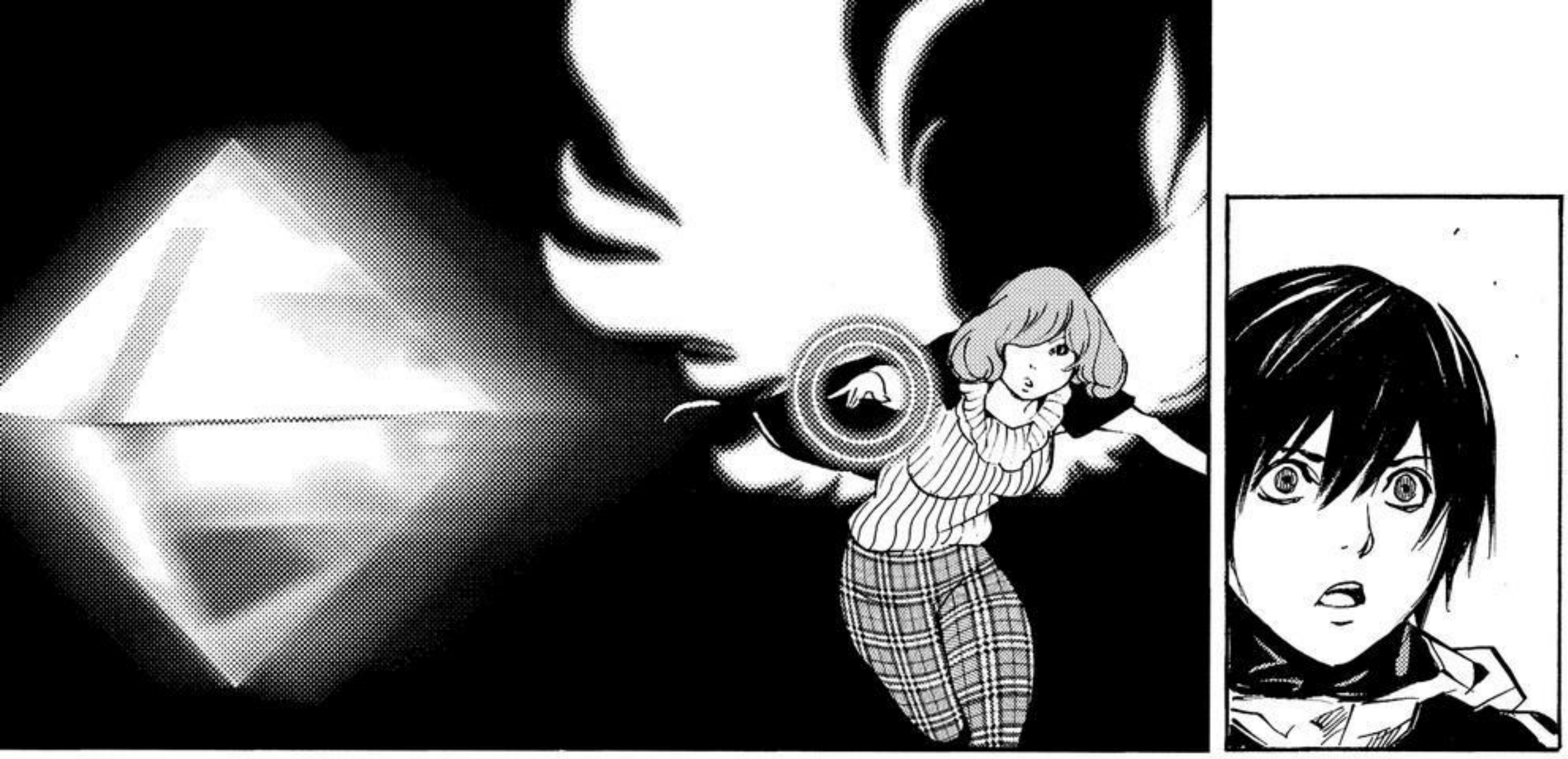
AND I HAVE A PLAN IN MIND FOR IT.

WHAT'S WRONG ...?

...

SHH

DIE!



PRO-
FES-
SOR!

TI NG

TMP...

SLING

WHA...?

EVERY-
THING
WAS
WORK-
ING!

NASSE, WHAT ARE YOU DOING?! IF HE DIES, WE WIN!!

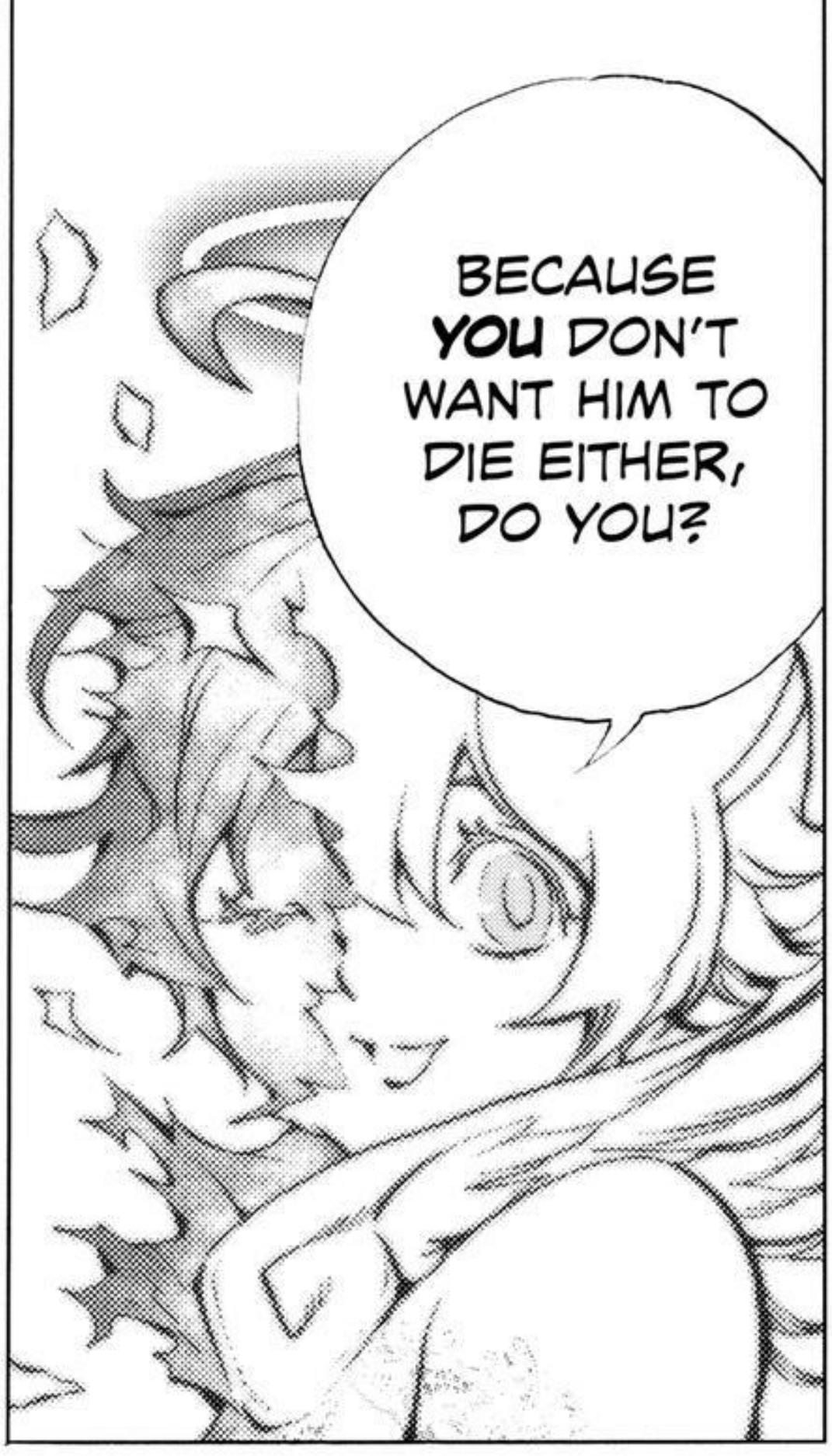
PLONK

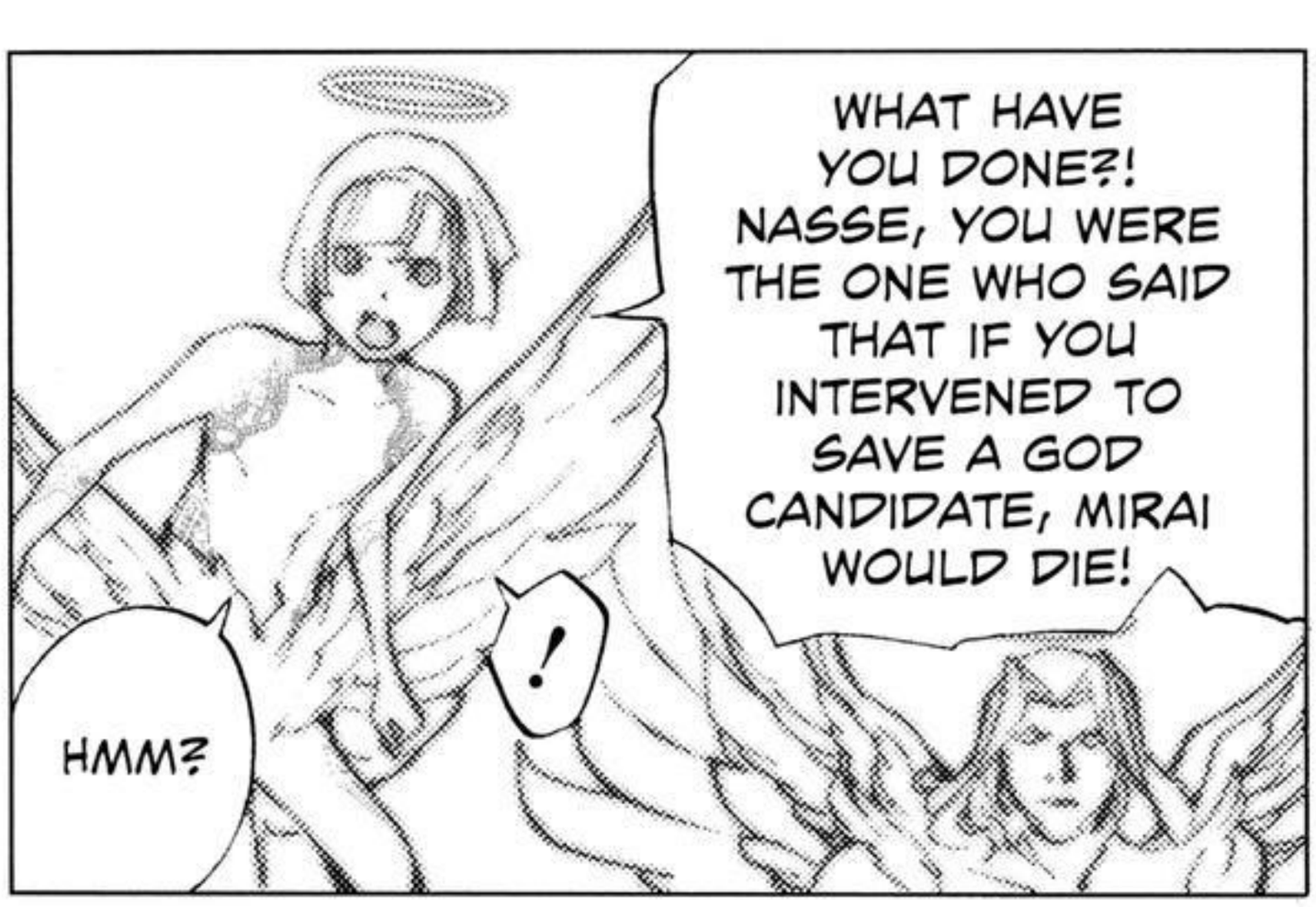
HE JUST VANISHED AND APPEARED WAY TO THE SIDE...

WAIT, WHAT? DID THE PROFES-SOR ALMOST DIE JUST NOW?

I COULDN'T, MIRAI...

FWUH...


BECAUSE YOU DON'T WANT HIM TO DIE EITHER, DO YOU?


WHAT HAVE YOU DONE?! NASSE, YOU WERE THE ONE WHO SAID THAT IF YOU INTERVENED TO SAVE A GOD CANDIDATE, MIRAI WOULD DIE!
HMM?
!

NASSE...

B-D-N-K
AH...

GLUP

FWOOSH

GLUM...

BINK

I...

MIRAI ...

I'M BACK TO BEING A SPECIAL-RANK ANGEL, I THINK.

SO RATHER THAN BEING DEMOTED, SHE WAS PROMOTED...

THAT WAS THE OPPOSITE ACTION OF SAVING HER OWN CANDIDATE.

I SEE.

GRIN

EVERYTHING NASSE DOES IS WITHOUT PRECEDENT... WE SIMPLY DON'T UNDER-STAND HER.

...

SHING...

HERE, MIRAI. WINGS AND WHITE ARROWS.

I DON'T NEED THEM ANY-MORE.

IF THAT ANGEL...

...HAD NOT SAVED ME, I WOULD BE DEAD RIGHT NOW...

YES.

FROM A WHITE ARROW?

NO, IT WAS OBVIOUSLY FROM YURI.

WHO SHOT IT? RED?

SO HE REALLY *WAS* ABOUT TO DIE.

FINAL CANDIDATE FACE-OFF

LIVE FROM NEW OLYMPIC STADIUM

LATEST GOD CANDIDATE NEWS

WHAT IS DR. GAKU YONEDA'S ANSWER?!

FINAL CONFRONTATION OF THE 5 GOD CANDIDATES?

STARKUCKS COFFEE

DR. YONEDA SAID, "IF THAT ANGEL HADN'T SAVED ME, I WOULD BE DEAD RIGHT NOW." WHAT COULD THAT MEAN...?

... WHERE DID I GO WRONG ...?

... TWICE...

MY LIFE WAS SAVED BY AN ANGEL...

WHY DID YOU BETRAY ME, NAKAUMI?

I TRICKED HIM INTO GIVING ME THE WHITE ARROW.

HE'S TELLING THE TRUTH.

I DIDN'T BETRAY YOU.

THERE IS NO GOD. AND WE DON'T NEED A FALSE ONE.

I THINK YOU'RE CORRECT, PROFES-SOR.

…

…

RIP

NAKA-UMI...

RIP

...

I CAN'T KILL YOU...

OH, GOOD! SHE JUST MADE IT!

SWISH

THANK YOU!

HEY! ME TOO! HURRY!

ZWIP

WAIT, BEFORE WE GO...

LET'S HURRY BACK OUR-SELVES.

30.083.420

2018.10.10 13:45:32

...

I DON'T TRUST YOU.

I'LL TAKE YOUR WHITE ARROWS. GOD CANDIDATES CAN HAND THEM BACK AND FORTH, RIGHT?

...

COME, NAKA-UMI.

SHM

LET'S GO!

SHING

I JUST THINK THAT ENDING THE LIVES OF PEOPLE WHO STILL WANT TO LIVE, ALL BECAUSE OF ANOTHER PERSON'S IDEAS... DOESN'T MAKE SENSE.

MY LIFE IS MY OWN. IT'S MY RIGHT TO DECIDE HOW IMPORTANT IT IS.

I THINK THE PROFESSOR IS RIGHT. BUT THOSE ARE JUST THOUGHTS... IDEALS...

IF MURDER OCCURS BECAUSE OF DIFFERENCES IN THEOLOGY, IT MIGHT AS WELL BE A BARBARIC, FOOLISH RELIGIOUS WAR...

BY THE STANDARDS OF MODERN JAPAN, THAT OPINION IS LARGELY CORRECT.

I WAS ...

LIVE

WHAT IS DR. GAIKU YONEDA'S ANSWER?!

IS HE ADMITTING THAT HE WAS WRONG?

HUH? IS HE...

...FROM THE MOMENT I WAS EXPOSED BY THE MEDIA WITHOUT MY PERMISSION, I WAS READY TO DIE.

IN FACT...

FROM THE MOMENT I OUTED MYSELF AS A GOD CANDIDATE...

OH, IS IT BECAUSE YOU THINK YOU'LL LOSE FEMALE FANS?

THE PROFES-SOR JUST WANTS TO DO RESEARCH IN PEACE AND QUIET.

I'M OUT HERE BUSTING MY ASS ON SOCIAL MEDIA TRYING TO GET NOTICED, AND MY FOLLOWER COUNT'S GOING NOWHERE.

WHY WOULD YOU BE EXPECTING TO DIE, JUST FROM HAVING YOUR FACE EXPOSED?

YOU WON A NOBEL PRIZE. THAT'S AN HONOR.

YES, EXACTLY!

WHAT, ARE YOU SAYING ONLY A GENIUS SCHOLAR HAS TROUBLES?

PROFES-SOR...

AND I AM ONLY A FOOLISH HUMAN.

GENIUS IS A CONCEPT THAT DOES NOT EXIST.

THAT IS WHY IT IS FOOLISH TO PLACE THOSE WHO "ACHIEVE" ON A PEDESTAL AND CRITICIZE THOSE WHO DO NOT ATTEMPT TO PRODUCE RESULTS.

WHAT YOU CALL GENIUS SHOULD ONLY BE RESERVED FOR THE ACCOMPLISHED FEATS, AND NOT THE PERSON BEHIND THEM.

THAT IS NOT AN INCORRECT INTERPRE-TATION.

BECAUSE IT'S MY DECISION TO DO IT OR NOT!

OH, I GET THAT. I HATE IT WHEN PEOPLE SAY, "YOU CAN DO IT IF YOU TRY. WHY DON'T YOU DO IT?"

TAKE MY ADVICE. TRUE ALL-KNOWING, LIKE TRUE EVIL, DOES NOT SHOW ITSELF OPENLY.

WELL, IT'S HARD TO AGREE WHEN YOU LEAD OFF WITH SOMETHING PATRON-IZING LIKE "TAKE MY ADVICE."

NO, PROFESSOR. YOU CAN'T BE JUST A STUPID HUMAN BEING.

YOU'VE DONE GREAT THINGS. YOU'RE A GENIUS.

IT IS NOTHING BUT A BLUFF.

IT IS TRUE. ONE OF MY FOOLISH FAULTS IS THAT I SPEAK LIKE THIS, ALL BECAUSE I WAS GIVEN THE TITLE OF PROFESSOR EMERITUS.

YEAH. A GENIUS.

GENIUS.

HE'S A GENIUS.

THEY SAY HE'S SOLD, LIKE, A BILLION BOOKS WORLD-WIDE.

HE'LL GET A NOBEL FOR MEDICINE FOR YONEDA CELLS TOO.

HE WON THE NOBEL PRIZE BOTH FOR LITERATURE AND PHYSICS.

GENI-
US!

GENI-
US!

GENI-
US!

GENI-
US!

GENI-
US!

GENI-
US!

CLAP

CLAP

CLAP

CLAP

CLAP

LIVE FROM NEW OLYMPIC STADIUM

FINAL CANDIDATE FACE-OFF

HIGH GUCHANDUHENEO

WHAT IS DR. GAKU YONEDA'S ANSWER?!

FINAL CONFRONTATION OF THE 5 G

TSUY

I AM A SHALLOW MAN. WHEN IT BECAME KNOWN THAT I WAS THE AUTHOR, I CLAIMED THAT FRIENDSHIP AND LOVE WERE MERELY TOOLS TO HOOK READERS...

ONCE I KNEW I COULD SELL THEM, I PUT OUT BOOKS IN ALL GENRES AND FIELDS.

I WROTE A POPULAR NOVEL IN ORDER TO GAIN THE MONEY TO DO RESEARCH...

IF YOU ASK ME, YOU MIGHT AS WELL BE SAYING YOU'RE A GENIUS BECAUSE YOU TRIED TO BE A HIT AUTHOR AND IT WORKED.

YOU DID IT TO GET YOUR RESEARCH FUNDS. THERE'S NOTHING WRONG WITH THAT.

NO.

I REPLACED THEM WITH CONCEPTS FROM PSYCHOLOGY PAPERS AND ACTED LIKE I KNEW WHAT THEY WERE. I'M JUST A SHALLOW, FOOLISH MAN.

I DID EVERYTHING I COULD TO AVOID INTERACTING WITH OTHERS... SO I DO NOT UNDERSTAND THEM. I HAVE NO FRIENDSHIP, NO LOVE.

YOU WERE CORRECT THE FIRST TIME.

NO.
I GOT INVOLVED IN THE WRONG WAY.

I SHOULD NOT HAVE GOTTEN INVOLVED.

IT WOULD BE BETTER TO CALL THESE FALSE ANGELS "DEMONS" INSTEAD.

MUNI TAUNTED ME INTO IT, SAYING THAT I COULD UNRAVEL THE GOD-CHOOSING MECHANISM AND FIND THE TRUTH. BECAUSE OF THAT, I STAYED ALIVE LONGER...

...AND AS A CANDIDATE, I SAW YOU APPEAR IN PUBLIC AND COULD NOT STAY HIDDEN ANYMORE.

BUT THANKS TO THAT, I WAS AT LEAST ABLE TO SAY THAT ***NOW IS THE TIME FOR HUMANITY TO MAKE CLEAR THAT THERE IS NO GOD.***

THAT, AT LEAST, IS A TRUE DESIRE OF MINE.

PROFESSOR μ^2...?

YOU MAY DO AS YOU WILL...

DOES THAT MEAN THAT RED, A.K.A. MIRAI KAKEHASHI, WILL BECOME GOD?

M-MY GOODNESS... IT APPEARS THAT DR. YONEDA HAS WITHDRAWN HIS CLAIM!

NO!

WHAT ...?

PERHAPS PEOPLE CAN ONLY FIND HAPPINESS THROUGH OTHERS.

...BUT THE PROFESSOR DID IT FOR HUMANITY...

HE SAID IT WAS FOR HIMSELF ...

AND NOT BY FEELING MORE FORTUNATE THAN OTHERS.

WE ALL HAVE THINGS WE WOULD GIVE OUR OWN LIVES TO PROTECT. PEOPLE WE WOULD PROTECT.

AND THAT'S A SIGN OF GREAT HAPPINESS...

I'M DOING IT FOR SAKI...

...

I HAVE CAUSED YOU GREAT TROUBLE.

INDEED.

EVEN IF HAPPINESS WERE SOMETHING THAT CAN ONLY BE GAINED THROUGH OTHERS, ONE MUST STILL AVOID TROUBLING OTHER PEOPLE.

AND DOING THAT MEANS ERASING YOUR PRESENCE.

I WILL DIE NOW...

...AND THEN YOU MAY BECOME THE CREATURE, RED...

...AND THEN YOU MAY BECOME THE CREATURE, RED.

I WILL DIE NOW...

#55 Birth of a God

...

PROFESSOR YONEDA...?

DIE...?

HE'S EVEN DEMANDED THAT THEY STRIKE HIM WITH A WHITE ARROW.

UH... DR. YONEDA'S POSITION HAS CHANGED ENTIRELY.

HE'S ACCEPTED THAT MIRAI KAKEHASHI, A.K.A. RED, WILL BECOME GOD.

PROFES-SOR!!

YOU CAN'T DO THAT!

BUT WHY?

...DID EVERYTHING I COULD TO ADVANCE MY ARGUMENT FOR ATHEISM.

I...

WHY DO YOU NEED TO JUMP RIGHT INTO DEATH?!

PROFES-SOR!

I WANTED TO REACH THE TRUTH THROUGH THE DEATH OF ALL THE CANDIDATES.

I WAS FIXATED UPON THE IDEA OF NOT PRODUCING A FALSE GOD CREATURE.

I WAS GOING TO TAKE PRISONERS, KILL THREE PEOPLE, THEN END IN A SHOWDOWN WITH YOU, NAKAUMI.

I WAS POSSESSED BY THE CONCEPT OF DEATH...

TWICE MY LIFE WAS SAVED BY AN ANGEL.

HOW FOOLISH ...

I'LL BE THE CREATURE AND DO WHATEVER IT TAKES TO EXPLAIN EVERYTHING TO YOU.

IN THAT CASE ...

SO WHAT'S WRONG WITH THAT?

I MEAN, NAKAUMI BEING GOD WAS THE ANSWER WE ALL REACHED THE FIRST TIME WE TALKED IT OVER, RIGHT?

I DON'T KNOW ABOUT USING A RED ARROW TO GET A PERSON TO AGREE TO BE GOD...

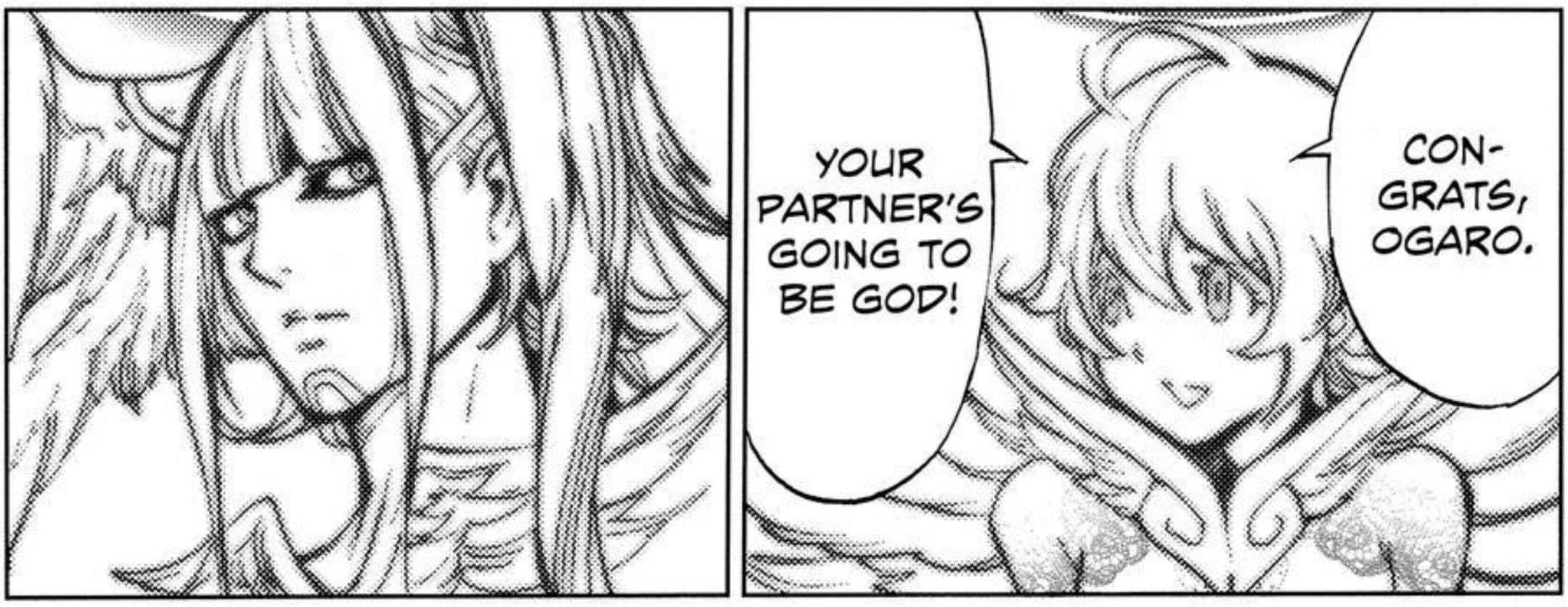
...

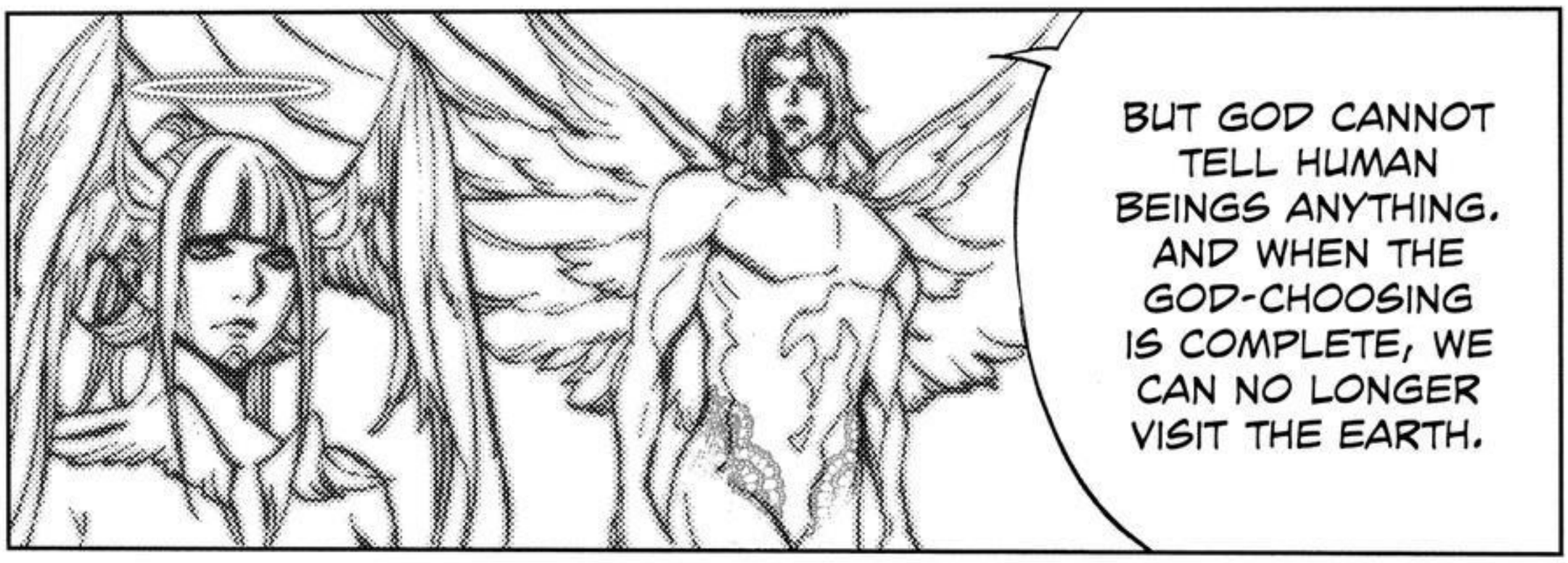
BUT HE'S UNDER THE EFFECTS OF THE PROFES-SOR'S RED ARROW.

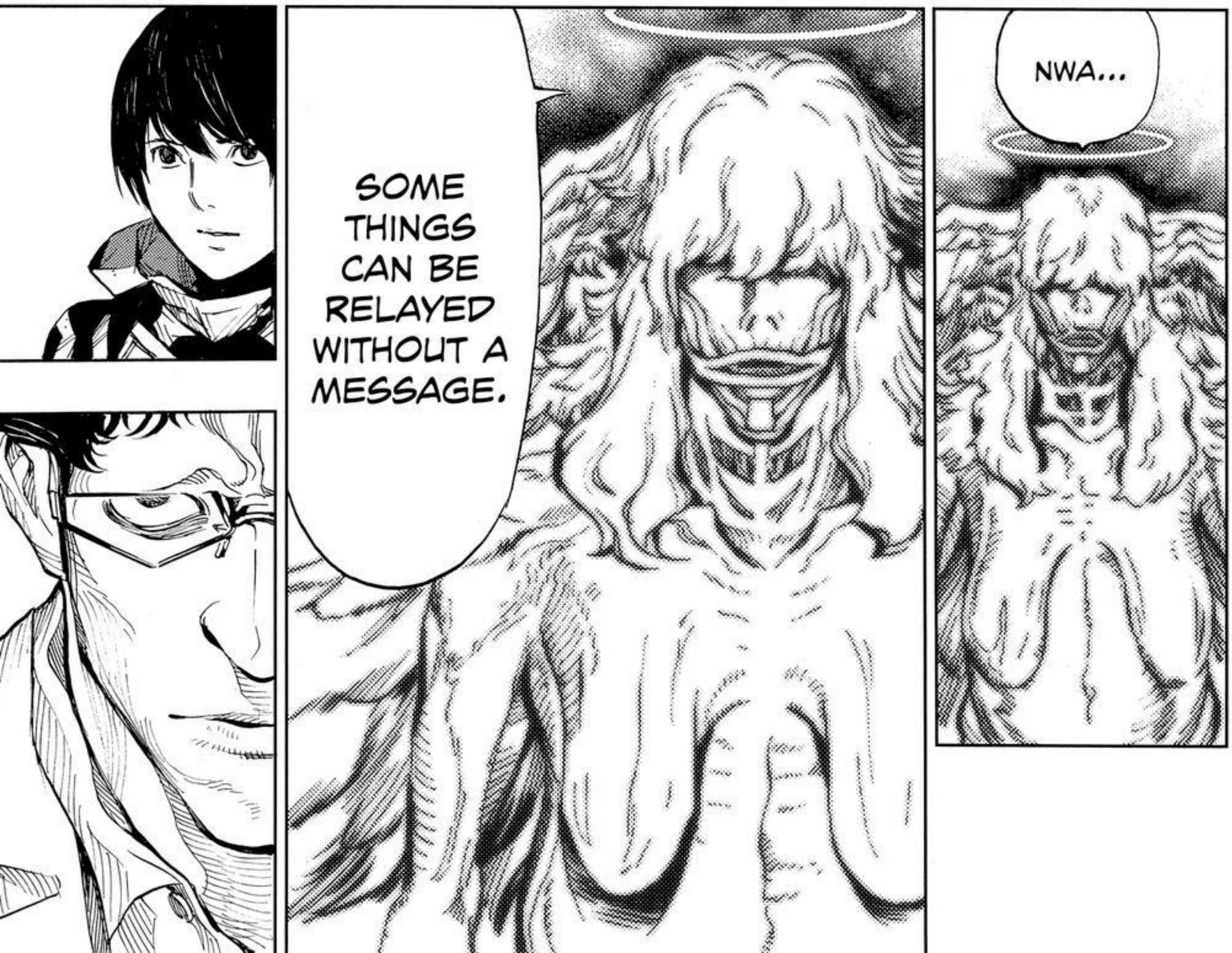
...THEN IN THIS CASE, THE ARROW'S EFFECT WILL NOT MATTER.

IF DR. YONEDA TAKES THE POSITION OF NOT WANTING TO CREATE A GOD...

...BUT SHUJI NAKAUMI NOMINATES HIMSELF FOR GOD AND GAINS THE BACKING OF THE GROUP...


YOUR PARTNER'S GOING TO BE GOD!
CON-GRATS, OGARO.


BUT GOD CANNOT TELL HUMAN BEINGS ANYTHING. AND WHEN THE GOD-CHOOSING IS COMPLETE, WE CAN NO LONGER VISIT THE EARTH.


SOME THINGS CAN BE RELAYED WITHOUT A MESSAGE.
NWA...

WHICH MEANS THIS IS...

I CANNOT BRING MYSELF TO THINK THAT WAS A LIE...

ALL OF THE TRUTH.

YOU WILL FIND THE ANSWER EVENTUALLY.

ARE YOU CERTAIN OF THIS, NAKAUMI?

YES.

HE'S THE ONE WHO SAID HE WOULD MAKE IT EASY FOR PEOPLE TO DIE IF THAT'S WHAT THEY WANT!

WHAT? NOW IT'S THAT LITTLE BOY?

HE'S THE ONE WITH THE LEAST RESPECT FOR LIFE OF THEM ALL!

WHY, PROFES-SOR?!

AND HE ALREADY KILLED SEVERAL PEOPLE.

THIS SUCKS!

HEY, MAYBE IT WILL MAKE FOR A BETTER WORLD THAN WHAT WE'VE GOT...

IT'S NOT LIKE THE CREATURE WHO EXISTS NOW HAS DONE ANYTHING FOR HUMANITY.

LOOK, THE WORLD POPULATION IS HIGH ENOUGH AS IT IS. LET THE PEOPLE WHO WANT TO DIE GET OUT OF THE WAY.

IT'S JUST A CREATURE, NOT A REAL GOD. HE WON'T BE ABLE TO DO ANYTHING.

IS THAT ALL RIGHT?

THEN I WILL BECOME GOD.

SHM

YES.

YEP.

I AGREE.

NATURALLY.

GOD HAS BEEN CHOSEN. IT WILL BE 13-YEAR-OLD SHUJI NAKAUMI.

OH MY GOD...

SWISH...

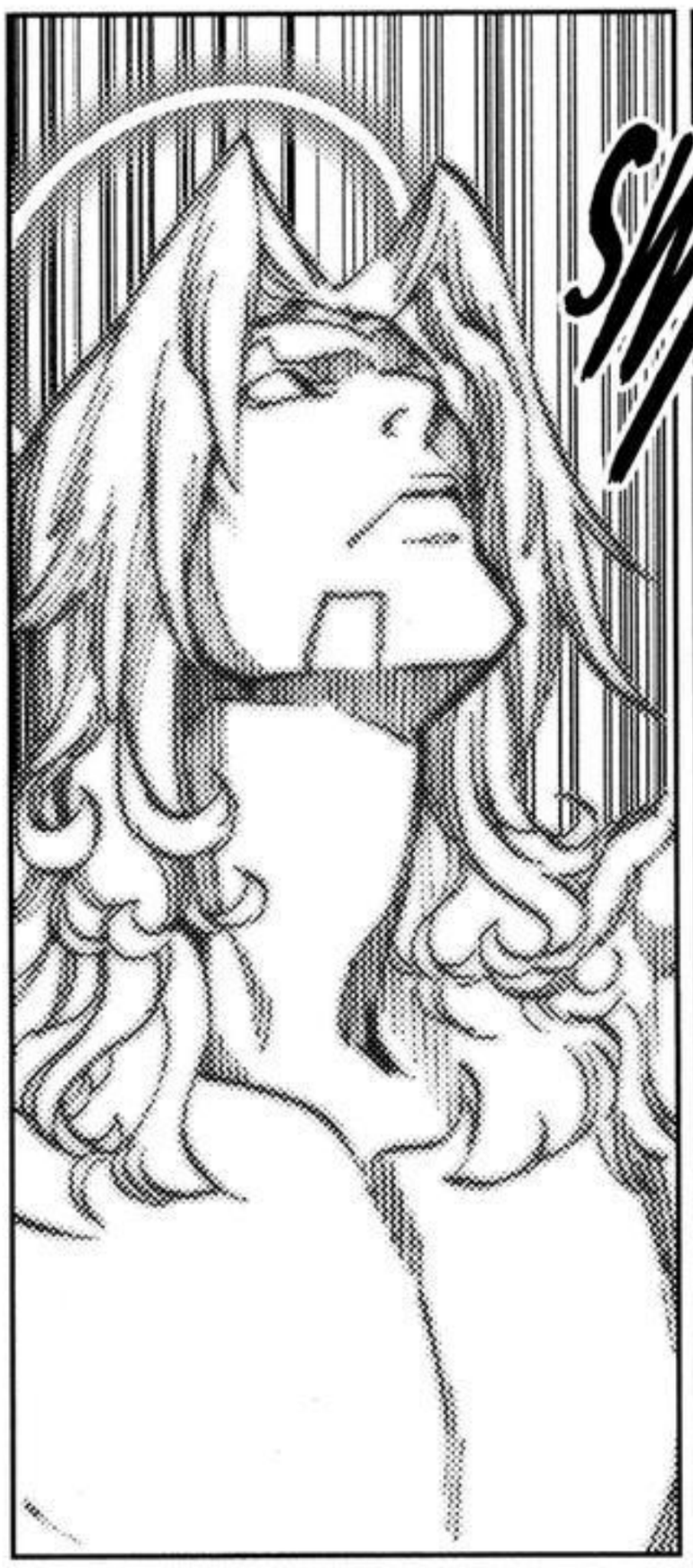
DR. YONEDA!

YOU'RE KIDDING ME...

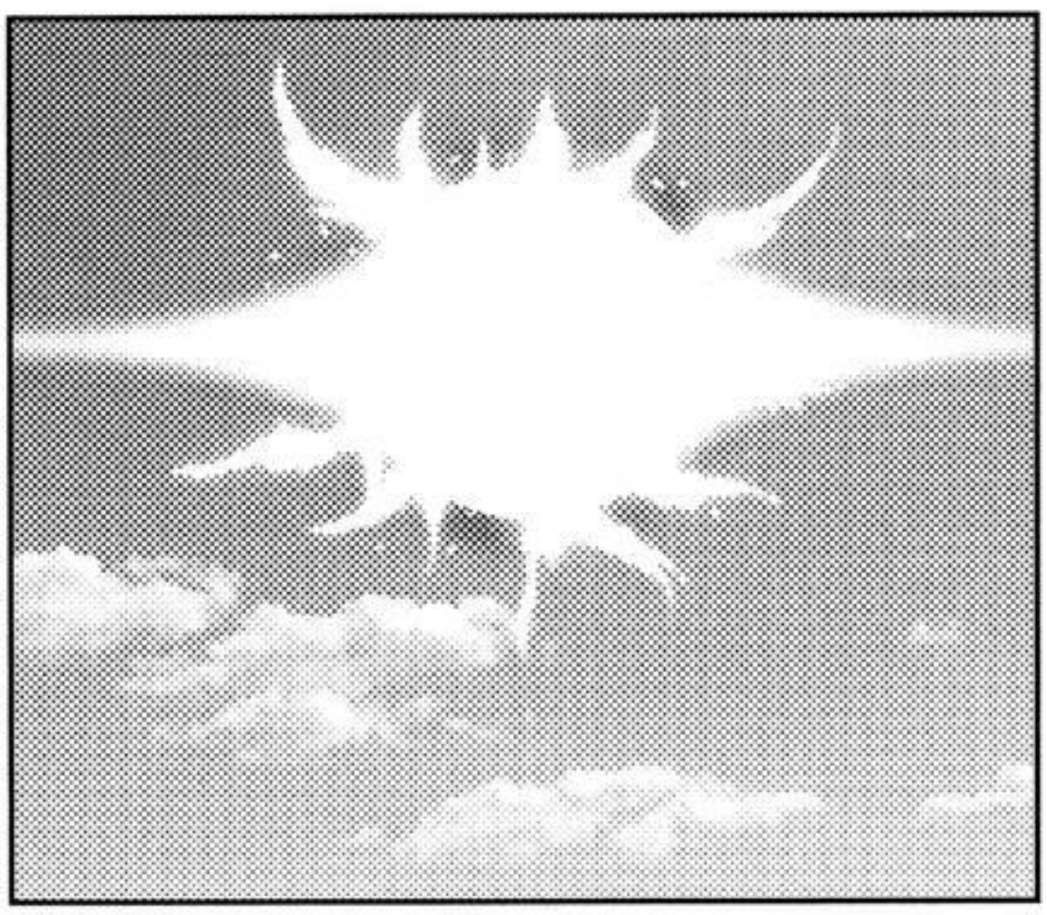
GOD'S A SEVENTH GRADER?!

ARE YOU SERIOUS?!

SWISH


SWISH

MM

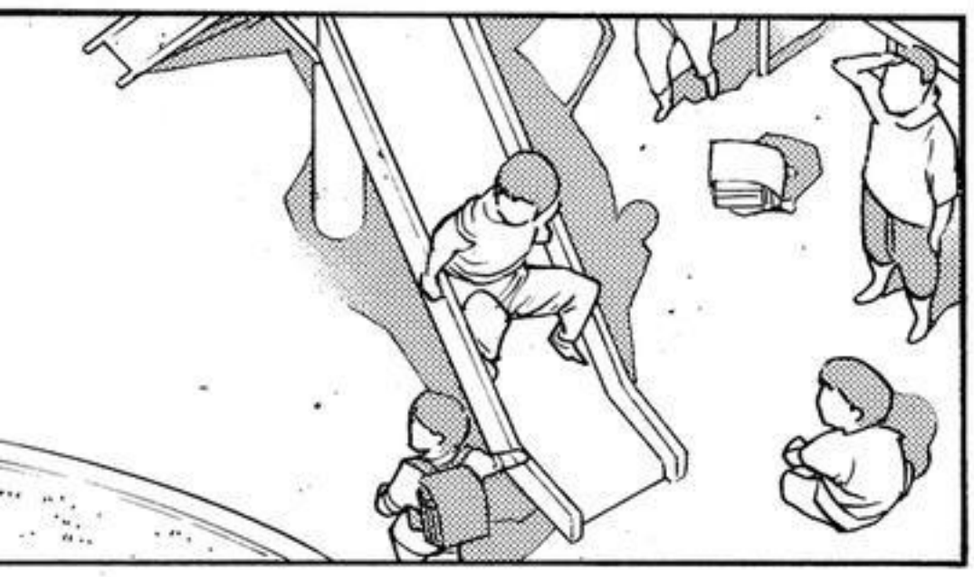


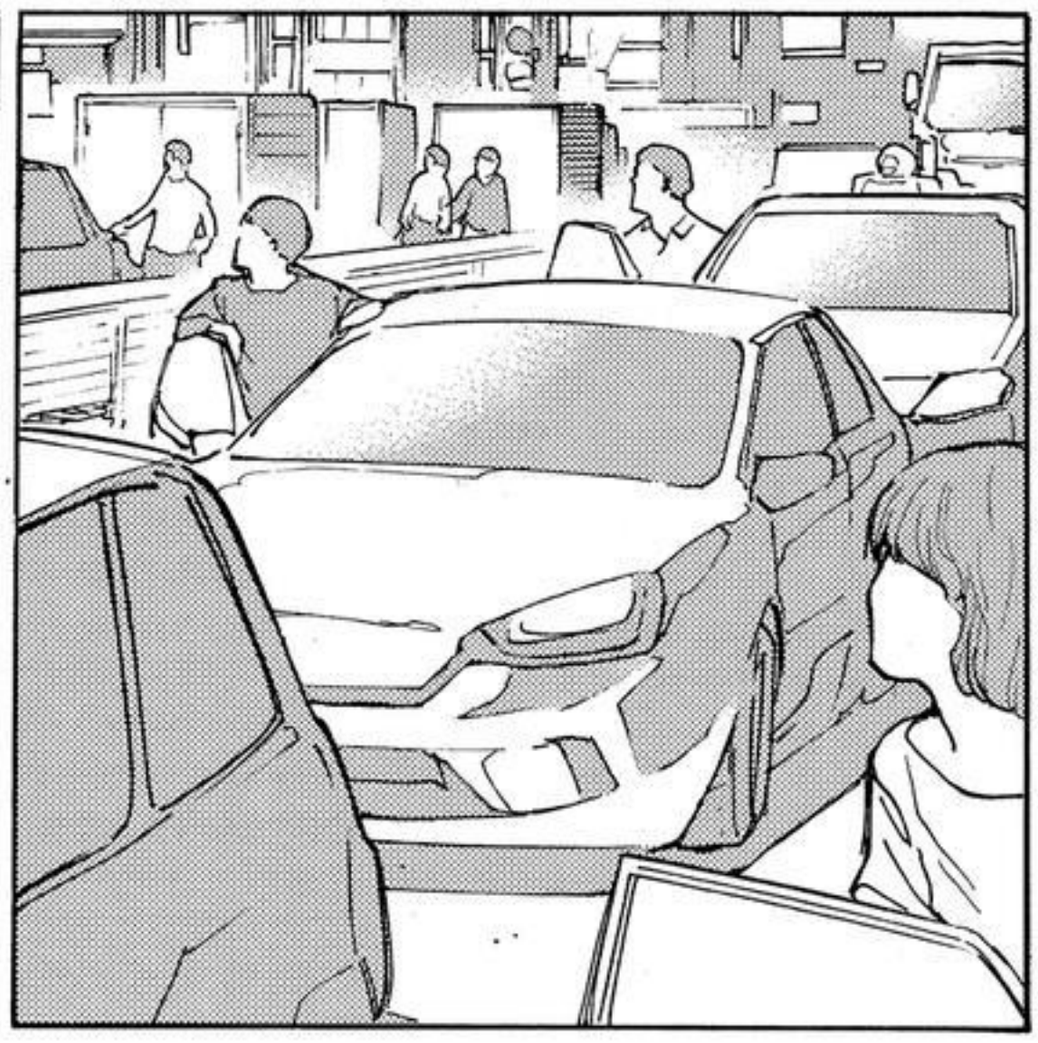
?

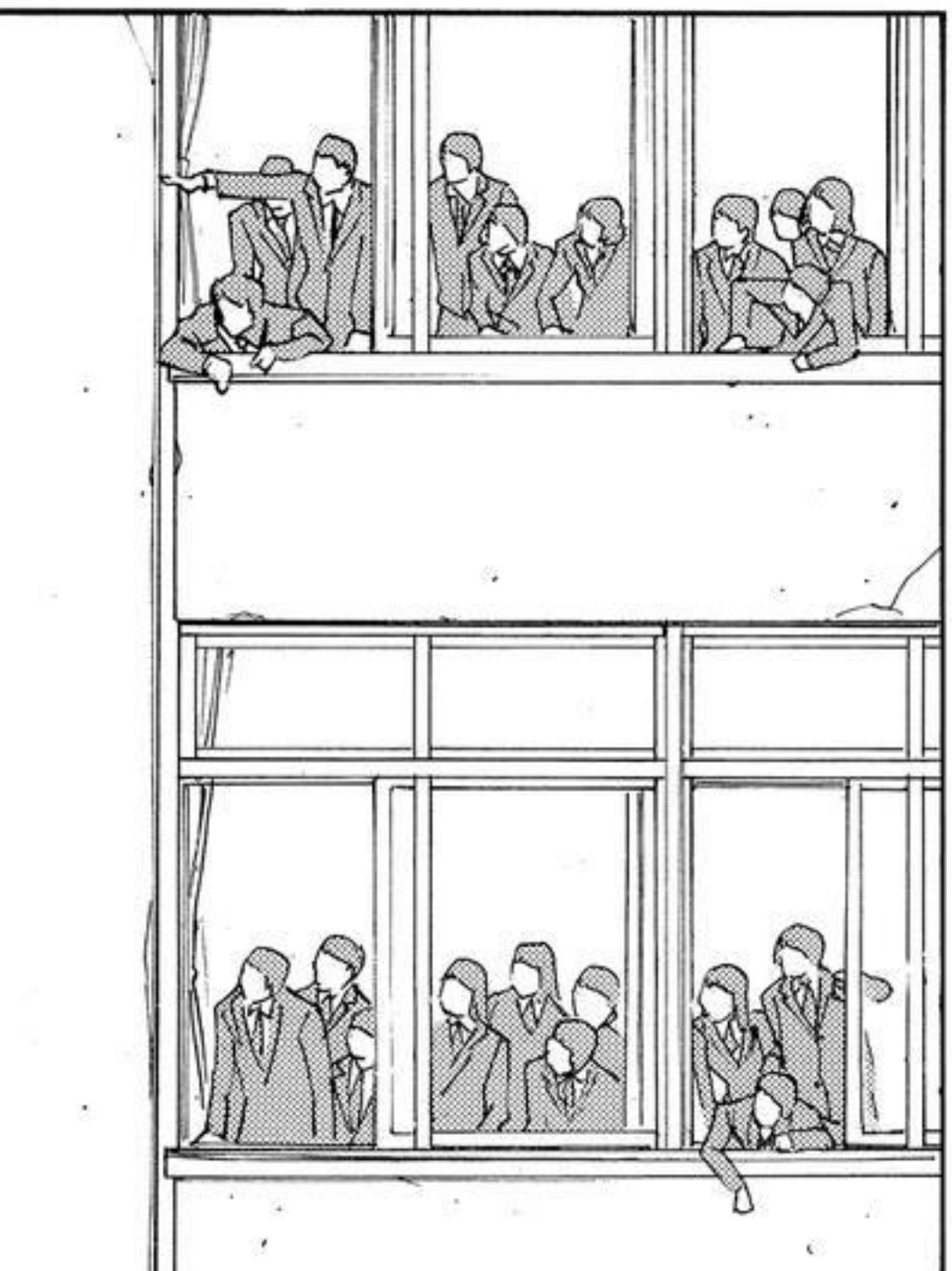
HUH?

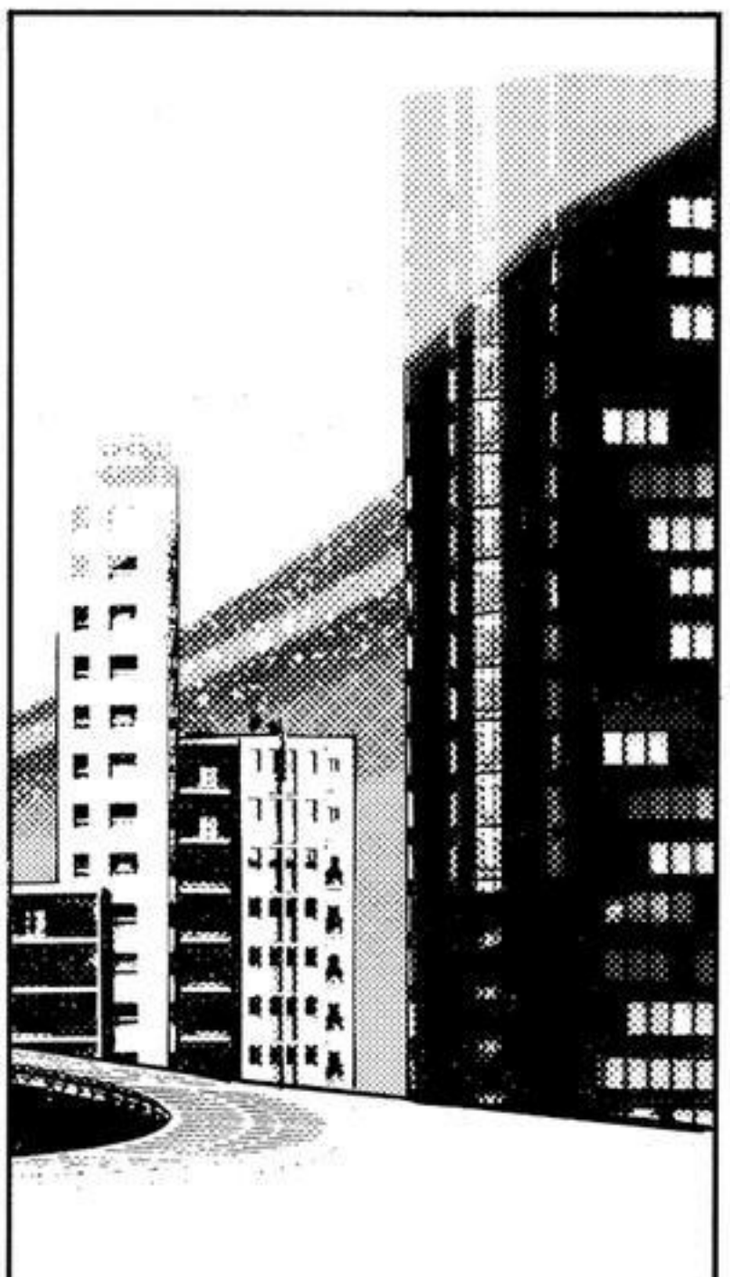
WHAT THE?

LOOK AT THE SKY...









!

AND THE ARROWS.

WHOA, YOU'RE RIGHT.

MY WINGS... ARE GONE.

...ARE FROZEN ...

AND MR. HOSHI AND MS. YUMIKI...

I HAVE ERASED ALL RECORD OF THE GOD CHOOSING OUTSIDE OF THE CANDIDATES.

A FALSE GOD.

WOW, HE'S SERIOUSLY, LIKE, A GOD...

DO YOU WISH TO RETAIN YOUR MEMORY OF THE CHOOSING AND OF BEING A CANDIDATE?

BEFORE I AM COMPLETE AS A GOD, I WILL ASK EACH OF YOU A QUESTION.

...

OH, I GUESS HE'S NOT DONE YET.

NATURALLY. I WOULD NOT RENEGE ON A PROMISE.

PROFESSOR! YOU'LL HELP ME LIVE THE CELEBRITY LIFESTYLE, WON'T YOU?

AND I WILL NEED MY MEMORY TO UNDERSTAND WHY I AM SUPPORTING YURI TEMARI, AFTER ALL.

I WILL RETAIN MY MEMORY, OF COURSE, AND WAIT FOR THE ANSWER FROM NAKAUMI.

THEN I DON'T NEED ANY MEMORY OF THIS HORRIBLE TIME.

I CHOOSE TO BEAR THE RESPONSIBILITY OF REMEMBERING THE LIVES OF THOSE WHO DIED AS A PART OF THIS.

I DON'T WANT TO FORGET THE THINGS I EXPERIENCED AND LEARNED IN THIS CHOOSING PROCESS.

SQUISH

SO NATURALLY, YOU'LL BE RETAINING YOUR MEMORY, PROFESSOR? ♡

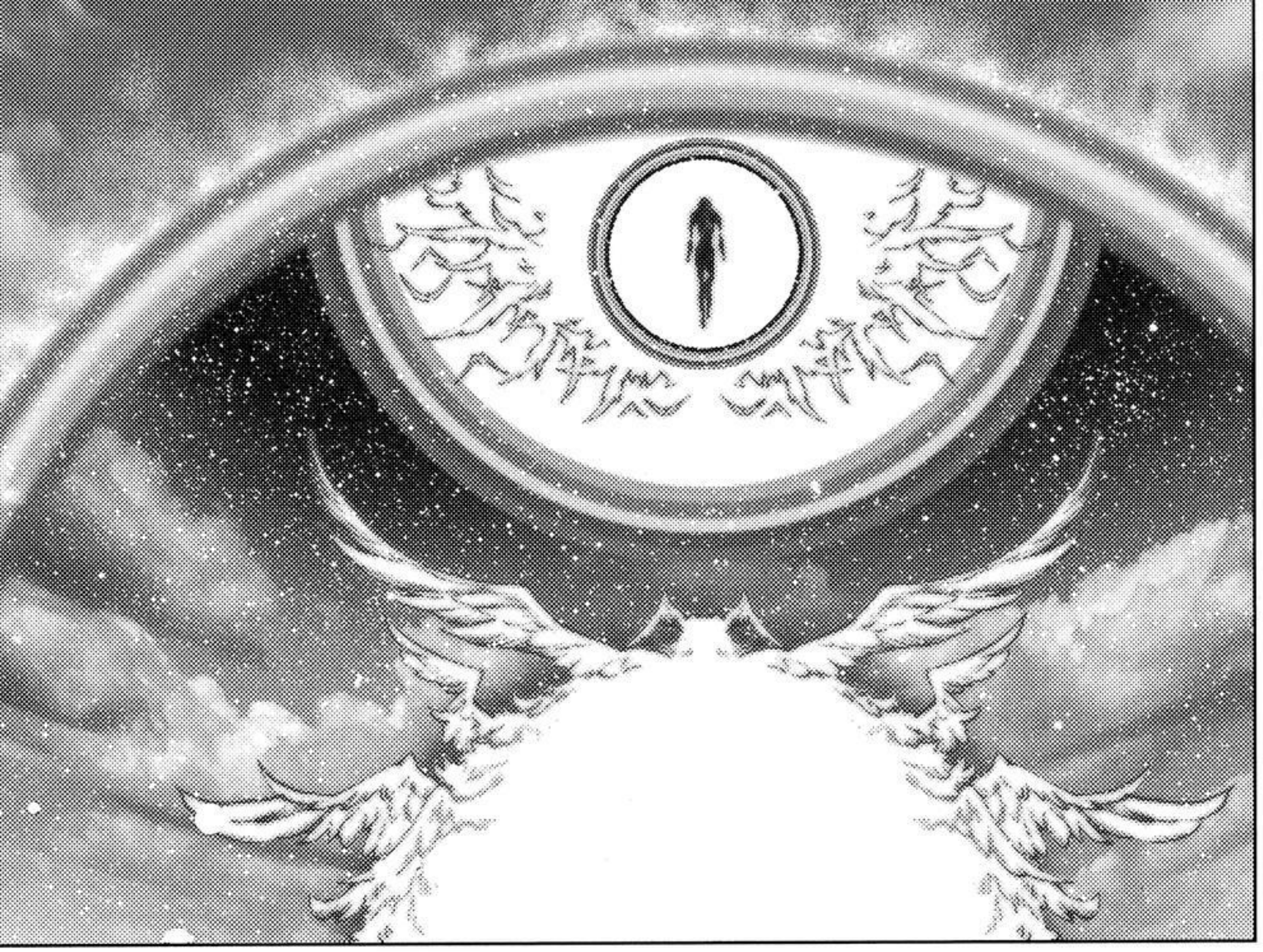
NATU-RALLY.

...

I WILL KEEP THEM TOO.

GOOD-BYE.

VERY WELL. THAT IS ALL I ASK OF YOU.



MANAMI?

MASAYA ...

NATU-RALLY.

YONEDA ...?

WHAT HAVE I BEEN DOING ...?

OCTOBER 10? WAIT, I'M STILL ALIVE?

WHERE AM I?

WHAT THE?

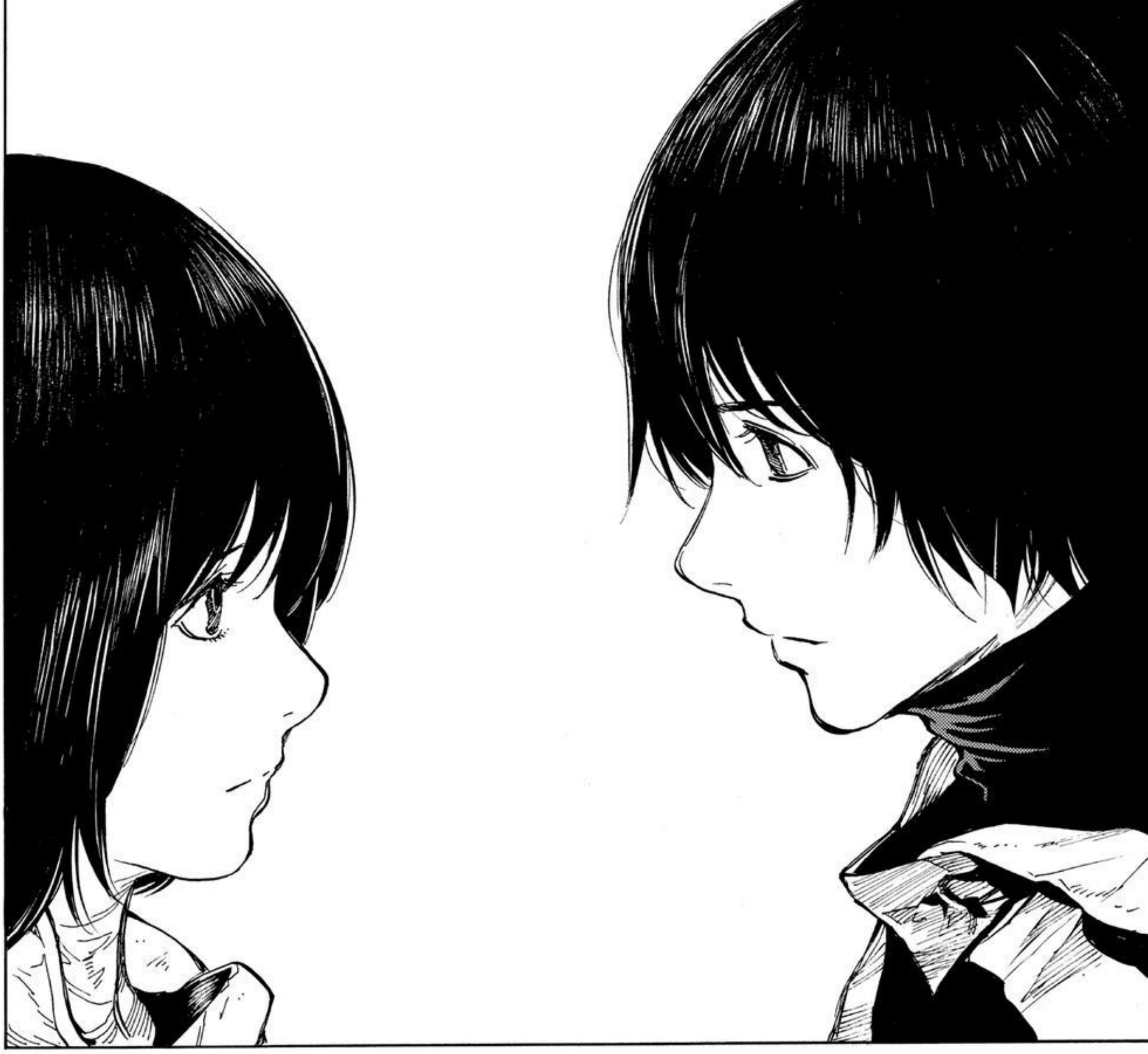
HUH? HANG ON, I'VE SEEN YOU SOMEWHERE BEFORE.

FLOP

YOU ARE THE PRIMARY ASSISTANT AT THE RESEARCH LAB OF THE PROFESSOR EMERITUS OF SCIENCE AND BIOLOGY AT TOKYO UNIVERSITY.

NICE ...

I'M A STEM GIRL? AT TOKYO U?



YEAH.
LET'S GO.

#56 Master of Creation

THE BIGGEST DIFFERENCE IS THAT TIME MOVES A BIT MORE SLOWLY HERE.

YOU MAY THINK OF IT AS A KIND OF PARALLEL WORLD TO THE MORTAL REALM.

SO THIS IS THE CELESTIAL REALM...

I AM GLAD THAT THE CELESTIAL REALM IS SAVED.

GOD HAS BEEN BORN FROM AMONG THE CANDIDATES, AND THUS GOD DID NOT NEED TO DIE.

THAT IS A THEOLOGICAL ASSUMPTION CREATED ENTIRELY BY HUMANKIND.

IT JUST DOESN'T SOUND REAL THAT GOD COULD "DIE"...

PEOPLE DO NOT THINK OF GOD AS BEING CAPABLE OF DEATH.

I FEEL SICK, FOR SOME REASON...

...

THE OLD CREATURE STILL INFESTS THIS BODY.

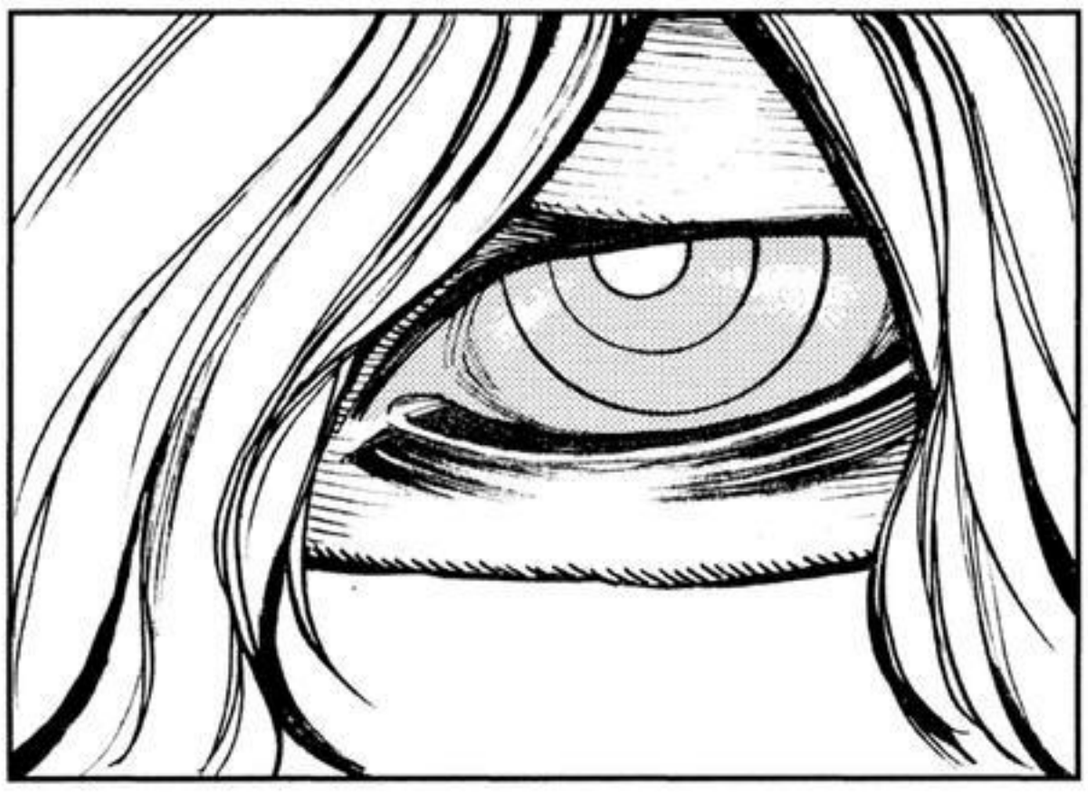
THERE IS A PARASITE.

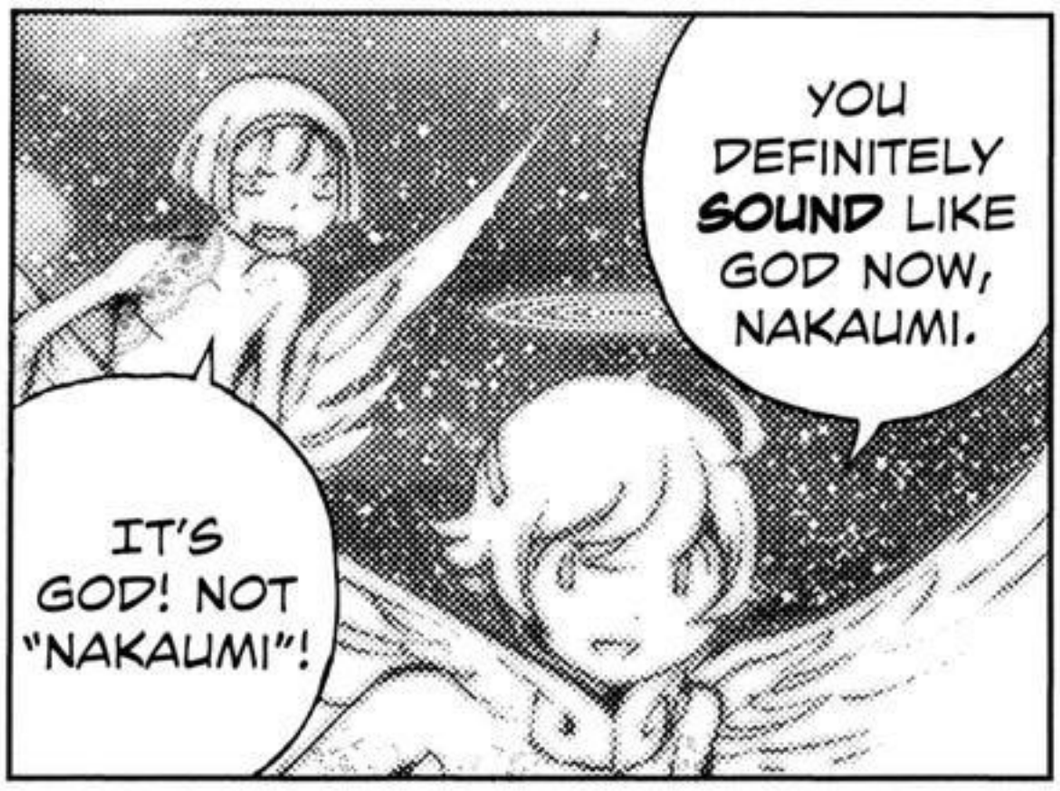
YOU COULD NOT HAVE GODLY POWERS OTHERWISE.

THAT IS BECAUSE SHUJI NAKAUMI, THE GOD CANDIDATE, HAS **BECOME** GOD.

AN APPLE THAT TASTES LIKE AN ORANGE IS MERELY AN ORANGE WEARING APPLE SKIN.

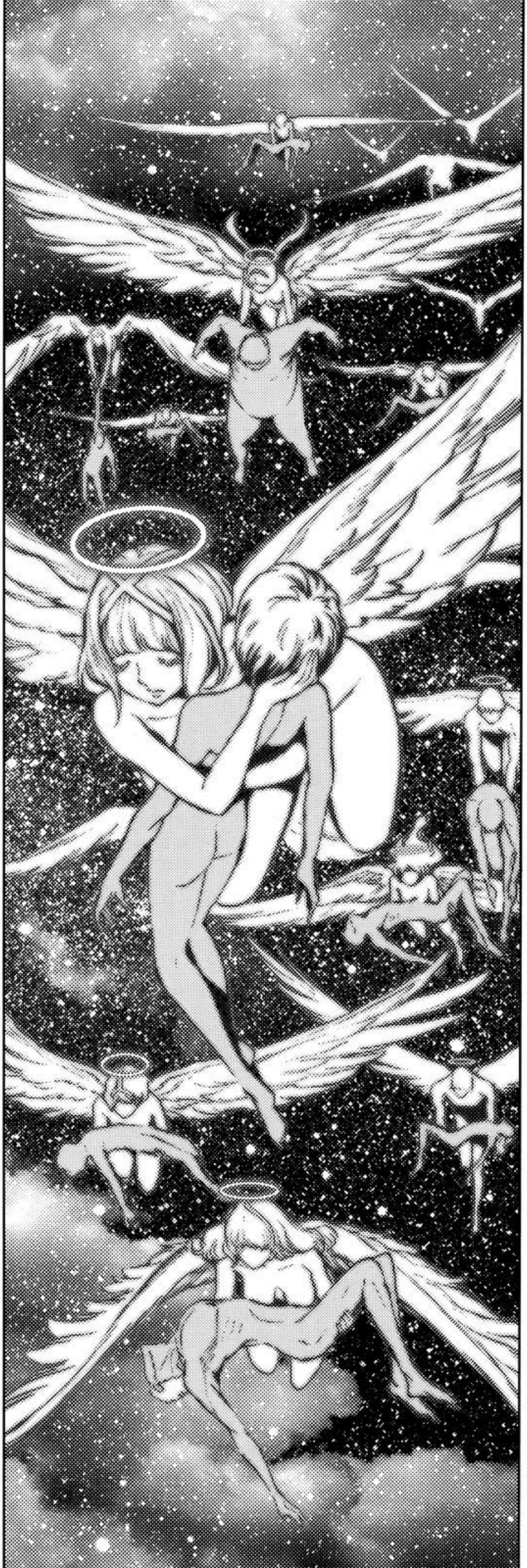
THEN I AM ONLY THE CREATURE, WEARING THE SKIN OF SHUJI NAKAUMI.




YOU DEFINITELY SOUND LIKE GOD NOW, NAKAUMI.
IT'S GOD! NOT "NAKAUMI"!

THAT IS NOT THE CASE. THERE MIGHT BE TWO MINDS NOW, BUT THE MIND THAT WAS ONCE SHUJI NAKAUMI WILL CONTROL THE PREVIOUS GOD UNTIL YOU FUSE IN THE END.
THE CREATURE'S MIND STILL EXISTS INSIDE MY HEAD...
WILL IT INVADE MY BODY AND CONSCIOUS-NESS?

WE DO NOT KNOW THAT.
FUSE? HOW LONG WILL THAT TAKE...?



KPLOSH

KPLO SH

...COPIES?

ARE THESE...

NOT FOR ANY SPECIFIC PURPOSE, BUT THEY CAN INFORM THE ANGEL CREATION PROCESS, I HEAR.

YES. WHETHER THE DEAD ARE CREMATED OR BURIED, THEY ARE ALL SAVED HERE IN THE FORM THEY TOOK UPON DEATH.

I ALWAYS HATED THAT SELF-INTERESTED FANTASY ABOUT THE WICKED GOING TO HELL AND THE GOOD GOING TO HEAVEN...

I'M GLAD THAT IT'S OVER WHEN THEY DIE...

...

YOU DON'T KNOW ...?

BUT WHY SAVE THEM IN THE FORM THEY TAKE UPON DEATH?

WE DO NOT KNOW ANYTHING THAT GOD DOES NOT KNOW.

I HAVE A RESPONSIBILITY TO PRESERVE THE END OF LIFE. AN OLD HABIT FROM THE TIME OF CREATION.

IT IS BECAUSE I CREATED HUMANITY.

THE GOD INSIDE OF YOU.

WHO'S THAT?!

...BY THE CREA-TURE?!

SO HUMANITY WAS CREATED...

GOD...? THE CREA-TURE?

THAT CAN'T BE RIGHT... GOD WAS CREATED BY HUMANITY... HUMAN BEINGS CREATED GOD!!

THE CREATURE CREATED HUMANITY...?

GOD...

I WAS A CREATION. AND I CREATED HUMANITY.

THAT MAY ALSO BE CORRECT.

I DON'T UNDERSTAND THIS!

WHAT ARE YOU SAYING, CREATURE...?!

...

PRECISELY. EVEN I DO NOT KNOW WHAT CREATED ME.

...

IS SOME-THING THE MATTER, GOD?

THE REST OF YOU MAY LEAVE.

I AM YOUR ATTENDANT, SO I WILL REMAIN.

I WOULD LIKE TO BE ALONE.

I'M JUST TIRED ...

NO...

I WONDER WHAT'S UP.

HE ACTUALLY GOT TO BECOME GOD. HE SHOULD JUST HURRY UP AND KILL ALL THOSE PEOPLE WHO WANTED TO DIE.

...AND TELL DR. YONEDA THE ANSWER ...

...HEAVEN AND THE CREATURE, OR MAN-KIND...

AT THE VERY LEAST, I MUST FIND OUT WHAT CAME FIRST...

THERE ARE OTHER MYSTERIES ABOUT THIS PLACE...

IF THE ANGELS DON'T KNOW WHAT GOD DOESN'T KNOW, THEN I'LL HAVE TO LEARN THOSE THINGS MYSELF.

...

SIX MONTHS LATER

Professor Emeritus Yoneda

Laboratory One

I AM, BUT THERE HASN'T BEEN ANY REACTION AT ALL.

MISS TEMARI, ARE YOU WATCHING THE READINGS CLOSELY?

I CAN'T EVEN FATHOM WHAT RESEARCH YOU'RE TRYING TO CONDUCT, PROFESSOR.

LOVE?

...

YOU MIGHT NOT BE ABLE TO SEE IT, BUT YOU CERTAINLY WANTED IT.

WHOA, I WAS RIGHT?

INDEED.

I WANTED IT?

YOU WERE SUPPOSED TO BE MORE OF A SPENDER.

WHAT DO YOU MEAN?

SO YOU WANT LOVE... I'M SURPRISED AT HOW NON-MATERIALISTIC YOU ARE.

OH, THAT. WHEN I USED TO BE POOR, I WAS DESPERATE FOR BRAND-NAME ITEMS. BUT THE PAY IS SO GOOD AT THIS LAB, I FIND THAT IT FEELS BETTER JUST TO WATCH MY BANK ACCOUNT GROW.

THAT IS NOT AN UNCOMMON STATE OF MIND.

THERE ARE COUNTLESS WEAPONS AND DRUGS CAPABLE OF KILLING PEOPLE ALL OVER THE WORLD... BUT THESE ARE UNIQUE.

...BUT HE CLEVERLY LEFT RED ARROWS WITH ME.

ALL MEMORY OF THE GOD-CHOOSING PROCESS VANISHED FROM THE WORLD, RESTORING NORMAL LIFE...

...BUT I CANNOT BE IN POSSESSION OF SUCH A THING AND NOT TRY TO UNDER-STAND ITS WORKINGS.

IT MAY BE FASTER AND MORE PRECISE TO SIMPLY WAIT FOR NAKAUMI THE CREATURE TO TELL ME THE ENTIRE TRUTH...

NO!

ABSO-LUTELY NOT!

...IS THERE A PERSONAL REASON YOU PAY ME SO WELL?

BY THE WAY, PROFESSOR, BETWEEN YOU AND ME...

FSSSSH

ROLL ROLL

THAT'S RIGHT. HE DOESN'T FORM PERSONAL CONNECTIONS WITH ANYONE. I'VE NEVER INTERACTED WITH HIM OUTSIDE OF WORK.

MR. NAOI, IS IT TRUE THAT HE'S NEVER HAD A PARTNER OR A FRIEND?

Yikes!

HA HA ...

SNAP

SWISH

THE THING IS, I *LIKE* IT WHEN THEY PLAY HARD TO GET.

OOH...

YES?!

BY THE WAY, MISS TEMARI...

THAT'S RIGHT.

I UNDERSTAND YOU HAVE NO RECOLLECTION OF THE PERIOD BETWEEN YOUR OLD COMPANY AND COMING TO WORK HERE.

YOU CAN'T BE CERTAIN YOUR BRAIN HAS NO DAMAGE OR TUMORS.

!

BUT I'M NOT HAVING ANY PROBLEMS...

PERHAPS IT WOULD BE GOOD TO UNDERGO SOME TESTS.

AND ONCE IT'S TOO LATE, IT'S TOO LATE.

WELL... WHEN YOU PUT IT THAT WAY...

I WANT HER TO BE A TEST SUBJECT FOR ME.

I WOULD NEVER HAVE INTEREST IN ANOTHER PERSON'S BODY FOR ANY OTHER REASON.

I WILL OFFER YOU AN INTENSE AND THOROUGH EXAMINATION, IN FACT.

WAS THAT SUPPOSED TO BE AS DIRTY AS IT SOUNDS?

NO!

ABSO-LUTELY NOT!

PROFESSOR ...

I DID SAY IT WOULD BE A "THOROUGH" EXAMINATION...

WHAT'S WITH ALL THE BODY SENSORS? I THOUGHT THIS WAS JUST A BRAIN SCAN.

I'M ON IT.

NOW WE'LL BEGIN. START RECORDING SIGNALS, NAOI.

SHMM

?

HUH?

HER HEART RATE JUST SHOT UP...

LOOK AT THESE HORMONE LEVELS!

光刺激　電極　共有　ウィンドウ　ヘルプ

ALL THE READINGS ARE ABOVE STANDARD VALUES. THIS PROVES THAT SHE'S FALLEN IN LOVE.

I DIDN'T KNOW YOU COULD GET PHENETHYL-AMINE LEVELS THIS HIGH...

...BUT I HAVEN'T LEARNED ANYTHING MORE THAN THAT.

THAT IS BECAUSE I USED THE RED ARROW ON HER...!

BY MY CALCULATIONS, YOU'LL NEED TO BE HOSPITALIZED IMMEDIATELY FOR A SPAN OF 33 DAYS.

YOU'VE GOT IT BAD.

...

HUH?

SWOOP

NO! YOU CAN'T DO THAT TO ME! I WANT TO BE WITH YOU AT THE LAB!!

YOU'LL BE ALL RIGHT. I'LL VISIT YOU EVERY DAY.

-TO OBSERVE AND COLLECT DATA.

REALLY.

Y...YOU WILL? REALLY?

MIRAI'S MADE SOME FRIENDS TOO. I'M GLAD TO SEE THAT.

THOUGH THE PROFESSOR'S NOT TREATING HER VERY WELL.

I THINK YURI TEMARI SHOULD DO FINE WITH-OUT RED ARROWS.

NOT AT ALL.

YOU MIND IF I JOIN YOU ON THE WAY HOME, KAKEHASHI?

DING DONG

YOU SHOULD BE SAYING THAT TO *ME*, YAMASHITA! I WAS THE ONE WALKING HOME WITH SAKI TO BEGIN WITH.

DON'T WORRY, I WILL.

AND IF YOU EVER WANT TO JUST SPEND TIME WITH HANAKAGO, DON'T BE SHY ABOUT TELLING ME OFF.

WHERE?

FLOWER SHOP.

YUP.

SO YOU GOT A JOB, KAKEHASHI?

FLOWER SHOP?

HUH?

WE MADE A PROMISE TO OPEN A FLOWER SHOP TOGETHER IN THE FUTURE.

...

A FLOWER SHOP THAT ALSO SELLS FOUR-LEAF CLOVERS.

YES.

WAIT... DOES THAT MEAN YOU'RE ALSO, LIKE... ENGAGED?

IT WAS SURPRISING ENOUGH WHEN YOU SAID YOU WERE GOING OUT, BUT NOW THIS...?

ARE YOU SERIOUS?!

WE WANTED TO BE TRUE TO OURSELVES AND LIVE WITH A PURPOSE IN MIND.

WE'RE BOTH ALONE IN THE WORLD...

WHY YOU?!

SHOULD WE GO OUT TOO, MAIKO?

I MEAN, IF YOU'RE THAT SERIOUS ABOUT IT, WHAT CAN I SAY, OTHER THAN THAT I'M JEALOUS.

...

I'M GLAD THE SCAR IS GONE.

GOD TOOK CARE OF THAT FOR ME.

THEN YOU'RE NORMAL.

...

I ONLY FEEL LIKE I GOT OVER A CASE OF LOVE-SICKNESS.

CONGRAT-ULATIONS ON YOUR RECOVERY, MISS TEMARI.

SIGH ...

IN THE END, I DIDN'T GET ANY CLOSER TO UNDERSTANDING THE RED ARROWS...

SO MANY DEAD... THE HOSPITAL IS OFTEN A PLACE PEOPLE GO TO DIE. PERHAPS THE CREATURE IS ALREADY...

IT WOULD SEEM THAT POSSESSING ARROWS GIVES ME THE ABILITY TO OBSERVE THIS PHENOMENON...

WHAT'S THE MATTER, PROFESSOR?

...

I BELIEVE I HEARD THAT THE ANNUAL COUNT LAST YEAR WAS JUST UNDER 120,000...

ARE YOU AWARE OF HOW MANY PEOPLE IN TOKYO DIE IN AN AVERAGE DAY?

A POSSIBILITY THAT SUICIDAL PEOPLE AROUND THE WORLD DIE IN MUCH GREATER NUMBERS...

THERE'S A POSSIBILITY THAT THIS YEAR'S NUMBER COULD DWARF THAT.

THAT WOULD MEAN ONE PERSON DIES EVERY FIVE MINUTES.

YES. AN AVERAGE OF 327 PER DAY.

NAKAUMI...

#57 Each One's Happiness

...

NEXT, MEYZA.

ZSHH

THAT'S RIGHT, DEAR.

WELL, YOU DIDN'T NEED TO COME OVER HERE FOR A FORMAL ANNOUNCEMENT, WE ALREADY KNEW IT WAS HAPPENING.

HANAKAGO

HUH? UH, REALLY?

IF ANYTHING, WE WANTED TO ASK YOU IF YOU'D TAKE SAKI.

YES, AND I'M SURE THAT UP IN HEAVEN, YOUR PARENTS ARE DELIGHTED FOR YOU.

ALL RIGHT, THAT'S ENOUGH OF THIS STUFFY BUSINESS.

THANK YOU.

YES, THAT'S THE ONE.

WHAT DO THEY SAY NOW? "LET'S LET THE YOUNG COUPLE FIGURE THINGS OUT FROM HERE"?

A MOVIE? IF YOU WANT TO SEE THE NEW EASTWOOD, I'LL JOIN YOU KIDS.

WELL, I SHOULD GET GOING.

HONEY, WE AGREED TO CUT BACK ON THE DAD JOKES.

IT'S ONLY THREE O'CLOCK ON A SUNDAY. WHY DON'T WE GO SEE A MOVIE?

WOULDN'T YOU FEEL BETTER CHANGING OUT OF THAT SUIT?

WHAT? NOT THE MOVIES?

LET'S GO TO YOUR APARTMENT.

UGH, MY DAD IS SO EMBAR-RASSING...

I TOLD YOU NOT TO WEAR THE SUIT.

THAT'S TRUE.

...

BUT I WANTED TO.

I THOUGHT YOU WERE TIRED, SAKI.

OH, LET'S STOP AT THE SUPERMARKET. I'LL MAKE DINNER TONIGHT.

I'LL HELP, THEN.

YES, BUT I WANT TO DO IT.

I *WANT* TO DO THIS.

BUT...

THUNK

DON'T YOU DARE. I WANT YOU TO WATCH TV OR SOMETHING UNTIL THE FOOD IS READY, MIRAI.

CHOP

CHOP

CHOP

CHOP

SURE.

MAY I ASK YOU A BRIEF QUES-TION?

WHAT IS HAPPINESS TO YOU?

EVENING News Time

WHAT IS HAPPINESS?

HAPPINESS? IT'S BEING HEALTHY ENOUGH TO WORK.

WHAT IS HAPPINESS TO YOU?

I GUESS I'D BE HAPPY IF I COULD LIVE WITHOUT ANYTHING TYING ME DOWN OR KEEPING ME FROM WHAT I WANT TO DO.

HAVING GREAT FRIENDS.

DON'T BE STUPID. YOU CAN'T BUY HAPPINESS.

I WANNA BE RICH!

MY DAD SAID HE'D BE HAPPY IF HE HAD LOTS OF MONEY AND NO JOB.

LOVING OTHERS. BEING LOVED.

YEAH. SO, BEING BORN HUMAN?

I GUESS I'M HAPPY JUST BEING ALIVE.

I GUESS YOU COULD SAY I'M LOOKING FOR THAT RIGHT NOW.

HOW AM I SUPPOSED TO ANSWER A QUESTION THAT HAS NO ANSWER?

I GUESS THAT ONLY COUNTS WHEN YOU DIE, THOUGH...

WELL, IF YOU ADDED UP THE GOOD THINGS AND SUBTRACTED THE BAD THINGS, THEN IF YOU END UP POSITIVE, YOU'RE HAPPY, AND NEGATIVE, YOU'RE UNHAPPY...

WHEN I GET A GOOD TEST SCORE, MAYBE? NO-- IT'S WHEN I PINCH OFF AN ABSOLUTELY PERFECT TURD.

THEN WHEN DO YOU FEEL HAPPY? NOW OR IN THE PAST.

NYA HA HA ...

THE HAPPIEST DAY OF MY LIFE WAS MY WEDDING DAY.

WHEN I FEEL HAPPY? WHEN I'M EATING DELICIOUS FOOD, OBVIOUSLY.

TRUE, BUT NOW THEY'RE NOT GOING TO PUT THIS ON TV.

WHEN I'M HAVING SEX WITH MY BOY-FRIEND.

WHAT'S THE POINT OF LIVING THEN?

WHEN I'M ASLEEP, BRO!

IF YOU'RE ALIVE, YOU GET TO SLEEP.

I'M SUPER HAPPY WHEN I SC... 100 ON A T...

WHEN I'M EATING CAKE.

I PROBABLY SHOULDN'T SAY THIS, BUT WHEN I SEE PEOPLE SUFFERING FROM STARVATIO... IT MAKES ME REALI... MY LIFE IS HAPPY

I WAS SO HAPPY WHEN MY HOUSE WAS FINISHED.

WHEN I TAKE A BATH.

WHEN I'M WITH A CAT.

WHEN THE WEATHER... GOO...

WHEN I GET A GOOD GOLF SCORE.

WHEN MY MOM PRAISES ME.

WHEN I'M WATCHING A MOVIE ON THE PROJECTOR AND ENJOYING A DRINK.

WHEN THE WHOLE FAMILY IS TOGETHER.

WHEN I'M DRUNK.

WHEN I'M SPACI... OUT.

WHEN I'M DRINKING TEA WITH MY OLD LADY AND WATCHING THE SUN SET, THEN I'M THANKFUL FOR ANOTHER DAY SEEN SAFELY TO THE END.

WHEN ...'M ...LL.

WHEN I SEE MY CHILDREN SLEEPING.

WHEN I WIN AT THE RACES, OBVIOUSLY.

I WAS MOVED THE FIRST TIME I HELD MY BABY IN MY HANDS.

WHEN I WAKE UP IN THE MORNING

THE BEST IS WHEN I'M PLAYING WITH MY DOG.

LIVING IN PEACEFUL JAPAN.

WHEN I WON AN AWARD FOR MY BOOK. I'LL NEVER FORGET MEETING ONE OF MY FAVORITE AUTHORS.

WHEN I'M WITH MY FAMILY, I SUPPOSE.

WHEN MY FAVOR-ITE IDOL GETS TO LEAD THE GROUP.

THE BEST I FEEL THESE DAYS IS WHEN MY GRANDKIDS MASSAGE MY SHOULDERS.

PAY-DAY.

THAT'S KIND OF RUDE TO DO WITH YOUR CHOPSTICKS.

!

AND WHEN DO YOU FEEL HAPPY?

THE REASON TO LIVE, I GUESS.

REALLY ...?

JUST ANSWER THE QUESTION. WHAT'S HAPPINESS?

YES, REALLY.

HMMM.

UMM ...

CHOMP

OH?

...

HAPPINESS IS THE REASON TO LIVE? IT'S DIFFICULT TO UNDERSTAND WHAT YOU MEAN...

EVERYONE THINKS ABOUT THE MEANING OF THEIR OWN EXISTENCE AT LEAST ONCE IN A WHILE...

"WHY ARE WE BORN AS HUMAN BEINGS?"

"WHAT'S OUR REASON FOR LIVING?"

SOME PEOPLE SAY THAT THERE IS NO MEANING.

GULP

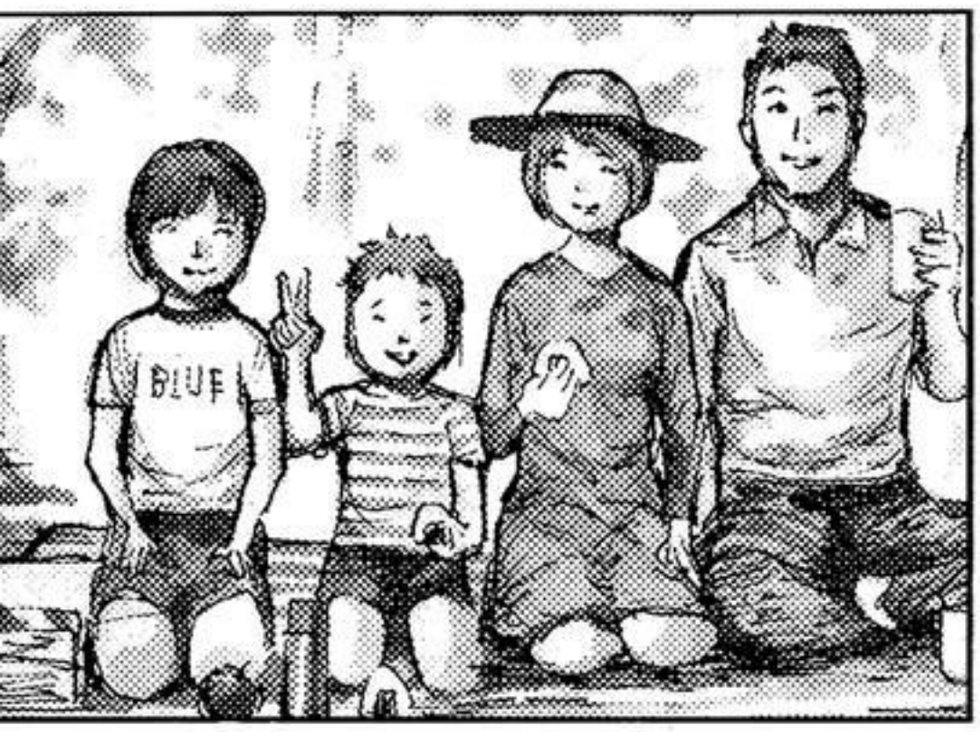
MMM, YUMMY.

...

THAT'S TRUE. ESPE-CIALLY WHEN WE'RE GROWING.

THAT'S ONE OF THE VERY FIRST THINGS I CAN REMEMBER MY MOTHER SAYING TO ME. I DON'T THINK I'VE EVER DIVERGED FROM THAT BELIEF.

THE REASON YOU'RE BORN INTO THE WORLD IS TO BE HAPPY.



YOU HAVE TO MAKE THE OTHERS AROUND YOU HAPPY TOO, SHE SAID...

AND OF COURSE, YOU CAN'T JUST FOCUS ON YOUR OWN HAPPINESS.

YEAH.

IT WOULD BE NICE IF YOUR HAPPY EXISTENCE COULD ALSO MAKE OTHERS HAPPY.

GOD'S PROTEC-TION.

SO WHAT IS HAPPINESS TO YOU, SAKI?

...

I MEAN, WE ALREADY SAW NAKAUMI BEING TAKEN OFF TO HEAVEN.

WE WOULDN'T BE HAPPY RIGHT NOW IF NOT FOR THE HELP OF THE ANGELS.

HUH? GOD'S... PROTEC-TION?

CLINK

YES... THAT'S TRUE.

...

AND THAT'S WHY EVERY SINGLE DAY, I PUT MY HANDS TOGETHER TO PRAY UP TO THE SKY, ASKING GOD TO KEEP THE WORLD AT PEACE.

AND NOW, THE FINAL QUESTION.

IT'S THE MOST IMPORTANT QUESTION OF ALL.

THERE'S MORE?

MAYBE I SHOULD DO THAT TOO.

...

THAT'S ALL YOU REALLY WANTED TO ASK, ISN'T IT?

WHEN DO YOU FEEL THE HAPPIEST?

IS IT WHEN YOU'RE EATING A HOME-COOKED MEAL FROM YOUR FIANCEE?

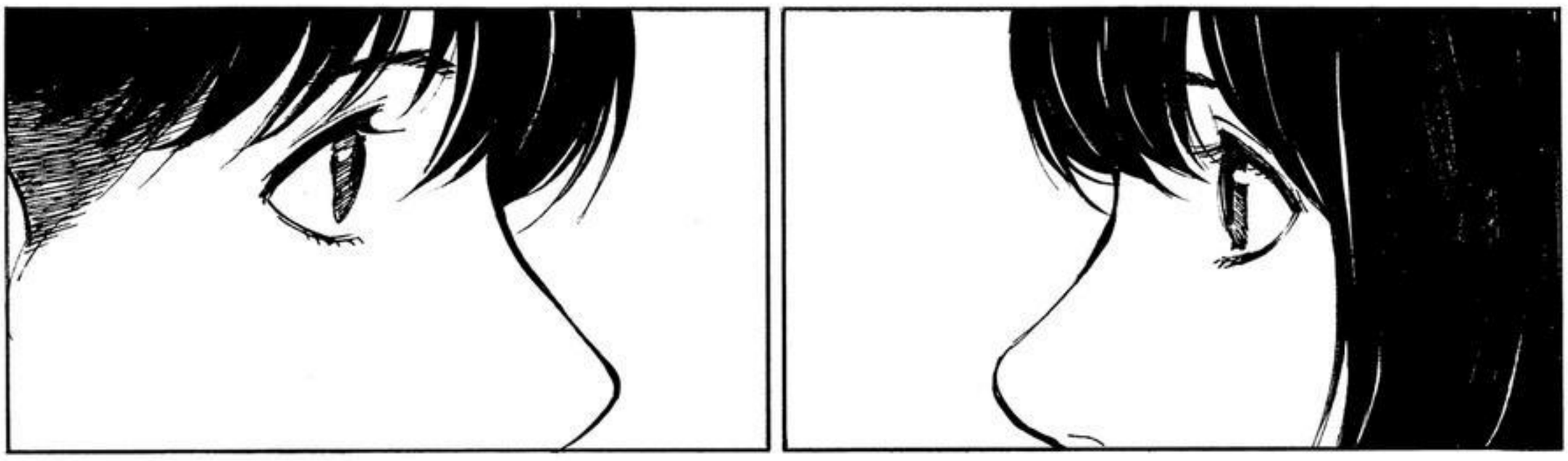
YOU MAY HAVE FIGURED ME OUT, BUT YOU'RE STILL ON THE HOOK FOR THE ANSWER.

G-GO AHEAD...

THEN I'LL GIVE YOU A SERIOUS ANSWER... IF YOU DON'T MIND IT SOUNDING PRETENTIOUS.

CLINK

IT'S WHEN YOUR SMILE IS REFLECTED IN MY EYES.



YES, SO IT SHOULD BE FINE NOW. IF I CALL THEM, I'M SURE MOM AND DAD WILL SAY OKAY.

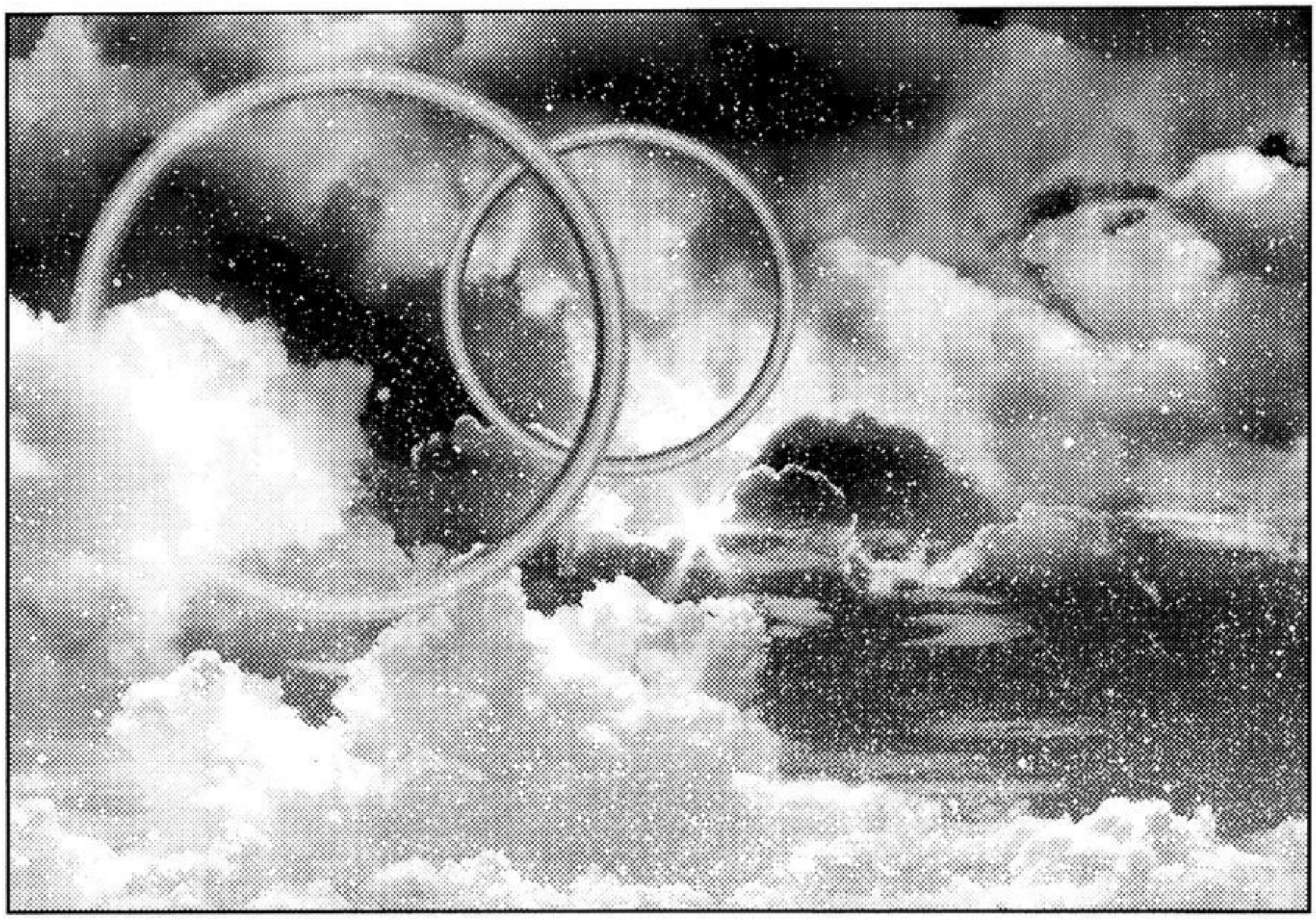
I JUST WENT TO STATE MY INTENTIONS TO YOUR PARENTS TODAY...

WHAT?! WHY NOT?

ABSO-LUTELY NOT.

NO. NO WAY.

CAN I STAY OVER TONIGHT?



YOU AND I MIGHT NOT HAVE BEEN VERY GOOD AT PICKING GOD CANDIDATES, BUT WE GET FULL POINTS AS ANGELS OF LOVE.

HUH? WHY NOT?

THEY'RE SO SWEET AND ROMANTIC.

I CAN'T STAND TO WATCH THEM...

I DON'T REALLY KNOW WHY HUMANS GET MARRIED.

THAT'S TRUE.

WELL, THEY'RE NOT MARRIED YET.

IT'S THE BEST WAY TO BE TOGETHER, BASICALLY.

HOOH

YES.

ONLY NASSE IS LEFT?

WHAT?

BEFORE I ASK NASSE DIRECTLY, I SHOULD ASK YOU.

IN FACT, NASSE WAS THE ONLY ONE WHO COULD TOUCH HUMAN BEINGS. SHE HELD GREAT INFLUENCE OVER THE CHOOSING.

DURING THE CHOOSING, I HEARD THAT NASSE WAS A SPECIAL ANGEL ON THE HEAVENLY SIDE.

MICRO-ORGANISM, GERM-- I DO NOT KNOW WHAT KIND OF LIFE IT WAS.

WHEN I CAME TO THE EARTH BEFORE IT SUPPORTED LIFE, THERE WAS ONE TINY LIVING BEING, AND THAT WAS NASSE.

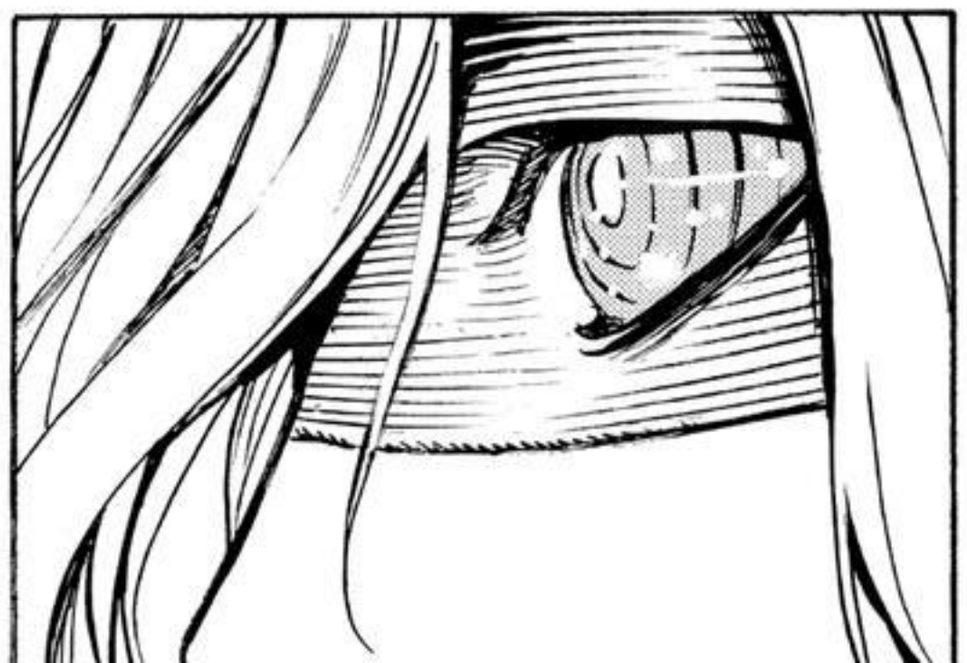
...

WHAT MAKES NASSE THE SPECIAL-RANK ANGEL "SPECIAL," ANYWAY? WHO IS SHE?

HOWEVER, NASSE SEEMS ENTIRELY UNAWARE OF IT.

NASSE FOUND HER WAY INTO MY BODY. ALARMED, I CUT MY SKIN LOOSE.

IF SHE CONTAINS SOME TRACE AMOUNT OF MY CELLS, I THOUGHT, THEN PERHAPS NASSE COULD PERFORM GODLY ACTIONS.



I COULD DIE RIGHT NOW. I'M THAT HAPPY.

I KNOW. ME TOO.

CLANG CLANG CLANG CLANG

WE TAKE EACH OTHER FROM THIS DAY FORWARD, FOR BETTER OR FOR WORSE...

...IN SICKNESS AND IN HEALTH, TO LOVE AND TO CHERISH...

...UNTIL DEATH DO US PART.

NOT THAT THEY WANT TO. THAT'S JUST HOW HAPPY THEY ARE.

THEY JUST SAID THEY COULD DIE RIGHT NOW.

HUH?

THEN I'M SUPER SATISFIED.

THAT'S THE END OF IT!

NASSE...

THAT'S THE END ...?

SWISH!

NASSE.

WHAT, MEYZA?

SWISH!

WHY?

HE HAS QUESTIONS, BECAUSE YOU ARE A SPECIAL-RANK ANGEL.

GOD CALLS YOU.

...

THEN HE'LL GET EVEN LESS FROM ME.

ABOUT HEAVEN, ANGELS, AND GOD...

HE DIDN'T SEEM TO GET ANYTHING OUT OF ASKING ME AND MUNI.

IT DOES NOT MATTER TO ME, BUT GAINING NOTHING SEEMS TO BE MAKING HIM PROGRESS.

?

WHAT WAS I BEFORE I WAS AN ANGEL?

...

I DON'T KNOW.

...

NASSE'S KNOWLEDGE OF THE HEAVENS IS SECOND RANK... NO, IT IS BELOW RANKLESS.

WELL ...

FOR ONE THING, I DON'T CARE WHAT I WAS BEFORE I WAS AN ANGEL.

AND I CARE EVEN LESS ABOUT WHETHER GOD IS REAL OR NOT.

MORE IMPORTANT, WHAT ABOUT SAKI? SHE'S PRAYING TO GOD FOR WORLD PEACE EVERY DAY.

THE PROFESSOR JUST LIKES DOING RESEARCH. YOU CAN BASICALLY LEAVE HIM TO HIS OWN DEVICES. HE'S CERTAINLY ENJOYING HIMSELF ENOUGH AS IT IS.

EVEN MIRAI SAID HE MIGHT TRY THAT TOO.

THEY SAY, "OH, HE'S LOST HIS SPARK," AND "MAYBE HE'S DEPRESSED," AND "MAYBE HE'S NOT EVEN GOD ANYMORE"...

WHEN GOD IS SPENDING ALL HIS TIME LOOKING WORRIED, THEN THE ANGELS WORRY TOO, AND THEY GET ALL FUSSY.

SIGH ...

SWISH...

NASSE!

!

SHUSPLASH...

YOU PROBABLY DON'T NEED TO PAY ATTENTION TO NASSE...

INTERESTING THAT A GOD CANDIDATE WOULD BE WORSHIPPING SHUJI NAKAUMI AS GOD, THOUGH.

ANYWAY, GOOD LUCK, GOD.

SO I SHOULD PAY ATTENTION TO THE HUMAN WORLD AND BE MORE GODLIKE, EH?

AOTA
APPAREL

Flower shop KAKEHASHI

THUNK

FIRST THINGS FIRST...

WELL, GUESS I'LL GO MAKE OUR VERY FIRST DELIVERY EVER.

Flower shop

EHASHI

TAKE CARE ON THE ROAD.

THUMP

WEEE

Flower shop
KAKEHASHI

SIX YEARS AND ONE DAY SINCE SHUJI NAKAUMI BECAME GOD. IT IS OCTOBER 11, 2024 ON EARTH.

OGARO, HOW MUCH TIME HAS PASSED IN THE HUMAN WORLD?

SIX YEARS ...?

ALL I'VE DONE IS THINK A LITTLE BIT ABOUT WHO THE GOD INSIDE OF ME IS, AND WHY THIS CELESTIAL REALM EXISTS, AND SO MUCH TIME HAS PASSED...

I HEARD THAT TIME PASSES FASTER IN THE HUMAN WORLD...

SPLISH ...

Professor Emeritus Yoneda Laboratory One

ON THE OTHER HAND, IT DOES MEAN THAT I'M CONTROLLING THE ARROW THROUGH MY OWN ENERGY. MEANING...

I CAN LEAVE IT FLOATING IN MIDAIR NOW, BUT THAT'S IT...

YOU HAVE A DELIVERY!

WHY IS IT SO BIG?!

PROFESSORRR!

KTHUNK

DRAG

DRAG

FRIENDS?

IT'S FROM SOME FRIENDS OF YOURS. A MARRIED COUPLE.

WHAT DO YOU SUPPOSE IT IS? LET'S OPEN IT UP!

THERE'S EVEN A CARD.

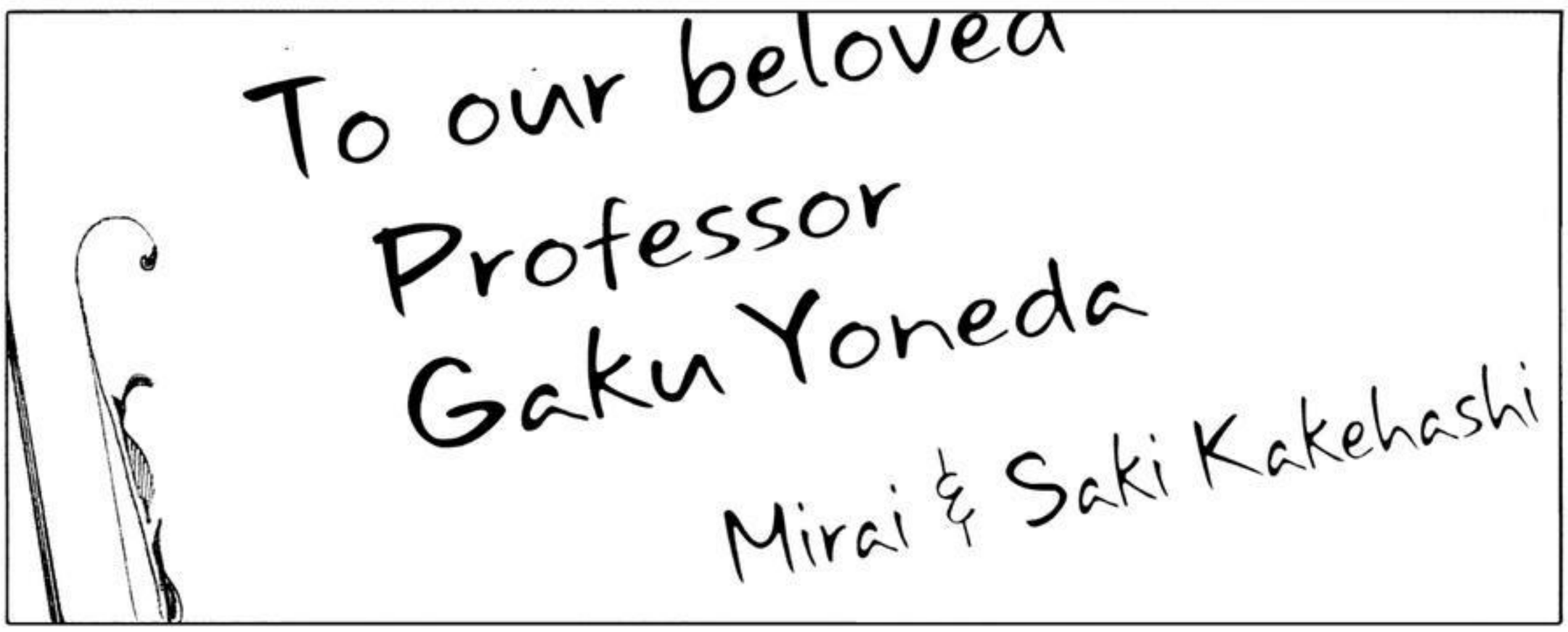
Beloved Professor Yuu Yoneda
Saki Kakeheshi

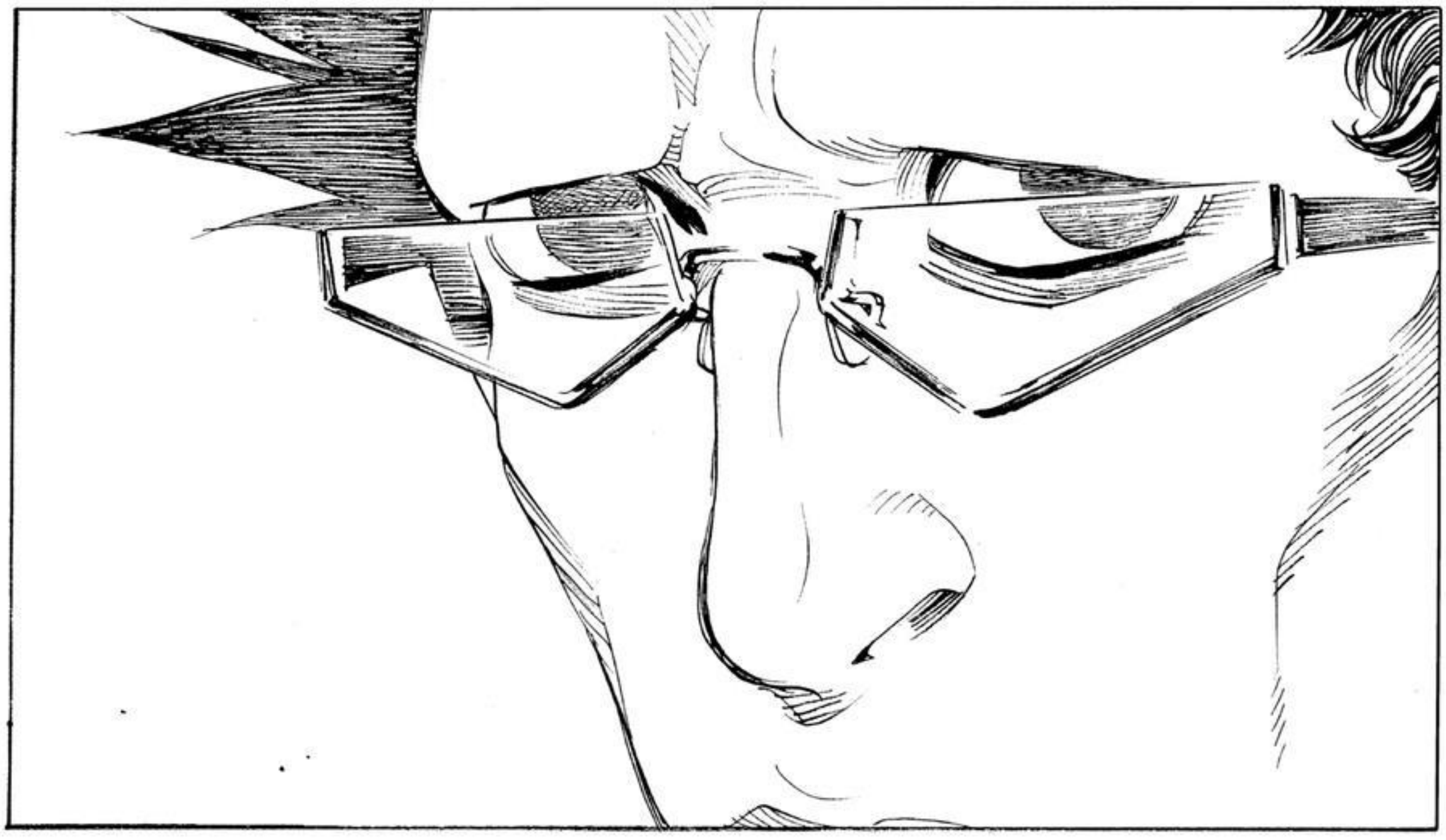
ROSES, LILIES-- AND SO MANY!

OOOH, THESE FLOWERS ARE BEAUTIFUL!

...

WHEN DID THAT HAP-PEN?
WELL, HOW ABOUT THAT? YOU DO HAVE FRIENDS AFTER ALL.


To our beloved
Professor
Gaku Yoneda
Mirai & Saki Kakehashi



#58 The Final Arrow

THESE FRIENDS OF YOURS, THE KAKEHASHIS-- HOW DID YOU MEET THEM?

I HAVE NO FRIENDS.

STOMP

STOMP

?

IN BATTLE...? WHICH WAR WAS THIS?

...FRIENDS... IN BATTLE...

IF YOU SIMPLY MUST USE THE WORD "FRIENDS," THEY'RE MORE LIKE...

THIS IS WHY I DON'T WANT TO DEAL WITH PEOPLE. IT'S A WASTE OF PERFECTLY GOOD LAB TIME.

SENDING ME A GIFT LIKE THIS OBLIGES ME TO RETURN THE FAVOR.

IN OTHER PLACES OF THE WORLD...

OH! I GUESS THERE ARE SOME COUNTRIES AT WAR.

ARE YOU SMILING, PROFES-SOR?

I AM NOT SMILING.

I SEE... JUST AS NASSE SAID.

WHAT ABOUT THE OTHERS...?

SPLISH...

CLANG
CLANG
CLANG
PING...
YES, SIR!
NAKA-UMI!
TAKE YOUR BREAK NOW!
YOU CALLED FOR ME, ASSISTANT COMMIS-SIONER?
GIVE ME A SITUATION REPORT.
PARDON ME.

WHICH PART? LET'S SEE...

I NEED HELP WITH THIS PART, SENPAI...

ARGH! YOU'RE NO HELP!

I HAVE NO IDEA WHAT THAT MEANS EITHER!

BUT I SHOULD BE LOOKING AT THOSE WHO WISH FOR DEATH.

THEY SEEM HAPPY. I'M GLAD.

PING...

Die

Gross

Stay away

Worthless

Creep

Die

Gross

Stay away

Worthless

When will u die

I DON'T NEED TO GIVE THEM HELP. THE ONES WHO WISH FOR IT ARE DYING IN DROVES...

HOW MANY PEOPLE ARE KILLING THEM-SELVES IN TOTAL?

SHUJI NAKAUMI ONLY SAW A HANDFUL OF PEOPLE IN HIS VICINITY WHO CLAIMED THEY WISHED TO DIE. BUT SEEN ON A WORLDWIDE SCALE... THEY DON'T NEED ASSISTANCE, THEY NEED HELP.

SUCH NAIVETÉ.

WHAT IS WRONG WITH THIS PLACE...?!

THIS WORLD ...

ALSO ...

OTHERS SIT ON THE GROUND WITHOUT HOMES AROUND THEM, RESISTING STARVATION.

SOME PEOPLE LIVE IN TOWERS SO TALL, THEY LOOK DOWN UPON THE CLOUDS.

AND...

OTHERS HAVE THEIR LIVES RIPPED AWAY FROM THEM.

SOME PEOPLE RULE OVER THE WEAK.

OTHERS CANNOT HAVE A SINGLE CUP OF WATER TO DRINK.

SOME PEOPLE EAT EVERYTHING THEY WANT AND THROW AWAY THE REST.

...OFFER THEIR PRAYERS TO GOD...

HUNDREDS OF MILLIONS...

...OF THE WORLD ...

THIS IS THE NATURE ...

...

WHAT WAS THE PREVIOUS GOD DOING? WHY IS THERE A GOD?

LIFE MULTIPLIES IF YOU LEAVE IT ALONE, SO I NEEDED TO DO NOTHING ELSE.

GOD'S PURPOSE IS TO CREATE LIFE ON THE EARTH.

I WATCHED ...

SHOULDN'T SOME PEOPLE... BE SAVED? NOT KILLED?

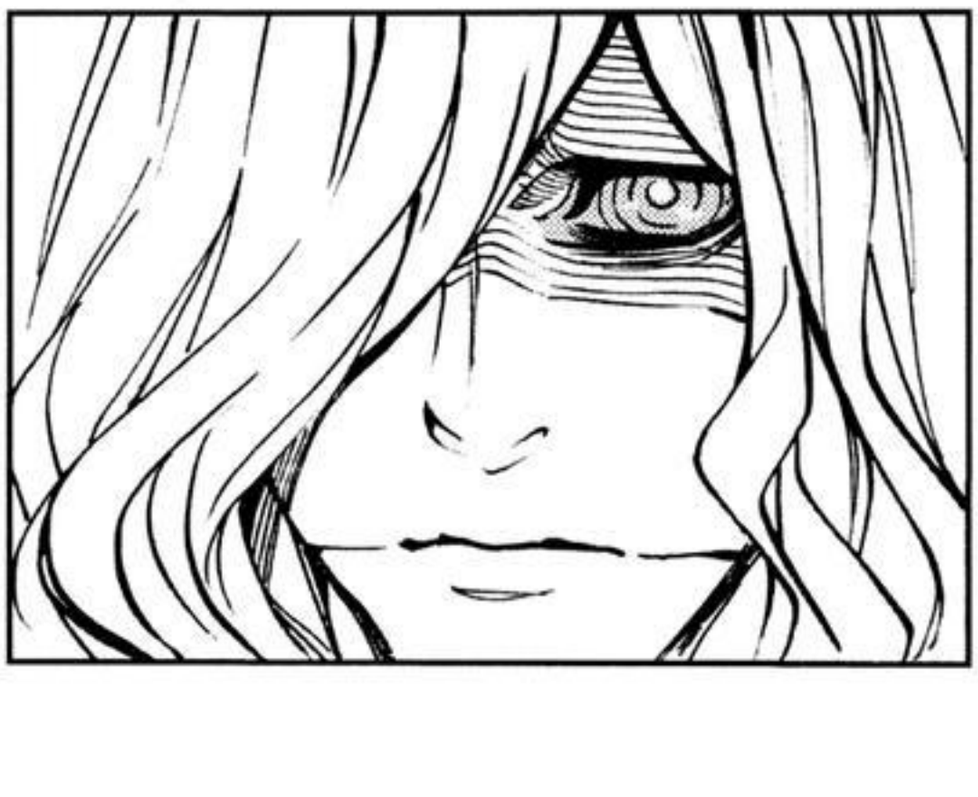
IF YOU WANT TO SAVE THEM, SAVE THEM.

ALL YOU DID WAS WATCH? THAT'S IT?

IF YOU WANT TO KILL THOSE WHO WANT DEATH, KILL THEM. YOU ARE GOD.

SHUJI NAKAUMI WANTED TO BRING DEATH TO THOSE WHO WISHED FOR IT...

THIS IS ALL THE OPPOSITE.



THINGS ARE ACTUALLY FINE... AS IT IS?

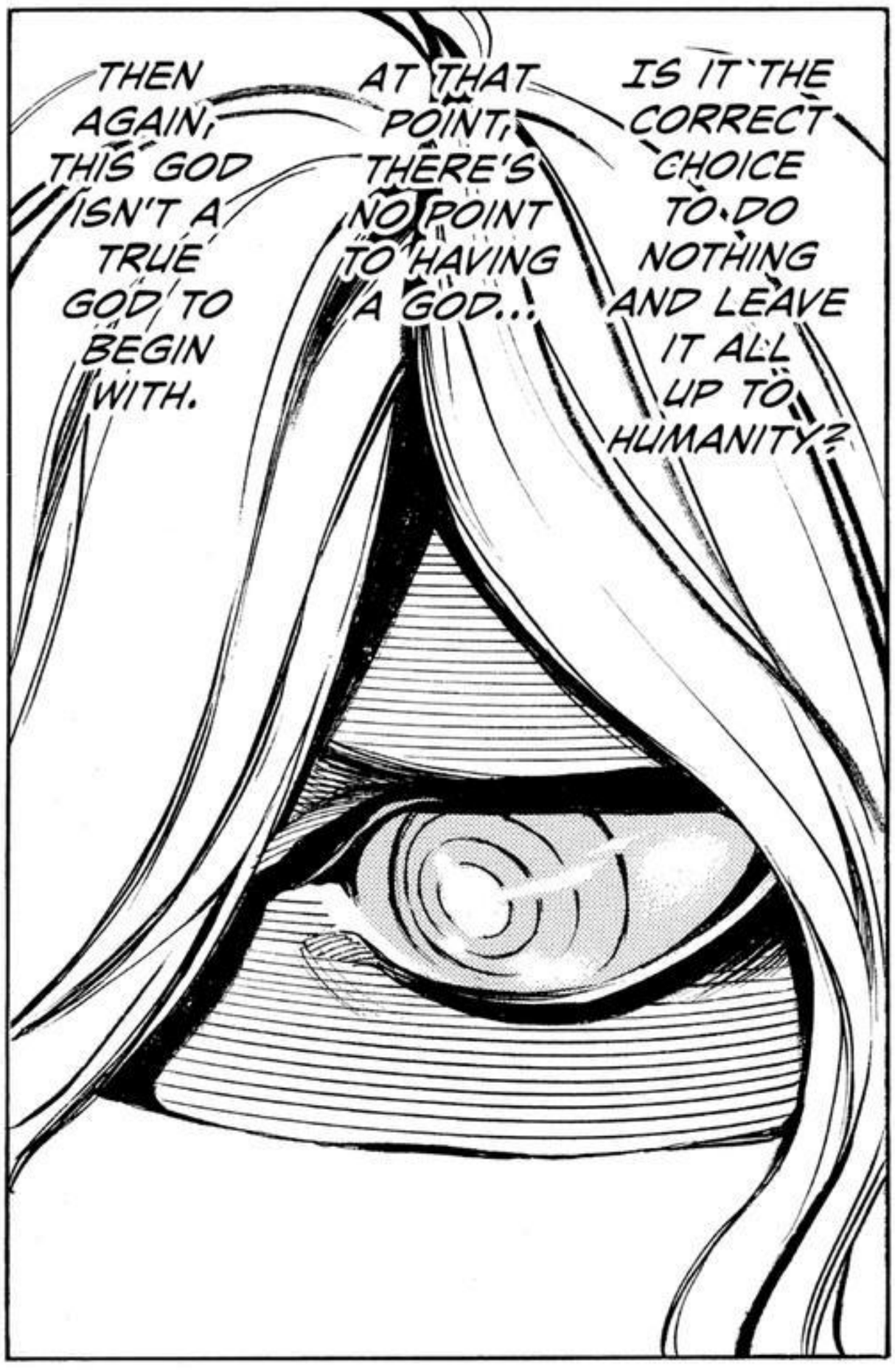
THEN...

DO NOTH-ING.

...I THOUGHT YOU WERE A PERSON CAPABLE OF MORE RATIONAL DECISIONS. PERHAPS I THOUGHT TOO HIGHLY OF YOU.

WHEN I HEARD YOU SAY, "I WILL DO NOTHING IF I BECOME GOD"...

IF I BECOME GOD, I WILL DO NOTHING.



FOR ONE THING, SHUJI NAKAUMI NEVER WANTED TO BE GOD IN THE FIRST PLACE. HE WAS JUST A SUICIDAL KID IN MIDDLE SCHOOL.

GOD WILL NEVER DIE AS LONG AS HUMAN BEINGS BELIEVE IN IT...

BUT GOD IS AN IMAGINARY CONCEPT WITH NO PHYSICAL BODY. YOU CANNOT KNOW WHEN IT DIES.

I REMEMBER SOMETHING WRITTEN IN ONE OF THE PROFESSOR'S BOOKS. WE KNOW WHEN INSECTS, ANIMALS, AND HUMANS DIE BECAUSE THEY HAVE BODIES.

ARE YOU ALL RIGHT?

...

...

IF THEY VANISH, HE WILL UNDERSTAND THAT THE CREATURE IS NO MORE...

ONLY THE RED ARROWS I LEFT WITH THE PROFESSOR WILL DISAPPEAR.

IF I DISAPPEAR, THERE WILL BE EFFECTS UPON THE HEAVENS, BUT NOT THE HUMAN WORLD.

I'M FINE.

GATHER UP ALL THE FIRST-RANK ANGELS.

BUT THERE IS ONE THING I'VE LEARNED A BIT ABOUT. I NEED TO FIND A WAY TO TELL THE PROFESSOR SOON.

PENEMA.

BARET.

REVEL.

THERE ARE THOUSANDS OF THEM.

VERY WELL.

THEN BRING ME THE ONES FROM THE GOD CHOOSING, ASIDE FROM MUNI, MEYZA, AND NASSE.

SWISH

NOT TRUE. DON'T DO THIS.

...NO HUMANS WILL BE BOTHERED.

UP HERE...

FSHH

NO WAY ...

HUH?

AAAH!

FSHH...

REVEL!

WHAT? WHAT HAP-PENED?

FSH

EYAAAA

THE ANGELS ...

WHOA!

GR

GOD ...?

RM

MM

THE ANGELS ARE DISAP-PEARING!

AAAH!

EEEK!

IS THIS BE-CAUSE ...

GR

RM

MM

...AND GOD COMMITTED SUICIDE!

THIS COULDN'T HAPPEN ONCE THEY WERE COMPLETELY FUSED. I KEPT MY EYE ON HIM FOR THAT REASON...

I TURNED AROUND FOR A BRIEF MOMENT...

OH NO...

IT'S OVER... THE HEAVENS ARE CRUMBLING . . . .

GRRMMM

BUT SHUJI NAKAUMI'S POWERFUL DESIRE DELAYED THE FUSION FROM HAPPENING...

AAAH...

AAH...

EYAAA!

GR

RRRRMM

MM

NWA.

FSHHH

CONGRATU-
LATIONS, MUNI.
YOU SUCCEEDED
AT DESTROYING
THE HEAVENS.

I'M AN
ANGEL.

I'LL
DISAPPEAR
TOO.

BYE
BYE.

THE RED ARROW IS GONE...

PROFESSOR ...

GOOHOOニュース

Enter keyword

News, World, Economy, Sports, Entertainmen

News - 2m ago
All newborns in nursery ward vanis

Incident - 20m ago
Pets disappearing

Incident - 38m ago
Newborn gone, leaving behind only clothes

World - 2h ago
Kitten vanished?

AND PETS, AND BABIES... ALL OVER THE WORLD.

IS... IS THIS SOME KIND OF BAD JOKE?

THERE ARE STORIES IN THE NEWS ABOUT PEOPLE SPONTANE-OUSLY VANISHING.

DISAP-PEARING ...

SALE TODAY ¥2,000

WHAT?

THE FLOWERS ...

THEY'RE GONE...

AAAH!!

SHE WAS HERE, AND THEN SHE WASN'T!

SHE JUST VANISHED...

MY BABY! HAS ANYONE SEEN MY BABY?!

MARI, WHERE ...

HUH?

THUNK

CLACK

SKREEE

THOSE KIDS DISAP-PEARED ...

BOTH OF THEM ...

BA

CHU

NK

PIZZAAN

FLUP

GALANK

KASHAK

...ARE VANISHING ...

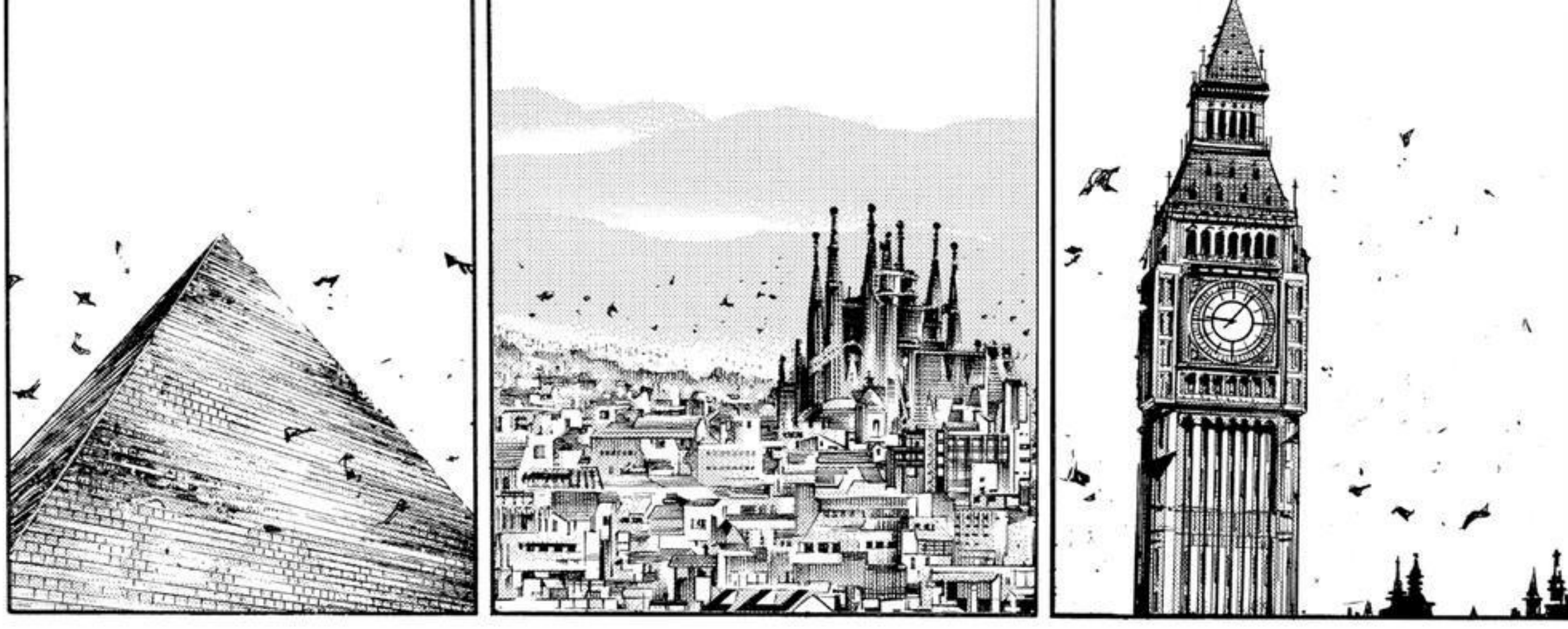
THUP

FLOP

ALL THE PEOPLE ...

FLOP

FLOP



KTUNK

PROFES-SOR!

STARTING FROM THE YOUNG-EST.

Bolt Sank

91%

suulrinn9 @suulrinn

All life is disappearing

Chibetomi @tibetomichan

Starting from the younges

MINMIN @minmin0636

Some kind of weapon???

ponhjwitu @ponhjwitu

Will I die?

lomitraw588 @lomitraw588

It's happening all over the world

"ALL LIFE IS DISAP-PEARING" ...

NO ANGELS...

THE RED ARROWS ARE GONE.

EEEEK!

AAAAH!

HYAA!

AAA...

COULD THIS BE A MESSAGE FROM NAKAUMI ...?

BUT ...

THERE'S NOTHING TO BE AFRAID OF.

THEN WE'RE ALL GOING TO...

"GOD CAN BRING AN END TO HUMANITY."

THAT'S WHAT OGARO SAID.

SAKI
...

EEEK!

YES.
I THINK
THAT'S
WHAT
NAKAUMI
CHOSE.

MIRAI
...

DINK
...

DEATH COMES
FOR US ALL.
IT'S JUST
HAPPENING
NOW INSTEAD
OF LATER.

WE WOULD
HAVE BEEN
DEAD LONG
AGO IF NOT
FOR NASSE
AND REVEL.

SO I'M
GRATEFUL.

GRATEFUL
FOR ALL THE
HAPPINESS
I'VE FELT
BECAUSE
THEY SAVED
US.

IF THIS MEANS I GET TO DIE WITH YOU, SAKI...

PLUS, THINK OF HOW HARD IT WOULD BE TO LOSE YOUR BELOVED AND HAVE TO KEEP GOING.

YEAH.

...I'M HAPPY.

ME TOO.

EEEK!

AAH!

AAAH!

WHOA!

THANK YOU, NASSE.

THIS MEANS...

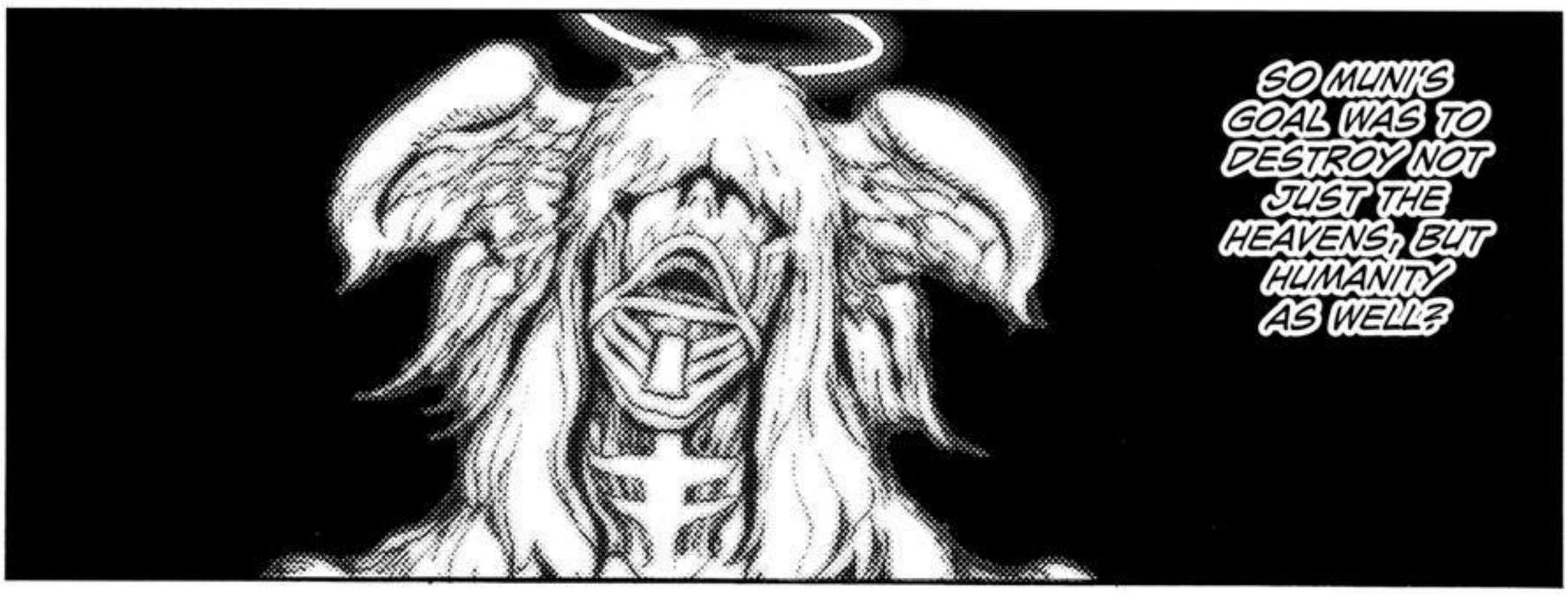
NOW THE HUMANS ARE VANISHING.

THE RED ARROWS AND ANGELS ARE GONE.

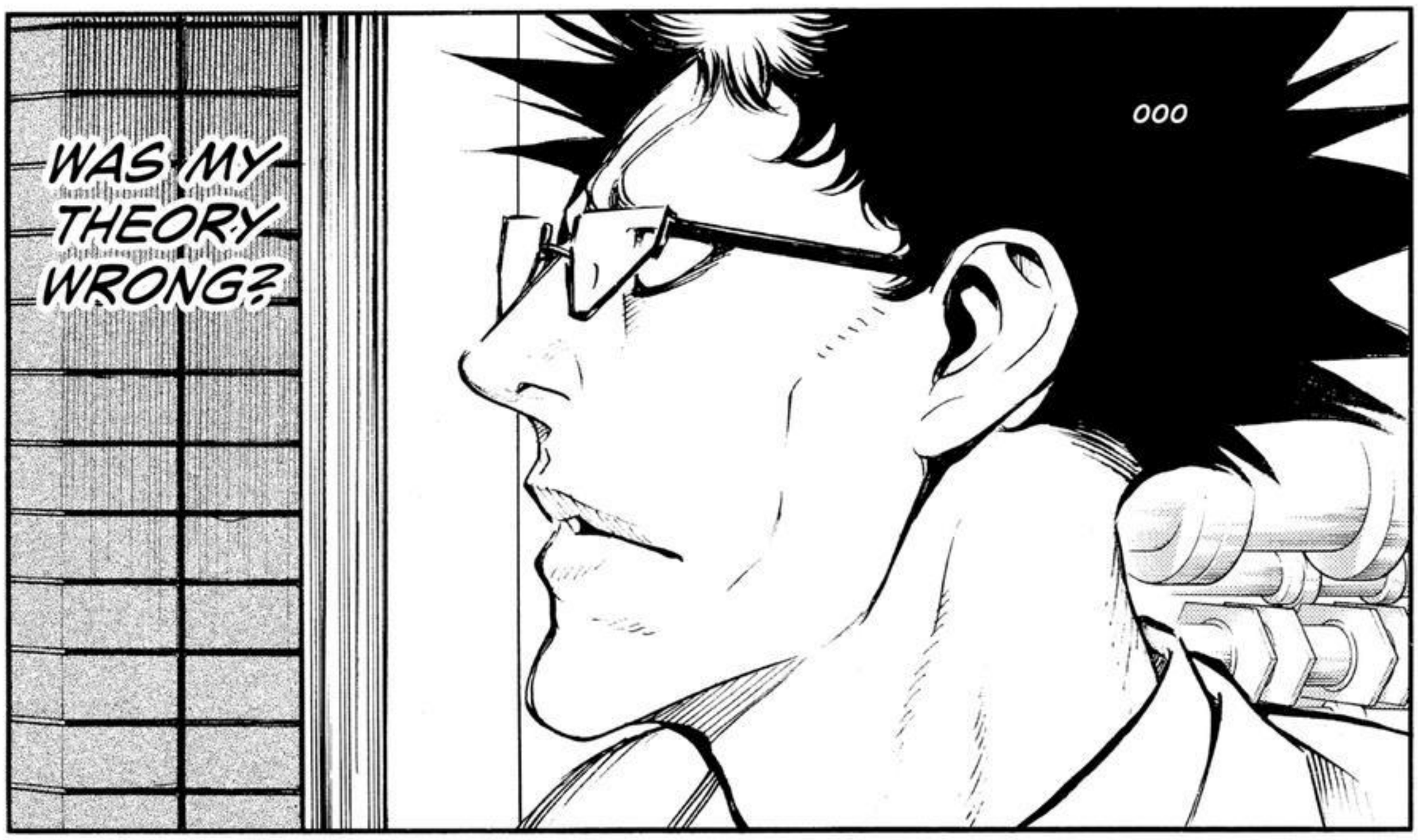
THAT WOULD SEEM TO BE HIS MESSAGE...

MEANING GOD.

THERE WAS SOMEONE IN HEAVEN WHO CREATED ALL LIFE ON EARTH AND CAN SNUFF IT OUT JUST AS QUICKLY.


SO MUNI'S GOAL WAS TO DESTROY NOT JUST THE HEAVENS, BUT HUMANITY AS WELL?

YOU MIGHT EVEN CALL IT AN HONOR. BUT...
WELL, IF WE'RE TO END AS THE MOST ADVANCED CIVILIZED CREATURES TO EXIST ON THIS PLANET, THAT'S A FINE WAY TO GO OUT...


WAS MY THEORY WRONG?
ooo

I AM NOT WRONG. REGARDLESS OF WHAT ANYONE SAYS, GOD WAS CREATED BY HUMAN IMAGINATION!!

NO!!

THAT WAS THE CREATURE!

I SAW IT FOR MYSELF IN THAT MOMENT.

PROF...

IF THE CREATURE CAN ERASE ALL LIFE AS WE KNOW IT...

...THEN THE HEAVENS, THE ANGELS, AND THE CREATURE...

...ARE ALL...

THE CREATURE'S PURPOSE IS TO END LIFE.

A WEAPON OF HUMAN GENOCIDE.

NO, IT'S ENERGY. THUS, IT'S SCIENCE. A SCIENCE THAT I HAD NOT YET COME TO UNDERSTAND. MEANING...

THE ONLY MISTAKE IN MY THEORY WAS ITS COMPOSITION.

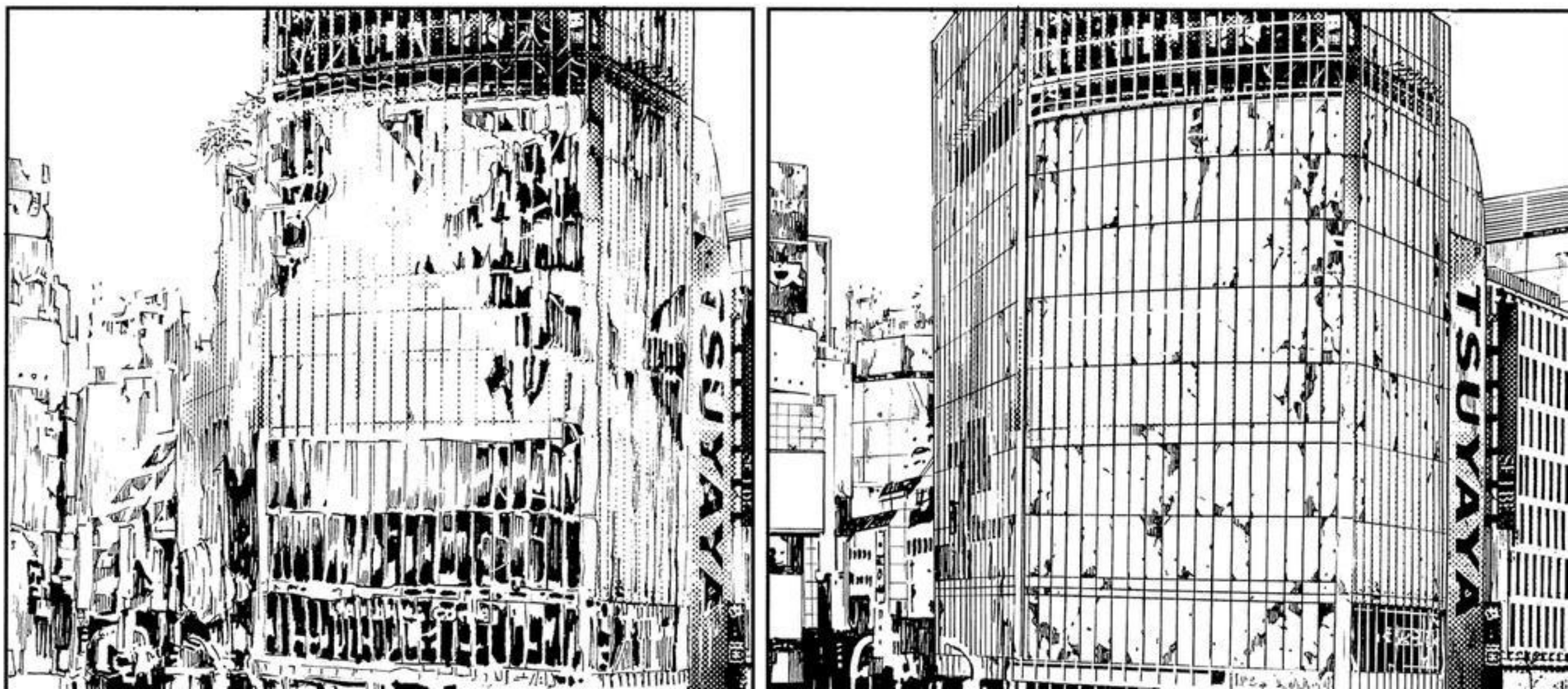
THAT WOULD BE A MUCH MORE PRACTICAL WAY OF SEEING IT...

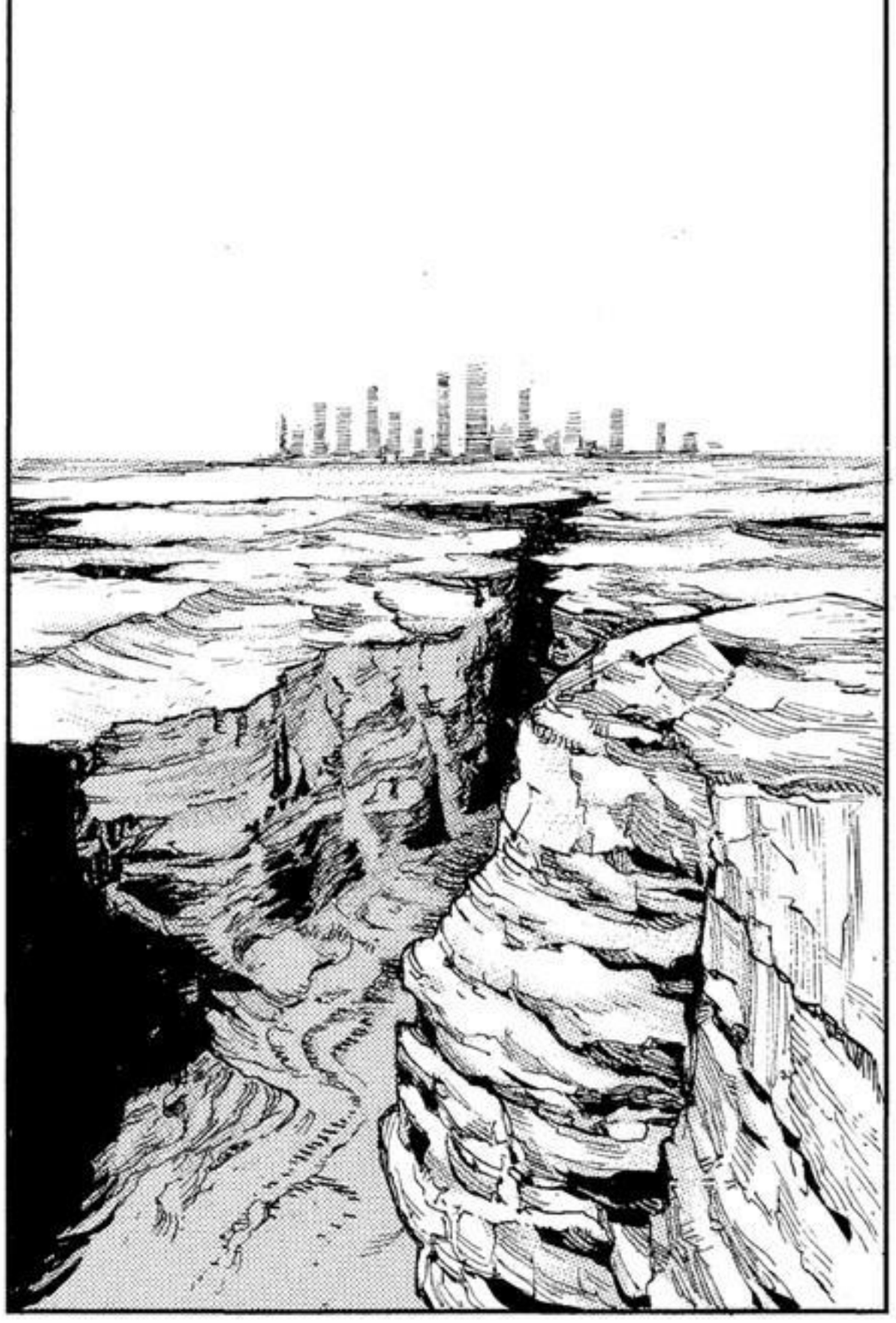
THE CREATURE IS...

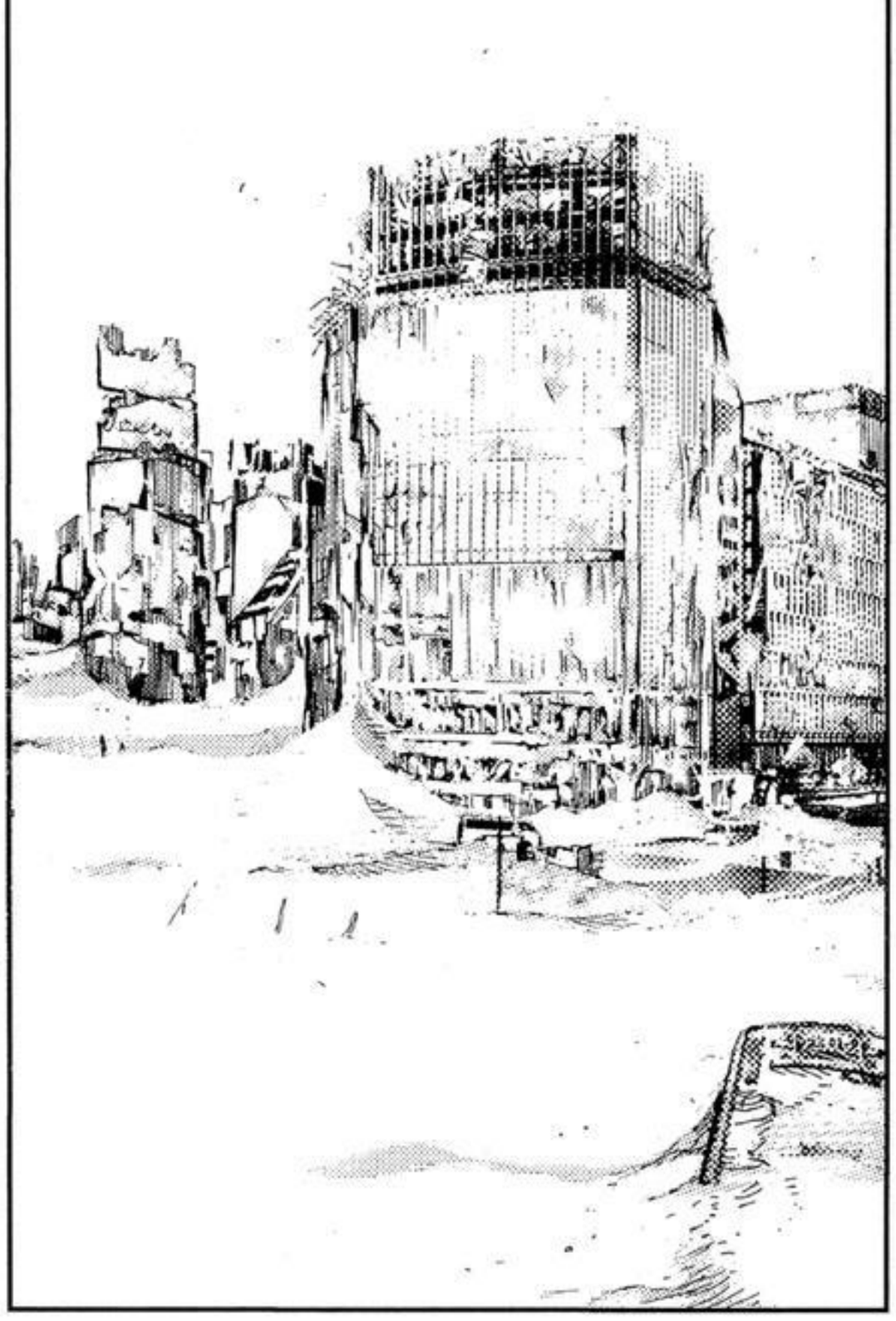
CR

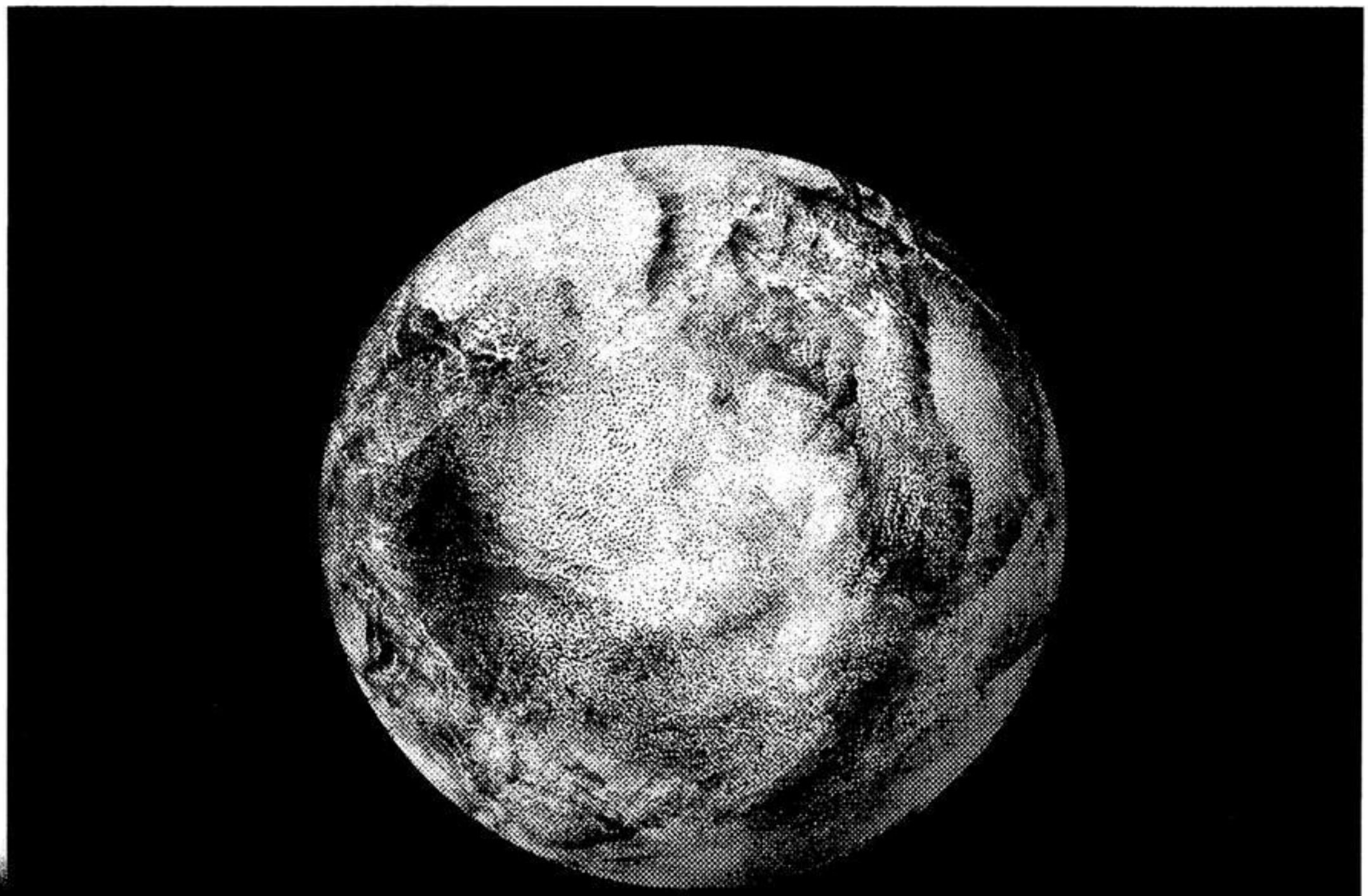
AKK

TSUTAYA
STARKUCKS COFFEE
TSUTAYA
TSUTAYA


TSUTAYA







GIVE UP ON THAT PLANET.

IT IS WHAT WE SEEK.

HOW EMPTY AND TIRESOME IT IS THAT THERE IS NO DEATH.

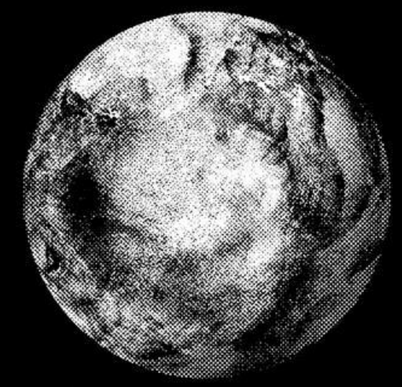
HOW JEALOUS WE ARE...

THE INEXORABLE ADVENT OF DEATH BURNS LIFE AS FUEL. IT TURNS LIFE INTO FLAME--RADIANT AND SHINING.

NOTHING WILL SPRING TO LIFE THERE THAT IS CAPABLE OF KILLING US.

IS IT WORTH PLANTING ANOTHER SEED, ANOTHER GOD?

WE WERE NOT BORN FROM THAT PLANET TO BEGIN WITH. THE PLANET OF OUR BIRTH NO LONGER EXISTS. PERHAPS IT WOULD BE QUICKER TO IDENTIFY WHAT CREATED US.



BUT THAT LINE OF THINKING SUGGESTS THAT SOMETHING CREATED THAT WHICH CREATED US-- IN AN ENDLESS SEQUENCE THAT ONLY TAKES US FURTHER FROM DEATH.

DEATH IS WHAT WE WANT...

THE END

T s u**g** u mi **O**h b **a**

Born in Tokyo, Tsugumi Ohba is the author of the hit series *Death Note* and *Bakuman。*.

Ta**k** e s**h** i O b a **t**a

Takeshi Obata was born in 1969 in Niigata, Japan, and first achieved international recognition as the artist of the wildly popular *Shonen Jump* title *Hikaru no Go*, which won the 2003 Tezuka Osamu Cultural Prize: Shinsei "New Hope" Award and the 2000 Shogakukan Manga Award. He went on to illustrate the smash hit *Death Note* as well as the hugely successful manga *Bakuman。* and *All You Need Is Kill*.

PLATINVM END

VOLUME 14
SHONEN JUMP Manga Edition

°

STORY Tsugumi Ohba
ART Takeshi Obata

°

TRANSLATION Stephen Paul
TOUCH-UP ART & LETTERING James Gaubatz
DESIGN Shawn Carrico
EDITOR Alexis Kirsch

°

ORIGINAL COVER DESIGN Narumi Noriko

°

PLATINUM END © 2015 by Tsugumi Ohba, Takeshi Obata
All rights reserved.
First published in Japan in 2015 by SHUEISHA Inc., Tokyo.
English translation rights arranged by SHUEISHA Inc.

°

The stories, characters, and incidents mentioned in this publication are entirely fictional.

No portion of this book may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means without written permission from the copyright holders.

°

Printed in the U.S.A.

Published by VIZ Media, LLC
P.O. Box 77010
San Francisco, CA 94107

°

10 9 8 7 6 5 4 3 2 1
First printing, March 2022

VIZ MEDIA
viz.com

SHONEN JUMP

ratings.viz.com RATED M MATURE

PARENTAL ADVISORY
PLATINUM END is rated M for Mature and is recommended for mature readers.
This volume contains suggestive themes.